Century Sentence

2020 version

A diary written to God, accusing all of the world

God let me tell you that traditional Chinese medicine can end the catastrophe of the coronavirus

George Walker

Note

Century Sentence is a prophecy which explores truths with readers. The author conveys the God's ultimate judgment on human beings. Most of the predictions in the book have come true or will come true.

To convey the God's messages, readers can download the full text of Century Sentence for free on the author's website, but it is limited to interpersonal exchanges. The author reserves all other rights over the book.

In order to better your understanding, I have had these articles translated from Chinese to English, as you will see, but I have not fact-checked the translated material because of my limited level of English. The English version may not correctly express my original meaning, so it is just for your reference. For the original meaning of the articles, refer to the Chinese version.

The Chinese version is in my website: http://www.centurysentence.com.

book review

2019.2.8

A Philippine professor Bauya reviewed my book recently

Here is the book review:

Impudent…Audacious…Uncensored…This book will make you cringe with its bold claims and untamed language. But the more you read, the more you delve into the consciousness of the author and see things in his perspective. Dubbed as his diary to God and to the world, this book will be mocked academicians, historians, politicians and politic analysts alike. But when you start reading it, you can't stop turning the pages until the end. This book will propel you to research and fact-check. While reading, you will find yourself arguing with the writer and arguing with yourself. In the end, you will discover the good from evil and the truth from lies.

Introduction of the Author

2020.2

I am Xu Xue Chun, the most influential online opinion leaders, and a distinguished scholar in China.

In April 2004, when China's new prime minister and chairman just took office, soon I saw Chinese news about the event of the Tieben Steel Company.

I was suddenly inspired by God that I needed to accuse the wrongness, absurdity, and injustice of this world.

Then, I wrote five articles on the reform of state-owned enterprises and reported and gave publicity to the situations to the Chinese government at all levels for many times through network and mails, which are called petitions in China.

Accidentally, they were accepted and emphasised by Chinese government. At the stage when China's state-owned capital was about to collapse, the direction of state-owned enterprise reform was completely reversed, and they became the basic policy of state-owned enterprises and have been used until today.

From this matter later, I feel that I am the person chosen by God to accomplish a special mission, though I am only an ordinary netizen.

I have been making comments and exchanging about hot events happening in China, on the network as an ordinary netizen. My suggestions were basically adopted and emphasised by the government.

It can be said that I played a key role and a guiding role in the success of China's economic reforms.

Since then, China has gradually escaped from the dispute and turmoil, unified thinking, embarked on success, and now China's society is stable, economy is developed, people become rich, and social order is good.

I think I can give the Chinese government some suggestions to make China successful. I can also give other countries some suggestions to allow them to change and succeed.

I set up a website in 2013 to put the translated articles of mine on it and promote the Chinese model to other countries in the world. From the news at that time, other countries were in exchange with China and learning the Chinese model.

In August 2014, when I saw the atrocities of the Islamic State from the news, I was furious and decided to accuse the world to God.

I wrote my suggestions in the diary and posted them online for transmission and complain about this world to God. So God will reply to me, and he will have an impact on the world political situation. Reasonably, they will listen to me carefully and take my advice.

I wrote everything in my diary and complained them to the God: the success of China's reform, Trump's election as American president, opposition to extreme Islam, the requirement on signing the Iran nuclear deal, support for the Syrian Arab Army, the question of Hong Kong, the question of Taiwan, defeat over the Islamic State, opposition of North Korea's development of nuclear weapons, opposition of immigration, support for nationalism, and support for white people to protect their national interests. Eventually, all of my wishes were realized, and these events basically happened according to my advice. It was God's answer to and support for my requirements. Everything was the will of God. Gladly, I'm doing the most important thing for God.

Donald Trump is currently the most popular figure in the world. Also, many people like Trump are in power. Although Trump has original opinions, he successfully won support from at least half of Americans. Otherwise, he would not have been the president. But maybe you don't know is that most of Trump's opinions were from my website and book.

You all can verify what I said according to my diary dates and the violent change of world political situation.

The reason why I have an impact on the world political situation is not that I have something special, but the truth I revealed, just like a small boy who says the emperor is not wearing anything in the fairy tale 'The Emperor's New Clothes'.

What persuaded and changed them are reality, truth, and justice. What I have done is tell the reality, truth, and justice.

The only things I have in mind are true things and putting forward my solution as a reference. People who choose the truth, justice, and reality categorise themselves progressively to God.

I sincerely hope that I can cleanse humans' dirty souls through my articles and book. I will try my best to wipe out all the hypocrisy, hoaxes, evilness, and demons in the world so that people will eventually return to truth, justice, God.

Brief Introduction of the Book

2020.2

The book records my comments about all events in the world in the form of diary.

Every event documented and reviewed has been based on political affairs in a contemporary age.

Our age now has entered a particular period in which traditional religion has failed in its attempt to adjust the relation between men as usual. Human beings therefore are exposed to a great risk. I have been given a sign from God to help human beings go through crises and sufferings.

Whenever I report major events occurring in China and other countries and my views, I will hear the message of God and put it down in my diary. Moreover, I would deliver the message to each country via network. There will always appear a dramatic sharp turn in political events involved at the will of God.

Readers may verify my words according to the writing time of each diary and dramatic changes of historical events.

Some of the political events recorded in the book have happened, and some have not.

So you can view the book as a prophesy or evidence proving God's permission for my point of view.

The prophecy and Century Sentence for China just make up a small part of the book. Actually, my book has predicted and made Century Sentence for all mankind, all countries and also all major events.

Probably my witty and humorous writing style amuses and amazes readers. It is no big deal for you to mistake my prophesy for fallacy or empty talk, because you will know it when you are about to face the consequences on your own.

If you still question my words but never take my suggestions into account, you will get deeper into the mire.

Therefore, I hereby advise you to carefully reflect over my suggestions.

You do not necessarily go by what I say. After all, I just propose some questions and present you with a few instructions and suggestions. I expect you to seriously face, discuss, examine and resolve questions that I have proposed.

If you find the right answer to my question, you can do what you want. Or otherwise, you'd

better take in my suggestions. No matter which solution prevails, the problem will be tackled in the end.

I hope that my book could solve all the problems faced by all mankind, and instruct you to solve any new problem after my death. That's why I write this book. It is also the will of God. Wish you good luck!

Preface of truth

About 2007

According to the self-perception of people and understanding of the society, people can be divided into many types and grades of ideology. Different people will have different attitudes towards the myriads of things in the world according to their different understanding of the world so that they will take different actions in dealing with them; finally, the different actions will trigger different results.

Some people start from scratch and become billionaires. Some people are so wealthy that they speak louder than others but finally end up on the street. Some people have tremendous property but are anxious every day. Some people are not wealthy, but they feel satisfied, with no regret in life at all. Some people are in poverty, desperate, and anxious. Some people are full of ambition in life and confident all the time.

We are in this era, and our fate is elusive, with much mystery and fanatics. What are the basic factors that can determine the fate of people? The answer is the human concept, which is the understanding of the world and society of humans, the understanding of the direction of social development, and the understanding of the value and fate of humans.

Understanding determines the concept, the concept determines the behaviour, and the behaviour determines the fate.

You are endowed with something since you were born, and it is very difficult to make a change or it is impossible to make a change at all, such as a person's height, appearance, intelligence, family conditions, etc. All of them can determine one's destiny, but they are not the final conditions. The final conditions that can determine the fate are the concepts of society and the world.

But because the intelligence of people is different, people's understanding of the world is also diversified. Different people will have different views on the concept of things mentioned in this book.

If you feel surprised, ridiculous, absurd, indignant, resented, sad, please don't feel strange. You can throw this book away or burn it, because that's your human right. The author of this book does not mind at all. This book is for someone who is destined to read and digest it. He is able to get some inspiration from this book so as to change his concept and fate in life. If some people abandon what has been told in the book and slump into difficulties and setbacks, please do not resent society and do not be hostile to society, because the responsibility lies on you but not others. Your behaviour is what you have chosen by yourself. If your actions affect the operation of the earth, you will be abandoned by it. I do not want to see it and I do not want to see anyone slumping into bad outcomes, but this day will definitely come. If human society is to move forward, the earth is to move forward, the human civilisation is to move forward, the social

relations, political relations, and economic relations between people have to move forward as well.

I know that changing the political and economic relations between people, for ordinary people, is a painful and hard choice. Maybe it's an advanced math problem for some people, and they never elaborate the answer. But today, as the development of human society has been kept for such a long time, something must be changed. As some people say, the Bible is the agreement between God and man. Thousands of years have passed, and the human perception of the universe and themselves has undergone fundamental transformation. There must be a new agreement between God and man. The relationship between people, the relationship between man and society, the relationship between man and nature, the political relations and economic relations between people themselves must be radically changed. The concepts of democracy, freedom, human rights, sovereignty, the political power and the property right, the state and individuals, systematic culture and individual culture, justice, evil, and so on need to be redefined and perceived.

The idea of man is the simplest and most complex, most trivial, and most fierce. A smile will replace conflicts if the obstacle of thought is replaced by a good solution. Whether it is a faint smile or blood in conflict, that is your choice and that is your own destiny. I just say the truth and the other things are not what I should care. What is going to happen will happen sooner or later and the earth will not stop for anyone. The universe will never stop either. Be fully prepared by yourself and face the new day.

Contents

2019.2.8	book review	
2018.10	Introduction of the Author	
2018.10	Brief Introduction of the Book	
About 2007	Preface of truth	
	Part 1 **The Stories Behind Century Sentence**	
2018.10	1、My Grandma and I	
2018.10	2、I Have Been Proving My Correctness since I Was Little	
2018.10	3、The Tiananmen Incident, 1989	
2018.10	4、I Had a Total 0.17 Million Yuan of Debt after Graduation Owing to Business Failure	
2018.10	5、My Tearful Farewell to My Ex-Wife	
2018.10	6、Advice Offered to Reform State-Owned Enterprises	
2018.10	7、My Grandma Passed Away in 2005	
2018.10	8、Organizing Drafts into Articles from 2005 to 2007	
2018.10	9、Becoming Iron-Willed through Repeated Rough Experiences at an Insurance Company	
2018.10	10、I Built My Personal Website and Promoted It All Over the World in 2013	
2018.10	11、The Islamic State Madly Killed People, and I Stood Up for Justice	
2018.10	12、In 2015, I Sold My House and Published *Century Sentence*	
	Part 2 **The Author Answers Questions from Reporters**	
	Question Raised by the First Reporter	
2018.10	1、What do you have to say about your book?	
2018.10	2、Why did you publish it?	
2018.10	3、When you were still writing the manuscript, had you ever thought not to publish the book?	
2018.10	4、Why do you want to spread the word or the message?	
2018.10	5、Did someone help you to finish the book?	
2018.10	6、Why are you concerned with the people?	

2018.10	7、If you end up having one hundred copies of your book printed, how will you use them?	
2018.10	8、As author of this book, what made you decide to promote the book in the Philippines?	
	Question Raised by the Second Reporter	
2018.10	1、What are the things that you like about Donald Trump?	
2018.10	2、Do you consider the Syrian war to be a mini world war? If yes, why? If no, please give us your opinion about it.	
2018.10	3、Who is behind the Syrian war?	
2018.10	4、Who do you think will win the Syrian war?	
2018.10	5、What should we do to help the situation in Syria?	
2018.10	6、What other things do you like about Donald Trump?	
2018.10	7、Do you consider Trump to be the best president of the United States so far? If yes, why? If no, who was the best president of the USA?	
2018.10	8、What do you have to say about the people who dislike and disrespect Trump?	
2018.10	9、What are your reasons for wanting to help the people of this world?	
2018.10	10、You said that if people read your book, they will get rich. Why would the readers get rich?	
2018.10	11、Do you think each country will need your book? Why?	
2018.10	12、You said that God gave you this mission to spread your story. Do you think you can complete this mission? To what extent can you complete your mission?	
2018.10	13、Earlier you told me that you like President Duterte. What do you have to say about the killings that are happening in the Philippines?	
	Question Raised by the Third Reporter	
2018.10	1、What things do you want to see happen in the world over the next five years?	
2018.10	2、You have put a lot of effort into writing your book, and knowing that your mission is very difficult, you still have things to do. Are you willing to invest more time? Where will that strength come from?	
2018.10	3、In what way is your book different from other self-help books?	
2018.10	4、Nowadays many investors from different parts of the world are outsourcing their business to the Philippines. Are you doing the same thing? Had you planned ahead of time to come here to the Philippines to promote your book?	
2018.10	5、If you were given the chance to have your own business in the Philippines, would you seize the opportunity? What type of business would you prefer?	

2018.10	6、Since your book is for everybody, which country do you hope will make your book successful?	
	Question Raised by the fourth Reporter	
2018.12	1、Tell your readers a little about yourself—where you grew up, where you live now, where you went to school, etc. Let them get to know the personal side of you.	
2018.12	2、What inspired you to write this book?	
2018.12	3、Your book talks about many things that impact the world, such as terrorism. What other topics do you discuss, and why?	
2018.12	4、How has your religious upbringing impacted your writing?	
2018.12	5、What were your struggles or the obstacles you had to overcome to get this book written?	
2018.12	6、Tell your readers about your book.	
2018.12	7、What will your readers learn from this book?	
2018.12	8、Who is your target audience, and why?	
2018.12	9、If you could give only one reason to someone for reading your book, what would it be?	
2018.12	10、What do you consider to be your greatest success in life?	
2018.12	11、Everyone has life lessons to learn. Tell your readers about one or two of yours and how they made you who you are today.	
2018.12	12、How important is this book for you?	
2018.12	13、How did you come up with the idea for your book?	
2018.12	14、Tell your readers anything else you want to share.	
2018.12	15、Are you writing more books?	
	Part 3 **Public ownership and God**	
2014.9.12	1. The scientific public ownership system is Mahayana Buddhism	
2014.11.23	2. The primary objective of communism is to benefit the people	
2014.11.24	3. Socialism is the realisation of socialised production from the perspective of social management	
2014.11.27	4. Any national land and mineral resources shall be owned by God instead of individuals	
2014.12.6	5. God’s love is the greatest well-being of human beings	
2014.12.22	6. Public ownership of land	
2015.1.28	7. Mao Zedong solved the problem of land ownership in China	
2015.2.1	8. Humans’ physiological and safety needs and God’s love	

	Part 4 **Century Sentence the untold story of china**	
about 2007	1. What is human?	
about 2007	2. Human nature	
about 2007	3. Why does a man do things for the good of others?	
about 2007	4. Filial piety	
about 2007	5. Kindness of humanity	
about 2007	6. Removal of the evil in human nature in a civilised way	
about 2007	7. Use appropriate method to eliminate the evil in human nature	
about 2007	8. What is consciousness?	
about 2007	9. Dimension of consciousness	
about 2007	10. Psychoanalysis is a tool to study humanity and the human soul	
about 2007	11. What is culture?	
about 2007	12. The culture of the feudal society of China	
about 2007	13. All ancient thoughts in China are philosophical culture of yin and yang	
about 2007	14. The Book of Changes and the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor are books that specify the philosophy of yin and yang	
about 2007	15. China's systematic culture	
about 2007	16. Ancient thinkers share the same theme and philosophy	
about 2007	17. The philosophy of yin and yang and social system	
about 2007	18. The essential difference between Chinese culture and Western culture	
about 2007	19. Chinese culture is a system culture	
about 2007	20. Western culture is the individual culture	
about 2007	21. Why must individualistic culture go with system culture?	
about 2007	22. Chinese feudal system culture and state capitalism system culture	
about 2007	23. Chinese like spheres and Westerners like cubes	
about 2007	24. On American culture of individualism embodied in American movies	
about 2007	25. The reason why communism could be successful in China is Chinese traditional culture's cohesiveness with communism	
about 2007	26. Contradictions in human society are caused by people's different perspectives in viewing things	

about 2007	27. The essence of war is the cannibalism led by elites	
about 2007	28. The responsibility for world peace lies in elites	
about 2007	29. The change of culture starts from elites	
about 2007	30. What are Chinese doing?	
about 2007	31. Chinese economic achievement is attributed to the implementation of new ideological culture and political system	
2004.4	32. How a socialist country develops advantages of the socialist system	
2004.4	33. Strengthen management on government to the public assets of government	
2004.4	34. State-owned enterprises can catch up with and surpass the world multinationals	
2004.4	35. State-owned enterprises can solve the problems of employment and development	
about 2007	36. Active labour, passive labour, and the state-owned enterprises	
about 2007	37. Harmonious society and capital equality	
about 2007	38. The deep analysis of the Tao Te Ching and the Diamond Sutra and Confucius-Mencius culture	
about 2007	39. The Tao Te Ching	
about 2007	40. Confucius-Mencius ideology	
about 2007	41. Diamond Sutra	
about 2007	42. Comments on the Tao Te Ching and Diamond Sutra	
about 2007	43. The essence of the Tao Te Ching Lies in its implications for political authorities to rule with the characteristics of water	
about 2007	44. An accurate understanding of the decadent ideas in Lao-Tzu theory and some suggestions for improvement	
about 2007	45. Truth that can be expressed with language never lasts long	
about 2007	46. If all people know why beautiful things become beautiful, ugliness will be stopped	
about 2007	47. During national governance, common people should be encouraged to pursue material benefits rather than ideology	
about 2007	48. The universe is merciless and treats every living creature without dignity	
about 2007	49. More and more people are engaged in the study of knowledge according to Tao; the things needing to be done are fewer and fewer	
about 2007	50. Paths and methods are variable	
about 2007	51. Further comment on ensuring people know what beauty is, to stop the hideous	
about 2007	52. Lying and the subconscious	

about 2007	53. All Chinese legal citizens should have the ownership of state-owned assets	
about 2007	54. Public capital constitutes the foundation of people's life	
about 2007	55. People's life is a capital operation	
2015.4.5	56. The biggest problem for the poor in the world is that they don't know what their most fundamental interests are	
about 2007	57. China's socialism is the improvement and progress of Marxism	
about 2007	58. Communism should be understood as a common capitalism	
about 2007	59. Harmony is big love	
about 2007	60. The world can be great unity	
2013.10.9	61. I do not think that I am so wise	
2014.8.16	62. It's none of my business	
about 2007	63. Reflection on inequality among people based on 80-20 rule	
about 2007	64. Scholars should defend truth rather than blindly protect certain people's interests	
about 2007	65. Politicians almost always tell lies, while philosophers must tell the truth	
about 2007	66. Women only have consciousness, no thoughts	
about 2007	67. The otherness of people's understanding	
2004.10	68. Let's make up	
about 2007	69. Whether the petition letter should be abolished depends on its function	
about 2007	70. Ethnic integration policy	
about 2007	71. 1.3 billion Chinese people, 1.3 billion minds	
about 2007	72. It's suggested that China announce all corrupt officials fleeing to other countries and post a reward on chasing and killing them	
about 2007	73. The Chinese wisdom: No fish can survive if the water is too clean—one should not demand absolute purity	
about 2007	74. The most disgusting words in state-owned enterprise	
about 2007	75. Distribution according to work is equalitarian, and distribution according to price is reasonable	
about 2007	76. Property law signifies that all wealth in China will be subjected to the State Council	
2016.2.16	77. The rationality of unequal social status	
about 2007	78. The corruption in China is mainly caused by the left	
about 2007	79. The violence by Yang Jia proves the evil nature of the right wing	

about 2007	80. Chinese people need human rights or interests?	
about 2007	81. Strongly supporting the imposition of high inheritance tax at once	
about 2007	82. Chinese democracy will begin from the imposition of inheritance tax	
about 2007	83. Why are there many difficulties and obstacles in taxing the rich in China?	
about 2007	84. Why do some people always object to economists?	
about 2007	85. Rule by benevolence and righteousness is nonsense but by capital is valid and proper	
about 2007	86. What is 'endurance'? 'Endurance' is an evil thought	
about 2007	87. Doctor-patient relationship, petition of petitioners, public announcement of complaints, Taobao	
about 2007	88. Reform needs awakening and support of the people	
2013.11.16	89. The third plenary session	
2013.11.25	90. State capitalism injects power to people, with kindness tendency and justice	
2014.4.27	91. Anti-corruption, anti-porn, and economic development	
2014.6.7	92. The Safety Island of Abandoned Children	
2014.8.26	93. Hong Kong judicial power shall belong to the central government	
2014.8.30	94. Gangdom	
2014.10.21	95. Diligence	
2014.11.21	96. A life for a life and debts should be repaid	
2014.12.26	97. The loss of faith in this era	
2015.1.3	98. Criminals sentenced to death should be encouraged to transplant organs	
2015.2.23	99. Some low-quality Chinese shopping spree abroad	
2015.3.15	100. Go home, 2012, God comes, and the destiny of Chinese is decreed	
2015.8.5	101. The Kuomintang should promote a referendum on reconciliation	
2015.9.8	102. Chinese government should make clear the attitude to dogs	
2016.2.4	103. The government shall audit the authenticity of P2P project	
2016.4.3	104. In economic crimes, if the victim commits suicide, the main mastermind should be executed	
2016.4.7	105. There should be legislation on compensation of dog-hurting people	
2016.5.13	106. Arresting prostitutes indicates that the social system is in favour of the rich and against the poor	
2016.6.6	107. Fighting-to-death lawyers are cults	

2016.8.18	108. Marriage for the purpose of beauty is a kind of whoring, while marriage aimed at benefit is like prostitution and financial fraud	
2016.9.7	109. If telecommunication frauds make victims commit suicide, swindlers should be executed	
2016.9.7	110. Nail households should be settled by demolition	
2016.12.29	111. It is mandatory for pet keepers to pay to charitable foundations	
2017.1.1	112. Citizen information should be publicised in default, and the fraud should be heavily convict	
2017.1.8	113. Housing price in China is higher than that in America, is determined by Chinese culture	
2017.1.26	114. Criminals disfiguring a woman tourist in Lijiang need to be beheaded	
2017.1.27	115. The have-nots are not afraid of the haves	
2017.3.30	116. Game regulation shall be required in usury; those going beyond the limit shall be executed	
2017.4.22	117. If financial fraud involves a whole family, all members should all be executed	
2017.7.9	118. Westerners ought to help persecuted old people in China to safeguard rights and interests	
2017.8.5	119. Some of China's pyramid selling organizations are evil organizations, and the chief criminal should be beheaded.	
2017.8.24	120. The girl who was dropped from the building has Sexual blackmail behavior	
2017.10.1	121. Game industry should be limited in development	
2017.11.9	122. It is a ridiculous thing to punish someone that stop another-one smoking in the elevator	
2017.11.9	123. HIV-infected patients who deliberately contact with and infect others should be executed	
2017.11.26	124. The Central Bank and China UnionPay Should Form the Government's Mobile Network Payment Platforms	
2017.12.9	125. Crime of Disobedience	
2017.12.28	126. If juveniles deliberately injure others at school, which cause other people's death or suicide, they should be executed.	
2018.1.8	127. Good People and Bad People	
2018.1.23	128. The Wealth of the condemned should be used as compensation for victim	
2018.2.16	129. Medical trouble profiteer (MDP) who cause severe injury to doctor shall be killed at site	
2018.4.9	130. The problem of Multi-level marketing can only be eradicated by sentencing the leaders to death.	
2018.5.15	131. The petition of victims of Shan Lin Financial fraud (Shanghai) to the	

	Central Inspection Team	
2018.5.24	132. Issue of sex trade legality	
2018.6.16	133. China's stability maintenance	
2018.8.9	134. China's Harmonious Society, Fairness and Justice	
2018.8.16	135. The Chinese government protects deadbeats	
	Part 5 **Century Sentence the truth about extreme Islam**	
about 2007	1. Religion should follow a principle—religious authority should never violate kingship	
about 2007	2. Terrorism and Islam	
2014.3.2	3. Terrorism is heretical organisation	
2014.3.3	4. Islam is the root of ignorance	
2014.6.3	5. Heresy should be executed with lawful authority like terrorism	
2014.8.17	6. Religion	
2014.8.20	7. IS, organ transplantation, human rights	
2014.9.8	8. Troublemakers always come from badlands—Somalia and Islam	
2014.9.12	9. Traditional religions originated in the slave society	
2014.9.23	10. Religion and human liberation	
2014.9.24	11. Islamic nations are in urgent need of ideological renewal	
2014.9.25	12. The biggest problem of Islamism is the integration of religion and politics	
2014.9.26	13. Essence of terrorism is theocracy replacing kingship	
2014.12.1	14. No democracy in Islamic areas	
2014.12.7	15. The devil is set free every 1,000 years	
2014.12.7	16. Procrustes	
2014.12.14	17. It is a typical cult behaviour to sentence rape and adultery behaviour as capital crime	
2014.12.16	18. All leaders of Islam are false prophets	
2014.12.27	19. Preventing global Islamisation	
2014.12.30	20. Man and man talk about the interest; the devil and man talk about the distortion, abnormal condition, monstrousness, evil	
2015.1.2	21. Female circumcision means discontent to God	

2015.1.4	22. The intensification of contradictions was able to solve completely the contradiction	
2015.1.7	23. Western countries should do some control and cultivation towards Islam and forbid Islam	
2015.1.10	24. Islamism has been discarded by the divine	
2015.1.12	25. The world should face up to Islam, expose Islam, and criticise Islam	
2015.1.17	26. Germany raised a thought-provoking question	
2015.1.17	27. It is better to enforce the religion reform	
2015.1.18	28. Islam needs mental transformation	
2015.1.19	29. As recorded in the Bible, Islamic extremists refer to the religion that worships the beast and image of the beast and acts monstrously	
2015.1.23	30. Moderate Islam doctrine is questionable from the perspective of Iran	
2015.1.31	31. Religion should be the spiritual improvement established on the basic guarantee of society	
2015.2.3	32. Incorrect ideology and demand of extremist organisations	
2015.2.11	33. Mohammed said the fire would come out of Yemen	
2015.2.27	34. Do not stop them from joining the IS	
2015.3.29	35. Wearing an over-robe, a veil, and a beard shall be strictly prohibited to wipe out Islam extremist organisations ideologically	
2015.3.31	36. Bountiful Saudi pay money to hire goons and accomplices globally	
2015.4.3	37. Saudi Arabia's invasion of Yemen is an unjust war	
2015.4.4	38. The nuclear negotiation	
2015.4.13	39. Wahhabi religious sect has misunderstanding on the explanation of 'mushrikeen'	
2015.4.21	40. Baghdadi is the Dajjal in prophetic Hadith, and he is bound to die in Syria	
2015.4.29	41. Terrorism and genocide	
2015.4.30	42. Religion and taboo	
2015.5.11	43. It is repeated a few times in the Koran that Allah will destroy the Koran	
2015.5.28	44. The Koran and doing good	
2015.6.3	45. Islam is a kind of culture of order, totally colliding with Western liberal cultures	
2015.6.7	46. Mohammed said Muslims should attack each other	
2015.6.13	47. Personal practice and religion	
2015.6.15	48. Splitting Middle East countries is a way to solve Islamic problem	

2015.6.17	49. Western countries should reform Muslim refugees in the ideological aspect	
2015.6.22	50. Islamic action and Rwandan genocide	
2015.6.24	51. IS are formed because of the incompleteness of revolution to cult devil	
2015.6.28	52. Iran condemns terrorist attack that's not meaningful	
2015.7.1	53. According to Hadith, the IS will be destroyed three months later	
2015.7.2	54. Germany surrendered to the Islamic	
2015.7.2	55. Mohammed says that the scientific communism unifies the world	
2015.7.9	56. The problem of Europe: Democracy has encouraged Islamic heresy	
2015.7.14	57. Iran should send the ground force to exterminate the IS in Iraq and Syria	
2015.8.3	58. Taliban's Omar is also one Mohammed calls Dajjal	
2015.8.18	59. Islam has now developed into an evil religion and needs to be banned immediately on a global scale	
2015.9.5	60. That kid who died on the beach is not worth sympathising with; even if he came to life, he would still be a suicide bomber	
2015.9.11	61. Muslims are inherently traitors	
2015.9.12	62. Mecca Masjid's being struck by thunderbolt and collapse is Allah's revelation to Muslims	
2015.9.17	63. US-Syria draft failure shows that all Muslims are the same and none of them is good	
2015.9.24	64. The rogues have their own scampish logic	
2015.10.1	65. Shia is returning to rationality, while Sunni is pure neuropathy, evil, and heresy	
2015.10.24	66. Syria only has the devil with no people	
2015.10.26	67. We should reason with the Islamic heresy before cracking it down	
2015.11.7	68. Mid-air bombing of the Russian aircraft	
2015.11.9	69. Houthis' armed forces should attack Saudi Arabia and overthrow the Saudi Wahhabi evil regime	
2015.11.14	70. It seems that the French can only quell the anger of the Islamic jihad if they worship Allah six times a day and start to eat mutton sausage instead of pork	
2015.11.15	71. Islam shall be defined an illegal cult worldwide	
2015.11.16	72. We should criticise and crack down on Islam fiercely in an ideological sense	
2015.11.17	73. From the views on politics of bombers' mother, Muslims are all the bad guys	

2015.11.19	74. The IS can be called a great hero as it seeks a swift death rather than cravenly cling to life	
2015.11.25	75. They are just playing around in Middle East war	
2015.11.26	76. Analysis of Russian war plane downed by Turkey	
2015.12.1	77. EU financed Turkey $3B for arms to back terrorists	
2015.12.4	78. Analysis of Muslim abstinence from pork	
2015.12.22	79. It is necessary to clear away Islam gradually and systematically	
2016.1.4	80. Death penalty executed by Saudi Arabia is legal	
2016.1.20	81. Saudi Arabia's impenitence	
2016.1.27	82. It's ineffective to have peace talks with Wahhabi heresy	
2016.2.21	83. Syrian Kurds should consolidate so as to end the war	
2016.3.1	84. Anti-foreignism advocated by Ku Klux Klan is the rejection of civilisation to ignorance; terrorist activities of Islam are the hostility of ignorance to civilisation	
2016.4.1	85. God reveals different sections of the truth to different nations	
2016.7.26	86. Help to Muslims is Satan's temptation to believers	
2017.2.11	87. The president of Syria favours the 'Muslim ban', because their country has been deeply afflicted	
2017.2.18	88. Being against Islam and Mexican drug dealers is not racism	
2017.3.22	89. The United Nations insists that to control the expansion of animosity, it is imperative to revise the Koran	
2017.4.8	90. The White Helmets is an Islamic fraud organisation spreading around the world; it specializes in cheating the stupid Westerners	
2017.4.19	91. Free Syrian Army supported by the West trapped and killed sixty-eight children with chips	
2017.5.27	92. England and Egypt have been attacked by terrorism recently, which indicates Muslims are all terrorists	
2017.5.30	93 We need to provide the terrorists with weapons so that they can be killed on the battlefields	
2017.6.7	94. Terrorism Springs Up, Because of Overnutrition and Over Enrichment in the Middle East.	
2017.10.26	95. It Is a Good Thing for Saudi Culture to Embrace Kind and Forsake Darkness for Light.	
	Part 6 **Century Sentence The Western countries true story**	
2013.10.17	1. Respect the interests of all people in all nations	

2013.10.23	2. How long can harmony last?	
2013.10.25	3. North Korea executes artists	
2014.8.12	4. We are too close to America while too far away from God	
2014.8.13	5. Government officials in Mexico cruelly exploit the people, in collusion with gangs	
2014.8.19	6. Territory dispute	
2014.8.19	7. Japan and World War II	
2014.8.21	8. Countries suffering from wars should draw lessons from the China model	
2014.8.22	9. The root of the chaos in the Middle East is the privatisation of public resources	
2014.8.31	10. Death penalty	
2014.9.9	11. Save Africa, save the world	
2014.9.10	12. Japan should immediately destroy Yasukuni Shrine	
2014.9.11	13. Japanese culture	
2014.9.13	14. National secession and independence	
2014.9.20	15. Small countries have no culture	
2014.10.13	16. To cure what's not cured rather than what's cured and to solve what's not solved rather than what's solved	
2014.11.12	17. Extreme countries shall not keep nuclear weapons	
2014.11.27	18. There should be national compensation in Ferguson's case	
2014.12.8	19. Allowing the public to have guns marks the barbarousness and ignorance	
2014.12.11	20. It is just sissy and fake-eunuch to crack down on drug dealers	
2014.12.11	21. The birth of Israel	
2015.1.8	22. Ukraine problem	
2015.1.20	23. The 'Great Vamp' in the Revelation just refers to the system of democracy, freedom, and human rights	
2015.1.23	24. The United States supporting ultra-conservative Islamists of Saudi Arabia is a behaviour that helps devils fight against God	
2015.2.3	25. Socialist in the Middle East	
2015.2.6	26. The entire humanity has different degrees of soul deficiency	
2015.2.15	27. No death sentence for the underworld criminals who kill people is the slut behaviour of Western society to sign agreement with the devil	
2015.3.12	28. Theism and atheism, idealism and materialism	

2015.3.15	29. Each country shall take recognition of this book as prerequisite of politics	
2015.3.16	30. All Mexican drug dealers must be executed	
2015.3.21	31. Wrong appeals of the Arab socialist Ba'ath Party	
2015.3.22	32. It is good for oil price to decline	
2015.3.23	33. UN should support Houthis to exterminate Sunnites	
2015.3.24	34. Two problems to be solved for Israel as a country	
2015.3.28	35. Yemen war Is Islam internal sectarian struggle and other countries need not intervene	
2015.4.8	36. The secular regime stands for material interests, and the theocracy stands for the spirit	
2015.4.10	37. Israel needs a cultural revolution in Palestine	
2015.4.13	38. Render unto Caesar what is Caesar's and unto God what is God's	
2015.4.18	39. The problem of Japan is a matter of consciousness	
2015.4.25	40. Other than the Israelis and Arabians, no one has any authority to inquire into the Palestinian issue	
2015.5.8	41. Western countries need to implement family planning policies to Islam and uncultivated residents	
2015.5.16	42. The United States launching the Middle East war is right	
2015.5.20	43. The left and right of Europe on immigration	
2015.5.22	44. A thorough transformation is required for Africa	
2015.6.16	45. Earthquake in Nepal and Buddhism reform	
2015.6.19	46. The one who went abroad to escape from war is a traitor and shall not be elected as the president	
2015.6.27	47. UAV shall be used to spray herbicide in prohibition of opium	
2015.6.30	48. Gaza international people claim that people on the boat are devils who betray God	
2015.7.9	49. Greek debt crisis completely suggesting the ugliness of human nature under the encouragement of democracy	
2015.7.17	50. The escaping of Mexican drug dealers indicates that governmental officials collide with bandits to do harm to ordinary people under the democratic system	
2015.7.22	51. Human productive relation is changing	
2015.7.27	52. God will punish Israel's enemies	
2015.7.29	53. Homosexuals are the lowest people	
2015.8.4	54. People have the right to commit suicide	

2015.8.10	55. Saddam once said, 'Iraq is nothing without me'	
2015.8.29	56. The world should unify scripts	
2015.8.31	57. The illegal immigrants should be gathered to a Greek island for the unified management	
2015.9.7	58. Democratic countries with negative growth in population will inevitably die out	
2015.10.4	59. Govern without intervention	
2015.10.4	60. Righteousness rises up when great truth is annulled	
2015.10.9	61. EU countries are not obliged to admit refugees	
2015.10.10	62. Promote social responsibilities and social orders—there will be more happiness in this country	
2015.10.17	63. Israel dares not recognise the legitimacy of its occupation of Palestine	
2015.10.21	64. The world has been manipulated by the devil	
2015.10.25	65. Defender of civilisation	
2015.11.17	66. The discussion about left-leaning and right-leaning thoughts on refugee issue	
2015.11.22	67. In the Book of Revelation, the whore refers to America and the Western society that colluded with the Wahhabi cult	
2015.11.24	68. Democratic society is a society led by doggeries	
2015.12.9	69. No one can tell whether a Muslim is a radical	
2015.12.27	70. Matthew effect	
2016.1.6	71. DPRK's nuclear weapons should be limited to self-defence	
2016.1.8	72. The Matthew effect and enforcing justice on behalf of God	
2016.1.16	73. Upholding the honour of one's ancestors, carrying on the family line, and man's superiority to woman	
2016.1.30	74. Polygyny can solve depopulation in Western Countries	
2016.3.5	75. The government should provide a proper platform for trading and adopting infants	
2016.2.25	76. Death penalty should be executed in a civilised way	
2016.6.13	77. Raising dogs without eating their meat belongs to the mushrikeen	
2016.7.18	78. A French leader says that the West needs terrorist attacks more	
2016.8.21	79. View the effect of Philippine drug control from a macroscopic perspective	
2016.8.29	80. To establish a new international organisation with executive capacity and appropriate profitability	

2016.9.3	81. Drug dealers who surrender: they should be allowed to sell organs to others, and then they can be absolved	
2016.9.10	82. With regard to North Korea, we should solve problems, not make problems	
2016.9.21	83. Failure of the German refugee policy proves Westerners' hypocrisy	
2016.10.10	84. It's demon to prevent the civilians fleeing the battlefield. They account for the civilian bombing. The bombers are innocent	
2016.11.10	85. Trump is elected as the president, which means that God is on the side of people and hates human hypocrisy	
2016.11.12	86. The decline of the population and the leftover women are caused by monogyny and feminism, which are behaviour against God	
2016.11.16	87. Intelligent robotisation and social wealth distribution	
2016.12.2	88. The appropriate establishment of the EU shall give priority to the interests of white people	
2017.1.10	89. The founding of Israel is contradictory with homosexuality	
2017.1.16	90. The antagonism of the Western countries is due to the collapse of the free market economy	
2017.1.23	91. Essential difference between populism and Nazism	
2017.2.1	92. Westerners who oppose Trump resemble the great whore riding a beast in Revelation	
2017.2.25	93. The criticism that China destroys American employment is unjustifiable	
2017.3.9	94. About Korea, China shall maintain justice instead of being an ally	
2017.3.20	95. North Korea is an unscrupulous country	
2017.3.31	96. 'No trading, no killing' is poppycock	
2017.4.30	97. The solution to the North Korean issue and other issues is to support one party and defeat the other	
2017.5.12	98. The reason why Western nationalism becomes popular is that Internet and robots have changed the distribution and flow direction of social wealth	
2017.6.1	99. The Paris Climate Agreement is an oppression of vested interests against the poor	
2017.6.6	100. Britain Proposed that Internet Regulation Was Used to Fight the Devil. It Was Only to Capture the Shadow of the Devil, Not the Devil Itself.	
2017.6.25	101. God Created Human Not Intended to Be a Shepherd	
2017.6.29	102. Biological Evolutionism Does Not Conflict with Creationism	
2017.7.3	103. Why Do I Criticize Christian Fundamentalists Who Follow the Teachings of God?	
2017.7.20	104. Reproductive Rights Should Be Transferred in Market to Solve Aging Population Problem.	

2017.8.7	105. India Should Conduct the Land Revolution and Religious Reform to Overthrow the Landlord Class, then Submit to God.	
2017.8.17	106. The News That an American Car Rushed into Crowds Is Fake News	
2017.8.25	107. The Right-wing Forces Are Holy Warriors. They Are Protecting their Homes and Civilizations. They Are Fighting Against the Devil.	
2017.9.3	108. With Five More Nuclear Tests, North Korea Could Be the Permanent Member of the UN.	
2017.9.8	109. It Is Reasonable to Deploy Nuclear Weapons in South Korea.	
2017.9.20	110. God Permits the Total Destruction of North Korea	
2017.9.24	111. All Politicians Are Hoping to Pass the Bomb to the Next One, and No One Is Solving the Problem.	
2017.10.3	112. Americans Need to Purchase More Guns to Keep Them Safe	
2017.11.9	113. Child Marriage Can Effectively Increase the Population	
2018.1.5	114. North Korea's Agreeing to the Negotiation Means They Are Ready to Surrender.	
2018.2.16	115. Doctor of the Western Countries Should Suggest Patients to Take TCM Properly as Complementary Medicine	
2018.3.5	116. Surrogacy Should Be Positively Popularized	
2018.4.1	117. Western Countries Only Can Delay the Perish of Capitalism if They Impede the Development of Internet Economy	
2018.4.4	118. The Difference of Definition for Trade Deficit between China and US	
2018.6.4	119. The Pope Said that Homosexuality Is Born the Way that God Wants Them to.	
2018.9.2	120. The American's Problem Is a Problem of Social System Rather Than the Trade Problem.	
	Part 7 **end the catastrophe of the coronavirus**	
2020.2.15	1、TCM treatment of coronavirus	
2020.3.10	2、In areas where the coronavirus is outbreak, it is basic common sense that all people need to wear masks.	
2020.5.10	3、Westerners can quickly end the catastrophe of the coronavirus	

Part 1

The Stories behind *Century Sentence*

1、My Grandma and I

October 2018

When my father was a teenager, he left Shanghai for Xinjiang to work as an accountant in order to support the construction that was being undertaken at Xinjiang.

My mother was born in Henan and worked as a farmer in Xinjiang. After retirement, my parents went back to Shanghai. Now, they are leading their retired life in Shanghai.

I was born in Xinjiang. My grandma had five children: three sons and two daughters. I am the only boy in the family in my generation. I have female cousins but no male cousins. It can be said that all yang qi of my family is concentrated on me. According to traditional Chinese culture, I am the only person who belongs to the Walker family. I am the only one whose children will bear the family name of Walker. And after my female cousins get married, they will belong to other families whose children won't have the family name of Walker. Therefore, they are not members of the Walker family.

So my grandma liked me very much and thought that I was the only successor of the Walker family. When I was six months old, my grandma took me to Shanghai from Xinjiang. I lived with my grandma since I was little.

I studied in a primary school in Beijing when I was in first and second grades. My older female cousin also studied in that school. I studied in a Shanghai primary school when I was in third grade. I studied in Xinjiang from fourth grade to ninth grade. When I was in ninth grade, I went back to Shanghai according to the policy at that time. Afterwards, I entered high school and, later, college in Shanghai.

My grandma was the person who loved me most. She left everything, including her house, to me.

But my grandma was most strict, particularly with others. She was the highest authority in my family.

My grandma used to beat me with a feather duster and other objects. I have forgotten what mistakes I'd made. I had obeyed her words since I was little, but she still beat me over trivial matters.

My grandma used to point out to me, with tears in her eyes, "Be a good person. Never be a bad person."

I feel I have mental diseases owing to the harm she brought upon me, which can be called "good person paranoia". I have been telling myself, Be a good person. Never be a bad person.

That is why I wrote this book. I should be a good person and not a bad person. I have suffered a lot. I have been wondering why a good person would be treated the way my grandma treated me. I have been making complaints to God. Why does the world treat good people like that? I accused God of all the unfair things in the world and demanded that he answer me.

I will prove to God that his past sayings are all wrong. I want to accuse the whole world.

My book records the communication between God and me, including God's answers.

2、I Have Been Proving My Correctness since I Was Little

October 2018

I had two discussions with my physics teachers about exercise when I was in middle school and high school. I finally achieved academic victory. All my classmates corrected my academic problem.

I know I have different understandings than others have. I am the only person whose viewpoints are correct.

My second-oldest uncle is a book lover. He is a common worker, but he has many books. Sometimes, I would take a few books from him.

I have read many ancient texts, including the Diamond Sutra, the Bible, the Tao Te Ching, the Koran, the Yellow Emperor's Inner Canon, *Capital*, and *The Selected Works of Mao Zedong*. Except for the Book of Changes, I could discern the authors' intentions easily. But ordinary people tend to misunderstand the intentions of the authors, which leads to serious social problems.

Those books, including ones about communism and capitalism, are instructions from God. And people's misunderstanding of the major problems laid out in the books leads to serious social conflicts.

After reading those books in high school, I gradually understood the main viewpoints and the authors' intentions through subsequent social practice. I gradually figured out the root causes of the social conflicts of the times and their solutions.

3、The Tiananmen Incident, 1989

October 2018

When I was in high school in 1989, there was a democratic movement called the June 4 Rebellion in China. It was the most important democratic event, and the largest social conflict, in modern Chinese history.

At that time, I was a good student and an absolutely good person.

Mao Zedong claimed that he supported democracy. Students' movements are positive examples of opposing feudalism and oppression, or so it is said in Chinese textbooks. It was the May Fourth Movement that led to the success of the Communist Party. That is what is said in our textbooks.

So I think that the student protesters were correct in what they'd done and had acted in a positive manner. But according to what we were taught in school at that time, the Communist Party and the country, not the student protesters, were correct.

We'd been taught that it was the Communist Party who had freed people from oppression. Communism, we were told, achieves social fairness, justice, and resource sharing. That is definitely correct. But the two camps of social thinking had a serious conflict on June 4.

I saw the protesters beat a few soldiers to death and burn their bodies. That image will retain in my mind forever.

What happened to Chinese society? Why had such a serious social conflict developed? That is a problem I have been thinking about.

After the Tiananmen Square incident, I entered a college. I thought too much, and my thinking was out of control. I could not stop thinking no matter if it was daytime or night-time. I could not hear what my teachers were talking about in class.

The situation became more and more serious, and many different thoughts gushed from my brain. In one midterm examination period, I failed in almost all my courses. According to the provisions of the school, I was required to drop out. At the last moment, I went to my dean for help. After learning about my situation, he suggested that I to go see a neurologist for a physical examination.

I was diagnosed with serious neurasthenia. The doctor suggested that I take one year off from school. By following his advice, I avoided dropping out.

For the rest of my problems, I asked a qigong master for help. An amazing thing happened after I began practising qigong. I felt I could control my previously unstoppable brain, and my body was

restored to balance. But I still felt fatigued frequently and could not focus. After writing an article or reading a few pages, I would be tired and wanting to sleep.

4、I Had a Total 0.17 Million Yuan of Debt after Graduation Owing to Business Failure

October 2018

I graduated in 1995. I wanted practice with people and contact with society, so I found some jobs related to promotion. I worked as a cemetery salesman, a food salesman, an office equipment salesman, an office equipment repairman, the boss of a public telephone company, a trainee of art wares, the boss of a printing shop, and a leafleter.

I worked hardest when I was a promotion worker. At one of my jobs in promotion, I biked twelve hours every day. After I'd finished with that job, I learned how to repair copiers and other office equipment and worked as a copier repairman, which was a popular industry at that time.

Afterwards, I founded an office equipment company with others. One year later, I registered a company and became the boss. That was the beginning of a nightmare. Because I always required myself to be a good person, I treated my workers very well, providing them with food and board and teaching them techniques and promotion skills. I trained them every day. But after mastering the techniques, they quit their jobs and founded their own companies. And they grabbed my clients.

At that point I would recruit more workers. I would teach them techniques and promotion skills and train them every day. After mastering techniques and sales skills, all of them founded their own businesses.

Soon I ran out of money. I borrowed 20,000 renminbi (RMB) from my grandma, RMB 20,000 from my aunt, more than RMB 100,000 from my friends, and RMB 30,000 from other source.

At that time, I was the president of the Huangpu Military Academy in the printing industry in Shanghai. After learning techniques and sales skills and learning how to get customers, my students left me, bought house and cars, got married, and bore children. But I had a debt of RMB 170,000. Fifteen years later, I sold the house that my grandma had left me, then I paid off my debt.

Time went fast. I only had RMB 2,000 in my pocket and the debt of RMB 170,000.

5、 My Tearful Farewell to My Ex-Wife

October 2018

At that time, I had no options and thought only how to solve my dilemma. Then I came up with a good idea—marriage.

Since back then I was a handsome thirty-year-old man, I decided to post a marriage-seeking and recruitment advertisement.

The advertisement was rather attractive: “A thirty-year-old employer in a private company with house and property seeks to recruit an assistant and seeks a marriageable mate immediately.”

Many people came to me for a time, but I did not like any of them. But then one morning when we had a company meeting, a young woman pushed the door to come inside and asked us whether the company was currently recruiting assistants. That young woman later became my wife (and later still became my ex-wife).

She smiled at me. I asked her to sit down, and then I drove others out the door. I spoke with this young woman.

From the conservation, I learned that her family also did business and that she herself was from a noble family in the imperial lineage of the former Qing dynasty. In the past, she would have been called a princess. In addition, she was still a virgin.

I thought that probably she was the right one for me. Given that she used to be an employer, she could help me better organize my company. By virtue of the power of her family, I could more easily get along with people inside the company. Actually, she also had superior qualities in many other respects. I liked her very much, and I saw in her eyes that she also had love for me.

We had a rapidly moving love affair and got married lightning-fast. As said by one of my apprentices, “We all knew that you were about to get married, but we still feel surprised at this. We originally thought that you might get married after several months.”

My fiancée and I indeed astonished everyone.

My wife loved me very much. When I had been acquainted with her for three days, I asked her to help me manage my corporation’s finances and gave all my money to her—RMB 1,200. She was rather surprised that the company had such a small amount of funds, but she did not look down upon me.

When I run across a woman who really loves me, she cannot refuse me. Therefore, this young woman and I quickly fell in love with each other. We dined together, walked in the garden

together, and chatted with each other. A few days after we'd met, we had sexual relations and announced that we were engaged to be married.

Do not think that I am telling a pornographic story? Actually, this is a very cruel tragedy.

I ran across a woman who loved me very much, and we got married and continued to love each other. But three years later, in order to write this book and finish the mission God had given me, I abandoned my wife. We eventually bid farewell to each other in tears.

When I got married, my business took an upwards turn and realized substantial profits. However, three months after our marriage, I was suddenly arrested by police in Shanghai.

In addition to the debt of RMB 170,000, I owed RMB 200 to the telephone company. The telephone company demanded that I repay RMB 900, which included a large penalty for the bill's being overdue, one year later. I thought it rather irrational, and more importantly, I did not have RMB 900 available. Consequently, the telephone company filed a lawsuit against me, and the court ordered me to repay the charge. But I'd refused the sentence.

Therefore, the court dispatched two policemen to arrest me. They took me to the detention house. I will not forget my day in the detention house.

When I stepped into the room, the person in charge immediately asked me why I had been arrested. I smiled at him and explained that I owed RMB 200 to the Telecommunications Bureau and refused to pay them the RMB 900 they were demanding.

He asked how it was that I was so handsome and still owed other people and why I was smiling. Afterwards, he said, "I dislike you. Fellows, beat him. Beat him hard!"

At once, more than twenty prisoners in the room started to beat me. I felt that my entire torso was nearly broken. After they beat me, they poured cold water on me. I could hardly tolerate such humiliation and knelt down to beg the man in charge to set me free.

The head threatened me, "Do not smile again; otherwise, I will beat you one more time. Make a face for us now."

I could only follow his order.

At that moment, I swore that if I were to walk out of there someday, I would definitely accuse all of the world in front of God.

The thing I do today is to practise the promise I'd made in jail—to accuse all the world. I titled my book *Century Sentence* and added the subtitle *A Diary Written to God, Accusing All the World*.

My wife saved me from jail on the second day. I am really grateful to my now ex-wife, and I love

her very much. She married me after I'd moved down in the world, and she saved me from jail in an emergency.

Such emotion cannot be measured by money. My ex-wife is the person who treats me best and loves me the most in the world, like my grandmother did when she was alive.

In 2004, I and my wife bought our public rental house and made it our private property. My grandmother lived in Anhui at that time. After learning the news, she asked me to return to Anhui and refused to add the name of my wife to the property ownership certificate. My grandmother insisted on adding my name and her own name to the certificate instead. Therefore, she asked that I go back home to see the house property notary. The notary declared that the house was my personal property irrespective of my wife.

When I returned to Shanghai, I discussed this matter with my wife. Although she was very unhappy, she complied. We went to the notary office to apply for the property notary.

The notary later played a decisive and crucial role in the publication of *Century Sentence*.

The house was not available to my wife, and our copier repair business was doing worse as the market changed. We could no longer make money. We had to find a new business. We have set up several businesses, but all of them had failed.

These two reasons led to the intensification of my conflict with my wife, and finally I had to divorce under the pressure of her family.

Although we divorced, my personal relationship with my ex-wife is still good. We continue to live together, and she suggests that we have a baby.

After our marriage, when my wife thought about having children, I refused for various reasons. There was always a voice telling me that if I had a baby, I wouldn't be able to do what God had told me to do and I wouldn't be able to finish the *Century Sentence*. If I had children, I would have no time or energy to write or study. Time and energy should be spent on the child. And the thing I hate most is the sound of a baby crying.

Once I hear the cry of a child, my head explodes. Nothing can be done about this. Children are demons to me. So I'm most afraid of having a baby.

So during the half-year I lived with my wife, I refused to have a child because I had some minor problems. She and I eventually bid farewell to each other in tears.

All I had to do was ask my wife to stay and say that my house would be half hers, and then she would have stayed. But God told me that this house could not be given to my wife because it would be needed to finish *Century Sentence*. So I didn't ask my wife to stay. So to speak, I turned her away.

Another reason I left my wife had to do with energy. When I get close to, within a certain distance of, people, especially women, I experience some bad effects.

I have lived with my ex-wife for three years, and we have been together every day. We hold hands when we go out, and we hug when we go to bed. We had a great relationship. Physically I liked my ex-wife very much.

But I never told anyone that mentally, I am like a steak in a pan every day. I'd been cooking this steak for three years since I'd met my ex-wife.

It is not just my ex-wife, but all people, especially women. As soon as you get close to me, I become greatly disturbed. I lose energy, and I become very uncomfortable.

I like beautiful women very much, but I am also very afraid of them. Their bad influence on me makes me very angry.

So if you have anything to tell me, you can tell me. If you have finished what you want to say, please leave now. Don't try to get close to me.

Leaving my wife was a relief to me. I will never go back to my ex-wife. But I am very grateful to her. I love her very much.

Sometimes when I think of my ex-wife, I cry.

Why did God let me do such a difficult thing? My ex-wife loves me so much. What reason did I have for abandoning her?

God told me that if I didn't leave her, that if I didn't write the *Century Sentence*, a great many people all over the world would die. This was nothing compared to one person's happiness and gain. So I had no choice.

I told my wife when we were separating, "God sent you to help me through this difficult time. Now that your mission is complete, you can go." She was very unhappy, though she was understanding.

I promised my ex-wife that if I ever got rich, I would repay her.

So if any of you ever meet my ex-wife, please help her and her family. I promised her that I would continue to love her, and I appreciate her.

6、Advice Offered to Reform State-Owned Enterprises

October 2018

I am devoted to business for certain reasons. I attempt to find out which of Marx's doctrines, and whether or not his theories about capitalism, are accurate. I test these ideas with my views and with practise, according to my cognition level.

I am a good man, and I plan to find out if a good man will be well rewarded in doing business.

In April 2004, when the new Chinese national leader came to power, there was a test, the Tieben Event. I came up with an inspiration all of a sudden as if being compelled by God. The questions I had been pondering all seemed to have been answered, so I had to write down the inspiration immediately.

I have written five articles on the reform of state-owned enterprises in China. The major economists in China at the time appealed to sell out all the state-owned enterprises, while my proposal to reform state-owned enterprises by separating the right to management from ownership is exactly the opposite in nature. I proposed to strengthen the management of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of China (CPC) as relating to the ownership of state-owned enterprises and to completely liberalize the management right of state-owned enterprises.

I broadly disbursed the five articles by sending letters and emails to each national committee and government authority which was attached with great importance to the Central Committee of the CPC.

Someone from Central Party School of the Communist Party of China invited me to post my articles in the school forum.

A few days later, it was displayed in the headline of the website State-Owned Assets Supervision and Administration Commission of the State Council that the reform directive of state-owned enterprises was to separate the right of management and ownership instead of selling out. I argued that the government should stop the privatization reform of state-owned enterprises.

At the very moment that state-owned enterprises and the ruling foundation of the CPC were to be thoroughly destroyed, I offered national-scale advice to China which instantly reversed the situation for the state-owned enterprises that were about to be sold out, maintained the ruling foundation of the CPC, and strengthened the CPC's comprehensive and scientific control over state-owned enterprises.

Furthermore, the reform directive of state-owned enterprises to separate the right of management and ownership has survived up to today and has become the most basic condition

of, and the foundation for, Chinese political stability, highly efficient economic development, and scientific national governance.

Without my proposal to separate the right of management and ownership of state-owned enterprises, China would have been in chaos for a long time, similar to or even worse than the chaos the Soviet Union experienced after dissolution.

The national operation model I proposed to the Chinese government in 2004 is exactly the national operation model that can be promoted worldwide. I hope that the whole world can refer to this Chinese model and execute it.

This model is named as the China model. I proposed the design concept of the China model. In other words, I was the behind-the-scenes chief designer.

In addition, I have witnessed China operating according to this model for dozens of years, so I know all the secrets of this model. Today, I am here to divulge the original code of this model to the whole world. You can modify the code in accordance with your real-life situations and to fit your national development demands.

I had been thinking of why there was such a huge conflict between students, the CPC, and the government in the time period of the Tiananmen Square event. Which of these parties was right? Now I can tell you my answer.

The contradiction between the student movement and the Communist Party boils down to the contradiction between capitalism and communism, that is, between democratic freedom and social governance.

The student movement accentuates democratic freedom and completely ignores social governance.

Certainly, it is wrong that sometimes the Communist Party overemphasizes social governance and social order while totally overlooking democratic freedom.

For a society that runs on sound scientific governance, democratic freedom and social governance are complementary rather than contradictory.

Social governance, social order, and social justice are the pillars of a country and a society, and they make up the skeleton of the society and the framework of the basic structure. Democratic freedom is the body, muscles, blood, fat, and internal organs of a society.

Therefore, it cannot be called wrong that the student movement expressed public opinion in the Tiananmen Square event, but the movement should have been temperate and should have shown respect to social governance and government authority. That is to say, expressing the public opinion should not have gone any further than necessary. A timely retreat would have

prevented the subsequent tragedy.

The Tiananmen Square event evolved to the point where it went beyond expressing public opinion to expression the hope of coercing or even overthrowing the government.

Some of the protesters burned soldiers alive, which was enough to evidence the illegality of their actions.

As a result, the government took some necessary measures.

To realize social governance, social fairness and justice, and scientific management of a society entails untold money, because fairness and justice cannot be manipulated by people, and fairness and justice cannot be measured by money, nor can they be bought and distorted by money.

State-owned capital plays a decisive role in ensuring fairness and justice, realizing the scientific management of society, giving play to the supporting function of social operation.

My theory is to use the wealth created by God to realize the law of God, to realize the fairness and justice of a society, and to realize the scientific management of society.

In my theory, some monopolistic enterprises and resource-based enterprises, as well as public ownership of land, provide sufficient funds for the scientific social management of government, so that the government is able to operate independently and is no longer subject to capitalists and taxpayers.

Besides, the government must operate independently in accordance with the principles of fairness, justice, and scientific management.

Private ownership and democracy is the effective complement to the government. Both need to develop soundly and vigorously.

Fairness and justice at the national level can truly protect the private property of citizens.

The government takes advantage of a large amount of state-owned capital to guide and adjust the economy running towards scientific growth. This is also the benefit of the government framework for the private economy. The two complement each other.

The Practical Application of Marx's Theory of Exploitation

Marx believes that public ownership is superior to private ownership because public ownership eliminates exploitation.

After practising as a boss for many years, I have figured this out. This assertion of Marx cannot be deemed completely wrong, nor can it be seen as being completely correct. It holds water under

certain conditions:

1) Broadly defined exploitation and narrowly defined exploitation

Any act of possessing surplus value is called exploitation. This is what is known as broadly defined exploitation.

In narrowly defined exploitation, labourers are paid a wage recognized by both parties in the process of hiring labour, which is not called exploitation. Forced labour, in which the labourer does not recognize the labour price, is narrowly defined exploitation, for example sex slaves or slavery.

2) Relative and absolute exploitation

Absolute exploitation, similar to narrowly defined exploitation, refers to exploitation in the form of forced labour. If there is an agreement in advance and the boss pays wages as the labour contract stipulates, then it is not forced labour.

An example of relative exploitation is to be found in two companies that sell the same product, employ the same workers, and produce the same products and surplus value, but one is a state-owned enterprise and the other is a private enterprise.

The owner of the private enterprise takes the surplus value of the company, several billion yuan, to pay dividends to shareholders and himself. This is a legal act because the surplus value of the private sector is owned by the shareholders.

When the same behaviour occurs in state-owned enterprises, for example the employers of state-owned enterprises distribute billions to themselves and senior executives without the state's permission, this is a corrupt act. Because state-owned enterprises are owned by the state and the money earned by state-owned enterprises also belongs to the state (i.e. it is state-owned capital), the bosses of state-owned enterprises have no right to give themselves bonuses or benefits.

The profit of state-owned enterprises is used by the state for social governance and operation. The more money a state-owned enterprise makes, the greater the interests of the people are. This is a boon for the people of the whole society.

The profits of a private company are owned by its owners and shareholders. No matter how much money a private company makes, it has nothing to do with the national. No other national can enjoy any benefit from the profitability of the private sector. This situation only widens the gap between the rich and the poor.

Compared to developing state-owned enterprises, developing private enterprises bring far fewer benefits to the public. Therefore we say that private enterprises carry out relative exploitation.

From the perspective of relative exploitation, the scientific development of state-owned enterprises is in the best interests of the people. But the vast majority of people do not understand it. This is an expression of human ignorance. It is the main point of my book, *Century Sentence*.

The foregoing represent my main views on China's state-owned enterprise reform since 2004. My theoretical contributions have been recognized by the government and have been followed since I made the proposal.

In 2004, I stopped the sale of six hundred billion New Taiwan dollars' worth of US arms to Taiwan. A world war was prevented.

In October 2004, I was informed that Taiwan planned to spend six hundred billion New Taiwanese dollars to buy arms from the United States. If such a plan were implemented, considering China's policy towards Taiwan, it would inevitably have led to a war across the strait, and the United States would certainly have participated in the war. With the strength of China at that time, it was impossible to win a war against the United States. A direct confrontation with the nuclear power would have catastrophic and devastating to the while world.

By God's grace, I immediately wrote an article titled "Let's Make Up" and emailed it to hundreds of thousands of people in Taiwan. Back then the network did not have a filtering system for email. After I sent that email, the people instantly received it.

My article exerted a huge amount influence on the Taiwanese people. Dramatically, the arms purchase was cancelled. Moreover, representatives of the Kuomintang came to the mainland for a friendly visit. The president of Taiwan at the time, Chen Shui-bian, was sent to prison and has not been released yet. The Kuomintang won the next election, and Ma Ying-jeou came to power.

This was the result of sending an email at the most critical moment for humankind. I stopped the war and saved all your lives. You can find the article "Let's Make Up" in *Century Sentence, Book 2.*

7、My Grandma Passed Away in 2005

October 2018

Shortly after I divorced my wife, my grandma returned to Shanghai because of illness. Accompanying my grandma were my two aunts. They said that Grandma had inflammation and needed to be operated on. They asked me to sell my house so that Grandma could afford to get medical treatment.

My business had failed at the time. I didn't have a job then, and my physical condition was not good. Moreover, I had given all the money my wife and I had earned during the course of our marriage to my ex-wife.

When I divorced my wife, we split our property. After we'd done the calculations, it became clear that she had helped me pay some debts and buy a house. Moreover, in the previous few years, her parents had been helping us do business wholeheartedly. So it was reasonable to give them some of the money left in our bank account.

I was penniless at the time my grandma was ill, and I had nothing other than the house, the property under my name, to rely on. If I were to sell the house, I would have nothing. So I was unwilling to sell the house.

After a few weeks, we learned that Grandma's inflammation turned out to be advanced cancer. The doctor suggested that my grandmother should not have any operation since she was already ninety-seven years old.

Then all my grandmother's children came to Shanghai to say goodbye to my grandma. My relatives were very dissatisfied that I had gotten the house. But I would not agree to sell the house, and they could not do anything.

My grandma was the person who loved me the most in the world. When all of the family members disapproved of me, she still stood by my side, even at the cost of her life. This is what a relative of mine told me later.

I was penniless when my grandma was dying. I couldn't do nothing but watch her decline day by day.

Those who are nearest to me and love me the most were hurt by me the deepest.

The only thing I could do was to lie next to my grandma for a while. This was what little comfort I could offer.

In a few days, my grandma passed away.

When I rushed back to see her body, I found that her eyes remained open, and no one could make her eyes stay closed. I looked at her and felt that she had not left. So I said to the people in the room, “You all go out. I have something to say to my grandma alone.”

Holding my grandmother’s hand, I said to her, “Grandma, God has sent me on a mission. Everything I’ve done is not for myself. I am for all. If you see God, he will tell you all this. Just go well.”

I felt that my grandmother listened to what I had said and really left. I covered her eyes gently, at which time her eyes closed.

8、Organizing Drafts into Articles from 2005 to 2007

October 2018

After my grandma's funeral, my relatives left, leaving me alone in the empty house.

I rented out the house and then rented a smaller house elsewhere, using the difference in rents as my living allowance. I discussed national events with various people on the Internet. While having intense debates with various types of netizens, I organized my speeches into articles.

Since 2007, the Chinese government has strictly controlled online speech. Any article that did not meet their criteria was deleted, and many forums were closed. Most of my articles were deleted from the Internet. Luckily, I had organized them, and most of my articles were stored on my computer.

I didn't think there was anything worth discussing on the Internet, so I started looking for a job.

9、Becoming Iron-Willed through Repeated Rough Experiences at an Insurance Company

October 2018

In the second half of 2007, I was employed by a state-owned insurance company.

At that time, insurance companies offered the darkest and most terrible job prospects. There was no basic salary, no pension, no medical insurance, and no social security for the salesmen, who had only marketing tasks to complete.

Of course, there are also high-income people in insurance companies. As long as the right methods are applied, one can earn some money. My teacher was a very good salesperson. I followed my teacher to start working as a salesman. It took me six years to be appointed as a sales manager. I had led a team of seventy people at most.

We had a variety of trainings every week, every month, and every year, mainly on negotiation skills, product learning, and team management.

I joined the insurance company mainly because it offered a most challenging profession that allowed me to contact the greatest number of people. I needed to reach out to a wide variety of people to understand this society. I needed to negotiate with a wide variety of people to develop my own negotiating skills and an ability to communicate with others. Meanwhile, I also exercised my ability to speak publicly.

These were all things I wanted to learn. I deliberately chose to exercise my abilities in an extremely challenging environment that was both rough and complex.

Looking back, I see that I had not been able to make ends meet previously. It was only when I worked in the insurance company that I made a little money. I was very grateful to my teacher in the company.

I had learned the importance of respecting the teacher in the insurance company. Although I had a little friction with my teacher, I did everything I could to save face with her. Du Yuesheng, modern China's former number one Shanghai gangster, once said that life's three elements are (1) respectful feelings, (2) respect in public, and (3) face-saving. I gave them all to my teacher.

So I maintained an excellent private relationship with my teacher, who had helped me out of many difficulties.

In the two years I served as a manager, I gave forty thousand yuan back to my aunt and also paid off the debts I owed to several friends.

God told me that I would never again in this lifetime owe anyone money. Only others would owe me.

10、I Built My Personal Website and Promoted It All Over the World in 2013

October 2018

I worked as a manager of the insurance company in 2012, and it was a special year. It was allegedly the end of the world. That year was very strange. I felt that someone was supervising me during that period.

However, I was very busy every day, leading my team to sell insurance products. I didn't do anything weird, so there was nothing about me to be monitored.

In July 2013, I opened my own personal website, organized all my articles and uploaded them, and promoted the website to the world.

Although I didn't know who had viewed my website, I felt that it began to have an international influence. What I wrote on the website would be known to important people around the world.

I kept writing my diary on my website. I also wrote my thoughts and made comments about some important events around the world on the website. I would tell God about these things, and people from all over the world would give me positive responses.

11、The Islamic State Madly Killed People, and I Stood Up for Justice

October 2018

On August 20, 2014, when I learned about the atrocities of the Islamic State on television, I was furious. I wrote an article essentially yelling at the Islamic State.

The next day I saw President Obama saying on TV, “God does not support the Islamic State, and their ideology is bankrupt.”

For the first time, I clearly felt God’s response to me. And it was so fast and so determined that I felt God was very close to me.

As you can see from later developments, the United States–led countries established an alliance against the Islamic State and began to bomb them. After that, the Islamic State embarked on the road to destruction. They have basically disappeared now.

From that point on, I wrote intensively against Islamic extremism and criticized the allies of Islamic extremist forces in Western countries. My articles were mainly comments on Islam and my take on what happened in Western countries.

Not only did I upload the articles I wrote to my website, but also, when something critical happened in the world, I translated my articles into English and Arabic to spread them widely on the network.

I found that whenever I distributed these articles, the relevant countries would respond accordingly and make changes. The political situation in the world would change in turn, and positive changes would take place in the direction I wanted.

The purpose of spreading my articles is to convince people to stop supporting the devil and doing the wrong things. I hope to correct people’s wrong thinking and practices. We should concentrate on fighting against the devil if we want to save the world.

In fact, I did this myself. God helped me. God supported me.

The articles I wrote appear in edited form in *Century Sentence*, and each article appears under a general subhead that indicates the month and year in which it was written. You can verify everything I have said and see how God supported my points of view by looking at the time of writing, my ideas, and the subsequent dramatic changes in the world’s political situation.

- After August 2014, my comments were mainly related to Islam and Western countries.
- I mainly commented on and paid attention to the war in Syria. I supported Syrian

government forces when they began to retreat and were about to perish. Now they have regained control of the situation.

- I proposed that Yemen needed to start a war to fight against extreme Islam. It declared war immediately.

- I proposed that China help Syria. As a result, Russia immediately sent troops to Syria.

- I proposed that Trump should be elected president of the United States.

- I proposed that Iran and North Korea should not have nuclear weapons. Then Iran signed a nuclear agreement.

- I criticized North Korea and asked China to draw a line in the sand with North Korea. I wrote several articles about North Korea.

- I criticized Turkey for helping Islamic extremists.

- I proposed to defend the Kurds against Islamic extremists.

- I proposed that Saudi Arabia return to moderate Islam.

12、In 2015, I Sold My House and Published *Century Sentence*

October 2018

In the second half of 2015, I sold the house that my grandma had left me. When I got the money, I first paid a large sum I owed to a friend, including interest. Then I began to prepare for the publication of *Century Sentence*. I started to contact publishing houses in 2016. The publishers said that my book was politically sensitive in nature and that these kinds of books were not allowed to be published in China. They said that my book could only be published overseas.

I found an overseas agent and asked him to help me publish this book abroad. So I started to translate all my articles into English, and I proofread the articles. I spent a lot of money on having the articles translated and publishing the book and a long time proofreading my articles. Finally, *Century Sentence* was published in November 2016.

I asked my agent to help me advertise and promote the book, but he said that he was very busy and refused my request.

When I published *Century Sentence* the first time, I saw it for sale on Amazon. I was very happy. I thought that people would buy my book, but no one made a purchase.

In June 2017, I decided to personally contact the publishers, advertise myself, and republish my book. I added a lot of new articles to the updated version.

I spent almost all my money and suffered many setbacks in my work. I just want to meet everyone today and provide them with the opportunity to know me and my book.

I have not done anything else in this life apart from writing this book. I am completing the task that God has given to me. I hope you enjoy my book.

I believe that my book can bring wealth, happiness, and the love of God to all who read it.

Part 2

The Author Answers Questions from Reporters

Questions Raised by the First Reporter

October 2018

1、What do you have to say about your book?

On the topic of my religious faith, I have this to say:

After I arrived in the Philippines, a friend asked me a very interesting question: “What is your religious faith?”

I said, “I have no religious faith, or I believe in all religions.” But to say it more exactly, I believe in all religions. That states it in clear words. I believe in one God.

The principle is simple. All religions agree that God created the world. And we all know that all of us are living on earth; we are living in this world. We are living in the same space and time, so the space and time above this earth was created by one God.

We are from different nations, different races, and different cultures, as well as different religions. However, in reality, all religions believe in the same God.

In my opinion, Islam, Christianity, Buddhism, and Taoism in China, the mainstream and acknowledged religions, believe in the same God.

Also, I believe that communism and capitalism are enlightened ideas that have come to humankind from our God. It is God’s will that some countries and some people believe in capitalism and that some countries and some people believe in communism.

Islam, Christianity, Buddhism, Taoism, communism, and capitalism are very useful; they are the expression of great truth to the human race. And I believe that something that can be called the great truth can’t be created by any individual but only by our God.

No individual, no matter how clever he or she is, can create any part of the great truth and convince people all around the world of it. This is impossible. Only God can create the great truth.

This book talks about the great truth.

I believe everybody knows the story of 2012 being the end of the world. Why did this story appear?

As the great truth has been taught by our God, with the great truth including the tenets of Islam,

Christianity, Buddhism, and Taoism, it has been passed down from generation to generation for two thousand to three thousand years. All supernatural power from these religions has disappeared.

At the beginning of any of these religions, the religion could coordinate social relations. However, after thousands of years, the supernatural power has now disappeared.

So 2012 was thought to be the end of the world, as the religions created by God could not play their roles anymore. That's why it was called the end of the world.

At present we are standing in the end time of religion, the time when the supernatural power of religion will disappear.

So the world we are standing in now is full of confusion and disasters.

Why is it that these disasters have appeared just as the supernatural power of religions has disappeared?

God gave me a mission to share with other people my wish that everyone on earth will build a new faith and come to a new consensus, the likes of which is written about in my book.

If you were to ask me what faith I am trying to get you to accept, I would say that I have not created any faith; I just have settled all faiths that God has expressed to us.

The *Century Sentence* series is around one thousand pages in length. In this book, I have criticized all countries of the world, everything that exists, and every aspect of every religion that I do not think is good.

I always criticize people, but I rarely praise people.

However, it's strange that I have praised the Philippine president Mr Duterte in my diary. And I have reserved my best comments for President Duterte. I say that he is Saint Seiya delivered by God to save us.

Who is Saint Seiya? He is the soldier of God, the warrior protecting God, maintaining fairness and justice.

God delivered President Duterte to help the Philippine people root out evil.

A few days ago, I stayed in Manila for a few hours. I took a taxi and circled around to view the living conditions of people in Manila. I spent three hours viewing Manila. I went to the governmental hall of Manila, Chinatown, the largest hotel, and the most crowded shopping mall, and so on.

When I was in the taxicab, I asked the driver, “Do you think the city you are living in is safe?”

The driver answered me very quickly: “Since Duterte became our president, Manila has become the world’s safest city.” He said he likes President Duterte very much.

The driver didn’t know who I was. He did not know that I would give a speech on the radio that day. He thought that I was just an ordinary Chinese tourist, so I believe what he said is the expression of the true will of the people.

In my writings, I rarely praise others. I have praised President Duterte and Donald John Trump.

Before Trump was selected as the president I have since praised, I wished he would be the president, and I wrote many articles to that effect. During Trump’s presidential campaign and before he was president, I wrote many articles praising him.

One of my articles was selected and used by Trump’s son. For example, in my book you will read an article on the topic of the toxic apple. That term was altered by the younger Trump to read “toxic rainbow”. The Rainbow Hall prosecuted the younger Trump.

The basic argument and content of Trump’s son’s article is the same as my article. If you are interested in this, please find this article in this book to verify what I have said.

I also have praised Bashar al-Assad, president of Syria. In his most difficult time, when everybody thought he would fail, I supported him and praised him, believing he would succeed.

Assad represents secular society, whereas those who oppose him in the war represent Islamic extremism. I believe that Islamic extremism is evil, so I insisted on supporting Assad.

I think the most outstanding example of God supporting me is that I forced North Korea to give up on the use of force and remain at peace with South Korea. Why would Donald Trump be such a strong influence on North Korea? Why would the Chinese government give up on protecting North Korea? Why would Russia give up on protecting North Korea?

Do you not feel there is something strange about this?

Why would everyone in the world be against North Korea, with no country daring to help North Korea? Because I asked them to do this.

On my website and in my book, I published a lot of articles about North Korea. My influence was one hundred times stronger than Trump’s.

I named North Korea as an evil country, saying that if North Korea refused to capitulate, then God would destroy the country completely.

So all countries of the world were quiet. No country dared to help North Korea anymore. North Korea was lonely without any help, so they capitulated. They were forced to concede because of my pressure.

Of course, if North Koreans change their minds and switch to the right side, God will forgive them. God will also love North Korea and Kim Jong-un.

I write my opinions about the world in my diary so as to report to God.

As a result, God reads my diary and gives me affirmative answers.

Basically, all that I have written in my diary has come true. I think it is very strange. Why does God believe in me to such a great degree?

For example, I supported the Assad regime when it was at a low. The consequence was that the regime stabilized. It is not an effective thing to oppose Assad's regime no matter how many people are against it. Because God supports me and God believes in me, God will help the Assad regime.

All I wrote in the diary will be approved by God.

Each of my diary entries is accompanied by the date of writing. You can look in my book or on my website, find what was happening in the world at the time, read what is written in my diary, and see the changes that took place in the world after my writing.

How does God support me? You can verify that he does by looking in my book or on my website.

I think there are too many people who love to tell tall tales or speak nonsense. And Westerners like to do experiments to verify something.

I welcome you to verify that what I am saying is true. You can look at each of my diary entries to determine whether my predictions came true and find what things were like before and after what I'd said would happen happened if you wish to discover God's attitude towards me.

You may think that one or two coincidences don't prove anything, but if a coincidence occurs every time, should it not be determined that God is with me?

God definitely and totally believes in me and cooperates with me.

I don't dare to say that I'm the envoy of the God, because then someone will ask to see my license. They will say, "Show me the license that God has issued to you." Which I can't do, obviously. I don't know whether God gives me a license or not. Why does he choose me to do such things?

What I can do is only suggest that you do your experiments to prove my words true. Look at the changes in the world after my writing. All are proven and judged by scientific logic, right?

The result you get from your scientific experiments, whether it be that God supports me or not, is your scientific conclusion. It's not my nonsense, and I don't need to show you a license from God.

2、Why did you publish it?

I had no choice. God guided me.

3、When you were still writing the manuscript, had you ever thought not to publish the book?

Since my junior high school years, I have found that my ideas are different from others. In my mind, I hear someone always talking to me, telling me I need to write a book and distribute it across the world.

When something happens to me, I will not stop thinking about it until I find the answers. For instance, the Chinese political event that happened in 1989 was a very serious political conflict. How were the Chinese Communist Party representing the benefits of ordinary people and the students representing democratic revolution compatible?

When I have some thoughts, I write them down. What I think is not only about the political conflict; it is also about everything that has happened in human history that has been thought, written down, and studied.

I clear up all these events through the articles in my book.

In other words, it has taken my whole life to write this book, and the book can be widely distributed. This has always been my life's dream.

4、Why do you want to spread the word or the message?

I think God dispatched me to save everyone on earth. I always work for God and save the world, just nobody knows it. I work secretly.

I just want to tell you today that I have succeeded. What I want to do today is to announce to the world how I work, how I save the world. I hope you will prove that what I say is true by studying my book, my website, and my diary.

5、Did someone help you to finish the book?

Every word in this book was written by me and then translated by a translation company. This book has magical power. No one dares read it, never mind write it.

This series of books has over three hundred articles, and the translation required about one hundred translators. One person refused to translate my articles, and someone even called the police after reading my book.

When I was writing this book, I prayed that no terrorists would find me.

If someone wants to kill me because of this book, just come; I don't mind. Because of all the people and all the things that have let me down, and because of everyone who doesn't like me, I can leave the world at any time. I don't mind.

6、Why are you concerned with the people?

I think that if I don't do this, nobody will do this. If I don't say something, then nobody will say anything. If I didn't do these things, the world would be ruined.

Actually, I have prevented many wars and saved the lives of everyone on earth. I prevented an attack on China, a war in Korea, and a war in the Middle East.

7、If you end up having one hundred copies of your book printed, how will you use them?

I hope I can send one copy each to one hundred libraries so that more people can read it.

8、As author of this book, what made you decide to promote the book in the Philippines?

I always try to spread word of the book to the whole world. I published this book three times, and I spent a lot of money advertising it. But it has all been for naught. Several months ago, someone called me to advertise this book in the Philippines and South East Asia, so I came to the Philippines.

I know people accept a concept, a book, an author, or an artist, although sometimes it takes a long time for them to do so. A particular artist may have a poor life, but decades after his death,

he becomes accepted by the world. I don’t mind being such an artist. If I die poor in the street, I won’t mind. I will never give up my dream.

I have been very lucky to meet all of you after having taken this chance. The Filipinos accepted me first. I like the Philippines. Thank you very much.

Questions Raised by the Second Reporter

October 2018

1、What are the things that you like about Donald Trump?

Almost all of Trump's ideas came from my website, such as his ideas about immigrants, extremist Islam, white supremacy, nationalism, North Korea, and fake news. Although I have never seen Trump, he is like my best student. So I like him. During his campaign, I wrote a lot of articles to support him. In my diary, I called for an influence on American voters to help the Trump campaign. I just thought it was fun to talk about it casually. But I didn't expect it to be realized. God completely cooperated with me. Even I was surprised.

2、Do you consider the Syrian war to be a mini world war? If yes, why? If no, please give us your opinion about it.

The point that the Syrian war is a small world war is not my point of view but the view of Chinese netizens. Since August 2014, every day I have collected various data from the Internet on Syria, Iraq, the Middle East as a whole, Islam, Iran, Turkey, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, Yemen, East Turkestan, Hezbollah, Israel, and other countries. I know nothing about the Middle East before, but I became an expert a few months later. I gradually figured out the primary causes of the complex situation in the Middle East.

Qatar and Saudi Arabia had asked to construct an oil pipeline with direct access to the Mediterranean Sea in Syria. But the Syrian president refused their request. Only Iran's oil pipeline is allowed to pass through Syrian territory. So the two richest countries in the Middle East, Saudi Arabia and Qatar, have to rely on ISIS and other terrorist organizations, and the power of Islamic extremist forces, to overthrow the Assad regime. They have poured money into terrorist organizations and paid the terrorists' monthly wages.

Turkey, a country neighbouring Syria, has the job of recruiting terrorists, training terrorists, and delivering large quantities of weapons to Syria. East Turkestan terrorists in China are recruited, trained, transported, and replenished by Turkey. They are still active in Idlib, Syria. You can interview them if you are not afraid of death.

The Western countries are the whore spoken of in the book of Revelation. Taking money from Saudi Arabia and Qatar, the politicians of Western countries completely abandon fairness and justice, providing political protection and military weapons for terrorists. The purpose is to help Saudi Arabia and Qatar overthrow Syrian president Bashar al-Assad. In the final analysis, it is for the benefit of money and oil.

The West still claims to have overthrown Assad. I asked the Chinese government to send troops to Syria to help the Assad regime. Instead of doing so, the Chinese government bought a lot of oil and gas from Russia and provided a lot of money to Russia. Russia helped Assad. And the Chinese government has supported Syrian government forces at the UN political level.

All the forces in the world have competed in Syria. The United States also directly attacked the Syrian government forces. They used white helmets to create fake news and slander Syrian government forces, using chemical weapons to directly attack the Syrian government. But it is only a show, and it cannot change the direction of the situation in Syria.

The Syrian government forces were retreating step by step and were about to die when I first paid attention to them. After I intervened, the Syrian government gained full control over the entire territory of Syria.

I recognize that the situation in Syria has been decided basically. I will no longer care about Syria. It can generally be said that all the mainstream countries of the world are involved in the Syrian war. They have directly and indirectly participated in the Syrian war, so it is called a small world war.

In order to contain the forces of Saudi Arabia, Qatar, and the Middle East and disperse their strength, attention, and financial resources, I wrote an article in support of the Houthi rebels in Yemen to launch an armed conflict. As a result, within a few days after I'd written the article, Yemen immediately broke out in war, a war that has not yet ended This is another example of God's support for me.

3、Who is behind the Syrian war?

Saudi Arabia, Qatar, Turkey, the United States, Great Britain, France, Germany, and Israel together all support ISIS and other terrorist organizations and Islamic extremist groups in the attempt to overthrow Assad.

Russia, Iran, Hezbollah, China, and I are all for Assad, for justice, and for secular, moderate, and inclusive Islam. Of course, God is on our side because God trusts me and supports me.

4、Who do you think will win the Syrian war?

Assad.

5、What should we do to help the situation in Syria?

We need to oppose the white helmet and stop them from creating fake news. We must refuse to

be deceived by Western propaganda machines. We should support moderate Islam and oppose extreme Islam.

6、What other things do you like about Donald Trump?

President Obama supports extreme Islam, and the best thing Trump does is to oppose extreme Islam.

To support Trump in stopping terrorism is to help God fight evil.

This is the best thing Trump has ever done. I like people who do things for God. Trump was sent by God to help him fight against evil terrorists.

7、Do you consider Trump to be the best president of the United States so far? If yes, why? If no, who was the best president of the USA?

There have been many great presidents of the United States who have done different things for the United States at different times, and everything was important according to the circumstances of the respective presidencies. Because of the different conditions and environments, any comparison is irrelevant. And I really don't know exactly what every US president has done, so I can't comment.

8、What do you have to say about the people who dislike and disrespect Trump?

I have a bad reputation on the Internet, and I often seriously argue with others about certain matters. Sometimes I even use the most vulgar words. Many netizens can't bear my behaviour and leave the discussion. Of course, their hearts were badly hurt.

Trump's words have been gentle enough; he is a good boy compared to me.

If I curse someone, it will be one hundred times more severe than if Trump does so. Of course, one hundred times more people dislike me. But I don't care.

9、What are your reasons for wanting to help the people of this world?

I don't know why I came to this world. If I could make a choice, I would not come here to do so many things.

However, I have come to this world. I would certainly start well and end well because life is short. Maybe I will die after a while. I wish that during my lifetime I could do very meaningful and valuable things for the world. And what I do is irreplaceable. Each of us is striving for life every day; no one cares what happens in the world. I just do something that no one has ever done. I don't think how smart or great I am. I only know that you don't do what I do; I am the only one who does. I just do the thing that I think is the most valuable thing I could do with my life. The value is immeasurable. Because certain things would never be done if I didn't do them. Some ideas would never be expressed if I didn't speak them out.

10、You said that if people read your book, they will get rich. Why would the readers get rich?

China's national management model was established according to my ideas. I hope to establish a model and perform an experiment in China to verify my theory.

Facts have proved that my theory is successful. China is now widely recognized by the whole world for its social stability and the affluence of its population. I hope that after reading my book, you in the Philippines will manage your country in accordance with the Chinese model and implement the national management system I have established, so you can realize the same level of social stability and affluence as China and gradually realize the fairness and justice in such a system.

My book describes in detail how to establish the Chinese model and the ideal national management system as I have imagined them.

There are some problems with China's current situation because the Chinese government has partially adopted my suggestions but rejected some of my proposals.

The ruling class accepts what benefits them without hesitation, just as the saying, "An aircraft carrier can turn 180 degrees on a dollar coin." But suggestions that are disadvantageous, restraining, or punitive to the ruling class are completely ignored. That's the ugly truth.

Nevertheless, China is still the most successful country in the world when it comes to having achieved national governance.

I hope you can learn from my national management system and management model so that you, along with everyone else in the world, can get rich.

11、Do you think each country will need your book? Why?

Without a doubt. Because all countries of the world have serious domestic problems, everyone in

every country can find solutions and suggestions in my book. Moreover, the solutions and suggestions are effective. So every country and everyone needs my book.

12、You said that God gave you this mission to spread your story. Do you think you can complete this mission? To what extent can you complete your mission?

God's mission as given to me is that I transmit my ideas to those in trouble, to those needing my help, and to those needing my advice.

Since 2004, I have been providing advice and wisdom to governments and politicians of all countries, so as to help them solve problems, solve crises, save the world, and prevent the world from being destroyed from human actions and recklessness.

I have written this book and publicized it on a wide scale because I have completed the mission. I have helped all countries and all politicians. I have given them the most intelligent advice. Most of them have adopted my suggestions, and I have solved the most serious crisis in the world

I am here today to tell all the people of the world what I have done rather than having only a few politicians know what I did.

I hope all the people of the world can follow my idea. I hope to make suggestions to everyone on earth rather than just limiting my advice to a few politicians.

I hope to help all the people of the world and not just a few politicians.

13、Earlier, you told me that you like President Duterte. What do you have to say about the killings that are happening in the Philippines?

There would be no shootings in the Philippines if there were no drugs. God hates drugs, and the war against drug dealers is a war between God and the devil.

If drugs do not disappear, the devil will not disappear, and the war will not stop. Of course, the shooting will not stop because some of you are still helping the devil and abandoning God.

Questions Raised by the Third Reporter

October 2018

1、What things do you want to see happen in the world over the next five years?

I hope that my book will be promoted and spread all over the world. Since I don't know how fast the book will be distributed, I find it hard to imagine what will happen in five years.

I hope that this book will have made its way all over the world in five years. Then people all over the world will understand what I really want to express in this book so they can accept my suggestions and set up their countries according to the Chinese model.

I hope that everyone in the world will understand how important public ownership of land is and that people will reach a consensus by spreading my book widely. Then people will greatly reduce the number of conflicts and make public ownership of land at low costs possible. People all over the world will reap the benefits. For example, the poor will get wealthy, and the rich will achieve security.

I hope to establish a perfect social system on earth so that everyone will receive tangible benefits, which is also the will of God.

2、You have put a lot of effort into writing your book, and knowing that your mission in the world is very difficult, you still have things to do. Are you willing to invest more time? Where will that strength come from?

It seems that this is a mission that is impossible to complete in the eyes of ordinary people, but in my eyes, I am just completing my mission in a planned and purposeful way. At any time, I know what I am doing and what purpose I want to achieve.

Before 2004, I was collecting materials and looking for answers to various questions.

In 2004, I wrote five important articles that saved the Communist Party when it was about to collapse. It consolidated its position economically and established a framework of state governance with the Chinese model. Moreover, I stopped Taiwan's military from purchasing six

hundred billion Taiwanese dollars' worth of weapons from the United States by writing articles, and I prevented war in the Taiwan Strait.

At that time, I realized that I am a person with magic power because I can change the political trend of the world by transmitting information to people. However, I needed China to set an example and perform an experiment to verify the validity of my state governance framework theory. So I secretly transmitted information to the Chinese government over the Internet, without anyone's statement or letting anyone know, which was part of my plan.

In 2013, I set up my own website to transmit information to the world. Furthermore, I changed the political trend of the world quietly by conveying information to politicians all over the world.

After August 2014, I began to write frequent articles about Islam and the West in the hope of transmitting information and providing my suggestions to politicians around the world. Most of these politicians accepted my advice because I have magical power and the support of God. Since I was afraid that terrorists would find me and exact revenge on me, I did my work secretly. They only knew that I was writing articles to provide information and advice for them, but they didn't know what my name was or what my location was.

When North Korea decided to give up its nuclear weapons in 2018, I felt that my secret mission had been completed. I needed people all over the world to know who I was, and I needed to transmit information and provide suggestions to all the people of the world, instead of just conveying information and providing advice to a few politicians secretly through the website.

I won't mind if I have to wait even longer. If I want others to know of my existence, I will always find a way because I know that no one can replace me by doing what I should do. And the world may be destroyed if I don't do what I do. Although this world was created by God, not by me, I do not want it to be destroyed, so I have no choice but to try my best to prevent it from being destroyed.

At the same time, I hope that what I have done can maximize the meaning of my life, so I chose this challenge as if I were playing a video game.

I know I can do what I am doing at the level at which I am operating because no one can surpass my abilities. I am irreplaceable except by God. But I don't know when I will succeed. Only God knows.

3、In what way is your book different from other self-help books?

My book tells a true story without any fiction, and my life experience is better than any Hollywood blockbuster.

Meanwhile, my book has magical power that can change the world and the minds everyone on

earth, which is something that no one else can achieve.

That's why many people are afraid of my book. They are afraid of me, afraid to hear my name, and even more afraid to see my book.

4、Nowadays many investors from different parts of the world are outsourcing their business to the Philippines. Are you doing the same thing? Had you planned ahead of time to come here to the Philippines to promote your book?

I don't think what I am doing is business, but the transmission of God's message, so I have different ideas from other businessmen.

The people of the Philippines were the first to invite me to spread word of my book, which was unbelievable to me.

I always thought that the Jews would come to me because I support Israel and oppose Palestine. I thought the Jews might need my support.

I always thought that Syria might accept me first because I helped them the most. I think that Americans may like me best because I made Trump president. But I never expected that the people of the Philippines would accept me first.

5、If you were given the chance to have your own business in the Philippines, would you seize the opportunity? What type of business would you prefer?

I don't like doing business; I just like discussing problems with others. And I have experienced many failures in business. It seems that I am able to spend money and I am unable to make money, but people around me are able to earn money. Those who have worked with me have made a lot of money and become rich. I haven't because I really don't care about money.

6、Since this book is for everybody, which country do you hope will make your book successful?

I hope that my book will spread to every country, and I know that my book will be successful in every country sooner or later.

Those who oppose this book will soon know how small and ridiculous they are. No one can stop me from widely distributing my book because I can bring great benefits to people all over the world.

Questions Raised by the Fourth Reporter

December 2018

1、Tell your readers a little about yourself—where you grew up, where you live now, where you went to school, etc. Let them get to know the personal side of you.

I was born in Xinjiang, a province in the north-west of China, in 1972. Xinjiang is very cold in winter and very hot in summer and is near Russia.

My family returned to Shanghai one after another in accordance with Chinese policies when I was in college.

I went to middle school, high school, and college in Shanghai. I graduated from Shanghai University in 1995. My major was electronic technology.

My now ex-wife and I got married in 2002. After our divorce in 2005, I didn't want anyone to bother me, so I didn't live with my parents. I lived far away from my relatives and friends—by myself—so that I could concentrate on writing this book.

I feel like I've spent most of my life writing this book. I went to study, went to work, fell in love, and got married all in order to understand, analyse, and study society and earn money to support myself.

What I've been doing with my heart and soul all my life is writing this book.

2、What inspired you to write this book?

When I was in junior high school, I found that my ideas were different from others, and I was absolutely right. A voice kept telling me that I was going to write a book to tell people what I thought was right. In this way I would be able to help others.

In 2004, when the Chinese government was on the verge of collapse, I wrote five articles about methods of governance that were adopted by the Chinese government as basic state policy. This helped the Chinese government get through the crisis and put China on the right track. At present, China is enjoying sound development in all areas. Its people are prosperous, its society is stable, and it is recognized by all countries of the world. All this is because I have given the

Chinese government a correct guiding ideology. Those in charge have used my wisdom to develop China.

3、Your book talks about many things that impact the world, such as terrorism. What other topics do you discuss, and why?

I want to talk about all the problems in the world, but I start with the population problem and public ownership of land. If we can figure out these two problems, we can figure out and solve all the other problems.

1) Population problem

Now Western countries have the Yellow Maghreb movement, right-wing forces, nationalism, white supremacism, the anti-immigration movement, high unemployment, economic friction with China, and so on, all related to the population problem. The population problem is the cause of all these other problems.

Because the population of Western countries is decreasing rapidly, the aging population is becoming more and more serious. Europe brought in Muslims and blacks to supplement its shortage of labour. On the surface, the aforementioned problems are small problems, but in fact they are very serious problems which will lead to conflict between civilizations.

The decline of the Western population is caused by Western culture. It is the human rights culture that has caused the population decline in Western countries. And any civilization that fails to keep its population growing steadily will soon be destroyed. So there is a serious crisis in Western culture itself.

I have written a lot of articles related to the population problem, and I hope to help Western civilization resolve this crisis. Otherwise, not only will Western civilization remain in danger, but also the interests of white people will be seriously compromised. That's not what God wants to see happen. I hope to help the West and China solve this problem.

2) Public ownership of land

Public ownership of land is a basic precondition of China's success. It is also a basic component of the Chinese model. Private ownership of land is the root cause of why people cannot get rich.

Because I am the one who built the Chinese model, I hope to introduce the Chinese model to the world. Let the world learn the basic success of the Chinese model. Let people all over the world know what to do to really generate the greatest results.

Because the Chinese model can solve many social problems, it allows people all over the world to get rich, be safe, and be happy.

4、How has your religious upbringing impacted your writing?

In fact, I don't have a religious belief. I believe in science and materialism. But because I've read a lot of religious books, I can understand the intentions of the authors.

These books are indeed written by God and can give guidance to human beings in certain ways.

Because the knowledge of these books is beyond the scope of human knowledge and consciousness at the times when they were written, they couldn't have been written by humans. They could only have been written by God. It is God who directs humankind.

And I think these books are not contradictory. Buddhist scriptures, the Tao Te Ching, the Bible, the Koran, and other scriptures provide guidance to human beings in different ways.

I think people today need to learn all of God's scriptures and receive his full guidance. Human beings need to practise the comprehensive teachings of these scriptures, accept God's guidance, and accept God's law.

And I think that with all scriptures and religions, we need to learn the spirit of God's guidance rather than the specific dogma that binds us.

5、What were your struggles or the obstacles you had to overcome to get this book written?

The biggest difficulty I faced when I wrote this book was how to overcome my fear and pressure.

Almost all the articles in my book are antiestablishment, antitradition, antimainstream, antireligion, antiauthority, antiterrorism, antitriad, and/or anticrime.

I can honestly say that in this book, I offend and criticize everyone in the world. I have hardly ever praise anyone.

When I was writing this book, it seemed that all the people of the world would come after me with knives.

I have no wife, no children, no social security, no pension, and no health insurance. I have nearly nothing. Because of this, I feel like I could die at any moment. I'm ready to die anytime. I don't

want to get a wife or children, or anyone else, involved. And any type of insurance is useless to me.

Those who oppose me are ready to kill me at any moment. I have offended all the people of the world, all the hooligans, all the terrorists, all the drug dealers, all the richest people, all the most powerful people, and all the people holding high positions. And I need to promote this book all around the world so that everyone will know that this I am the author and so that everyone can find me easily, including the people who hate me.

As I write, I think, *I'm in danger.*

But God told me that if I did not write these articles and publicize my books, many people all over the world would die and the whole world would be destroyed.

I had no choice but to write the book.

So I have felt very conflicted, very tangled up, but I had no choice, I had to go this route. And I had to finish the task because I am the only one can help you. Only I can save you.

No one but me is willing to sacrifice myself to help you out of this crisis.

No one but me has the ability to help you out of this crisis.

I have no choice.

6、Tell your readers about your book.

Whenever there is a major crisis, an important event, or a typical case in the world, God needs to express the views that people all over the world have about these events. God gives me inspiration, and then I write some articles about these events quickly. I put these articles on the website and then have them translated them into English and Arabic. I spread them online.

Then the political direction of these big, typical, important things that happen to human beings magically change at once, and world politics move in the direction expressed in my article.

Because God wants me to write these articles and God wants me to spread these articles, these articles represent the will of God, so they have magical power. My article can immediately change the direction of world political developments.

I recommend that my readers verify what I'm saying from this perspective.

Each of my articles is marked with the date I completed it. You can check every article I wrote and then determine what the world was like before I wrote it and what the world was like after I wrote it. After I finished writing the article, what magical changes took place in the world?

You can use this method to verify everything I have said.

My book is a collection of all my articles and my statements about certain things and ideas.

There are nearly four hundred articles in my book. Every article, every event, and every sentence I write can be verified.

I hope my readers do not blindly believe what I say or blindly oppose what I say. I hope you will verify what I say through scientific methods. Thank you.

7、What will your readers learn from this book?

Readers can really see the truth of the world through my book.

I always feel like that I am like the little boy who told the truth in Hans Christian Andersen's fairy tale "The Emperor's New Clothes". The little boy tells the truth that the emperor has no clothes on. And I tell the truth about the world.

I have revealed that all the superior people in the world, decent people, are actually naked. They are liars. They have been deceiving the people.

My readers, only when you truly understand the truth of the world can you make the right choices and do the right things. Only when you do the right thing can you really change your destiny. You can really find wealth, security, and happiness.

That's what I want to see happen. I have helped the Chinese people gain wealth and security. I hope to help all people of the world find wealth, security, and happiness. That's what God wants me to do.

8、Who is your target audience, and why?

My book is relevant to everyone on earth because all the people of the world are in trouble. Every country and every person has different troubles. I wrote this book to help all people. Different people will take different things from my book.

My book will allow everyone to see the truth about the world. My book will help all people gain wisdom so that they can improve their souls and their state of mind.

I hope everyone in the world will read my books.

9、If you could give only one reason to someone for reading your book, what would it be?

My book can give readers the wisdom to do the right thing and then change people's fates. In the end, my readers will receive wealth, security, happiness, and the love of God. So they should buy my book.

I recommend that readers read my articles first, which are collected in a very thin and inexpensive book. But it's the most important book. Readers should have a look at that book before deciding whether to buy other books.

10、 What do you consider to be your greatest success in life?

I hope my book will be distributed all over the world. I hope that my book will change the world by helping all the countries of the world solve all their problems. And in the end all of us can be rich and secure and happy.

This is my greatest success and my greatest happiness. It is also the ultimate goal of everything God wants me to do.

11、 Everyone has life lessons to learn. Tell your readers about one or two of yours and how they made you who you are today.

My grandma was the person who loved me the most and treated me with the most strictness. She give me all her property, and she beat me most of the time, but I know that my grandmother only wanted me to be a good person in this life, never a bad person.

I have been following this principle all my life: only be a good person; never be a bad person. But every person and everything I have encountered in my life has hurt me badly. But I can't hurt others or seek revenge.

What I can do is write articles and accuse all the people of the world in front of God, naming the crimes they have committed.

I want God to answer the question of why people did what they have done to me. Why do they do so many bad things?

I received an answer from God, and I included it in this book.

12、How important is this book for you?

I haven't done anything else in my life. All I did was complete my book, which is God's view of the human world and which represents God's new contract with humankind.

This book is also the true story of how I prevented the whole world from being destroyed by writing articles and spreading them on the Internet.

This book represents the value of my life and the meaning of my life as a person.

13、How did you come up with the idea for your book?

Whenever I see in the news that a major event or a typical event has happened in China or elsewhere in the world, and whenever the divine world needs to express the views of God, I have an impulse to write an article. This impulse is very strong. If I don't write the article, I will keep thinking about until I actually write it.

Now when I read articles that I've written earlier, I think they are excellent. I am amazed at myself. Why is the article I wrote so excellent?

If I were asked to throw away all my writings and write this book all over again, I feel I could not do it because I have no inspiration. I don't know what to write. Even if I were to write something, the result would be plain.

I need inspiration for my writing, and I need God to give me some sort of message.

14、Tell your readers anything else you want to share.

I'm sorry if my articles have offended my readers. I am not maliciously attacking people or maliciously seeking to offend people. I just hope to change people's minds and correct people's wrong ideas. I just want people to do the right thing.

I hope people will read my articles in a positive light.

Because how I express something is the only way I can say it. And it's the only way people will change their minds and realize their mistakes.

I could have written my messages to be implicit and gentle, but then they would not change people's minds at all. In order to save the world, I have used some harsh words.

It’s my job, like a doctor with a scalpel cutting through a sick body. It’s a job. There’s no choice. I do it out of goodwill rather than malice. I am doing a good thing, not an evil thing.

15、Are you writing more books?

I have made relatively few comments on what has happened in the world recently because I have already commented on those things and I don’t want to say the same thing over and over again. That is boring.

But I have been doing publicity recently. There are many readers and journalists who have a lot of questions to ask me.

I have written a great many articles to answer questions from readers and reporters.

I clarify my statements and provide more in-depth answers to address people’s concerns, doubts, and questions. Then I collect the answers to these questions and publish them together as a new book.

Part 3

Public Ownership and God

1. The scientific public ownership system is Mahayana Buddhism

12 September 2014

Marx described a blueprint of public ownership system for people. However, Marx was just a dreamer who had no empirical experience in capital operation and management.

Marx once said that labour was the first demand of human beings, which, however, was typical nonsense, indicating that he was an ignorant dreamer.

The fact also reflected that Marx did not truly understand humanity. He was a typical idealist and bookworm. Without any social experience, he knew nothing about the suffering of humans, the fickleness of human nature, and the inconstancy of human relationship, let alone the odiousness and incurability of humanity.

As a result, he simply held that the world would be peaceful if the exploitation and oppressors could both be eliminated and that odiousness and oppression do not exist in the world. It is just under the guidance of such a ridiculous and inhuman theory that the human society is involved in an unprecedented catastrophe and massacre.

Public ownership system is not a wrong theory; rather, it is a quite advanced theory. However, when an advanced theory is proposed by an innocent dreamer, it will become the most powerful weapon for the terrorism.

The evil will become devils if they master the magic weapon.

Fools will also become devils if they master the magic weapon.

The system of public ownership could be truly comprehended and flexibly used by the wise that are provided with the essence of Mahayana Buddhism and the Tao Te Ching.

As described, Western culture is a kind of individual culture. No matter how advanced Western culture is, it could only be categorised into the scope of Hinayana Buddhism, since it just emphasises the cultivation and liberation of individuals. Nevertheless, Western culture could not help liberate and satisfy all the people, for it could not take the benefits of all into consideration.

As common people, the operation capability of their brain is limited; hence, it is sufficient for them to ensure that they could keep pace with the society. They are too busy to take care of all human beings and the whole society.

However, the population of the world amounts to 7 billion. There are countless relations among people all the time. The strength of an individual is insignificant to the whole world.

Individuals could not destroy the profits of others and the world while developing themselves; otherwise, conflicts and contradictories may emerge, leading to banes for descendants and themselves.

How to develop oneself while taking the benefits of all people and the whole country into accounts is great wisdom, which is also the essence of Mahayana Buddhism.

Individual benefits could evolve into long-term benefits and authentic benefits while integrated with international and national benefits.

The odiousness in human nature is incurable. However, there are indeed some people who are willing to sacrifice themselves for their nations and take national benefits into consideration in every country and every period. However, only goodwill is far from enough, since goodwill may not always lead to positive results.

People are different from each other. One person may have different ideas in different stages; moreover, the ability, intelligence, character, and experience of people vary from individual to individual. Hence, the desires of people are totally diverse.

All people will feel resentful, upset, and pained when their desires cannot be fulfilled. The desire of one will interact with those of others instead of being separated, since people live in a society rather than an isolated island.

Culture, ideology, politics, and ethics are used to control the relations and desires among people.

Culture, ideology, politics, and ethics are various approaches that can be called Tao.

Because of the universal and close relation among people, it is necessary to take the nation or even human beings as a whole to explore and control relations while dealing with interpersonal relations or Tao.

In order to conduct researches, the nation and the world should be regarded as a controllable system. In addition, it is important to propose the most reasonable method through discussion, so as to satisfy the desires and needs of most people and thus receive the identification and support of them.

A minority of people are naturally evil and social opponents, who should be eliminated from the society so as to ensure the interests and security of the majority.

The culture, law, and morality in Western countries are approaches and Tao which take political rights and economic profits of individuals as the research focus and objects. Hence, compared with the approaches and Tao which take a national or a society as research objects, the approaches and Tao employed by Western countries belong to Hinayana Buddhism.

It seems that Western culture protects the political and economic rights of everyone. However, Western culture could not solve the fundamental contradictories among people and countries, let alone the fundamental interest conflicts and deep-seated problems among people and countries.

The fundamental inequality among people could be attributed to capital inequality.

The principle of public ownership system is to realise complete equality or elementary equality among people. However, the most serious challenge that should be solved by public ownership system is the odiousness and incurability of human nature.

According to the Bible, even the ancestors were 'bad kids', for they furtively ate the forbidden fruits, closed their ears to both suggestions and imperial decree, and behaved unruly. They took the words of God like a passing wind and the words of humans as jokes. All people, including even saints, philosophers, emperors, and leaders, always pretend to be compliant, deceive both superiors and subordinates, take deceitful countermeasures to deal with commands, and ride the high horse. By holding the real power in their hands, they attempt to control everything.

Human nature is essentially odious. Private ownership system could not restrain the odiousness in human nature. Only through scientific public ownership system could this issue be solved. By praising virtue and punishing vice, human beings could be thoroughly liberated, which is the sole solution and valuable asset left by Marx.

The purpose of Buddhism is to benefit and rescue mankind. Hinayana Buddhism focuses on individual cultivation, which aims to liberate and extricate the minority, so as to help them arrive at the shore of wisdom.

Mahayana Buddhism aims to benefit and rescue mankind of the society and even the world. By liberating and extricating all human beings, Mahayana Buddhism could help them arrive at the shore of wisdom.

Scientific communism, which is also known as scientific state capitalism could help realise this goal, since it also aims to liberate and extricate all human beings, so as to help them arrive at the shore of wisdom. This is the ideology and doctrine of Mahayana Buddhism.

Scientific communism pragmatises the seemingly vacant Mahayana Buddhism and religious doctrine. By making Mahayana Buddhism and religious doctrine tangible, they could be applied to solve problems practically.

Whether individuals could understand this point is determined by their own consciousness dimension and comprehensive ability. Mahayana Buddhism could indeed solve this problem, realise this goal, and thus fulfil the mission.

Capitalism could at most be categorised into the scope of Hinayana Buddhism, which could only

rescue several billionaires rather than all people. As a result, the majority could not be liberated. This is the reason why an America-dominated world becomes increasingly chaotic.

2. The primary objective of communism is to benefit the people

23 November 2014

Any regime or thought flaunts that they can benefit the people.

That's also what feudal society, capitalist society, Hitler, and Japanese invasion of China said.

But I think the right communist society is the most scientific and rational one, because people are selfish, greedy, and narrow-minded in their nature, while national governance is a complicated and rational thing; it involves all aspects of things. It both has long-term benefit and short-term benefit, not only has to consider the interest of this group of people, but also needs to consider the interest of that group of people.

This kind of thing is very professional and complicated.

The so-called democracy lets selfish, greedy, and narrow-minded common people make decisions about professional, rational, and complicated things, which is the most absurd thing about democracy.

Therefore, politicians in capitalist country discover that everything they do is full of difficulties and obstacles.

The root cause is that truth is generally mastered by a small number of people. The biggest problem of democracy is that it enables people who don't know about the truth to make decisions, or it lets ridiculous, wrong, and narrow-minded people decide things which should have been decided by a few people who master truth.

Hence, they also admit that democracy is not the best system. Democracy is a better system compared with feudal oppression, genocide, and race-baiting. However, it is relatively backward from the perspective of state construction and benefiting the people.

In my point of view, communism should take benefiting the people as its goal based on the principle. Communism should be integrated by public capital and resources. In the aspect of national top-level design, it should construct the country and benefit the people through rational, scientific, and long-range plan.

Power and freedom of people in communist countries seem to have been restricted for the sake of public interest and national interest, but as citizens, limitations have to be made for the public interest and national interest. People are selfish, greedy, and narrow-minded in their nature and can't consider problems from the angle of national interest and public interest, thus states have to limit some power and freedom to make rational room for national and public interest.

The public giving up a part of power and freedom will be rewarded.

In other words, it is an overbalanced investment deal rather than a compulsory oppression.

When the public exchanges national power and freedom for overbalanced return of investment, the real and successful socialism will be achieved, just the current society of China.

When the power and freedom given to the state by citizens exchanged for is suffering, oppression, fear, and poverty, it is not real socialism but a fraud and a shameless deal in the name of socialism. People are doing a bad bargain and fail in investment. In other words, people are cheated by profiteers in this transaction and abducted by human traders, just like North Korea and failing communist countries. A business and transaction object should be changed to make new investment.

Therefore, don't talk about human rights and freedom in Western countries to define communism. It is a public investment deal and should be a highly profitable investment and deal. If it is applied appropriately, everyone can have a happy, safe, sound, and affluent life. Chinese people now have gained benefit and will gain more, which is beyond doubt and is obvious to all.

People in communist countries achieving nothing might come across rascals and profiteers. They should change transaction object, cooperation way, or cooperative project to make new investment.

It is realistic to common people. Democracy, freedom, and human rights are just like a piece of employee's card rather than substantial benefit. Benefit can only be gained through hard work.

However, scientific socialism is a public investment, which is highly profitable. If people come across cheaters, profiteers, and rascals, they just need to change transaction object and cooperative project.

Hence, I said earlier that Chinese people have to use money to prove the existence of Chinese people, communists have to use money to show the correctness proof of the CPC leadership, and socialist countries have to use money to prove the correctness of the communist path. Action speaks louder than words.

Common people just need money and want nothing else.

Sungun policy is nonsense and is terrorism.

3. Socialism is the realisation of socialised production from the perspective of social management

24 November 2014

I remember that when I was at school the teacher once said the feudal society is small-scale peasant economy. The current social productivity has developed into socialised production; therefore, the productive relations cannot adapt to the development of productivity, then revolution is needed, to realise the capitalism revolution.

This conception is right, and the productive relations should be in accordance with the development of productivity.

However, in my opinion, capitalism can only realise socialised production from the perspective of economy, and it's still self-sufficient small-scale peasant economy from the perspectives of politics and social management. Therefore in the capitalist society, the management is in confusion. Capitalism takes America as the benchmark, where each person can hold a gun to protect his own safety. This cannot be called a civilised society, because in a civilised society, it's impossible that people cannot protect their own safety. The benchmark is like this: the other countries are even beyond reasonable limits.

In Mexico, their neighbour, the officials ganged up with the bandits and even the drug traffickers, they cut people's heads off, peeled off the whole human skins to make ornaments and gloves, shot civilians—all of these scenarios can only been described in the eighteenth layer of hell. Now it happened in the current society, in the developed capitalism society, beside the United States of America, in a democratic country, and even the government was involved. The Internet society developed well, and nothing can be hidden; you can search for 'Mexican drug traffickers' photos and news on the Internet, you will see the photos and the truth.

That's too terrible and too horrifying.

Of course their people are very angry about these kinds of things, and they are reforming the social management system and the police management system, but no one knows the result yet.

After all is said and done, their social management relation is not correct, too backward, and still belongs to small-scale peasant economy and self-sufficient level. The social management backwardness and failure lead to social disorder and lack of justice.

Scientific socialism is to realise socialised production from the perspective of social management.

The conception of socialised production is very clear. It's relative to the self-sufficient small-scale peasant economy. The small-scale peasant economy is to grow, to produce, to eat, to consume

one's own food. People seldom get involved in the economic relationship with others in the society, and they don't need others' assistance to accomplish production and consumption.

While the socialised production need many people's cooperation or even all the people's cooperation to produce one product, they are interlocking, producing and consuming together.

Just like manufacturing vehicles, which need mining, steeling, machinery processing, oil exploring, oil refining, electric appliance, science and technology, education, glass, rubber, textile—almost all industries in the whole society are involved.

Because the socialised production needs commodity economy, commodity economy needs capitalism, then capitalism replaced the feudal social system.

That's what Marx said, productivity decides production relationships, which is correct. However, capitalism just solved this problem from the perspective of economy, and it can only adapt to the socialised production from the perspective of economy.

And the word 'capital' is the special word of economics. I think to socialised production, it's not enough to design a social system only from the perspective of economy.

We should adapt to socialised production from the perspective of social management. Social management includes economic system, but its scope is much greater than economic system.

The social management includes all aspects; besides economics, there are also politics, ideology, education, ethics, spiritual civilisation, religion, etc.

Everything should be seen from the perspective of social management, to see whether it adapts to the development of productivity or whether it adapts to the need of socialised production.

From the perspective of social management, we need all which benefit the social management, and we don't need all which harm the social management. So I think we need capitalism, and public ownership is also a kind of capitalism—state capitalism.

Therefore, both the public ownership and the private ownership are capitalism. The differences lie in that it is the personal mastery and operation of capital, or the state controls and operates the capital on behalf of its people.

The country needs money to operate, to maintain justice, to keep security, to do basic research, to promote basic education. And this money cannot be limited nor restricted. Justice is priceless, cannot be restricted nor limited, must be implemented, cannot bargain, and no matter how much it may cost, justice must be maintained.

And all of this can only be done by the state-owned capital. After adjusting the social order well, we will find that all of this does not have to be paid by our common people, which means they

are all free of charge. They can even bring our common people dividends and unexpected benefits.

Just like in China, many common people who have nothing and extremely poor became rich overnight. Why? Because of the country's development, the city's development, and when the development comes to their home, they will be assigned several apartments and become millionaires or even trillionaires overnight. That's not an individual case, and it can be seen everywhere. It's a widely known pet phrase that the poor turn into the rich by demolition. Even if there's no demolition, their houses' price increased from the former several tens of thousands of RMB to hundreds of thousands of RMB or even millions of RMB. Those are the dividends that the Chinese people get. Those are the benefits from the success of China's infrastructure construction, social management, and social operation.

It's an extreme thought opposite the public ownership and the private ownership. Both the left-leaning and the right-leaning thoughts are opportunism thoughts, which are lack of root, should be broken down, and simple-minded.

All the people on earth have the left-leaning or the right-leaning thoughts, which belong to the extreme thoughts.

The reason for these extreme thoughts is that human beings cannot think, or cannot think correctly, which is simple-minded.

Because the left-leaning or the right-learning just need to choose, there is no need to think or investigate or research.

Because of social scientific management, rational management, there is a need to collect all the information, to investigate comprehensively, to think and measure generally, and then find the best solution.

It's a pity that human beings are not able to realise socialised production from the perspective of social management.

4. Any national land and mineral resources shall be owned by God instead of individuals

27 November 2014

As clearly written in the Bible, everything on earth is created by God and thus belongs to God.

God has the ownership of everything on earth, while human beings living on earth have only the right to use instead of ownership.

One offends and infringes God's ownership if one says that land belongs to oneself. Besides, the divinities will also be offended by such a saying. Human beings shall make clear of this and not misunderstand.

God only allows and authorises people on the land to use and manage that land according to their wills, instead of sales. Possession is not conversion of ownership.

So private ownership of land is a behaviour that offends God and divinities.

Thus, public ownership of land is a system that accords with the will of God and respects the will of divinities.

The divinities authorise all people on the land to use such land.

The publicly owned government only exercises the right of land use on behalf of all the people. God allows them to exercise ownership of land.

Everyone is equal in front of God, and God loves all of them and allows them to enjoy all resources that it has created equally.

But no one has the right to make things that belong to God his own, which is unfair for others and also offends the divinities.

So private ownership of land is illegal, vicious, and offensive to the divinities. You can have the ownership of things created by yourself. But things created by God always belong to God instead of you, and such things shall be shared with everyone. This is a basic idea.

5. God's love is the greatest well-being of human beings

6 December 2014

It is said that all are equal before God and he loves the world. Though everyone is for himself, God is for everyone.

All are saying like this, no matter whether they are the poor, the rich, the black, or the white.

However, where is God's love? It seems that it is in the dream and in heaven.

In the Bible, God says that he leaves milk and honey for the human beings. The said milk and honey are oil and mineral resources. But only a few using milk and honey feel the gift from God but they may not thank him, thinking that the milk and honey were picked up, stolen, or left by their father.

Most of them do not have such feeling. Many have furious fights for God's gift such as Omar bin Laden and bandits of Islam. God creates everything including the land, sunshine, air, water, mines, many creatures, and human beings. God let human beings manage the land. He loves the world and endows them with food, land, sunshine, air, water, mines, and so on.

God loves everyone. His love is equal. He will not show favouritism or abandon anyone, no matter whether you are the black or the white, the poor or the rich.

However, what is God's love?

That is food, land, sunshine, air, water, and mines.

Food can be got by human beings' work. And land, sunshine, air, water, and mines are the gift from God.

Such a gift is equal, without bias and abandoning, no matter whether you are the black or the white, the poor or the rich.

That is to say human beings living on that land shall enjoy the gift in an equal way—land, sunshine, air, water, mines, no bias and no abandoning, whether you are the black or the white, the poor or the rich.

This is God's love and his will.

He who prevents God loves the world or thieves and forcibly occupying God's love is blasphemy of God and irreverence of him.

Certainly, social order of human beings needs to be maintained; therefore, we need a society manager to straighten out society management relations of human beings.

In feudal society and slave society, there exists divine right of kings, that is, God endows kings with rights to manage his gifts as land and mines and so on. It is retinal.

In feudal society, kings have the ownership of all the land, and kings distribute it to their officers. Land is the only means of production and cannot be marketable. The product of land is grain, which is a model of self-sufficiency production and consumption. Therefore, land can be deemed as an essential means of production and public resources but not commodities. Hence, monarchical society is another form of public ownership of land.

The king, in this way, is considered to use ownership of land on behalf of God. Peasants may enjoy land use right. They cultivate on land and use the land. God's love is practiced by the king.

However, land of capitalists is private property. Land can be marketable with other products in merchandising way, and they are all commodities. No one can get earnings and benefits except the owner of the land. Therefore, land in current society and capitalist society is not public resource any more, but private property.

Land ownership is private ownership, which cannot be enjoyed by other people. Land use right is private and cannot be enjoyed by other people. Hence, private land ownership of modern society lacerates and cuts off love from God to human beings. It makes human beings not enjoy earnings from land and love and protection from God. Then, disasters, pains, wars, fluctuations, helplessness, darkness, and unfairness emerge at such time.

The reason why the society is in turmoil is that private land and mine ownership deprives love from God. Therefore, it is essential to turn over private land ownership and return the love of God to human beings.

Benefits brought by land and oil mines are so great, with all kinds of power grabs, leaving the world in turmoil. Their aim is to fight for benefits.

An ancient Chinese saying goes, when there is one rabbit, many will run after it. But if there are many on the market for sale, no one will run after.

The reason is that when land and mines have no owners, all rack their brains to rob, forgetting virtue and morality and hard work, but only robbing resources.

The Western countries at first racked their brains to rob, which started from colonial period. Nowadays, it only changes its form but not its essence.

When the land and mines are nationalised around the world, such conflicts will disappear right now. Just correct the attitude towards it. The mind should be put on creation but not on robbing,

I say to you that all these belong to God. All the ownership belongs to God. God will make his love enjoyed by the whole.

If anyone has different opinions, he can rise up and propose his opinions.

If anyone wants to deprive the love of God to human beings, he should rise up and propose his opinions.

China has done it. The nation nationalises land and mines on behalf of God, distributing benefits from such national capital as land and mines to its citizens in a fair way—distributing God's love in a justifiable way.

Therefore, China can do the things well, and it will do it better and better.

The reason why other nations are in turmoil is that private land ownership deprive God's love to human beings. In a nation lacking love, there is only horror, evilness, and unfairness.

If you think that there exist turmoil, horror, evilness, and unfairness in your nation, please nationalise land and mine resources on land and let the whole enjoy them. What's more, you should make God's love regress to standard and be enjoyed by all the nationals. Then such problem can be solved step by step.

Solving the problem is easy and not complicated at all. Explaining public ownership in terms of religion is simple. The Bible says it this way: But you do not understand it and dare not understand it. You need it explained and can understand.

I think that people in the world fighting against each other is not purposeful and significant. It is that bandits expel the other bandits and remain as bandits to rob resources, God's love, and lacerate God's love to human beings. There is no essential difference.

In my opinion, the only significant thing in the world is to get God's love back and nationalise the land and mines to let them be enjoyed by the whole nation. Only if we get God's love can we get peace and happiness.

If we cannot get God's love, we cannot gain peace. War, turmoil, and unfairness will not be finished forever.

6. Public ownership of land

22 December 2014

As far as I am concerned, public ownership of land is the fundamental condition for a country to govern quickly, overcome poverty, and achieve prosperity.

At the beginning of Chinese reform and opening up, there was a saying from the government: to become well-off, repair the roads first.

Therefore, Chinese roadworks infrastructure construction ranks the first in the world and it fully deserves the title.

I think public ownership of land is the fundamental condition for the government to conduct infrastructure construction.

The reason is very simple: infrastructure construction is a kind of investment and a fixed-asset investment with long return cycle.

Investment asks for returns, security, and rentability. If the investment objects' ownership and return benefits do not belong to you, will you invest?

The ownership and usufruct of the investment objects must belong to the government and then the government has the necessity to invest.

Also, infrastructure construction investment needs long-term planning and systemic planning, which are also the government's functions.

I think there are three reasons for the government to conduct infrastructure construction.

Overcoming poverty and achieving prosperity

Chinese poor areas need to overcome poverty, so the government would make great efforts to conduct infrastructure construction.

Road transportation is an important element that restricts a place's economy.

Each place has its streams in from all over the country. There will always be some projects suitable for development, such as agriculture, fish breeding and poultry raising, mining industry, and tourism. Even if there is no convenient transportation, good products would not be transported out timely and become products to be sold to the world and turn to money. Therefore, transportation is the prerequisite and infrastructure construction needs investment in advance.

Then, China has great technical support and information support to agriculture and avocation. The 7th CCTV Channel introduces agricultural technical knowledge and prosperity-achieving information. It introduces some cultivation techniques every day. Breeding some strange and interesting animals can also make a lot of money. I would like to have a try someday. It is more interesting than *Animal World* and more practical. Also, you can have a try in person.

Since the land belongs to the country and the country wishes people on the land to utilise land resources reasonably and make money as well as produce more valuable things out of this land, it would help ordinary people to overcome poverty, become prosperous and well-off. The government has invested a lot in scientific research, news, and resources to provide fortune-making resources to the public and resources for added value of the land. Since land is owned by the public, so the government's and the public's benefits agree, and heaven and man are integral.

Maintaining GDP growth

If the economy declines, the government would make a concentrated effort to conduct infrastructure construction, and domestic demands would increase suddenly.

Building bridges and roads are all big projects and would cost a lot; they would also promote development of relative industries, so they are of great promotion role to domestic demands. Also, infrastructure construction is a fixed investment rather than consumption. Later, its investment return would show gradually.

Land appreciation

When local economy develops well, more businessmen would come to invest and land would appreciate naturally. Then, local government would transfer land management right and make money out of it.

Another reason for Chinese government's passion in infrastructure construction investment is that 60 per cent of government's fiscal revenue comes from transferring land management right.

Local economy can only be prosperous with good infrastructure construction, and then, businessmen are willing to develop land, open plants, and construct buildings. Then, the land would appreciate substantially and governments can make money by selling land. This is another important reason. Chinese governments like conducting infrastructure construction, which is another reason that Chinese local governments are not willing to reduce the prices of real estate market. If prices of real estate market decrease, they will have no money to make.

Of course, prices of land would appreciate with infrastructure construction, which is consistent with the public's benefits. Though the public are complaining about the high housing prices, they are not willing to see the prices decrease, because their assets would decrease.

It is public ownership of land that make the government's, the public's, and infrastructure construction's benefits consistent. The government and the public make concerted effort to improve the economy, do things well, and construct their home well, and this is called syncretism between heaven and man. The government's benefits and the public's benefits are consistent, and gods' and humans' benefits are consistent.

I heard that it took India over twenty years to build a railroad, which was still not completed, since they had to negotiate with various landlords. In India, land belongs to the private and the nation cannot make decisions for people. If negotiations cannot be made on prices, the construction cannot begin. No matter how important this project is to the nation, it would not work if it is not beneficial to the landlord. This is the most obvious disadvantage of private ownership of land. The government's and the public's benefits are not consistent, and gods' and humans' benefits are not consistent.

It is because land is created by God rather than by people. Any private ownership is illegal. Only public ownership is legal.

Another resource of land is mineral resources, such as petroleum, coal, natural gas, gold ore, diamond, non-ferrous metals, rare metals, and other resources, which are created by God and should belong to the state. The government should take advantage of these resources to create public resources, such as national security, social minimum guarantee, and so on, and they should be shared by the public equally and fairly. With minimum life guarantee, people should create higher life quality by themselves.

The government should be administrator of public resources and performer of equity and justice rather than pirate of resources, persecutor of race, and maker of inequality.

Now the reason for the turmoil of many resource-oriented countries in the world is that the government works as resource pirate and persecutor of race, which is caused by private ownership of land.

However, turmoil and government issues also happen in countries with public ownership of land, which is because of rulers' administration ideas and scientific utilisation of public resources, which is just like public ownership of the communal pot in Chairman Mao's period. It was because of unreasonable utilisation of capital. Just like when a group of monkeys get a BMW, they do not know how to use it. Or a group of peasants use a superior-quality car to plough and say it is not better than an ox cart.

Besides public ownership of land, there should also be reasonable and healthy operation and appreciation of public capital rather than sitting down and sharing the plunder and equal division, which I have discussed in other papers.

7. Mao Zedong solved the problem of land ownership in China

28 January 2015

The other day, a scholar gave a speech and expressed an opinion that Mao Zedong solved the problem of land ownership in China.

It is really a very profound and high-level issue.

Regarding the rights and wrongs of Chairman Mao, there are a lot of things.

From this perspective, everything Chairman Mao did was right rather than wrong and aimed to solve the problem of land ownership in China. Indeed, economic development and various aspects of achievements made after China's reform and opening up were based on this platform—the public ownership of land.

The Soviet Union also set up this platform, which collapsed later. Therefore, the subsequent things of the Soviet Union could not be predicted. It had to make decisions on its own.

From the War of Liberation to the Chinese Civil War and then to the Cultural Revolution, Chinese people bled a lot. After the establishment of this platform, the following things including harmonious society, national governance, and fairness and justice can be discussed.

Human nature is selfish, greedy, dirty, ignorant, and evil. Without bleeding, people cannot handle affairs, reason things out clearly, and draw the attention of others.

8. Humans' physiological and safety needs and God's love

1 February 2015

According to Maslow's needs-hierarchy theory, physiological needs and safety needs are the basic needs of human beings. However, how could these needs be satisfied?

We ordinary people have a microcosmic way of thinking, which means that the above needs of us are satisfied by ourselves through our own ways.

Physiological needs are needs for clothing, eating, taking a wife, and having kids. Daily necessities, house, car, wife, kid, and money are the standard of meeting the physiological needs.

To put it a little bit simpler, money is the standard of such needs, and money can solve all the problems. Our ideas and Western ideas are different towards such needs of human beings. Western holds that such is personal problem and private matter which belongs to the scope of human rights and freedom and does not have much relationship with others in society.

Thus, my point is that Western culture belongs to individualistic culture.

And what I have repeatedly stressed in this book is that such needs are not personal problems but problems of a social concern. It is too parochial to think in the perspective of individuals. We need to put our eyes in the long run, considering this problem in the perspective of the society, the country, or even the whole world.

Actually, the social insurance systems adopted in highly developed Western countries are helping solving part of this problem. Such insurance systems could satisfy the needs of eating, clothing, daily necessities, and basic medical services of their citizens. Other needs on the physiological level such as house, car, wife, kid, and money have to be satisfied by the citizens themselves.

However, the social insurance in less-developed and poor countries are incapable of solving the problems of eating, clothing, daily necessities, and basic medical services of their citizens.

The United States has promoted its democracy around the world for many years. Compared with genocide, democracy is relatively advanced. The effect of promoting democracy in poor areas, however, is not good, with some areas become more chaotic. Democracy in poor areas does not achieve its desired effect but has brought big trouble of Islam in the Middle East.

There had been no terrorism before. Even in Hitler's time, we heard only about genocide but not terrorist attacks and terrorism. It is a big trouble made by the American conduct of promoting its democracy, a by-product of democracy, and the side effect of the 'democratic drugs'. This Pandora's box was opened by America.

Since ancient times, humans have established organs of state violence such as police, army, prison, and courts. Such organs are the symbol of royalty. In ancient China, it is called the divine right of kings, which means that the monarchical power is granted by God to control his subjects in the entire kingdom. Such monarchical power is used by God to suppress devils which live in the hearts of everyone. All the organs of state violence are taken advantage of by the king, who was authorised by God to suppress devils and regulate the social order.

It is the democracy promoted by America that weakens the state machinery by which God regulates the behaviour of people and suppresses devils, and it releases all the devils living in the hearts of humans. Now devils have controlled the whole world, and they are everywhere. The law of God has been unable to perform. The whole world is in an out-of-control state when measured by God's standard.

Just as Mexico has said, 'We are so close to America, but we are so far from God.'

My criticism of the democracy promoted by America is not to totally overthrow democracy. To some degree, democracy is indeed a good thing, a kind of civilisation and progress. However, there are also indeed many problems democracy cannot solve. And at the same time, a lot of big troubles and side effects have been brought by it. We need to discuss and research to obtain a more reasonable solution to solve this problem so that the world can be better. When the intention of God has been complied with, both God and all of us can be satisfied.

In poor areas and Islamic areas, democracy is the most poisonous poison, the most evil demon. We have had enough. We are sick of it.

Getting back to God's original intention is to use the wealth belonging to God and God's love for humans to satisfy the physiological needs and safety needs of humans and provide humans with their demands on the lowest level. Such is the most reasonable and best social system, social management mode, and social operation mode.

On the basis that the most basic safety needs and physiological needs have been satisfied, everyone could satisfy their other needs according to their own conditions, accomplish social needs, and realise self-actualisation.

The world created by God needs to provide everyone with a basic platform, which is a co-prosperity coexistence and could satisfy the safety and material needs to survive. Such platform must be implemented by the love of God and the wealth belonging to God. This is exactly the fairness and justice of God, the basic fairness and justice, by which people living on this platform could survive and improve their souls with the pursuit of human rights, freedom, and democracy and higher self-satisfaction and fulfilment.

This is God's original intention and the infrastructure to establish a kingdom of God far away from evil.

The democracy system promoted by America is a kind of high-grade consumer goods which could only be implemented when the civilisation of a society has achieved a certain height. Even if such democracy has been realised, there will be tremendous problems.

The infrastructure I have put forward, however, is completely suitable for all kinds of societies, especially those less-developed ones.

Firstly, the land public ownership and the monopoly of state-owned enterprises should be realised in less-developed countries. This can be achieved through revolution. There are continuous wars in less-developed countries. The problem is that people are using wars to drive away a group of rogues and then become another group of rogues when they've won. Without a clear macro guidance and development direction, revolutionaries do not know where to lead the whole country to.

And for less-developed regions and countries, the democracy promoted by America is the most poisonous poison which could only bring chaos, terror, and unfairness and could never solve the existing problems and contradictions in your country.

In chaotic and underdeveloped areas, there must be a tyrant to stabilise the overall situation and suppress evil, ignorance, and the devil. Such is the power granted by God.

This tyrant, however, needs to have a clear development idea and guidance goal about how to gradually bring his country to civilisation, rather than prey on his people and ride roughshod over his people.

It is easy and very common to find a tyrant brutal. However, whether a tyrant is willing to bring his people to civilisation or willing to prey on his people requires wisdom, the wisdom of the people.

There has appeared a brutal tyrant in China, but then Chinese people have used their wisdom to solve this problem. I think other areas could also use their wisdom to solve the problem of a brutal tyrant who preys on his people.

To sum up, humans need to have a clear idea and development strategy to move towards civilisation gradually, getting rid of injustice, ignorance, evil, and the devil. We should not always waste our energy to do things such as shooting ourselves in the foot.

Part 4

Century Sentence the untold story of china

1. What is human?

About 2007

We come into contact with a lot of people every day; we are human, but do you know what is human? Do humans themselves know?

I am someone who believes in science and research science. I am an electronic technician and try to study all equipment and electrical appliances I have touched. And basically I can repair all of them. I am not a theologian.

I think humans themselves do not know exactly what they are. The knowledge about humans that people have mastered is just some superficial knowledge. If the total amount of knowledge about humans is expressed as 100, I think the most advanced technology now cannot reach 1 per cent.

A lot of people may be unconvinced of what I say.

You can go ask the top scientists, whether in the field of biology, nuclear power, physics, or chemistry. Humans need how many years, how much scientific knowledge to use sunshine, air, water, stone, and these natural inorganic substances as raw materials to create true, complete, living, and conscious people? Don't say people, a pig, a frog, a caterpillar, even the most primitive life, protozoa and virus, can they create?

We still need how many years, how much knowledge to use inorganic substances to create the simplest life like God.

Don't believe Darwin's biological theory of evolution. It is true that biology is an evolutionary phenomenon, but it is just a basic function of organisms, like a bird will preen its feathers, no one to teach, nothing strange. It is just an inborn function of a bird.

Not to mention humans, who have a lot of amazing powers, they just don't know, let alone using them, such as qigong, etc. This can't be explained by natural science theory.

In my estimation, if humans want to reach the level of using natural inorganic substance to create people, they still need at least five hundred years, even thousands of years of scientific knowledge and development of the science and technology, then they can achieve this level.

Maybe many people don't believe—human scientists have created cattle and sheep with asexual reproduction. Humans are very great.

In my opinion, this is a joke. Cloning is to use one living organism or several organisms to create organisms. It is to use one living material to create another living material. Cloning is like a car

assembly, or assembled is more appropriate.

But one point must be cleared: an assembled car is a completely different concept from using iron ore in iron-making and steel-making, then design, process, and production of parts finally taking shape with assembly. To assemble a car needs a few workers and a small amount of technology to complete. But to design and produce a car needs almost all of the science and technology and industries in the whole society. Requiring a series of science and technology knowledge, if compared with the amount of knowledge, it will be different at myriad times, and they are completely separate concepts.

Now the top science and the most advanced technology still need five hundred to a thousand years, even tens of thousands of years to create the simplest life. So in ancient times, with wind, sunlight, water, and soil buried in natural conditions, to create life more complex than computers is not logical and not scientific.

The change of things is from quantitative to qualitative; all have cause and effect. It is the same as the origin of life; the earth can't be in the case of natural force to naturally complete a work that needs a senior intelligence—life development from nothing.

Even the simplest life is more complex than the computer used now. Life development from nothing is not as simple as 0 to 1, but the sudden change from 0 to 10,000—even 1,000,000. This sudden change is absolutely not completed by the natural force as wind, sunlight, rain, soil buried.

I remember my biology teacher told me, 'Nature, thunder and lightning may produce proteins, and some scientists have made similar experiments. The natural combination of protein can create life.' I think this is nonsense.

If they exist, the materials can constitute life such as proteins or amino acid in nature, and these materials cannot become life by the simple stack.

But in the case of natural force, assuming there are bicycle parts everywhere in nature, if we just rely on the wind, sunlight, rain, soil buried, these parts will always be parts (if not rot). It will absolutely be impossible for them to become a bicycle under the condition of natural force, because life is not a simple stack by various elements, the ingenious combination with super-advanced knowledge and strength, even the same to the simplest life.

Natural force can only simply stack, but without wise combination function, it is absolutely impossible to create a life.

So I think life on earth is created by foreign intelligent life rather than natural force. Natural force is not intelligent and without the ability to create a wise creature.

As for what's the purpose of intelligent life creating the universe and human life, where they are

now, I don't know. But they have created all things is the most scientific explanation. Our ancient legends also prove this point. All sorts of different cultures are the support of creationism. God is intelligent life, and science and technology and knowledge is at least ten thousand years more advanced than the modern top technology.

Even I think some of the human knowledge and cultures are from intelligent life. Because human knowledge and intelligence is a process from quantitative change to qualitative change, but I think there are a lot of civilisation that are not to be created in the society at that kind of civilised degree. Because of many ancient cultures, humans can't be able to fully absorb now. In today's science and technology and knowledge, it can't fully explain. So where did the human knowledge come from at that time?

Such knowledge and culture as China's Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, the philosophy of yin and yang, the Book of Changes can never be formed in ancient times and spread on oracle and bamboo slips. Just to record this knowledge will need to spend a lot of time and effort, not to mention study, thinking, and forming such profound ideas and cultures. This is not the kind of knowledge that can be obtained on hunting and fishing. And the modern human cannot fully understand this kind of knowledge, but there are many phenomena that show they are right. One of the explanations is that they obtain help and hints from intelligent life.

Human society is scientific and material; God in ancient legend is the intelligent life. So there is no need to debate idealism and materialism. God gives all things in life, but also the intelligent life gives humans life. Intelligent life has strong ability, limitless wisdom, and indeed omnipotent to everything. Humans compared with them are tiny and funny; self-righteousness is arrogance.

But there is also another kind of people on earth, too frightened by God's power, who even do not believe their own eyes and hands and completely do not have self-awareness.

From these two kinds of people, the human is really pathetic and ridiculous.

From all indications, the human society has always obtained help and hints from a supernatural power. And this power always guides people towards the light and wisdom.

So the human essence is the intelligent machine and creation made up of cells.

Creatures, even the simplest organisms, viruses, are also countless times more complicated and advanced than our computer.

So far, and for a long period in the future, humans cannot use stones, water, air, and other inorganic substances to create a simple life.

It is precisely because life is so complex, so the life creation of Darwinian theory is purely nonsense. Evolution is just a function of life, just like your computer to automatically update the system. But it does not mean that nature can naturally produce computer.

So creationism is the most reasonable theory to explain the origin of life.

God created man. God loves everyone.

If even the human themselves are not sure what they are, how can they change the destiny? How can they dominate the destiny?

Life, including humans, is the machine created by intelligent life.

Consciousness, emotion, reproduction, politics, economics, philosophy, war, killing, torture, extermination, survival, lechery, greed, lazy, and intelligence are all functions of the machine.

For these functions, humans should not fear, not escape, not hate, and not complain, to not be proud and not be arrogant.

In a sense, each of us is in the show. We are all actors, chess pieces, soldiers, and slaves.

2. Human nature

About 2007

Human nature is the root of social system. Social system serves for human nature as well as humans.

There goes an old Chinese saying that men at their birth are naturally good. Their natures are much the same; their habits become widely different. These words are nearly known by all Chinese people, drawing the greatest influence on them. The concepts of returning good for evil, treating others as you want to be treated, doing things for the good of others, and one good turn deserving another indicate the ancient wise men's understanding of human nature and the influence that Buddhist doctrines have on the Chinese people's nature. The Western concept about human nature advocates that men at their birth are naturally bad; men are born to do bad things. Children who do not listen to the adults' words and eat forbidden fruits furtively are bad kids and should be punished. The words in the Bible are all about punishment, killing, and God's punishment towards the heretics for his adoptionists. Therefore, the human nature of the Western people is evil.

The human nature includes fear of death and pursuit of safety. The common primitive instinct in a human's ego does not differ with the colours of skin. The reasonable superego is formed by the accumulation in the postnatal life and aggregation of experience.

Due to the different environment and cultures, superego varies quite a lot between Western people and Eastern people and between different races. Superego refers to humans' experience of society and the world, including their understanding of social system and the whole universe.

When it comes to human nature, the common characteristics are shared by all mankind. These distinct characteristics are ideas, desires, and impulses born with humans rather than postnatally accumulated. This is human nature, i.e. the ego.

What is a human's ego? Need for safety, fear for death and danger, various desires including eating, dressing, reacting to external stimulation, sexual intercourse, instinct of death in Freud's theory, impulse, and instinct to eradicate people who threaten your life and destroy your interests are all human nature. Humans are good when you think they are good; humans are evil when you think they are evil.

3. Why does a man do things for the good of others?

About 2007

Where does the phrase 'treat others as you want to be treated' come from?

It is the unique Chinese culture. The Western people who believe the Darwinist law of the jungle and theory of evolution will not believe in this phrase, which is completely against the law of the jungle. Sheep are eaten by tigers because they run slower than tigers and are too weak to fight against tigers. This is the law of the jungle. However, according to the Chinese law of treating others as you want to be treated, if tigers hope not to be eaten by lions, they should not eat sheep. Though sheep are weak and tigers are strong, weak and strong are relative rather than invariable. Sheep are weaker than tigers, and tigers are weaker than lions. If tigers hope not to be eaten by lions in the future, they should not eat sheep today, because sheep might have paid protection fees to lions. If a tiger eats a sheep today, the sheep's son will ask a lion for revenge on the tiger tomorrow. When will revenge come to an end? It's better to get along with each other well and not to eat some others, which is the Chinese logic.

A sheep knows that it is too weak to fight against a tiger, but it can ask a lion for protection. When in trouble, the sheep asks the lion to fight for it. This is the Chinese logic.

Therefore, the Chinese sheep put forward the idea of treating others as you want to be treated. Lion is the king of animals, but a dragon is larger than a lion. Dragon is the son of heaven, the emperor. Sheep are often chased and bit by tigers and lions, so sheep often ask the dragon for help, which is the application for an audience with the higher authorities to appeal for help.

Actually, treating others as you want to be treated, as well as application for an audience with the higher authorities to appeal for help, is not human nature but the reason in humans. This idea is not thought by everyone. It is summarised by the ancient wise men, celebrities, great men, and ideologists after reflection and experiences and taught by personal example as well as verbal instruction. This idea or the thinking mode is not merely disseminated through textbooks, but also through daily life, like the basic necessities of life, dramas, arts, entertainment, which are so-called culture, expressed in the words of famous people or works of art and literature.

However, culture is not humans' inborn nature. Thus, doing things for the good of others is not human nature but the reason of Chinese culture. Whether there is such theory in the culture of other countries, to be honest, the author has never studied profoundly. But one thing to be certain is that nations that regard the Darwinist law of the jungle as their national culture will not do things for the good of others and treat others as they want to be treated.

Are there any elements of doing things for the good of others in human nature? Let's first of all analyse the word *good*. What is good? Good is the opposite of evil. Then what is good? What is evil?

Who set the criteria of good and evil? There is no good when there is no evil. It goes the other way around.

Lewdness is the worst of all sins, while filial piety is the best of all good. This is a famous old saying in China. Lewdness and filial piety are the criteria of judging what is good and what is evil. In ancient times, are they human nature? What is lewdness? What is filial piety?

Lewdness is the behaviour of having sex with others besides one's spouse.

In the ancient matriarchal society, the age of knowing one's mother rather than one's father, is there a concept of lewdness? At that time, even the mothers themselves did not know how many men they had slept with, so they would not know who made them pregnant. Therefore, people at that time did not have fathers but only mothers. There was no concept of lewdness, which developed in the patriarchal society, where men dominated the society. To protect their properties, men forbade their spouses to have sex with other men to prevent bastards from splitting up their family properties. In fact, such behaviour was logical in the society at that time. Lewdness was not allowed by customs and even laws.

But is it human nature?

The author does not think it is human nature or the natural instinct but regards it as reason. Though men who dominated the patriarchal society strongly were against their spouses having sex with other men, they themselves would have sex with more than two women reasonably and lawfully. Polygyny had been popular for a long time in ancient China and all over the world. The Chinese emperors had a number of wives and concubines in the imperial harem. From the perspective of polygyny and the Chinese emperors, who had so many wives and concubines, two lovers always keeping each other company and living to old age in conjugal bliss are not the nature of men.

Similarly, the fact that women in the matriarchal society would sleep with dozens of men and their children did not know who their fathers were. It showed that monogamy and living to old age in conjugal bliss are also not the nature of women.

Monogamy and living to old age in conjugal bliss are ideas and concepts that the ruling class and social administration imposed on men or women in order to better rule the society which are not human nature but humans' reason.

Similarly, filial piety is not human nature but a concept and awareness that the ruling class and social administration imposed on people.

Therefore, to distinguish well from evil by lewdness, humans' nature is lewd and evil.

Humans' nature is their social behaviour conducted by their instinct. Nature is humans' social behaviour driven by their innate impulses and desires.

4. Filial piety

About 2007

What is filial piety? In the Chinese ancient culture, respect for parents is called filial piety, and fraternity with brothers is called fraternal duty. Is filial piety born with human nature? Obviously, it does not exist in human nature. If filial piety is human nature, it should be a common characteristic shared by all mankind of any nation or country. However, there is only the Chinese nation regarding filial piety as the criterion to distinguish right from wrong and good from evil. The Western countries that advocate freedom, democracy, and human rights take judging a man if he has filial piety or not as infringing his rights. Parents who interfere with their children's behaviour in the name of filial piety are reckoned to infringe the children's rights of personal freedom.

However, in Chinese feudal society, filial piety played a great irreplaceable role in maintaining the stability of the society and country. Filial piety is also taken as a tool to rule the feudal society, a favourable tool for the country, society, and families. On the condition of productivity at that time, Chinese ancient civilisation was superior to other countries over a thousand years, thanks to the doctrine of Confucius and Mencius and filial piety.

We are talking about the relationship between filial piety and human nature here, so let's talk about the contributions of filial piety later. Though filial piety has made undeniable contributions, it is not human nature but the ethical culture concluded by the Chinese ancient wise men which had been advocated by the ruling classes of the past dynasties. Otherwise, there would not be the miracle of leading the ancient civilisation for over a thousand years.

Since the basic grounds of the theory of original goodness of human nature is proved to be human reason, human nature can only be supported by the theory of original evil of human nature.

In fact, good and evil are relative. Since good does not exist in human nature, neither does evil.

The concept of good and evil is used to describe a man's behaviour from the social perspective, commented by a third person. To do things for the good of others is good, and to do things for the bad of others is evil.

Human nature is inherently used to cope with the external world and society and meet one's own needs. What is the external world? It's society, nature, and other people.

Human nature is the attribute and instinct of animals. It is born to serve oneself rather than society or other people. Society is not the service object of human nature, but the opponent to cope with.

When it comes to human nature, it is a natural attribute rather than a social attribute. Social attribute or reason is the accumulation of the analysis of experience in humans' brains, which is not human instinct or a natural attribute, but concepts or ideas formed in the postnatal life. A man's living environment and experience decides what his reason would be. Different people in different living environments and with different living experiences will have totally different reasons.

In terms of human nature, i.e., the ego in Freud's theory, from the perspective of observation of social events, humans' ego is decided by genes. Different races of people share similar original impulses, but men and women have a quite large difference in original impulses. Actually, though the author has never studied the difference between the original impulses of people of different races, the author thinks that there is no big difference or they are almost the same. In the world, men are the same with men, and women are the same with women. However, men are completely different from women. These are the results of the author's observation as well as the prediction and statement of Chinese ancient prehistoric civilisation.

5. Kindness of humanity

about 2007

Is there kindness of humanity? I consider it exists. What are people's demand and impulsion for? Being satisfied both sexually and mentally. Actually, all impulsions aim for that simple and also complex thing.

People will live and die by instinct.

To satisfy spiritual and material demands is for the sake of living, while the instinct of death is to eradicate all the factors and units that impede living. Thus, the instinct of death is to live.

Human fights with the nature for living or living better, i.e. immortality. However, kindness of humanity is the combination of life instinct and proper methods, i.e. the principles. Then, it generates the desire of being kind.

Such rational thinking is unique to humans. Interpersonal relationship in human society evolves continuously. There have been kinds of social relations from slave society to feudal society, capitalist society to socialist society. Every time the human society evolves, its main material factor is the increase of productivity, and another immaterial factor is kindness, which refers to anti-oppression and seeks the idea of liberty, equality, and human rights. That's it—kindness of humans. It is not only the nature of humans, but also the instinctive integration of rationality and nature. If one fails the substance of human rationality and civilisation, that one will be an idiot or psychotic, or an absolute animal. He does not have the concept of kindness, just like the goat or the lion who doesn't know the boundary of kindness and wickedness.

Humans' rationality, mentality, and trade-off are exactly the source of kindness.

What is kindness? It is the pursuit of liberty, safety, and the wish of living in riches and of being pleasant. It also means that all the demands can be satisfied in society and be recognised truly and permanently but not temporarily and hypocritically.

The ideas above about kindness, I swear, are a condition expected by all human beings, no matter what nation or colour they are. It is the instinct of living, and it is the fundamental desire and ideal state created by the instinct. People will strive for that ideal condition, without hesitation, even if they have to risk and pay for it, which also includes approaches, efforts, and behaviour obtained through brain analysing and experience summarising. That is the kindness of humanity.

6. Removal of the evil in human nature in a civilised way

About 2007

But in the nature and natural tendencies of humanity are lots of evil natures essential for survival.

Those natures enable man to survive in a natural state, but they must be limited and even cleared away in a civilised society.

If man cannot control the evil in his nature, the whole human society will shake off civilisation and recover barbarism, and this is what God hates to see. By that time, wars will befall the world to change the development direction of human society.

Most of the wars among humans are caused by social contradictions.

People are poor, pathetic animals. People, in particular the majority of people, have a very narrow dimension of consciousness. They only care about their own interests and their family's benefits but don't care for others.

When a serious conflict of interest arises between two types of people or the people of two regions after society develops and reaches a certain level, a war will come to change the status quo.

The human society developed from barbarism to civilisation and from slavery to feudalism and to capitalism, and Marx interpreted the development of society as the development of productivity. In my opinion, the development of productivity changed the level of the social civilisation. What is civilisation? Civilisation means making people's life more comfortable and better in the long run, with all things considered.

Productivity cannot directly change society, but the development of productivity has led to a change in civilisation.

Civilisation refers to the common transmission of an advanced culture.

The common people, the ignorant people, the social management, and the social elites, in particular the social management and the social elites—their acceptance of the advanced culture may directly lead to a radical change in the human social system. But productivity is just an inducement and a prerequisite. It is the civilisation of mankind, or the degree of the mastery of an advanced ideology or culture by the social elites, management, and common people that directly decides the social transformation.

The civilisation of mankind aims simply to overcome the evil in human nature, using reason and

wisdom; overcome the evil in human nature with the help of reasonable, wise people and their social relations; and restrict the evil in humans by means of a rational system, so as to create a better living environment for the great majority of people.

Owing to the innate savageness, ignorance, and evil desire in human nature, the whole human society is still in utter confusion at present even though it has a civilised history of several thousand years. Savageness, hatred, contradiction, and pain exist throughout the world. Human beings fancy themselves civilised, but if the so-called civilisation is measured with an ideal interpersonal political and economic connection, you will see that the civilisation of mankind is just a little better than that in the primitive society, and there is not even an essential difference between the two.

Material prosperity does not mean great progress in people's way of thinking, as an upstart's wealth does not mean he is learned. Furthermore, a highly educated person may not definitely bring a big influence to the whole society, and this just means that he has more knowledge of a certain field.

By civilisation, I mean a civilisation based on an ideal interpersonal relationship, and a social management civilisation rather than material civilisation based on an understanding of the social order and a capacity for acts.

Correct management of the entire society was called the kingly way, or benevolent governance, in ancient China.

What Lao Tzu wrote in the Tao Te Ching is the way of social management and the requirements for management.

Of course, the Tao Te Ching is just a record of a way in which social management was understood more than two thousand years ago. Many concrete practices recorded in it are not worth holding in esteem, but the mode of thinking is very correct. The same mode of thinking or basic principle might lead to different and even completely opposite concrete practices in different specific circumstances. This is because as a specific event and condition changed, the specific problem-solving method was sure to change.

7. Use appropriate method to eliminate the evil in human nature

About 2007

In fact, evil and good are neither in heaven nor earth, but in people's hearts.

It is in everyone's heart and subconscious; there is desire of good and power of evil in our subconscious since we have consciousness. And there is no boundary between the good and evil; a human is good, but also a human is evil. A good man conversion with the devil is the doctrine; a demon may turn into an angel with the doctrine, but without the doctrine, the angel may turn into a demon.

Doctrine refers to the way which is correct, comprehensive, and tolerant of all people, in line with human nature; it is a perfect way to make humans coexist, with common prosperity.

This approach is changing with changing technology, which is mastered by people. That is, it is changing with people's productivity changing.

Therefore, the first sentence of the Tao Te Ching explains the method to get rid of all suffering, and contradictory to human coexistence, common prosperity is changing and transforming. It is conversion with conditions conversion, and nothing can be following decades of teaching of words and deeds. That specific wisdom method is gradually established combined with present situation.

Frankly, in my experience, almost everything tells me human nature is ugly, ignorant, and hopeless. So when I want to change the people around me, I find that I can change nothing. In the secular world, only money and power can change others.

But there are some things that change my ideas and views and also show the goodness of human nature. I really feel the power of rational good from humans. The senior leaders and academics who are the elites of society can struggle in the right direction, trying to change the fate of the country and the world. This is the charitable thought and good desire of humans in this world.

The performance of charitable thought and good desire of humans is not necessary to have lower people, for surface phenomena and posturing do good deeds, but for determining national interests as well as human destiny, which is really good deeds.

In fact, with common people, the range of consciousness is narrow. It is not easy for them to manage their affairs. Only the elite and people with superior ability can understand doctrines, follow doctrines, comprehend doctrines, and then improve the doctrines, developing and extending doctrines.

Common people have their own doctrines; they will be lucky if they can follow their own doctrine.

This book is for the people who are obeying a big doctrine and those in high positions as well as the social elites, instead of the common people. I would like to explore the future of human society and the country's direction with the elite through this book. It is purely academic papers; if someone feels too far away from the point of view in this book and cannot accept it, please make sure your knowledge is more profound than mine and then comment on this book, or it does not make sense.

Of course, I have a little knowledge about all aspects. With the development of technology, people will have more explicit and clear understanding of the human world; meanwhile, the doctrine will continue to evolve and improve.

Human life is limited, the knowledge mastered is limited, but the development of science and technology and history are unlimited.

I wish that people in this world truly understand others' human nature and, understanding the foundation of variety of people happening in the world, therefore find a more suitable way for human development.

Do not be driven by the devil in your heart; do not be confused by the barbarism and ignorance. We should be real masters of our own destiny, to grasp our own happiness and future, meanwhile control the future of humanity.

However, only the perspective of good and evil to understand human nature is not enough and is superficial. We need more scientific and rational perspectives to analyse humanity.

8. What is consciousness?

About 2007

Consciousness is the quality or state of being aware of something within oneself or an external object and the reflection in people's brains.

Consciousness is the response not only to the existing stimulation, but also to the imagination. Even though you close your eyes and ears, lying on a bed, you can still remember or imagine the memories and replay, process, and imagine past feelings. Usually people's reflection on objects is a process of remembering, analysing, and processing them in a simple form of images.

For example, we may remember things that happened long ago. Though they were far back, we still have vague memories of them, maybe blurry images, sounds, or smells.

There is no clear boundary between consciousness and the subconscious, just like the bottom of the iceberg and the part above the water are integral parts of the whole. As time goes by, some things sink into the water or may be forgotten. Even so, their influence on us is permanent and remains in our brains. Hence, the author believes that humans' brains and consciousness mainly depend on their impression and affection for the external objects so as to memorise them, while images, sounds, and smells are the auxiliary means for memorisation. Sometimes or on most occasions, people would forget these auxiliary means. However, the impression and emotions in the brains are permanent, unless they are changed by some other objects.

The author thinks it is the basic mode of the generation of consciousness.

Humans are merely advanced computers, from their birth to death, memorising the effects that every experience has on the individual so that when similar things occur, the human brain will alert the body to react, which is zoologically called unconditioned reflex. People have made countless experiments, and the author merely explains this phenomenon by consciousness and the subconscious.

The innumerable events during one's life, whether small or big, will exert effects on him. From a technical perspective, the brain needs to memorise the process and result of everything that has happened, and the sense organs like eyes, nose, ears, and mouth are collecting information all the time. How to record information and pick up the records to do reaction are problems to be solved; the solutions are that our brains record and permanently save things and the effects and emotional impression that these things exert on us. The scenes of the happenings, which are simply recorded, will get vague or be forgotten as time goes by, but emotions and impression will never be forgotten and can be picked up at any time. Why?

From the perspective of Chinese medicine's Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, a man has seven emotions and six sensory pleasures, which are the reflex and impression of the things that he is

linked with. For example, one is delighted and joyful when one smells the fragrance of the osmanthus. However, one will feel sick and disagreeable when one smells the stink of excrement.

The Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor states that the seven emotions and six sensory pleasures, respectively, control a certain visceral organ. The author has not deeply studied it to make sure if it is true, but he only knows a little about it.

A computer spares quite a lot of space to store a movie but little to store data.

If each of the seven emotions and six sensory pleasures represents a variable, there are thirteen variables. The first time I felt pleased to smell the fragrance of the osmanthus, I set the pleasure to a score of 60 and provided no other variables; the score of the other twelve variables is 0.

Similarly, I set the sick for the stink of excrement to a score of 50 because there are more disgusting objects than excrement. My first disagreeable impression on excrement is a score of 50, and the others are 0.

When we think of the osmanthus next time, though we do not see the osmanthus or smell its fragrance, our subconscious will immediately tell us that the pleasure score is 60 and other scores are 0, and we will naturally have a pleasant mood and impression. As time goes by, we may forget when or where we have smelt the fragrance of the osmanthus, but our pleasure scores of 60 will actually never be forgotten, unless we encounter other things and generate other emotions when we get to smell the osmanthus again. For example, you go to play in a park once again and feel delighted to see the osmanthus. This time, you get your nose close to the osmanthus to smell it, and you get bitten by a bug. Then your impression of the osmanthus may add a fear score of 30 and decrease the pleasure score to 50.

With a time lapse, you may gradually forget the displeasure, but the fear will never be forgotten, unless another one or more things occur and change your impression and feeling of the osmanthus again.

Freud has confirmed the generation mode of such consciousness again and again with countless cases.

The mode is of great significance to knowing a person or society. It helps us to know a person and his thoughts and awareness by quantitative and scientific analysis. Besides, I firmly believe that robots with real emotions rather than simple machine programs can be generated.

Human ideologies are quite complicated and scientific.

From the above-mentioned, a man has a pleasure score of 50, fear score of 30, and no other emotions on the osmanthus. If he forgets the cause of the emotions, these emotions will sink into the ocean of consciousness and become subconscious.

To summarise, the subconscious refers to consciousness that people know what to do and what they want to do, but do not know why they want to do it.

It sounds like the stories and plots in romantic novels. You like someone but cannot tell why you like him or her.

As Freud said, the subconscious is like an iceberg, and consciousness is the tip of the iceberg above the water.

People open their eyes and see the whole world and all kinds of things. Some people like these objects while others like those objects. Some objects are what you like and others are what you dislike. It's not everything that you can entirely tell why you like it or why you dislike it.

Actually, you are not able to make it clear. Why? Your attitude towards a certain object is the total emotions you have linked with this object and its associated objects.

The subconscious can be classified into two categories. One is ego and the other one is superego, defined by Freud. As far as the author is concerned, one is the inherent primitive drives and instincts, i.e. the attributes of animals. The other one is the accumulation of the impressions on the happenings in the brain, i.e. the accumulation of reason and intellect.

Experience subconscious and animal subconscious are the two sources of the human subconscious. The inherent fear of death, pleasure from sexual intercourse, desires for the opposite sex, desires for food and water are animal subconscious; so is the curiosity for the things to come.

The emotions for all kinds of things constitute a real human. If humans are not clear about it, they will ever be ignorant and they cannot explain or make sense of everything that happens in the human society. If we cannot understand humans or truly understand humans in a scientific way, we will not able to ascertain the objects of observation, but only subjectively assume about humans or borrow words of famous people to explain humans. That is like milking a bull.

Then we will not be able to figure out our work. The working approaches and performance will be no more than castle in the air.

Buddhism requires humans with great wisdom to have supernatural eyes, unsurpassed enlightenment, and wisdom. However, first of all, humans should be able to see through the appearance to perceive the essence. The author does not entirely agree on Freud's pansexualism nor has deeply studied sex. Freud's theoretical framework is based on innumerable cases, which is absolute truth.

The influential celebrity Lu Xun in China has ever flayed Freud's theory. Therefore, up to now, research on Freud's theory in the Chinese mainland is regarded as heterodoxy, which is the biggest mistake that the Chinese have ever made. Since Chinese and Chinese leadership cannot

discern people and see their nature, the author thinks Freud's theory, at least his basic theories, should be included in the required courses in high school. Research on the subconscious and impulses helps us explain many human phenomena which cannot be explained by any other courses.

9. Dimension of consciousness

About 2007

Almost every nation and every country has the war in which feudal society replaced slave society. Various human wars against aggression and even certain wars brought by human aggression are the actions taken by humans in order to achieve the reasonable and perfect world order that they think. This is the good of human nature, or the good that some people take advantage of, and the good that is easy to be taken advantage of by some people, because many aggressive wars take good thoughts as their slogan or the initiators think they are doing good. For example, the propaganda or idea for Japanese war of aggression against China is to 'build greater East Asia co-prosperity sphere, implement benevolent governance, and establish benevolent land'. The Japanese militarists also thought they did the good thing, and the good thoughts were just one goal. If our direction is A, the principle of good thoughts or the ideal is B, the way from A to B is the process of doing the good humans think. For example, 'life for a life, a debt paid in full' is China's most classic justice and the most basic method of doing good.

In the Chinese classical philosophy, the best, the most ideal, and the most appropriate way of A–B is referred to as Tao. Lao-Tzu's Tao Te Ching is about the description of 'Tao', and 'Buddhist texts' takes 'Tao' as 'Du', which means crossing the river. There is a little description about it in Hinayana, and there are a few people that can achieve the perfect state. And Mahayana refers to the world beings, to achieve the perfect state of relief.

Actually, for people, many profound truths are seemingly out of reach and illusory, because our thinking pattern is very narrow.

A family, an enterprise, a city, a country, and a planet are actually systems. The relationship between people, humans and society, humans and nature seems independent but is actually mutually connected with mutual influence.

People, as individuals, bustle about every day in order to satisfy their own desires. The consciousness of others that vast majority of people can understand, only including a few loved ones, and even he himself, we call the ability to understand other people and surrounding people as a dimension of consciousness.

Reading, especially reading literature books, is to communicate with different people. Even watching movies and TV, listening to stories are a good way to get into the dimension of consciousness of others and understand others' structure. Most people just go over the story plot or see the handsome boy and the beauty when watching movies, watching TV, reading a novel. Actually, most movie directors and novel authors want to use this way to express an intrinsic way of thinking, which is the real intention of the author.

In real life, the dimension of consciousness determines a person's success and social status. In a

certain sense, the dimension of consciousness is the psychology research object and is the psychological activity of others. But I hate to use the concept of psychology, because it is brain rather than heart that conducts thinking to produce feeling. Strictly speaking, it has no direct relationship with the heart. So I hate to use this word. Reason is the rationality or the truth. Within a certain time and scope, reason is relatively stable and constant, but the consciousness and ideas of people always change, so I also hate to use the word reason to express the concept of consciousness.

The consciousness I understand is in constant change, with uncertainty. But in spite of uncertainty, it also changes within a certain scope and is not beyond this scope.

Everyone's consciousness is like the light of a flashlight, which can only brighten the nearby place of a few square metres. What people can think of are the things within a few square metres, not beyond this scope. The things that people can realise are those within a few square metres. When a person responds to a thing, he will only find the answer and the way out in the small circle.

Actually, the language, expressions, clothes, words, and actions we are exposed to every day are used as a kind of method to express thoughts and feelings of people. They are ways, means, representations, but not purpose. The reason why I promote psychoanalysis is that it can tell people the real driving force behind the behaviour of people, or the real intention or purpose of people's behaviour. Buddhism says people should have supreme wisdom and sammasambuddha.

I think that it is the Buddha that tells people to understand the real purpose behind the behaviour of people but not to be confused by appearances. Because the real aim of people may be buried in the subconscious, and the party himself does not know the real aim for him to do that. But he is controlled by the real purpose all the time.

Maybe there are a lot of people that don't agree with me. They don't know their purpose. Do you really know what you want to do?

According to the basic theory of psychoanalysis, the consciousness of people is the thing that is able to enter the man's consciousness, which is just the tip of the iceberg, but the real iceberg is buried under the sea. It is unfathomable and unattainable. That is the real purpose of human behaviour.

What is the main body of the iceberg? It is composed of two parts.

1. Human animal's impulse is ego, and this force is the dominant force. It is the most fundamental factor for all behaviour, which means the indivisible consciousness at the bottom, and it is the most fundamental human consciousness, which means the person's true intention. I think people often can't perceive the consciousness at the bottom. That is the animal unconsciousness.

2. The rational part can be regarded as superego. Where does superego come from? It is the

deposition of all things that a person has experienced in his whole life in the brain, the deposition in the subconscious. That is to say, it is experience subconscious.

10. Psychoanalysis is a tool to study humanity and the human soul

About 2007

Through psychoanalysis, humans can learn what humanity is or what true humanity is.

The contradictory understanding of humanity by Oriental and Western philosophers suggests that one side or possibly both sides are deceiving the public.

Why is it necessary to learn humanity?

The reason is that social systems serve humans and are also implemented and maintained by the latter. If the essence of humans is left unknown, all social systems, ideas, and cultures are just built on palaces in the desert. They are castles in the air, illusions, and lies.

Humanity is a theoretical simulation and nature determination of humans by theorists. In this way, the ethereal humanity can be studied and simulated according to certain logic and be derived theoretically. In other words, something invisible finds a concrete model for itself.

The reason for the failure of Marxist theories worldwide and huge losses of humans caused by it is that Marx was a pure theorist or a dreamer without any practical experiences. He did not serve as a worker or a capitalist, so he did not know the worker or the capitalist. It was apt to say that he did not have a thorough understanding of humans and humanity. Without extensive contacts and in-depth understanding, the failure of Marxist theories was the failure of Marx's understanding of humans. His understanding of the relationship between humans and the attributes of humans and his simulation of humanity were totally wrong.

Psychoanalysis is a full simulation of consciousness generation, structure, and layer by Freud based on his psychotherapy of mental patients all his life. Contributions of Freud towards humans were based on numerous practices, forming a sharp contrast to Marx, a sheer theorist and dreamer. Only understanding and research findings of Freud were fully in line with dialectical materialism methodology.

If a human is likened to a computer, psychoanalysis is the tool to analyse the fixed programs of the computer. How consciousness of humans comes into being is the research object of psychoanalysis.

Freud is a psychiatrist. Through research and analysis of a series of mental disorders, he summarised the generation process and operation model of human consciousness. Thanks to his efforts, human consciousness—something invisible, impalpable, immeasurable, and unquantifiable—has a scientific research method and a reasonable operation model.

Scientific research of human consciousness and soul can help quantise and position all issues

related to the human society. Only in this way all these issues can be correctly understood and judged. Only in this way can humans see the essence of the bizarre, complex, and ridiculous phenomena in the human world, correctly judge them, and cope with them. For example, we can conduct psychoanalysis of Islam so as to root it out. We can conduct psychoanalysis of Democrats so as to reveal secrets deep in their heart. We can conduct psychoanalysis of people both accepting and refusing to accept refugees and refugees themselves so as to point out the essence of refugee phenomena in Europe.

We need truth and facts. Let's say no to deception. We are masters of our destiny. To the end, psychoanalysis is indispensable.

11. What is culture?

About 2007

This is to understand culture from the perspective of psychoanalysis.

Culture is a kind of subconscious mind from the perspective of psychoanalysis. It is not detectable and influences people's behaviour all the time. Only when compared with other cultures can it be obviously found out, and people will not pay attention to it without comparison.

As there are differences between men and women of the subconscious mind, all the people believe that their own behaviour is normal and correct. Instead, if a woman shows the male-specific behaviour or a man shows the female-specific behaviour, they will be regarded as abnormal, weird, and even perverted.

These common behaviour characteristics of men or women are in fact fully controlled by the subconscious mind, because all the wills of decision and the directions of thinking are the result of the driving of the subconscious mind.

What is a subconscious mind like? Just like vehicles. For example, one friend owns a car while another one doesn't have one and he can only travel by bus when he wants to go out. If both of them want to go somewhere far away, the ways of thinking of the car-driving friend and the bus-taking friend are totally different.

What the car-driving friend considers is which road is the shortest and the best one, while what the bus-taking friend considers is which bus line to choose to reach the destination and how he should transfer.

Although they are both able to reach the destinations, their ways of thinking and behaviour modes are totally different. The basic reason of the difference is about what vehicles they use: cars and buses.

Cars and buses can be equal to the subconscious mind, while their action lines are awareness. The specific actions for reaching the destination are exactly the behaviour.

It is commonly considered that cars and buses are hierarchical. However, there are no distinctions of high or low for the subconscious mind, between men and women. Humans are born with the subconscious mind, which has a close relationship with the sexual organs and the hormone secretion. The gender is determined by birth, which decides the sexual impulse to be active or passive, and the ways of sexual impulse determine the ways of thinking and the subconscious.

For example, there is a phenomenon in psychology as follows:

Compared with beautiful girls, the general-looking girls can easily be introverted and extreme. In life, especially after sexual maturity, they feel the differences from the boys, compared with beautiful girls. That is to say, they can feel their sexual satisfaction (spouse) is relatively more difficult than beautiful girls'. The dilemma and the difference that they face make the introverted girl have low self-esteem and lead the outgoing girls to be more extreme. Actually, their appearance decides the different ways of their spouse and sexual gratification. The difference of the spouse and sexual gratification determines the difference of their subconscious mind. The confidence, low self-esteem, and the extreme are just a manifestation of character, while internal factors—the difference of sexual satisfaction—lead to the difference of the rational part of the unconscious mind.

Above is my simple presentation about change of the subconscious mind and human behaviour, but there is a huge impact of the subconscious mind on countries and areas in the aspect of culture.

Cultural differences can be said to be national and regional differences in people's subconscious. The differences between Chinese culture and Western culture can be said as the differences between men and women, which are the differences in the subconscious rather than only one issue or one thing.

The culture we usually talk about may be referring to our understanding of culture of heritage, the ancient architecture, customs, ethics, morality, novels, literature, etc. However, these things are just manifestations of culture.

The essence of culture is a kind of idea and a comprehensive set of understanding, universal recognition, and basic philosophy of the relationship between people in society. In a country or a region, these widely recognised concepts in people's subconscious have been treated as an inherent condition and default, which is deposited in people's subconscious and affects people's every movement all the time. However, people never doubt that these things are the default behaviour model, and those who break these models are considered abnormal and will get sanctions of ethics, morality, and law.

The subconscious formed in people's concept of the relationship between humans, humans and society, and humans and nature in a certain country and society, which is recognised by the majority of people, is the culture.

Since it is present in people's subconscious and manifested and spread by people's language, behaviour, artwork, ethics, morality, and law, it has several features:

1. Because the subconscious of culture is precisely spread through daily behaviour, only the people outside of this culture come to this culture environment and can feel it through comparison. Usually it is in a default state that people cannot perceive its presence.

2. Because culture is spread through daily behaviour, it is everywhere and omnipresent and has

subtle influence on people. Through daily behaviour, it is spread all the time by people, thus it can be handed down from generation to generation.

3. Only when the environment has been changed and the subconscious is proved to be wrong could the culture be changed gradually by people. Such a thing as culture only can be changed by external promotion for culture has its inertness and inertia.

4. The time for a change in culture is the time for social contradictions, and the change in culture can lead to the social contradictions. To change a culture is bound to have the conservatives and reformers, and the two factions are inevitably to have conflicts in the change of culture. However, this conflict is actually the distribution of benefits dispute. Because the social rule change will inevitably bring about the change in the way of the distribution of social benefits, during this, some people feel a loss while others get benefit; those who get loss will inevitably rise to resist, and the beneficiaries will have to protect their interests, thus the social conflicts and disputes are generated. But after the social rules are reformulated, people will find a new balance and build a new culture.

12. The culture of the feudal society of China

About 2007

China's feudal society was dependent on political power, moral religion, and economic feudal lords owning the land, which was the biggest means of production in the feudal society. The cultural feudalism forcibly repressed human nature, to maintain the feudal society.

Three aspects of politics, economy, and thought forcibly adjusted the social order.

Everyone in society cycles is stable running according to certain rules, to make the society steady, to minimise social contradictions. It was this pattern that made China's feudal society extremely stable and highly developed.

Social development needs social stability. Everyone has their own orbit, like the moon and stars travelling in orbit. Even if there would be change, it also should have certain laws and rules.

It seems that the monarch and his subjects, father and son, husband and wife, were in shackles; in fact, it also represented the responsibilities, which were the shackles and also were the umbrella. It also can be said that the monarchy protected the official in feudal times and that the monarchy was the umbrella of the official in feudal times, and the official in feudal times was governed by the monarchy. It can be said that the official's survival in feudal times depended on the monarch.

The wife must submit to her husband. The husband, to his wife, was an administrator, also could be said to be the ruler or the protector. The husband was the organiser of the family; the wife was oppressed by husband in a certain sense, and the wife was also protected by the husband. The rights and obligations difference was in pairs presenting. It cannot be just talk about oppression without talking about protection and obligation and responsibility.

The son must submit to his father in the same way. The father, to his son, was an administrator, oppressing person, also the protector of the son, the dependent person.

The husband and wife in China's feudal consciousness and the concept was the way of running the state, integrating extreme yin and the softest of Lao Tzu.

Lao Tzu had deep-rooted influence on China. But after the eight-power Allied forces broke the gateway of China, it was a shackle, the shackles to restrain Chinese people. So the Cultural Revolution had to break it. But after this kind of social culture was disillusioned, it must be filled out by another more rational culture. Otherwise, people still use the most practical traditional theory.

According to the Cultural Revolution after the liberation, the new ideas are on the equality

between men and women, men and women each having half the sky. So how are they truly equal? How does each account for half the sky? Real and complete equality is the concept of relationship between men and women in Western counties. Men and women first are economically independent, and they should control their own money, and with political independence, men and women are self-safeguarding their legitimate rights and interests, including the right to privacy, human rights, the discretion of property, the right to education, action liberty right, and so on. This power must be mutually respected and so on, with zero tolerance for infringement of rights.

With independent thought, men and women, both parties have their own beliefs, must have mutual respect, mutual non-aggression.

All the content about human rights must be observed, and both should strictly observe it. Infringing on each other means provoking and insulting each other.

However, the Communist Party, in opposition to feudal ideas at the same time and against the capitalist ideology, praised highly the so-called co-production of communal-pot thought and the average thought, which now are considered obsolete ideas. Then, the communal pot was proved wrong; Chinese people became a group of no thought and no faith.

In the aspects of marriage and family relations, the feudal family values were overthrown. The West's human rights cannot be accepted by the Chinese people at all at one time. Communism did not propose any new family values.

Whatever the thought of men in the family is wrong, which either is a feudal decadent ideas or is the Western corruption, the reactionary thought; anyway, all the thought of men in the family is wrong, but it is only that the fear of the wife is right which causes the unique henpecked culture with Chinese characteristics. Through culture, art, film, and television works, it was passed down through generations; it is stunning and amazing.

The Chinese feudal culture is reasonable, and the Western liberal human rights culture is also reasonable, but only it is not that the culture of fear of the wife is unreasonable; it belongs to the cultural freak.

13. All ancient thoughts in China are philosophical culture of yin and yang

About 2007

As a matter of fact, so many thoughts in ancient China have a common feature that they study each unit, either big or small, such as universe, area, country, city, family, and so on, as a system. This is the biggest difference between Chinese and Western cultures. Western culture is based on individuals as the research object and explores the ideological and behavioural emancipation of individuals and the protection of human rights, etc. Everything is centred on individuals, with individuals as a starting point.

To interpret from the Buddhist scriptures, Western culture is like Theravada, while Chinese culture or Eastern culture is like Mahayana. Of course, the systematic culture in China started much earlier than Indian Buddhist culture and is more extensive than Buddhism. But the dominant idea is almost the same.

The philosophy of yin and yang is the most fundamental philosophical culture in China. Other classic cultures in China are based on yin and yang. They even crystallise and actualise the philosophy of yin and yang. However, there seems to be no record which philosopher was the first to present the philosophy of yin and yang. I think this is God's revelation to ancient Chinese.

1. The philosophy of yin and yang believes that everything in the world is divided into yin and yang.

2. The sun is yang and the earth is yin. Active is yang and passive is yin. Attack is yang and defence is yin. The back is yang and the belly is yin. Growth is yang and constriction is yin. Hot is yang and cold is yin. Bright is yang and dark is yin, etc.

3. Yin and yang must cooperate with each other so that everything can get on smoothly. If either of them is ignored, disasters will happen.

Things, from the large universe to small molecules and atoms, from tangible to intangible, contain yin and yang. All of them conform to the theory of yin and yang.

The philosophy of yin and yang is consistent with Mao Zedong's thought of unity of opposites, as well as Confucius's Doctrine of the Mean in China. Or rather, both Mao Zedong and Confucius borrowed the basic idea of the philosophy of yin and yang.

From a holistic view of human society, proletariat belongs to yang and bourgeoisie to yin. National interests belong to yang and personal interests belong to yin. Fairness and justice are masculine, and economic development is feminine. Obedience to social order is masculine, and

pursuit of individual freedom is feminine.

Feminine submits to masculine and masculine cares for feminine, just like women submit to men and men care for women. This is a way of the universe and a heavenly principle. Those who submit to God will prosper, and those who resist shall perish. If yin and yang can be reconciled in harmony and unity, things will coexist with heaven and earth, the sun and moon. Otherwise, calamities will come one after another.

Both ancient history and modern history in China illustrate this point.

The theory of yin and yang is arguably one of the most fundamental characteristics of the system. A society is a system. A universe is a system. The earth is a system. A country is a system. An enterprise is a system. A family is a system. An individual is a system. A car is a system. A computer is especially a system.

The earth's climate also contains yin and yang. Yang represents sunlight and yin represents rainfall. It is with the presence of sunshine, rain, and dew that all things on the earth can grow. Moreover, sunshine, rain, and dew need a balance of yin and yang. Too much sunshine without rain, there will be drought. If rain and dew don't stop, flood will inundate. For human beings, this means great catastrophes.

The philosophy of yin and yang is a systematic philosophy and a fundamental thought in the ideological system in China. It has a very long history. I don't even think this kind of philosophy can be invented by people at that time with their own intelligence and culture. It might be a prehistoric civilisation, a civilisation existing before Chinese civilisation. At that time, people hardly had any characters. How could they possibly spread such profound knowledge?

14. The Book of Changes and the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor are books that specify the philosophy of yin and yang

About 2007

The Book of Changes is an embodiment of the philosophy of yin and yang, and it seems to tell about yin-yang change of matters and a general development rule of representative matters. However, according to the present technology and knowledge, it is hard to match the change process of all things to yin and yang.

But many persons with special talent can predict future change of matters by the Book of Changes, and what they do is also called fortune telling or forecasting.

However, judging from the text form of the Book of Changes, this book determines current and future status of matters according to yin-yang change of the matters. Therefore, it can be considered as a book studying a system. Although Chinese cannot fully understand the information of this book, the idea regarding yin and yang and systematic change in this book has deep influence on Chinese culture.

In the opinion of the author of this paper, this is a book studying systematic change.

The Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor is a medical book, origination, and theoretical basis of traditional Chinese medicine, as well as a book completely related to system research. This book takes the human body as a full-size system to explain various internal organs, between which are parts of mutual relation and mutual function in the system.

Same as the Book of Changes, it fully applies the philosophy of yin and yang as a method and thinking way to study the human body system, and it is a book discussing the human body system. In addition, its theories are still in use today and help the Chinese to keep in good health and treat illness for thousands of years.

To be perfectly honest, till today, Chinese are unable to fully understand or agree with the description in the book. Therefore, to the thinking of the author of this paper, according to living and cultural conditions and intellectual development level at that time, the book cannot be an achievement that is developed by the ancient people individually. It is hard to believe that the ancient people and current technology are capable of studying such profound theories and culture that has been applied for thousands of years and is not fully understood even today.

In the meantime, as a successful application of the philosophy of yin and yang on the human body system, it influences China in some way and makes Chinese culture a systematic culture.

The Book of Changes and the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor are specific applications of the

philosophy of yin and yang on prediction, fortune telling, and medicine. They should be words from God to ancient Chinese.

15. China's systematic culture

About 2007

Since the time of Confucius, systematic culture has influenced Chinese, who are profoundly affected because Chinese grow up in the system, are restricted by the system, and benefit from the system their whole lives.

The influence of systematic culture on people is the same as the effect of other cultures. Culture has strong impact on people.

The influence of culture on people is involved in every matter, every product, every eye contact, and every movement. The way that culture influences people is through changing or remodelling people's subconscious, thus influencing people's behaviour. The culture would not intervene in people's actions on specific things, but it can change people's dimension of consciousness and the subconscious. It transforms people's inner attitude to change their behaviour.

Why do we say that culture changes people's dimension of consciousness?

For example, in ancient China, according to the traditional culture, it is improper for men and women to touch each other's hand in passing objects, women are beautiful in a reserved manner, women should smile without showing teeth. Under these feudal cultural backgrounds, unmarried women would not study how to talk with strange men about the weather or have lunch together when they only stayed in a boudoir. They have no expectation of studying on how to associate with men, because there is no sense. In their consciousness, it is forbidden to associate with the opposite sex, for unmarried women.

In a similar way, between the Chinese girls who are influenced by traditional ideology and the girls who are relatively open, their dimensions of consciousness on communicating with people of the opposite sex is different. In our daily lives, this discrepancy is expressed in a way when the relatively traditional party has no experience or the other party has more experience or is more experienced. Judging from the way of consciousness and the subconscious, this is different size of dimensions of consciousness or blankness of consciousness dimension.

There is another concept, which is Chinese always call a person just entering the society a blank paper, which is also vacancy, which means that newcomers into society has vacant consciousness about social experience. They have no detailed information about the concept of society.

Because of the influence of systematic culture on the subconscious of Chinese, in Chinese's dimension of consciousness, there is a natural concept of system. Chinese instinctively know how to apply the system to benefit them, or how to obey or escape from the restrictions of the system on themselves, to avoid penalty on them from the system. These are all influences of systematic culture on Chinese's dimension of consciousness. In contrast, Western people live in an

environment different from the Chinese's, so they have no concept of system.

In China's systematic culture, the family system is the system with which Chinese would have the earliest contact and is the system the Chinese are mostly fond of and best apply.

In addition to applying the existing consanguineous relationship to make out the system, the Chinese also create their own systems through establishing sworn relations with friends, teachers, adopted father, adopted mother, which are all typical Chinese styles.

To be honest, the author of this paper has no deep study on foreign culture but has read many books and watched foreign TV series for several decades. In those books and TV series, there is no one example presenting the phenomenon of establishing sworn relations with friends, adopted father, or adopted mother. Even the author of this paper never heard the words of sworn brothers, adopted father, and adopted mother in foreign works.

Certainly, sworn brother is just a small role in current Chinese culture, but the systematic culture having greater influence on Chinese is family culture in which the most representative is the relation between parents and children. This relation is a core relation in family systematic culture, and it is a leading relation in family as well as the main contact between members in the family.

Almost every Chinese has heard such ancient sayings as 'All his friends and relations get there with him', 'It is the custom for a son to pay his father's debts', 'The son should avenge his father', which are interpreted again and again in literary works like movies, TV series, books, etc. They almost become eternal themes.

Due to the influence of systematic culture, the Chinese have a different thinking mode between that of foreigners.

Confucius developed the systematic culture in China, or to say, Confucius transforms systematic culture into a systematic cultural product that is specific and is able to be implemented.

The ideology of Confucius and Mencius and feudal ethical code are specific to individuals. Certainly, Confucius was the first to propose this system, just like the Windows system was firstly launched by Microsoft and is widely applied to computers. Windows is used for computers specially, but the social management system of Confucius' ideology is rooted in every Chinese and is the operating system of every Chinese dynasty.

To my point of view, the acceptance points and advanced things of this operating system have the following advantages:

1. This system defines everyone in the society specifically.

There is clear affiliation and social definition in either administration or daily life, enabling everyone to know what powers and obligations they have. This could help to avoid social

contradictions to the greatest extent and help everyone know what should be done and what should not be done. In normal operation of the system, social disruption would not occur.

2. This system was equipped with endowment insurance and free compulsory education since the Chinese feudal society two thousand years ago.

Chinese have the culture of bringing up sons to support parents in their old age. It is necessary to be filial to parents in feudal system. It is illegal if the sons do not provide for their parents, and in severe cases, the sons can be judged with death in the charge of disobedience. Therefore, in the feudal system, the sons must be filial to parents and provide for parents. The family transfers the inheritance to the son, while the daughter belongs to her husband's family after she is married and has no right to the inheritance. This is called 'a woman follows her husband no matter what his lot is'. After the son inherits the heritage, he must support his parents and worship their ancestors. This is called inheriting the lineage. When the son and his wife have no children, it is called the last of family line and is the most unfilial behaviour. It is a very severe thing in feudal values. Having children is to have the function of endowment insurance. This is to ensure that the elderly will be looked after properly and make a stable and harmonious society.

Since the son has the function of endowment insurance, skills and talents of the son are the most promising that his parents can have rich and better lives. Therefore, the parents would educate children from morality, talent, and knowledge since the children's babyhood. The parents would prefer suffering hardships for their whole life just for creating a good study environment for the children and for making the children become nation pillars. A child is better unborn than untaught. This is equal to the function of free compulsory education. Not only in ancient China, but also the modern Chinese are never bored with it.

The above are the greatest benefits to ordinary Chinese from this system. In addition, this set of functions of endowment insurance and free compulsory education is very successful and plays great effect until today when influencing daily actions and thinking mode of the Chinese. For this reason, the author of this paper does admire Confucius's works and contributions.

This system is undoubtedly the most advanced and practical social management system in natural economy condition where men do farm work and women engage in spinning and weaving. Chinese created Chinese ancient culture and far surpass Western culture by such advanced system. This success is entirely owed to systematic culture and the Chinese's understanding of the system and life.

Certainly, systematic culture was not created by Confucius but is an integrated concept and systematic ideology that is handed down from the ancient times.

The works that Lao Tzu did for systematic culture are overall and conceptual description and exposition, while Confucius is a worker dedicated to practical application of systematic culture.

Therefore, Lao Tzu's influence on and contribution to the Chinese systematic culture is

ineffaceable and decisive. In short, Lao Tzu is the one who studied basic theories of the system, while Confucius is the one who worked on practical application of systematic culture. From the point of technology, basic theories would never be out of date, but practical application would have to be improved constantly along with development of productivity and variations of contradictory nature.

Although systematic culture is very advanced, there are obvious deficiencies in Confucius's social management system for current society, due to changes in the times and environment. China's economy and technology as well as productivity are hampered in development and are surpassed and invaded by Western countries, just because the Chinese are restricted by this systematic culture.

Actually, this is not a fault of systematic culture, but China needs to update the application program of systematic culture, like the Windows system which would be always updated in a few years, from 95 to 98, 2000, XP, and Win10. Since the hardware facilities are changing and hard disk is expanded and CPU is accelerated, even though the old system is in good condition, it has to be rectified to adapt to development needs of new hardware.

The reason is the same for the social management system. Because of changes and increases of market economy, industrial reforms, and Internet, today cannot be compared with the era two thousand years ago when men did farm work and women engaged in spinning and weaving. However, the Chinese still continue to use the operating system that was designed by the ancients two thousand years ago. It is definite that China would be backward and have obstacles in development of economy and productivity. However, with proper rectification, social management system would play its enormous social effects and functions.

16. Ancient thinkers share the same theme and philosophy

About 2007

As the Buddhist texts go, we should have superior enlightenment and wisdom to face all things around us. What is superior enlightenment? To see the nature through the surface of the things. What is the nature? Motives and purposes, thinking mode, and basic principles.

We are in the bustling street. We see all the flowing people who come and go. We see this fantastic world. The busy people are actually doing the same thing—living, or more specifically, living a better live. That is the nature of things, or it is the nature of the ordinary people, the nature of common people. It is what they are living for.

Actually a thinker or philosopher has true purposes and thoughts. Maybe we read several days and nights for books that he writes, but if we conclude it, it will be left as a sentence or an idea, which may be the final purpose. And many of his words and ideas and speaking are centring on this purpose and are the concrete solutions and methods.

And his thinking mode or the main logic will be only one, or he will have only one basic structure, which is to take people to that place.

We know that there are endless routes from A to B; that is to say, thinkers and philosophers have an endless way to get to the ideal purpose.

As time goes by and productivity develops, the continuous development changes conditions of human society. What people need most is to take different routes and take different methods. Although we may have taken a different route from the ancient thinkers, that does not mean that we abandon them at all. Roads are many, so if we still go for that goal, we can say that we are still sticking to the same truth and the same road.

Ancient thinkers or ancient civilisations of China are different from the Western's. Compared with that, there are huge or natural distinctions between China and the West. It can be traced from time immemorial to see the distinctive and natural difference between Chinese culture and Western culture.

According to my opinion and understanding ability, the Book of Changes and the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor and the other ancient philosophies Tao Te Ching, the philosophy of yin and yang, Confucianism, and the later Diamond Sutra that came into China have fundamental influence on the thoughts of Chinese scholars.

But my opinion is that these books and the philosophy of yin and yang do not belong to the author only, an ordinary person who can write such a classic book and form these ideas and concepts.

I even believe that it belongs to prehistoric civilisation; it is the intention of God. In the circumstance that has low productivity like before, people still make their living by hunting and fishing. How could they form the idea that we modern people cannot even understand? I think that unscientific and illogical.

Tao Te Ching, Confucianism, Diamond Sutra, I think they can be understood after meditation—not just understanding it from the words that can be translated into understanding slang, but understanding the purpose of the writer and the purpose of the writing. To them, their ideas and concepts are not very complicated, and we can even say that to some extent, there are some similarities.

An old Chinese saying goes, everything is the same. It is what I am trying to tell you. Each philosophy has a different form, but they have the same goal.

Actually the final purpose is the simplest and the noblest and the most vulgar. It is like turning a circle and getting back to the original dot.

It looks like going to the original dot, but it is not that simple. It has a higher level, and it is like the spiral stair.

Each philosophy has the same ultimate goal, which is to liberate human beings and the world. But to liberate human beings and the world will start to liberate the country.

So, Chinese ancient philosophers and thinkers are talking about the whole set of concepts of governing a state.

17. The philosophy of yin and yang and social system

About 2007

The philosophy of Lao Tzu appears the softest and the most feminine, while individualism in the Western culture appears the most masculine.

Each category of Chinese culture is closely related to Lao Tzu's Tao Te Ching, including Confucianism, which is just the application of Lao Tzu's philosophy in the feudal society!

More importantly, Chinese harmonious society is another modern manifestation of Lao Tzu's philosophy, and its nature lies in femininity!

The typical manifestations of femininity are conservation, peace, content, muddling along, and even sabotaging!

Egoism in the Western culture definitely focuses on masculinity, centralising individuals and maximising personal interests, and its main features are offence, aggression, enterprise, and struggling!

Since femininity is superior to masculinity, the country of China was parcelled, invaded, and defeated by the Western countries featuring individualism after going through the flourishing feudal governance!

After all, however, China may be defeated by the Western culture's masculinity, if it can't totally get out of the feminine limit. The nightmare that eight-power Allied forces captured Beijing would come in the end!

Actually, according to the philosophy of yin and yang, neither femininity nor masculinity is imperfect at all. Just like the combination of man and woman, we may feel regretted, imperfect, and anxious, whether there is no man or no woman in life.

The Western countries appear so masculine that it gives us the impression that the people there are all foolish or stupid! China shows such femininess that Chinese people look so sissy and worthless, just like fake eunuchs!

One country should show its femininity when the strong is needed and appear masculine when the soft is required! So how does a country integrate femininity and masculinity together well?

In the social system, the society runs in order, people abide by behavioural conventions and follow the social regulations. Such a society is where feminine social system shows its advantages!

While each individual is active, energetic, and diligent in the masculine, so working hard manifests the masculine society's strengths. Human beings are primarily selfish, so when will they become energetic, diligent, and hard workers? It is when human beings are working for themselves that they work diligently and energetically.

So what is working for individuals themselves? It is extremely selfish, centring on individuals, doing all for themselves and their benefits and ignoring their wives, children, parents, and even their own countries; that is, personal interests are placed in the highest situation. Such is the Western capitalism, whose nature is to protect personal interests. The laws, morals, and ethics in the Western countries all serve their personal interests.

Such is the typical combination of femininity and masculinity in the social system.

So the question is how to combine the behaviour of following social rules and obtaining personal interests. That appears in the perfect social system.

It is definite that femininity and masculinity can be perfectly combined with each other. The conception of separating ownership from management is the result of the perfect combination of following social rules and obtaining personal interests.

Only if it is not only applied to the state-owned enterprises and capital but also used in the social system will the conception will it show its maximised effectiveness. The conception is able to make a difference to the whole world if applied appropriately.

Masculinity refers to the sky, persistence, aggression, enterprise, innovation, warmness, heat, brightness, conquering, man, the male, the left, and the government. Femininity means the ground, softness, conservation, defence, tradition, coldness, darkness, obedience, woman, the female, the right, and the citizens. The two concepts are the two parties in the unity of oppositeness, interdependent and indispensable, such as the different parts of a car.

Masculinity is motor, providing power. Femininity is the brakes, offering brake power. Motor and brakes are equally important. The car will be damaged and the people will die, if a car is only equipped with strong motor without brakes. Both time and oil are wasted and no movement is made, if a car only has good brakes without a strong motor.

In the area of politics, government serves for the people, and the balance of yin and yang is the people's support of their government. Otherwise, the people's fighting against their government is the unbalance of yin and yang, if the government's policies harm the people's interests.

As for the field of culture, such is the case as well. Culture refers to the centralised manifestation of the outlook of life and social thoughts of an entire nation towards a country, a society, and even the universe.

Judging from the psychical analysis, it is the centralised reflection of the people's subconscious. It

is also the restatement of a nation and a country. Politics and economics are just expressive forms of culture, but culture can be expressed by a variety of other forms.

Culture decides human beings' patterns of thoughts; in turn, humans' patterns of thoughts decide different political patterns and then affect the economy. Certainly, politics and economy can also make an effect on human beings' philosophy and viewpoint and then help to change culture that is widely recognised as ideological education.

What is the yang-qi of a nation?

1. Elites' patriotism, that is, graduates' and the senior intellectuals' patriotism, appears masculine, featuring destruction, corruption, and harmful elements. The prevalent corruption in China is the typical reflection of the lack of masculinity. If a man is short of yang-qi, he is afraid of exposure in the light. So is a country. Publicising possessions is unrealisable, so it is obvious that there is too much yin and too little yang in China.

Meanwhile, as the balance between yin and yang, democracy and autocracy also should be made balanced; otherwise, man will die if the fever is too serious.

2. A nation's yang-qi is also reflected by men's collective characteristics. For example, whether a man is afraid to die or not, whether he does have a sense of justice, whether he is aggressive or not, or whether he does have the desire to conquer.

But how does a man have such characteristics? The external environment, mainly including political environment, economic environment, the gender environment, etc.

These environments are interrelated and inter-affected, which lead to the creation of a national integrity, that is, a national yang-qi.

One or two things don't matter at all, so it is no problem that there are one or two henpecked husbands in one nation. But the nation will be ruined if most of its male people are henpecked.

Property law, a combination of yin and yang, is the inevitable result and legal safeguard of separating ownership from management. Under the condition that the feminine and masculine social system doesn't change, property law introduced the culture of femininity and masculinity.

If you intend to make clear that property is the basis of masculinity, the property and possession as well as the range of each individual's personal interests should be made clear. The state representing its people can be considered as a private individual, and each person is a private individual who is required to be the most productive, that is, make the most of masculinity. That is to say, the range of each person's personal possession should be made clear; so should the range of proprietary rights, including the range of the people's possession represented by their state.

The relations of different possessions between wives and husbands, between fathers and sons, between family members and countries should be strictly divided, seriously protected, mutually nonaggressive, non-interferential, and individually dependent. Thus, each person may show his enthusiasm for labour. Because human beings are selfish, they can work tirelessly and determinedly for themselves, and there is no way to make them work so hard except the method mentioned above. That is to say, if a person's personal possessions and personal interests are protected well, he has the possibility to do his best.

Such is a state. How could a state council's lack of proprietary rights make an important decision for its state? Proprietary rights can be set aside while great national events are dealt with. Is that money?

How do its people obtain interests if a state fails to deal with international events?

A state centres on the maximum of the national profits. Individuals focus on the maximum of personal interests. If it works, the wealth of a whole nation can be accumulated.

If Chinese people intend to revitalise our nation, they should realise masculinity and individuals' interests, including parents, wives and husbands, fathers and sons, nations and individuals.

Certainly, the Chinese is by no means the lack of femininity. Ying-qi has the effect on the growth of various plants and animals. China's ying-qi is reflected by the public ownership of the state system in China. The public ownership sector of the economy makes clear the limit of individuals' affairs and the cultural events, independently and in charge of political rights, respectively.

However, the public ownership sector of the economy also has the functions of justice and balanced growth towards the solution of national important events. As is written in the Tao Te Ching, it can be concluded as the effect of more damage and less compensation. How feminine! How kind!

According to the ancient philosophy in China, the 'nature and humanity' ideology is necessary if human beings intend to obtain the permanent harmonious state, and utopia or communist society was put forward by Marx. The 'nature and humanity' ideology is the reflection that human beings' behaviour abides by the objective laws of nature.

What are the objective laws of nature? It refers to the inexorable law concluded from all things that happened to human beings, natural surroundings, related to the nature of human beings and the events made by human beings since the beginning of recorded history.

Regarding the laws of human beings' social system, what is the most suitable lifestyle that human beings should lead is the most appropriate and effective law.

1. Law of the jungle—it is not only an objective law, but also objective truth, that is, those who bow before it survive and those who resist perish.

2. Human beings need the permanently peaceful life.

How to lead a permanently peaceful life? The answer is a harmonious society keeps the permanent peace.

How to reach the permanent harmony? A true permanently harmonious society features the forced control and the relevant power serving harmony. Otherwise, the peaceful state may disappear immediately without the state of the long-term peace.

So how does the strong power stay for a long time? Only public ownership and its capital have the power to keep the permanently steady status.

Marx intended to use public ownership to keep the strong power, in turn, apply strong power to the construction of a harmonious society. However, Marx totally ignored the objective laws of the law of the jungle and human beings' nature featuring selfishness.

He aimlessly and optimistically painted a rosy picture of socialism, ignoring the basic conditions, that is, human beings' ugliness, selfishness, and greediness. The result is that almost all socialist countries have been ruined.

On the contrary, the capitalist system set up on the basis of human beings' selfishness and greediness seems rather successful. Tao Te Ching is the softest and the most feminine law, while the survival of the fittest is the most masculine law. Femininity is totally lower than the masculine.

Governing the state and being a man should be equally focused on. Centralised power of a country follows the laws of the king; policy of benevolence is the feminine way to control a state. Governing the state by masculine means is to discard the weak and the coward and to support the strongest figures.

The above two aspects are not contrary at all. Thus, I hold that the education of the law of the jungle should be reinforced as the harmonious society is being constructed.

Improve the education of the law of the jungle. People's resentment of the rich is the most ashamed rubbish in our country.

Masculinity and femininity can be compared to the bones and flesh of human body. Bones are too hard to be made bend, so it belongs to yang. Muscles are soft and elastic, so they are called yin. Bones and flesh compose the human body, enabling humans to rise on their feet and walk freely.

The law of the jungle presents the national spirits, called yang, and bones. Harmonious society shows the yin of the national spirits, that is, flesh.

In Western society, they believe in the law of the jungle and never think about harmony; they only have bones without flesh, so they are so strong and so aggressive.

Chinese traditional culture focuses on harmony and friendliness and says no to the law of the jungle, so each person is required to take care of himself or herself, hiding the creative and personality, which is called sticking to the rules. Chinese people only have flesh but have no bones. Once in a while, several proud heroes, standing out from the crowd, were born but ended up with miserable treatment, such as Yue Fei, Han Xin, Qu Yuan, Yang Hucheng, Lin Zexu, Peng Dehuan, and so on. Don't mention the old times, and such is the case in the modern times.

Thus, after investigating both Western culture and Chinese culture, the best social system, culture conceptions, and moral standards are shown below:

There is the law of the jungle in the harmonious society.

The perfect combination of yin and yang equals the system of flesh and bones.

Chinese socialism has developed to the present modern times when there is the best opportunity to realise the corresponding social culture, social system, governing thoughts, and moral standards.

1. The concept of harmonious society has been deeply rooted in the hearts of Chinese people as a cultural basis.

2. Chinese citizens generally recognise the Western culture and hold that the thought of money is supreme, and the law of the jungle has been widely accepted by the Western people as a preferred social basis.

3. Chinese should find out some proper words and accurate forms of expressions from the two sorts of concepts so that femininity and masculinity can be legalised, moralised, and habituated.

4. The integrated society of the law of the jungle and harmonious society is characterised by the essential and fundamental thought of the law of the jungle, which provides the entire society with great creative and intensive vigour, fully stimulates human beings' vitality and enterprise, and overcome the human beings' weakness, including ugliness, selfishness, degenerations, and laziness.

The negative effects and social conflicts resulting from the law of the jungle should be absorbed and assimilated by the concept of harmony to create a peaceful world. The public-owned national capital is helpful to accomplish the harmonious task. That is also the most significant of the state-owned capital.

Human beings' minds are always straightforward. For instance, people may take it for granted that the law of the jungle is reasonable and totally ignore the justice and harmony in society.

People argue that Taoism is the magic power to govern their country. By doing so, humanity may totally disappear or be discarded, and all people may be willing to be ordinary so as to keep a harmonious, friendly, but nonsense society.

Apart from the miserable wives, Chinese parents also frequently mention the word 'conscience'.

In the human rights–centralised Western countries, the relationship between parents and their children is friendship. Especially after their children are grown up, such relationship will become more obvious.

Parents show great respect towards their children's human rights and rights of property. In return, such children do for their parents.

Parents and their children are definitely independent from each other from the perspective of economy and character.

Parents are responsible for their own behaviour, and so are their children. Parents are never in charge of their children's behaviour, and neither are their children. If there are some feelings between parents and their children, they are the purest in the world involved within business meanings or disguised patterns.

On the contrary, Chinese people appear totally different. The relationship between parents and their children is the utter commercial relation.

Children are the commodities of their parents; the caring and love from parents to their children are the concrete goods, though there are no prices pronounced. Thus, parents need not pay tax.

Judging from the way to educate their children, Chinese parents often ask their children, 'Who is good to you, Dad or Mum? You see, Dad and Mum care so much for you, so you should know how to express your thanks to us one day!'

As for a son who treats his mother rather badly after being married to a lovely girl, the common remark from the Chinese audience is 'The conscienceless man, cruel as a wolf!'

There is a recognised commercial relation between Chinese parents and children. Parents give birth to their children and bring them up so that their children are able to look after them after many years, that is, raise children for themselves.

Therefore, in the rural area, Chinese parents hate their daughters so much, since most daughters will live in their husbands' household after their marriage and won't live with their own parents, while most sons will live with their own parents. A huge number of female babies have been aborted and abandoned because girls have no function of looking after the aged.

It is when the productivity was far behind in China that Lao Tzu put forward his systemic cultural

thoughts, so his arguments were quite right in the past. At that time, people were rather poor and innocent and just walked out of the jungle, transforming into real human beings from the savages. Then each person was born militant and wild with the strong ambition of snatching the social resource. The masculine thought featured by the law of the jungle is considered as common sense, the basic culture, and the basic social environment in the ancient times.

The softest and the most feminine systemic culture of Lao Tzu quite fits the masculine and original social surroundings led by the law of the jungle, which also gave birth to the significance of ancient China's culture.

The principle of systemic culture is the principle of socialism that takes the strong social resources—army, country, land, and state-owned capital—as the solid foundations and then adjusts the social and international relationships as well as the social conflicts. The most effective role of systemic culture is to create a balanced society. The more intensive the social conflicts appear, the more effective the system's functions are. Those are a country's functions.

Because a large amount of rich national resources are employed as the adjustor for a society, every sort of social strength is just a weak individual that is too small to notice. Though social conflicts are so intensive, there is no strength that is strong enough to fight against a country.

However, why does a capitalist society speak highly of human rights, freedom, democracy, humanity, donation, and conscience? The reason is that there is no ability or institution in a capitalist society that can be used to solve the social conflicts in the lower layer. So some verbal forms of hypocrisy have to be employed to obtain spiritual victory.

But the national capital of socialist countries is mainly used to solve the social conflicts in the lower layer. Therefore, there is no need to worry about the intensification of social contradictions in a socialist country. There is also no form of social strength that can be against the state. Whether capitalists or the poor citizens are all considered as the chess pieces on the chessboard, the statesmen in a socialist country can apply the state-owned capital to control the entire society and serve the people. Thus, the statesmen in socialist countries are the happiest people on earth, the most rewarding people in the world, and the most different people broadening the most significant historical missions and the serious responsibilities. Socialist society is the most promising one, as an ideal society.

Politicians of capitalism are all wretched. They are all capitalists' puppets who have no thoughts of their own and are totally controlled by others.

While statesmen of socialism are true statesmen, they have the power to make full use of rich social resources to realise their political dreams. They can easily take the law of the jungle as their own cultural conception and moral regulations, enabling citizens to show off the best of their productivity and enthusiasm towards labour. The simple reason is social productive, the most effective and the most advanced, which can also prove that the social system of socialism is the most advanced, the path which the previous revolutionaries led us to believe was the only

correct way, and the Communist Party is the most proper. Otherwise, how does the party take its power?

What's more, the social conflicts resulting from the law of the jungle can be settled easily by handling the state-owned capital without any concern. It can't be realised in the capitalistic society. It is the absolute advantage. It is also the primary benefit of socialism. It is the solution to the problem.

Femininity refers to obtaining man's purpose by wits and human beings' weakness. Masculinity means to achieve one's goal by treaty, force, power, and violence.

Femininity is equal to realising one's aims using human beings' weakness, which is seeking the short-term interests and ignoring the macro directions, great witness, and a whole new view of issues. Masculinity means the realisation of individuals' goals by making good use of cravenly clinging to life instead of braving death.

One centres personal interests, the other stresses on force. One uses tricks, the other applies actions.

Both femininity and masculinity have their own weakness. If they can be combined perfectly and applied flexibly, femininity and masculinity will make an invincible magic weapon.

But in the aspect of strategy, femininity should be taken as the starting point to avoid the unnecessary and huge scarification. In the aspect of tactics, masculinity should be employed to force the enemies to give in, conquering without a single fight. Force can be used to settle relevant issues, unless it's absolutely necessary.

Exogamy is a typical example of the application of femininity to reach universal harmony in the world. Getting married and giving birth to children is the most harmless and the most effective means of warfare.

18. The essential difference between Chinese culture and Western culture

About 2007

Chinese culture is mostly represented by the ideology of Confucius and Mencius, while Western culture is mostly represented by the ideology of the Darwinist law of the jungle, democracy, freedom, and human rights.

However, the ideology of Confucius and Mencius and human rights are a manifestation of things. As we see cars running on the road, as well as bicycles, what's the difference between them? It is very superficial if it is only distinct between price, appearance, and function. Only if they look into the substance of things can people really make comment on it; otherwise, there will be no practical significance. The appearance of things is changing anytime, and the nature of things does not change. Cars are transport in which power is generated from the internal combustion engine, while bicycles are human-powered transport, which is the most essential difference between cars and bicycles.

There is also an essential difference between Chinese culture and Western culture, in which Chinese culture is a kind of culture that treats the whole country, region, family, and clan as a system to adjust the relationship between people.

The Western culture is a kind of culture that is individual-centred and puts personal interests and needs as well as individual rights and obligations as the research object and the central task to adjust the relationship between people.

Briefly, Chinese culture is a system culture and Western culture is an individual culture.

19. Chinese culture is a system culture

About 2007

I think the Western countries should have a better understanding about the concept of system than Chinese or the Oriental, even that there was no word like 'system' in ancient Chinese language. In ancient China, the nation, society, and individual harmony in a good system are called nature-human integration or harmony between yin and yang, without mentioning the concept of system while the actual meaning is the system.

The concept of system is not complex. As far as I know, system is an integration composed of many parts to complete a certain function and be able to assist and control each other. Bicycle is a system, car is a system, aircraft is a system, production line is a system, a computer is a system, and computer software is also a system.

But it is the excellent and advanced point of Chinese ancient civilisation to research the whole country, universe, and society as a system. Chinese ancient civilisation was ahead of other countries and civilisations by around a thousand years, which exactly relied on the system culture of Chinese tradition.

It leads the ancient Chinese far ahead of other countries, but because of its great success, Chinese people still follow this system culture and social institutions inherited from the ancient sages, while other countries are in the industrial revolution and changed from the natural economy to the market economy. The system culture promoted Chinese social civilisation. But later, because its users didn't adjust the system in time, the system that formed thousands of years ago had seriously hindered China's economic development, technological advances, and the development of productivity and eventually led to the eight-power Allied forces and the invasion of foreign powers.

It is not the fault of the system culture itself and system concept; instead, it is the users of the system, those in power that did not really comprehend the principles and concepts of the system. The system can be continuously adjusted and improved and with the ability to accomplish certain functions. The Chinese Confucius and Mencius system is to bring the Chinese society into a relatively stable and conservative position. However, with the development of productivity, the development of commodity economy, and the increasingly fierce international competition, the kind of conservative and stable system should be upgraded and the operation direction of the system should be adjusted to make the social system towards the development direction of promoting the development of productivity and fully adapted to the jungle of international competition, thus China can get the opportunity and social system to exceed the West.

Why is the traditional Chinese culture a system culture?

Traditional Chinese culture is Confucianism, Buddhism, and Taoism, i.e. Confucius and Mencius

culture, Buddhism culture, Taoism culture, and the philosophy of yin and yang.

The system of Buddhism is not very obvious, while the Confucius and Mencius culture and Lao Tzu ethical culture as well as the philosophy of yin and yang are purely system cultural.

There are several features of a system:

1. The holistic view integrates the whole country and society as a whole to research and unify, dispatch and arrange for a variety of social resources.

2. The system can be regulated and given feedback. When there is a problem in system operation, the underlying system can give feedback information to the management centre and the system can be adjusted by the management centre.

3. There is a certain purpose of the system, which is like a boat always with a sailing direction. Where he wants the people on board go is very clear and not aimless.

4. There is a clear division of work for the system components.

5. The system requires each part in harmony and unity.

6. The system excludes the people who corrupt the stable social system.

The following are several characteristics of the society under the guidance of traditional Chinese culture, and these are the basic characteristics of the system.

1. The holistic view integrates the whole country and society as a whole to research and unify, dispatch and arrange for a variety of social resources.

All the lands in the world belong to the emperor, and all the people on the lands are the courtiers of the emperor. The Chinese ancient emperor has supreme authority and is second only to heaven. The Chinese ancient emperor can decide everything of the country which he rules. In the Confucius and Mencius culture, those who challenge the authority of the emperor are all considered to commit treason and heresy. It is precisely because the emperor has so much power that the emperor can handle the overall situation of all things domestic without any restrictions and constraints.

2. There is a clear division of work for the system components.

The system administrator is the emperor, who governs the people through courtiers.

In a family, the husband is the administrator and the wife is the one under administration. And in a family, the husband is the administrator and the child is the one under administration.

The emperor, husband, wife, and children have their own clear division of social work and social position through moral and legal force to strengthen the management.

3. The system requires each part in harmony and unity.

How to achieve harmony and unity in Chinese feudal society? Because of the despicable humanity, everyone has the trend to maximise the benefits while the feudal society arranged the code of conduct for everyone, which is called Taoism.

The emperor requires Taoism—kingcraft. An emperor without kingcraft is called tyrannical, and it's reasonable for his subordinate to eradicate or kill him and take his place.

The courtiers also have their courtier rules—loyalty to emperor and patriotism—that the courtiers have to die if the emperor commands. Therefore, loyalty is always the highest evaluation criteria for Chinese ancient courtiers.

The wife—Female virtues require women to chastity and virtuous. In ancient China, the demands for women to be obedient to the husband are very stringent, whoever they marry, and a husband can divorce his wife, but the wife only has to endure to the dissatisfaction of her husband.

Children—Filial piety is a very famous ethic in China and there are twenty-four filial models to regulate and discipline children's behaviour.

Brothers (fraternal duty)—In feudal society, the brothers are requested to be friendly and helpful to each other; the story of Kong Rong's 'Humility of a Pear' is a very famous education of fraternal duty in China.

In fact, the fundamental means to keep harmony in society in ancient Chinese culture is the inequality of the social status, and the one in a low status should be subject to the high-status managers. It can be said that everyone has a manager and a very clear codes of conduct and norms of behaviour for themselves, of which are enforced through legal and ethical to achieve the purpose of social harmony.

4. The system excludes the people who corrupt the stable social system.

The behaviour of those who do not obey filial piety and female virtues, and mislead and are insubordinate to His Majesty is considered to be a felony in the feudal society, so that the entire social systems and social power will eradicate and eliminate them regardless of the law or morality.

5. The system can be regulated and given feedback.

This is deeply rooted in the Chinese mind and that to go to the capital city to appeal to the emperor and stop the sedan chair of courtiers to accuse injustice are the most classic materials in

traditional Chinese artworks. Thus Chinese people have the petition complex, which is an act that people have strong resentment against local officials and demand the system administrator to come forward for system adjustments. It is always a hot topic for Chinese people that grassroots people can win the case against the evil forces of people in high and powerful positions.

6. There is a certain purpose of the system.

The system is like a ship, and it always has the sailing directions. Actually it is obvious where the state system wants to bring the country to. The purpose of Chinese Confucius and Mencius system is to let the whole society in a state of rural life, which is smooth, quiet, and in an orderly way with a population increase. It is the situation described by Lao Tzu: 'To make the country smaller and the people scarce so that even though there are a variety of instruments, they do not use these; to make people attach importance to death, rather than to distant migration; although there are boats and vehicles, do not always take them; although there are weapons and equipment, no place to go embattle and war; to bring the people return to the ancient natural state of tying knots for recording. As a result, people can eat well, dress beautifully, live comfortably, and have happy lives. Between countries, there are only just a few kilometres so that people even can see and hear each other without intercommunication from birth to death.'

The philosophy of yin and yang, Confucius and Mencius doctrine, and moral philosophy actually come down in one continuous line, and their dominant ideas are exactly the same. In a manner of speaking, the philosophy of yin and yang as well as moral philosophy is a kind of idea, while the Confucius and Mencius ideas and doctrine can be treated as the specific application of this culture concept in the social system.

Lao Tzu's thought deems that the country should be governed by morality, and Confucius's thought is about the specific application of this idea.

The kingcraft, female virtues, filial piety, loyalty to emperor and patriotism, being faithful to the husband to the end, the twenty-four filial models, etc. are all Taoism summed up by Confucius and Mencius, and all these are identified with Chinese past dynasties' kings and used to govern the country, as well as the basic concept and basic national policy of governing the country.

In the philosophy of yin and yang, yang is equal to heaven, rigid, enterprising, attack, innovation, heat, light, conquer, man, and male, as well as the leftist and the government. Yin is equal to earth, flexible, conservative, defence, old-fashioned, cold, dark, obedience, woman, and female, as well as the rightist and the people.

It strengthens that yin should submit to yang in the specific application of Confucius culture in the social system.

Emperor equals yang, courtier equals yin, and courtier absolutely submits to emperor.

Husband equals yang, wife equals yin, and wife absolutely submits to husband.

Father equals yang, son equals yin, and son absolutely submits to father.

The philosophy of yin and yang divides all things between heaven and earth into two kinds of one-to-one corresponding things: yin and yang according to their properties. And in these things, there is a primary and secondary as well as the opposite and complementary relationship. The philosophy deems that everything will be okay if it strengthens and clears this kind of relationship; on the contrary, the mess that reverses yin and yang will appear if it breaks this kind of relationship.

Confucius used this concept in society and cleared and strengthened the relationship between humans to yin and yang and subordinate relationship. He established the orbit and code of conduct for each one, which was not allowed to be damaged.

The basic theory of traditional Chinese medicine is the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, which is not only an ancient book, but also a book of systems theory. The Inner Classic is a theory that treats the human body as a system to study, and many systems of it can't be fully explained by present technology on anatomy, while they have been proved to be very effective by practice.

So the traditional Chinese medicine culture is also the system culture. In a word, traditional Chinese culture is the system culture.

20. Western culture is the individual culture

About 2007

The most representative of modern Western culture are the United States Declaration of Independence, Universal Declaration of Human Rights, and Amendments to the United States Constitution.

Law is the most basic tool to adjust the relationship between humans, and it's also the most basic rules of the game; it decides the nature of things.

Viewed from the name, the Universal Declaration of Human Rights is the declaration of individual rights. All of its content is a kind of social norm formulated around the power owned by individuals in society.

Only one item in the Universal Declaration of Human Rights refers to the relations and obligations between humans, while this obligation is also formulated to ensure the rights of others not infracted by the actions of the parties.

Therefore, the Universal Declaration of Human Rights is a code of conduct, and all the contents are formulated with the starting point of personal interests.

The United States Declaration of Independence is even more like this—the first sentence of the opening is the emphasis on individual rights: 'All men are created equal; the creator gives them some unalienable rights that include right of life, right of liberty and right of pursuit of happiness.'

All men are created equally; it is a right concept from the microscopic view of an individual. It represents an equal relationship between humans from the spiritual level, while Western civilisation can only guarantee the equality from the spiritual level, and the equal relationship between humans from the material level is impossible. Its meaning is only used to limit the relationship between humans, while it doesn't mention the relationship between humans and society and humans and nature at all.

'The creator gives them some unalienable rights that include right of life, right of liberty, and right of pursuit of happiness.' The emphasis here is on three objects: 'right of liberty' and 'right of pursuit of happiness', while 'right of pursuit of happiness' is actually adjectival and used to describe survival and freedom. In fact, survival and freedom of each person aims to pursue happiness naturally without emphasis. Only when he is a masochist can he see another kind of happiness, because he feels that masochism is also a kind of happiness too, and the others have nothing to do with this, because happiness or unhappiness is a thing only known by the litigant himself instead of charging by others.

Rights of life and liberty are the objects emphasised again and again by the Declaration of

Independence and Western civilisation, and they are proud of them. These two rights, right of life and right of liberty, are both totally individual rights and don't mention others at all. It refers to a person having the right to survival according to his own way of life and living according to his own will, and it doesn't mention the relationship between individual and society as well as individual and nature at all.

Amendments to the United States Constitution—except for election and tax, the content is all about the clauses that protect individual rights and doesn't mention public power and social constraints on individuals at all.

1. Guarantee freedom of speech to express personal political views and right appeals.

2. Individuals have the right to carry guns to protect individual property and rights.

3. Home residency is the most proud of rights for Western countries: Wind can enter, rain can enter, but thousands upon thousands of horses and soldiers of the king can't enter.

4. Right of personal property and residence safety, right of suspect, etc.

Therefore, the main purpose of laws of Western countries is to conduct legal protection around the individual private rights. Morality can be said to be the basis and extension of the law; morality is able to rise to the law under a certain condition, and it's a code of conduct of people that spreads around the law, so social rules of the Westerners, including law and morality, all serve for personal interests.

Culture is the sum-up of the performance of law, morality, and ideologies in daily life and literary works. Therefore, the Western culture is a personal culture that only emphasises the individual rights while ignoring and weakening the universal connection and interrelationship between humans, humans and society, and humans and nature.

21. Why must individualistic culture go with system culture?

About 2007

Chinese traditional culture is system-based, while Western culture is individualism-based. The success of Chinese feudal society lies in the system-based culture, while the prosperity of the Western world today depends on its individualism-based culture. Present socialist system in China is the combination of system-based culture and vague individualism-based culture.

It was the outbreak of weaknesses of system-based culture when China was attacked by the eight-power Allied forces, so the world needs everlasting peace and system-based culture to unite the universe, eliminate differences among people, as well as maintain equality.

However, the greatest drawback of system-based culture is the contentedness with temporary ease and comfort. It is actually a decadent idea like Lao Tzu's recovery to one's original simplicity, making no attempt to make progress as well as destruction of productivity.

It is competition that makes human society progress, and the horror and threat of wars that forces men to advance. Therefore, if human society is unified, there would be no war or threat. As a result, men will have no opponent and become content with village life, eating their head off, seeking temporary peace, and unproductive as advocated by Lao Tzu. In this regard, competition among countries is meaningful and should not be eliminated or abolished.

With the existence of differences among countries, people feel angry towards backward countries that are regarded as a dog in the manger. It is the anger from the strong to the weak. The earth belongs to earthmen, not the locals. If the locals hinder the earth from development, backward nations will be attacked by civilisation.

That is the demand of civilisation for land and living space as the demand of rutting beast for a mate. As a matter of fact, men are animals, but men's demands can be packaged by consciousness and covered and ornamented before being shown to the public.

However, men are animals in essence, and they strive for objectives simply out of animal instinct. People of backward civilisation are rutting beasts, and land resources are their mates. They start war to seize resources. It is reasonable to launch a war out of anger. It is the law of nature to attack benighted and backward countries or dogs in the manger, which is just and a necessary path for human society development.

Likewise, China was attacked by the eight-power Allied forces because of its backwardness, which was an unjust shame and invasion for the Chinese. From the perspective of the development of human history, however, it was just.

As people say, every progress of human history must be made on their own. God won't help you.

All progress of human society must be treated with immeasurable blood and life.

Some obvious truth must be understood by means of bayonet and head. As an ancient Chinese saying says, refuse to be convinced until faced with grim reality. It is exactly correct.

Men always think they are right and they never make mistakes. Their ancestors have lived like this, and it must be correct if they live life this way, for which they even would like to pay their life. Men may not be aware that this seemingly correct conduct has hindered the development of others and stood in the way and been a stumbling block to others without their knowing. The earth belongs to all earthmen just as the American continent does not belong to the Indians. By far, people have accepted this fact. Based on this logic, if one country someday can defeat the Americans as the Americans defeated and drove the Indians like herds, can we say the American continent no longer belongs to the Americans but another nation? As a Chinese saying says, history does take interesting turns.

Strong enough as it had been to rule the world, China was still invaded by the eight-power Allied forces. If it had happened to China, it would happen to any nation.

Ancient Chinese remarked that things are constantly changing and no dynasty is immortal. No nation can be always strong, so temporary strength is regarded as civilisation and truth. Nations of temporary strength all feel good about themselves with national vanity, believing they are the boss.

The Chinese had long had such feeling, but most of us suffer from inadequate knowledge on history or refuse subconsciously to accept the fact that they had been the boss before.

For this reason, such a feeling is nothing fresh or novel for the Chinese. There is nothing to be proud of. Temporary superiority will, like morning dew, vanish as the sun rises.

Therefore, it is of no significance for men in this competitive game. Now we come around back to the start, it's the supreme truth to recover one's original simplicity. For men, especially ordinary people and common people, what do they want? It is physical things like life, money, wife, children, house, and car. As for all kinds of ideas, doctrines, power, fame, status, nationality, liberty, fraternity, and equality are simply means with which we realise our objectives.

It is the objective rather than means that separates winners from losers, combined with GDP, people's living standard, money, and power. Such superiority is temporary and provisional that it can last for decades or a much shorter period of time.

As a matter of fact, human society is temporarily kept from large-scale war with the presence of balance of terror. No one can be sure how long such balance will remain. As long as there are differences among countries and estrangement among people, it is just a matter of time as to invade and be invaded, rule and be ruled, as well as destroy and be destroyed because the root of conflicts or the devil is deeply rooted in our mind.

This is the death instinct in human consciousness, discovered by Freud. If such instinct is released, it is to kill. We can often see the news of serial killing. Killers kill people who have no interesting relationship with them or for reasons that are inexplicable and eccentric to us. These people are usually quite normal and even have seemingly perfect families.

I think these people can be generally divided into two categories. One is born with a defect that makes his subconscious primitive impulse different from normal people. The other kind may have suffered from stimulus before and such stimulus is kept in his subconscious and completely changes his impulses. These desires are expressed differently from those of normal people in structure.

Such impulse and desire can be found in everyone. They are not absent in normal people, but normal people can have them controlled within a certain range while there are people who can't control such impulse and desire. In a sense, this kind of hatred and death instinct to eliminate people is out of men's self-protection.

In most cases when people think someone or some people have caused them serious damage, people typically have two reflections in view of the condition of the other side. When the opponent is very strong and we feel powerless to or cannot resist, we tend to fear, panic, and run away. The most common comment is becoming terror-stricken at the news or turning pale at the mention of a tiger. Who had no fear faced with SARS and bird flu? Even the medical staff fell short, not to mention our ordinary people who are unable to resist. That is why all were scared and felt threatened.

When we suffer from serious damage caused by things weaker than us or they threaten our survival, we will generate the death instinct to destroy them. Of course, such weakness is not absolute but relative and conditional, such as weakness at that time. When we find help to make us strong, we will also generate the death instinct to eliminate the other side. This is what is usually seen as revenge or vengeance.

Revenge is a common theme in movies and novels as well as an eternal theme for mankind. It often happens in our daily life. Hatred can be big or small. It can be as small as bursting people's bicycle tyres secretly or stealing a chicken and as big as world war, genocide, and terrorist attack. They have no difference in essence in view of psychoanalysis, a release of human death instinct.

War is the abreaction and manifestation of human death instinct in the form of military combat for victory or loss. Genocide is the abreaction and manifestation of human death instinct in the form of troops massacring civilians. Terrorist attack is the abreaction and manifestation of human death instinct in the form of a few armed attacks on civilians. Despite the different forms, they are abreaction of death instinct in essence.

There is, of course, a difference between chicken stealing or bursting a bicycle tyre and war, genocide, or terrorist attack. People stealing chickens and bursting bicycle tyres only have to convince themselves, while terrorist attacks require planners to arouse the death instinct of more

people. War and genocide require planners to arouse the death instinct of the vast majority of people of a country before they can use the state machinery to slaughter.

People hate those who steal chickens, burst bicycle tyres, engage in terrorist attacks, genocide, and war. But I have to remind people that these people are just like you and me. They are not different from us in essence. The only difference is that their death instinct is aroused by some people or some things that have controlled their will and action. Objectively speaking, these people have caused injury and harm to us, the world, and the social environment and natural environment indispensable to us. We have full reasons to hate them.

In other words, there will be a lot of people against me. You may say you have high moralities and will not steal chickens or burst tyres, not to mention engage in terrorist attacks or genocide.

There is a Buddhist tenet, as a man sows, so let him reap. I don't believe in retribution, but I believe that everything in the world exists for a reason and there are causes and effects. People's death instinct cannot be aroused or released for no reason. As an old saying in China says, the miserable man must have his defect that causes the misery.

I don't know if those who have been revenged for death instinct ever thought of why people's death instinct targets you instead of others. Is this accidental or certain?

Stolen chickens may be carried off by animals and a burst bicycle tyre may run on a nail, which can belong to accidents. War and genocide, however, are organised in a planned way. They can never be an accident.

For this reason, the promotion of system-based culture, establishment of system, and suppression of individualism can make a country strong, stable, orderly, harmonious, and unified. But too much stability will lead to the loss of vigour and momentum to strive forward. As a result, all people will recover one's original simplicity.

Advocating individualism-based culture can spur the creativity and vitality of all social members, but it will also lead to social disorder and disharmony in the meanwhile.

It challenges us on how to make a combination and flexible use of the two. To put it simply, the country carries out state capitalism in some realms while encouraging individual capitalism in other fields. State capitalism is conducted in the grand framework while individual capitalism is advocated in micro areas. State capitalism can be found in passive work and individual capitalism in active work. State capitalism is applied to fields that can make money while individual capitalism is applied to areas that do not make money.

Why?

Because the society needs harmony, maximum-range adjustment of the interest, political and economic relationship among people is required. Such adjustment requires power and capital

guarantee. Because of natural selfishness and hopelessness of human nature, no one is willing to give up their vested interests without power suppression and benefit induction. No one is willing to help others selflessly. Individualism-based culture and individualism cannot overcome this. Individuals with vested interests in individualism-based culture can always distort justice with money.

Small government and big capitalists that are advocated by some economists can perfectly illustrate this point. The government requires money in all businesses, while small governments have no resources in their hands at all. They have to watch big capitalists look in everything and wait for their discussions. How could you make me believe the government would make big capitalists sacrifice their own interests for the purpose of justice and fairness? Can the government adjust the interests of big capitalists whenever they want? With no power and capital guarantee, how can you say you can safeguard the rights and interests of the vulnerable groups, justice, and fairness?

In a society of state capitalism, the state machine is not fed by individual support nor threatened by any individual threat. In addition, it can mobilise a large amount of state-owned capital to do anything justified to maintain fairness and justice.

When maintaining state grand capital framework and structure, we can maximise the implementation of individualism-based culture, protect individual interests, and inspire individuals to active creativity. This is the right way.

The combination of individual culture and collective culture constitutes the current Chinese pattern.

Public ownership shall be developed in the resource-based field and the field dominant with state-owned capital, providing maximum financial support for the state with the public capital and achieving effective and scientific governance of state and maximum fair and justice.

The private ownership and individual culture shall be widely applied in the non-resource-based field and the field not appropriate for the state-owned capital.

Either the public ownership or the private ownership, and either the individual culture or the collective culture is used to serve and maximise the interests of the people.

Regime and the state machine can really serve the interests of the people, which is the manifestation of the ancient Chinese saying ‘harmony between heaven and people’ and social harmony.

22. Chinese feudal system culture and state capitalism system culture

About 2007

I. Feudal System Culture

To my way of thinking, in order to ensure that a system normally works,

1. each component should function in accordance with certain requirements; and

2. all components must be coordinated and unified to play a role.

I think the former manifests itself in society in the form of obligations and functions. Take machines for example. Gears are obliged to turn for the benefit of the entire system; so does the screw used to fasten machine units together. There are even more obligations when it comes to human beings. All of us have to work to increase social wealth; men are duty-bound to raise a family as breadwinners, while women should bear children to carry on the family line. These are the basic obligations of men and women in a feudal society.

The latter, as for me, represents power. Gears in a machine are subject to the whole system. As required, they must stick to their specific positions and stay put, or else, they cannot rotate. The screw should hold the original position and cannot loosen; otherwise, it would fail in clamping units. In the Confucian feudal society, fathers have the power to govern their children, which is called filial piety. Husbands have authority over wives, and it is regarded as a virtue. As for emperors, they have much more power. The system established in the feudal society could only be maintained and enforced by political power.

Under the natural economy of the feudal dynastic system in which men did farm work and women engaged in spinning and weaving, the above system, beyond doubt, once yielded huge social benefits and energy. As a result, a far more advanced civilisation was created in ancient China than that of the rest of the world.

Nonetheless, after lasting for over two thousand years, this system obviously is not compatible with emerging science and technology. In other words, new technology generates new hardware, which cannot be activated by the old system. Then this system now becomes an obstacle.

Actually, the first sentence in Tao Te Ching has made it pretty clear: 'Tao that can be told is not universal and eternal Tao.' Those specific approaches that can be expressed in words need constant update along with the development of productivity and the emergence of new things. This is how Tao works. No improvement, no Tao.

The Confucius and Mencius doctrines and all maxims in Tao Te Ching may be adapted, changed, or even abandoned in accordance with specific conditions. However, the thinking method that

people use to pursue the correct path has gone through a few changes in all ages.

But it is just a way of thinking to solve problems and an approach to make policies, rather than a specific policy and method. Methods and strategies that can be described in words are not eternal Tao. Tao means that things can change and need to change as the condition varies.

Some contents of Lao Tzu's ideas, Confucian thoughts, and their specific plans are indeed decadent, for instance, being content with the status quo. But in another sense, these thoughts represent the pursuit of ordinary people. As a matter of fact, they usually lack ambitions and crave comfort and pleasure. It is correct to consider it as the ordinary people's wishes, but totally absurd as a strategy of running a state by the statesman.

After the application of two thousand years, the Confucius-Mencius system needs to be improved to a large extent. It is never behind the times to manage a country systematically, effectively as a whole, and to mobilise all kinds of social resources properly and reasonably so that the society can advance normally, highly efficiently, quickly, and harmoniously. Such basic theories are the changeless, eternal Tao.

II. State Capitalism and System Culture

What kind of new social management system is needed in the current social institution? It depends on the development situation of our society nowadays as well as the principal contradictions thereof.

What are the social conditions at present?

1. Selfish human nature

Every man looks out for number one, and God serves us all. No matter in society or in daily life, everyone engages in something to satisfy his/her own desires or to have his/her demands met. This is the truth. Maslow outlines a pyramid that shows personal hierarchy of needs according to human desires. His theory includes the basic needs for survival and safety, as well as a higher level of self-actualisation. However, each type of desire aims to meet one's own needs; few people volunteer to do something only out of altruism.

2. Not all men are created equal in society. Some children are born rich, others impoverished. Some are intelligent, others slow-witted. Some live in villages, others in cities; some live in socialist countries, others in capitalist states. Some are boys, others are girls.

We all have different backgrounds and our own desires and needs. The idea 'all men are equal' is no longer fresh news. Though this slogan has been preached since ancient times, in real life, people are unequal.

People share different understandings of equality. A variety of people agitate for such catchwords

as equality at all times and in all countries. There is gender equality, equality of opportunity, equality between rich and poor, etc. Equality is a dream of mankind since ancient times. People always pursue it but never have the dream come true.

In my opinion, gender equality, equality of opportunity, rich-and-poor equality are all lies and appearances; that is to say, the seeming equality is in fact unequal.

In my view, true equality comes from the essential and basic equality, namely, the equality of capital. Equality of capital is the most substantive equality and the most equal equality. Without it, other types of equality are false and deceptive.

What is capital? People in the capitalist countries have the clearest and the most thorough understanding about it. In recent years, China has also gradually learned about the concept of capital. But there are a large number of people, including Chinese and foreigners of the capitalist countries, who do not really understand what capital is. Some even have misinterpretation or misunderstanding of capital.

Capital is neither bloody as many people think nor the enemy of the working people. It is not sacred and omnipotent in some people's eyes. Capital does have magical powers, but it is a governable tool. Capital is profit-driven enough to serve whoever controls it. It does not make sense to judge it in terms of goodness and badness or beauty and ugliness. Flexible use of it can bring benefit to the common people; on the contrary, people shall be plunged into an abyss of misery if capital is out of control.

As far as I can see, capital is an infinite thing of beauty that coexists with the sun and the moon. It conforms to the philosophy of yin and yang, moves in circles in company with the universe, and never ends.

Why do some people hate capital and capitalists to such an extent that they prefer to get rid of it? It is because capital is not under their thumb, but in the hands of capitalists. Capital services the capitalist instead of them. Capital is reduced to a powerful tool and an accomplice used by capitalists against them. Hence, they hate capital and capitalists.

Marx's communist society requires people to drum up political power. It is a correct and advanced idea. But confined to the social environment at that time, many specific Marxist approaches need improvement. A lot of theories call for constant development and modification.

According to my perception of Marxism and based on the practice in China for so many years, communism should be understood as a doctrine of joint property, rather than a creed of shared labour. The character 'chan' in the Chinese counterpart of communism should be defined as property or capital instead of work or production. Therefore, it is more precise to call communism co-capitalism or state capitalism.

Why do we understand it in this way? What are the difference between co-production and

common property? Co-production means that all people work together as manpower.

Common property represents a system in which people are all capitalists and work together, though the results may vary with each individual. It is because the fact that workers labour together does not necessarily lead to common prosperity, but common poverty in most cases. China's practice proves it to be the truth. Working together is equal to the communal pot and common poverty.

Joint property is in total contrast to co-production, because it is a continuous reproduction process in an endless succession, so we are both workers and capitalists. We work for ourselves and also share out bonus on our own. Property moves in a never-ending cycle. With compound interest, money begets money, and there is more and more wealth. People shall live better lives just as what we wish for.

State capitalism establishes a system of national governance with the basis of state capital. It is also a huge system taking the state as a unit. It takes the power and economy as the main pillar and the source of power.

The harmonious society is achieved through the adjustment of relationships between man and man, between man and society, as well as between man and nature so that human beings can fully obtain material and spiritual satisfaction.

Apart from meeting their own material needs, individuals need to improve their mental level and spiritual realm in order to reach the requirements of God. Humans shall abandon the devil, cult, crime, hatred, ignorance, barbarism, evil, and dirtiness. Otherwise they will fail to reach the requirements of God, resulting in self-destruction or destruction by God for no value of existence.

23. Chinese like spheres and Westerners like cubes

About 2007

Chinese are under a situation: only when the situation changes do they adjust themselves to a favourable direction. However, facing the same situation, foreigners are blockheaded and content to remain where they are. Why?

China has a long history. All historical things educate modern people to win by wits and strategies, for example, there are many strategies in 'Thirty-Six Stratagems', various wars, novels, biographies, and many Chinese legends, and every war uses strategies.

All these tell Chinese that it is not wrong to get something by strategies. In contrast, if one person could get something but not give a try or other people could do but he can't, he will fall behind. Chinese culture and traditional ideology is the culture that wins from existing regulations and restrictions.

What are regulations and restrictions? It is the culture that the emperor is the emperor, the minister is the minister, the father is the father, and the son is the son, the husband is the husband, and the wife is the wife. Chinese not only maintain the system, but also reach their purpose; this exactly is Chinese's intelligence or wisdom.

Under this kind of systematic culture, system is above rules; that is to say, power is above law. Building your own system means you can defy rules or make rules serve you.

Under this kind of systematic culture, China unconsciously builds its own connection network and system. And it continuously makes efforts to maintain this kind of system for the purpose of excluding other people, possessing privilege, and building a sense of security.

Actually, emperor and minister, father and son, husband and wife is a basic system framework built for this nation by Confucius, and as national policy, ethics, and laws, it could not be amended. Moreover, power and interests form and dominate the system. Power could change the distribution of power and interest in the system; this is a function of this system, which has existed from the feudal society.

The originators of ancient Chinese culture, that is, Tao Te Ching and Book of Changes, are about philosophy of change. This is a gift God gave to the ancient Chinese. Foreigners' IQ probably is lower so that they could not accept profound culture, only accept the simple one.

There is fundamentalism in Islam religion and Christianity. The fundamentalism of Islam religion is Wahhabi, which is the ideology of IS and terrorism.

When facing a new situation and environment, they could not change themselves to adapt to the

new environment. Contrarily, they insist on ancient rules and deal with things according to thousands of years' pedagogy. This is fatuity, also an evil, and it is necessary to amend and renew the system of culture and ideology.

24. On American culture of individualism embodied in American movies

About 2007

Movies are the primary representation modes of contemporary culture; despite the fact that the channels of cultural transmission and modes of cultural representation become increasingly diversified, movies still bear the most significant influence on the transmission of masscult.

Movies often tell a complete story within one or two hours and enable people to appreciate the story within the shortest possible time and in the most relaxing ways, and different people can get exactly what they want from the same movie. That's the so-called 'there are a thousand Hamlets in a thousand people's eyes'.

People with poor intelligence can hardly gain a thorough understanding of the connotation deeply embedded in the movies, but they are probably moved by the fascinating settings and plots.

From the perspective of psychoanalysis, people's experiences of certain things are bound to leave their traces in and have some effects on the subconscious and ultimately change people's view towards certain things. People cannot remember every single experience since they have experienced too much ever since they were born. But every single experience that they remember definitely has influence on them. The overall combinations of the influence of all experiences on people are what constitute people's subconscious, such as people's true views on these matters.

Some experiences have great influence on people, while others just happened and faded away. Experiences do not have to be directly experienced. All kinds of experiences can have certain influence on people's subconscious. It is just a matter of degree.

Experience gained from books and newspapers as well as movies belongs to experience, and doing something on your own is also a kind of experience. So armchair strategists are as confident as a much-experienced veteran in terms of battles, since their subconscious tells them that they are experts on such matters. In fact, however, people's awareness always stands at a distance from the truth, and some are in complete opposition.

It is just like Marx regarding himself as an expert in capitalism, yet his knowledge on capital was nothing, as correct as an old waste collector. He should not have talked about exploitation, let alone exploitation theory.

Let's get down to business. A good movie contains fascinating settings and profound connotation, both of which can have certain influence on the subconscious of the public.

Indeed, I have been thrilled by American blockbusters many times. But the more I see, the stronger the feeling of their absurdness and superficiality becomes. They are simply nonsense.

The eternal theme of American movies is an immortal hero who saves the whole world. What is it that has been called individual saving the whole world? This individual could be an unknown ordinary person, a taxi driver, a baked roll maker, a retired veteran, a pilot, or an actor. An accidental experience made him the only one who could save the whole world. Then he, after suffering from numerous hardships and adversaries, shouldered his unshakable responsibility, miraculously defeated the conspirators and all evil forces, and successfully saved all human beings, at least saved a country, earth-shaking things like that.

What's an immortal hero? That is, this hero can never be killed. And he could always come with superpower especially in the moment of emergencies. For example, a baked roll maker could dismantle bombs, fly an airplane, and break a code or things like that. Finally, he won the beauty and enjoyed the happy ending. That's the end!

This is what is typically referred to as individual heroism or liberalism. American people pin all their hopes on an individual hero. When they are faced with certain crisis and their lives are at stake, whoever can save them becomes their individual hero.

Therefore, it is well justified to say that Western culture is completely individual culture. Americans hate organisation and system, and they are hostile to any kind of bond and division.

The essence of system culture is the dependency on organisation, system, division, connections, and cooperation. The petition culture in China is a typical example of system culture.

People from the underclass suffer from uncomprehending wrongs and turn to the organisation, system, connections, and power to uphold justice. It seems that the petition culture in China is in an incomparable position in relation to the individual hero in America, and the differences strike like one in heaven and the other in hell, one being a doormat, the other, saviour—one a mouse, the other a lion.

However, from another point of view, two fists can hardly defeat four hands and even a hero has to take the underdog status when his rivals are in large numbers. A ferocious lion is not necessarily a winner, faced with packs of wolves.

Organisation and system finally defeat individuals. This is common sense and is also the truth.

With system culture put into better use, China can still enjoy a prosperous future. An inappropriate treatment with this kind of culture would get Chinese people nowhere. The key is how to make use of the system appropriately.

25. The reason why communism could be successful in China is Chinese traditional culture's cohesiveness with communism

About 2007

Communism suffers defeat all over the world, but in China it could last till now, which is not coincidence but due to the cohesiveness between Chinese traditional culture and communism. Both of them are the systematic culture with global outlook, while the Western culture totally belongs to individual culture.

What is systematic culture? It refers to the culture with global outlook to make the country and world as a whole to research and modify. The Chinese traditional culture is to take the responsibility of the whole world, which is cohesive with communism.

Nowadays, when we mention these words, it seems far from us. But in the bottom of our hearts, the emotion is buried, which is the culture in our lives.

Currently, almost all the people, no matter illiterate or those with doctoral degree, no matter the vendor or the high official, are always busy every day. All the people are pursuing profit. This is the nature of human beings.

We always hold the view that the world is vast and the world is strong, but for us, the power of individual is rather small, which is like sand in the Yellow River. We could do nothing. If the stupid think like that, there is nothing wrong; but if the talented people are also with the same idea, it would be the tragedy of the society.

In our life, we always meet many unreasonable and unpleasant issues; generally, we always try our best to change it within our ability to make it go with our mind, while we always try to avoid those we couldn't touch, unless under force. We have no choice, thus we will search for the solution to change it, for example, to appeal to the higher authorities for help or make a lawsuit.

Actually, all the things involved with people all over the world could be changed only with the proper method, which is Taoism.

As there is always a balance in the bottom of everyone's heart, so everyone knows which is favourable and which is unfavourable. No one is fooled, and the lie could cheat others for a short period but not for a long time.

So those could really benefit the people will finally be accepted by people. And lies and fatuity will finally be abandoned.

The world with lies and fatuousness will bring pain and trouble for us. Those with high IQ will

always find solutions if they want to change the lies and fatuousness. No matter how strong the lies and fatuousness are, justice will always defeat evil. And wisdom will always defeat fatuousness and lies. The key is not to change the world, but whether if they want to change the world.

In Buddhism, there is a saying 'express one's desire or hope'. But the desire or hope could not be expressed by all people. Those with common wisdom had better with the heart to earn money. It is useless for them to express the desire or hope. All they can do is change themselves, let alone change others.

Premier Wen Jiabao said in China it is not the lack of one who looks up to the sky, which refers to taking the responsibility for the world. In China, we don't lack it. Those with high IQ should express their heart, which is the heart to change the world, also referring to looking up to the sky.

Chinese classic culture, moral culture, and the Confucian culture are all with the faith of looking up at the sky. The only difference is that some is deep and some is shallow. Self-cultivation, regulating the family, country, and world is the faith of Confucius, but it is the faith that could be reached by the ordinary people.

The moral culture of Lao Tzu is the looking up at the sky of a gentleman, which is also the faith of high IQ.

No matter which kind of looking up to the sky, they refer to the overall view and systematic view of country and world, which is to change all the unreasonable elements of the world, to eliminate the evil and fatuous from the source. Make the society, country, and world operate in order and sound development. The ancient people could make the wild boar into dishes which are indispensable in daily life nowadays. So what could not be changed in daily life? The only problem is whether you want to do it or not, whether you dare to do it or not, and how you do it, but not whether it can be done or not.

I don't encourage those with ordinary IQ to regulate the world. More often, they have failed before they begin. I admire the spirit of those people but don't agree with their behaviour. People with ordinary IQ will always review questions with a one-sided view. Letting them regulate the world will only bring problems and with no good result. No matter if they are right droppings or left droppings, they are only droppings.

Communism is a systematic theory. The whole country is a whole part to modify, regulate, feedback, and control; all those are systematic ideas.

Communism truly changes the country into a machine, and everyone is a part of the machine. Just like the relations of emperor and officials, fathers and sons. But they are with different types.

How does the national machine work? How to modify it to benefit the largest profit of the people, country, and nations is the question those who look up to the sky should consider and research.

And it is also related to the profits of each of us.

We are living in this environment like the fishes in the lake. The quality of lake water is like the living environment of us. And the political and economic relationships are our living environment. If those relationships have severe contradiction, like the fish living in the water which is severely polluted, even if they are not dead, they could not live for long, which is intolerant that those with low IQ will suffer the largest damage.

How to modify the political and economic relationships of the country is the question researched by those who look up to the sky. Moral philosophy and Confucius' ideas are the unique culture of China, which is the typical integral and systematic social management theory. It is the totally the same as the communist ideas. That's why communism could be developed in China but suffer defeat in other places.

Ancient China was famous for its systematic culture. And in the future, it could also lead the world with the systematic culture. The key is how to modify the system and how to realise the largest profit of the nations and country.

1. The kingdom is owned by the emperor in Chinese feudal system, as is indicated in the saying 'all the lands under heaven belong to the emperor with all the people on the land being his servants'. The emperor is also known as son of God, representing God and empowered by God with the divine right. So the emperor rules the country on behalf of God. The system is public ownership in this sense, except that the interest distribution mode is different.

2. The feudal emperor has the kingly way, taking the world as his responsibility and considering the whole world as a system for unified coordination and management. Communism shall take advantage of public ownership, managing the world in a coordinated and consolidated way.

3. A lot of cultural ideas are interlinked because of similarity in material and management system. People can adapt to the new social change just with a little improvement, naturally accepting communism and the Communist Party.

26. Contradictions in human society are caused by people's different perspectives in viewing things

About 2007

Certainly, this viewpoint is not a sermon, but instead, it is the supreme wisdom and perfect enlightenment as it is mentioned in Buddhist sutras. It refers to the most objective, essential, and accurate understanding of things. He will not blindly worship something because of a sage's words, and he will also not abandon his understanding of the truth of things because it is not accepted by the common people. The reason is that there is only one truth, and different conclusions can be drawn from different perspectives towards the same thing, just as blind men and an elephant in an ancient fable. In fact, the reason why we have different opinions towards the same thing is that we are in different positions and points of view. The ordinary people can only look on things with their own angles and positions, which is all they can do. They are not capable of seeing things from different perspectives. People with more wisdom and intelligence are more likely to see things from diverse perspectives. Seeing things from different perspectives means looking on the same issue by assuming oneself is someone else in a different position and environment in a different time, as conclusions on the same thing may be completely different in different conditions.

As for a leader and a powerful man, he who can understand more is likely to be able to make use of the power of more people so as to reach his purpose and avoid the damages and obstacles from others. This is a basic condition for success. This measures the cognitive value of the world merely from the perspective of whether an individual is successful or not.

My purpose of studying the philosophy of life is not just limited to the individual success, because an individual's success is not just the success in career. The ability of making more money can be called a success, but it is only a small one. A person also needs the comprehensive success and the world's success.

In my opinion, an individual's comprehensive success not just refers to the achievements in one's career, and an individual also needs a comprehensive satisfaction healthy body, happy family, good living environment, and unthreatened security. The comprehensive development and satisfaction is the individual's real comprehensive success. The world's success means different countries and districts of the world live in peace with each other and respectively achieve their own development and satisfaction.

Maybe many people will doubt it and refute me, and they may think this is only a fantasy or illusion. But actually I think this is not as far as what people have imagined. Our present life is full of sufferings, pressures, competitions, slaughters, and various kinds of contradictions everywhere, which is true indeed. However, according to my understanding of the society and the world, sufferings and contradictions in human society are all caused by our incapability of

comprehensively and objectively understanding the society and the world. Different countries, nations, districts, and individuals have their own views of the world, and a lot of these views are contradictory and conflicting with each other.

Actually, we may have different colours, languages, and financial situations from different districts, but we are basically the same when we initially come to the world. We have basically the same animal instinct. We have the same emotions, pleasures, and the same instinctive impulse. Regardless of the white race, the yellow race, or the black race, when we accept the same environment and live under the same conditions, our basic viewpoints are basically the same.

To my point of view, the same objective thing in the world has only one truth, though different conclusions may be drawn from different perspectives. But what I want to say is what the truth of a thing is, the sum of different conclusions drawn from different perspectives. This is the real truth of things. Just like CT in medical science, only with an all-around check from different levels and angles can we find out the truth and essence of things.

All contradictions in the world derive from the contradictory parties' different perspectives in looking at the same thing, which leads to their contradictory conclusions. Meanwhile, the two parties both persistently think they are absolutely right, thus leading to drastic contradictions, conflicts, and even slaughters and wars.

Almost everyone believes they are right and righteous, and no one will initiatively admit he is Satan, even including Hitler himself, the recognised Satan of the world. During the Second World War, most Germans and Japanese believed they were saving the world instead of destroying it.

Thus, if we can let all people understand the integrated essence and truth of all things in the world, I believe people will draw coincident conclusions and results. The reason is that at the moment of our birth, the subconscious of all people is basically coincident. People's purpose in the world is actually the same. In fact, everyone has the desire pattern expounded by Maslow. The demand pattern of everyone is gradually satisfied from the primary demand at the bottom to the self-actualisation demand at the top without end.

It is true especially for the common people. People need security, enough food and clothing, sex and love, and the realisation of the self-value.

People hate wars because wars threaten their demand at the bottom security demand. Security is the demand of human at the bottom. However, the world we are living in is not peaceful and tranquil. We need a good living environment and investment environment, so our first concern is security, and the insecure environment is absolutely not the place we are willing to live in. Of course, there are also many adventurers, conspirators, and war maniacs in the world, but their emergence is caused by another social factor rather than completely by their inherent bellicose and bloodthirsty nature.

In psychoanalysis, anyone who loves or hates something has a reason. All things that happen in the world are causal.

Hatred is not the normal reaction of all normal people towards irrelevant things in the outside world. It emerges because some behaviour of some people seriously affects others' life, happiness, and benefits, and there are no other proper normal ways to deal with it. As a result, such an instinctive impulse of destroying others emerges. In this sense, hatred is a kind of desire and instinctive reaction out of the pursuit of protection for its own security.

So the contradictions in human society are caused by the different views on the same thing. We need to unify people's perception of all things, as there is only one truth. We need to tell the truth, rejecting the lies, cheating, and deception.

Right is right, wrong is wrong, black is black, white is white, and fact is fact. Never compromise, fear, or give in.

Only the truth can really solve the contradictions in human society.

27. The essence of war is the cannibalism led by elites

About 2007

Social elites have a distinctive feature, i.e. they can accept the advanced culture and think earlier and faster than common people and apply it into social practice. Besides, they cannot only absorb and use the advanced culture by themselves, but also influence and lead the common people to accept and absorb it. The political revolution actually starts from culture and thought. Conflicts in politics are actually the conflicts between two kinds of culture and thought. By spreading their ideas, elites are able to establish their organisations, political parties, and mass organisations. In this way, they can organise their supporters to fight with their opponents divergent from their thought and culture. Apart from the conflicts in culture and thought, those conflicts are likely to tend towards wars and slaughters.

The American Civil War is a conflict between the two different kinds of thought and culture, slavery and capitalism. China's war of Kuomintang and the Communist Party is a conflict between the culture of communism and capitalism. In fact, any war happening in the world is essentially a war of culture and a war of thought. There are always some people who believe their original social system is proper and their original cultural thoughts are correct, because culture determines social relations, and social relations determine people's vital interests. Instead of saying that they are protecting their vital interests, they are more of protecting their existing belief and culture. Instead of saying that they go into wars for the benefit of themselves, they are more of going into wars for the purpose of maintaining their own belief and culture.

From the contemporary perspective, the American Civil War was to liberate black slaves and offer those rights and freedom. However, during the Civil War, the slave owners in the South fiercely fought with the army of the North, which explicitly demonstrates this issue. In the eyes of the blacks, the North army was not there to liberate and help them, but instead, the North was to make them lose their jobs they relied on. Thus, in order to protect their livelihood, they dashed ahead to fight with the North army.

Because at that time, the blacks hadn't received the culture of freedom, democracy, and human rights, they still insisted on their original belief and culture loyal to slave owners and at the service of slave owners. This kind of loyalty and service had formed an inherent culture, which was handed down and taught from age to age, so they firmly believed in it without any doubt. Thus, to let them completely abandon their original thought and culture immediately without receiving the brand-new culture and idea would extremely annoy them with the complete overturn and challenge of their subconscious. If they did not protect their original culture and thought, they would sink into the helplessness and fear of the unknown—the unknown challenge and helpless fear of the future fate. It is just because of their anger and fear of the lost culture and thought that they picked up guns and rebelled.

The war in which Sun Yat-sen overthrew the Qing dynasty is also a war between two cultures, a

war between capitalism and feudalism. In this war, what role did the common people play? Ah Qs. Those who overthrew the Qing dynasty are Ah Qs led by revolutionary elites, and those who protected the Qing dynasty are Ah Qs led by feudal official elites. In history, we refer to these two kinds of Ah Q by completely different names. The former is called revolutionary warrior. The latter is called feudal reactionary force.

This is a political fraud. Frankly speaking, common Ah Qs don't know what they are fighting for or who they are fighting for. All in all, they just fight with the idea that the world will belong to them if they win. However, the ignorant Ah Qs are not aware that they were not included in the so-called us. They were just cannon fodder and chessmen anytime and anywhere. The world always belongs to elites.

The world is not peaceful, and wars occur everywhere constantly. And ignorant Ah Q is being killed or exploded all the time with even various ways of death. Some Ah Qs kill another group of Ah Qs, and then they are killed by another group of Ah Qs. Meanwhile, no matter what parties they belong to, they insist they are incomparably righteous and they are the embodiment of justice till death. Even if they are bombed into ash, they still treat it as glory which can illuminate their ancestors and leave a good name forever.

Above all, the essence of war is a cause where different elites lead two groups of ignorant people to kill each other and certain elites get the benefits in the end.

28. The responsibility for world peace lies in elites

About 2007

In society nowadays, there are numerous contradictions around the world. Instead of saying that they are conflicts of thought, they are more of conflicts of culture. The concept of thought is much narrow than that of culture. Thought may refer to one or several ideas, but culture is all-inclusive, which is manifested in every detail of our daily life, in our smiles, gestures, expressions, etc. Culture is a kind of systematic thought.

Culture and thought are actually both windy and dispensable. Whatever culture and thought we hold, we can still survive in the world. But what's the significance of human survival? Just fighting for favour or seeking to prevail over others? No. In contrast, the purpose of fighting for favour or seeking to prevail over others is to live, or to live better. Different thoughts and cultures are only slightly different in aspects of living style and living quality. Some are backward and some are advanced. On the world's scale, there are not two individuals whose thought and culture are completely the same, just as there are not two completely same leaves in the world. There is always a difference between two individuals in thought and cultural level, which is the root of the contradictions in the world. If the thought and culture of all people were exactly the same, people would be able to understand each other and communicate well with each other, and thus, no fights and wars would exist.

The fights between people are caused by their difference in culture and thought, which leads to the dispute and divergence in benefit distribution of everyday life. Once such difference and divergence universally exists in two districts or two social classes; political storm and wars will be generated if it is intensified to a certain degree and raised to the political level. That will be the tragedy of all human beings and the tragedy of the whole world.

However, seeing from another different perspective, with the development of technology, popularisation of education, universal improvement of the quality of all people around the world as well as the development of the Internet, people are able to gradually reach a consensus in their divergence of culture and thought through reasonable comparison and normal appeal. I believe whatever colour we are, wherever we are, and whatever language we speak, there is one thing for sure: the fundamental subconscious and original impulse of people all around the world are the same, because this is the inherent system of people. In humans' original impulse, there are some fixed instincts: some are ruthless and some are weak. When people do anything as they want without taboo, their ruthless nature will be shown. Numerous evils such as aggressions, plunders, slaughters, and extinction of races in human society have explicitly demonstrated it. To be frank, if there was no balance of terror of nuclear weapons and if nuclear weapons were only mastered by one regime, we couldn't imagine how many wars would happen and how many people would die. Even now, humans still haven't broken away from the shadow that nuclear weapons might destroy the earth. Actually, everyone in the world is living under the balance of terror, but some people are aware of it and some are not at all.

But on the other hand, there is also the instinct of weakness and being afraid of death. This may seem ridiculous to some people. But I think everyone is afraid of death; everyone wishes to spend their lives safely, peacefully, and happily. It is just due to this kind of desire and impulse that humans are likely to truly move towards civilisation.

As an ancient Chinese saying goes, safety starts at home. To live a life safely and light-heartedly is really a kind of happiness, which is actually what every normal and sane person on the earth wishes for deep inside their heart. A sane and normal person will not kill another person or be killed by others just for a piece of bread.

Culture and thought is just a kind of idea and information, which can be exchanged and spread in various ways, including peaceful and non-peaceful ways. Besides, to some extent, its exchange and spread always start from theories. In fact, any countries, any nations, and any sane people can conduct cultural and thinking exchanges with each other by certain means, and through the communication, they can understand each other, borrow from each other, trust each other, compromise with each other, and help each other.

However, the separation of different regimes and languages leads to people's misunderstandings, suspicion, hatred, and oppression. In such misunderstandings, suspicion, hatred, and oppression, conspirators just make use of the selfishness, greediness, extremes, and narrowness in human nature to make waves and gain profits.

In reality, there are sober-minded elite in every nation and every country. If all of them can achieve compatible culture and idea on a spiritual level, the world can realise the real peace.

29. The change of culture starts from elites

About 2007

In fact, Chinese property law is just a kind of prelude of the Cultural Revolution, and it is a symbol which lays a foundation for the new round of cultural revolution in China.

It is just because culture has a kind of acquiescent and hidden property that culture is usually in a condition that the true face of Lushan is lost to my sight, for it is right on this mountain that I reside. Usually people are not willing to think about the right or wrong of existing facts, because the change of existing culture will involve the interests of many people, which is nothing else but removing mountains and filling seas for common people. It is impossible for a person to remove or change anything on his own, and blind confrontations will only lead to cruel sufferings or death for justice.

But I think to change culture is not unreachable or as difficult as reaching for the sky. The key issue lies in methods.

Though people have some bad habits such as selfishness, scholasticism, and satisfaction with things as they are, they still have the nature of pursuit of brightness and success as well as unwillingness to lag behind. No matter how selfish and greedy a person or a group or the social elite class in power is, they will think it over when it concerns the overall national interest, welfare of descendants, and their own achievements or ruling status.

If a country or a nation's culture needs to be changed, it will be a fruitless approach to start changing from the common people by calling on them through obscurantism by means of the so-called democracy.

The reason is that people at the bottom of society are more likely to have the narrow and extreme thinking mode. Actually, though democratic society seems to be fair and just, it is unscientific after all. If people at the bottom of the society and people in the leading class have the same political rights, the narrow and extreme ideas and thoughts of the people at the bottom may completely submerge rationality, scientificalness, and advancement.

The reason is that they cannot realise culture at all, and they cannot realise the constraint and control of this subconscious on their words and deeds. All their words and deeds are the servant and megaphone of culture. However, a major cause for the success of the elite class is that their brains' comprehensive analysis and logical judgment ability are generally superior to the common people. Thus, they are able to achieve the leading position and advantages in the field of politics, economy, etc. Besides, the real elites of society are the first to understand and accept the advanced culture and thought. The social progress is essentially the cultural process led by elites, and the social change is actually the cultural change led by elites. Therefore, I think an excellent social system should let elites who are capable of representing people's interest hold power and

administer state affairs.

1. A country's prosperity and development needs elites to hold power and establish national policies. And such elites should be a group rather than several individuals.

2. People in power must truly represent people's interest, their fundamental and long-term interest, and so to speak, it refers to the spirit of three representatives. However, if elites can't represent people's interest, it will lead to a disaster.

30. What are Chinese doing?

About 2007

In recent years, economic development in China rapidly improved. Besides, apart from building substance civilisation, the objective to build harmonious society and spiritual civilisation was announced recently. Chinese culture and logic are quite different from that of foreign countries so that it's always hard for foreigners to understand what we are doing now and expect what we will do in the future. Chinese seem different from foreigners forever. Some people are even scared about fast development of China. After reading this thesis, you will get an absolutely clear idea of Chinese, Chinese culture, and society development direction. Maybe we can see China and its development from a different angle.

In the past, I often published some critical writings on the Internet to make analysis and comment on something happening in China. Government seems to pick up thought from civilians published on the Internet. In other words, civilians influence development of China by means of the Internet.

The same as the Soviet Union did, China failed to take an effective method on management of state-owned enterprises. Chinese state enterprises get into hard condition within a period of time. However, this situation seems to be turned after government made separation of ownership and management right. State enterprises are released from heavy load and achieve stable profit, giving support to stabilise Chinese government in turn. With substance civilisation achieved, the new goal is to build spiritual civilisation. They think building spiritual civilisation is the unique way to solve deeply rooted social contradiction problems and build a harmonious society so as to achieve maximum fairness and justice.

To achieve maximum fairness and justice is still a goal far away, before which there are many things to do and many difficulties waiting for us to conquer. How this goal will proceed needs our witness together.

It's believed that if other countries refer to the Chinese development model, learn from our experience, and make some modification according to their current situation, they will do better than China. Western countries should know better how to make profit, manage, keep to rules, and keep to principle.

31. Chinese economic achievement is attributed to the implementation of new ideological culture and political system

About 2007

In my opinion, China is developing well in all directions, which should be attributed to new ideological culture and political system. It's still not perfect but it has been improved a great deal and live up to standard basically.

Many people say that China is a giant without thought and culture of its own. But actually it's not like what they say. What is current situation China staying in?

Based on public ownership and state capitalism offering political support and material support, China is a new human-civilisation society under political power with an aim to solve deeply rooted social contradiction problems.

This concept is subtle since things related to it are quite complicated. In China, it can be only done but not said. The policy to put aside disputes for economic development is seen as a Chinese feature and developed Marxism. However, nobody can tell where those so-called features come from. Opinions shown here just stand for me. These personal points of view are not related to others.

Harmonious society expresses our ideology and culture, and state capitalism expresses our political system. According to present strong productive forces, harmonious society must be based on state capitalism.

To achieve harmony is not to be said only. The achievement of it needs political and economic support. I used to publish some writings on the Internet to explain how a socialist country exploits the superiority of socialism.

How does a socialist country exploit the superiority of socialism? The way is in China: Based on public ownership and state capitalism offering political support and material support, China is a new human-civilisation society under political power with aim to solve deeply rooted social contradiction problems.

How to develop the superiority of socialism in socialist country? It lies in the cultural ideology and political system currently practiced in China.

Take public ownership and state capitalism as the political security and material security to construct the brand-new harmonious society of human civilisation under the power guarantee and with the purpose of solving the deep-seated contradictions.

32. How a socialist country develops advantages of the socialist system

April 2004

Socialism and capitalism are two different social systems which have different guiding ideologies and core principles for adjusting interpersonal relationships. Those that can improve the development of the society in a capitalist country can only be taken as a reference rather than as true saying to follow. Just as treating different diseases uses different prescriptions, taking wrong medicine will only be just the opposite.

The core principles for adjusting interpersonal relationship between socialist system and capitalist system are different; so are their paths of development. To understand their paths of development, we must firstly understand their core principles. In my opinion, the guiding ideologies and core principles of a capitalist system are as follows:

According to their own conditions and the environment provided by the society, every individual in a capitalist country produces their own desires for life and the society and then produces their own life goals and directions in life. In the capitalist society, everyone is respected and encouraged to go forward according to their own goals and directions, but everyone must be responsible for their own behaviour. The society will not interfere with anyone nor assume any responsibility. It only provides minimum basic protection for everyone. Everything depends on their own, and the life rule of survival of the fittest is followed in the society.

The guiding ideologies and core principle of socialist system:

Socialist system is a social system in which people are masters of their own affairs. After people hold the state power, starting from the fundamental interests of the majority of the people, by adjusting the political, economic, and other social relations, they are striving to produce the social relations between man and man, man and society, man and nature and social environment that can meet the social needs of the majority of people and conform to their interests, and to further improve faster and more rapid favourable development and maximise their spiritual and material satisfaction. As a result, there will be a better world in which harmonious unity, mutual promotion, and common development between man and man, man and society, man and nature are achieved. The relationship between man and the society in a socialist system is different from that of a capitalist system.

The relationship between man and the society in capitalist system:

This is the most original, basic relationship between man and nature since life exists. It is a relationship between an individual and the society, generated by imitating the relationship between animal and nature in nature. It only wears a civilised overcoat, but in essence, it is of no difference from the one between animal and nature.

The capitalist society, however, is a social system centred on the individual. When people are born, the society will give everyone a small surfboard with democracy, freedom, and human rights. Everyone can hold the small surfboard, and ride at their own will in the sea of bitterness. The distance one can ride only lies in one's own abilities. Only a few people can ride out of the sea of bitterness and come to the island, such as the big capitalists in this time. Some people get lost in the sea and become those who oppose and harm the society. So in a capitalist country, the high crime rate is very high; especially the malignantly intentional crimes are horrible, causing great harm to the society. In order to arrive at some island or the other bank of victory, the vast majority of people, full of helpless fears in the law-of-the-jungle struggle, paddle until they die, sinking to the bottom of the sea.

The relationship between socialist system and the society:

Socialist system adjusts interpersonal relationship according to the rational aspect of human nature and from the macro and rational height. It develops social systems by meeting the interests of the majority. In other words, the minority whose interests are different from those of the majority must make concessions for the majority so the whole society can be harmonious. When social systems are developed, in order to safeguard the interests of the majority, a few people must sacrifice their interests. That is to say, it is a social system where most people exercise dictatorship over a few people. When the interests of the minority conflict with those of the majority, the minority only have three choices: (1) they persist in safeguarding their own interests wilfully and arbitrarily while ignoring those of the majority. The majority will exercise dictatorship. (2) They can change themselves, join in the society, make concessions for the majority, and keep the harmonious relationship and unity between man, between man and society, between man and nature. (3) They can leave the society and the country for another society and country to live in.

The principle of socialism is to consider the whole society and the whole country as the most advanced means of transportation. It is like a huge aircraft carrier, taking all the people in the society to the bright world and to victory. Everyone in our society is a spare part on the carrier; it asks each of the parts to keep harmony with the whole carrier. All people should take concerted action, make concerted efforts together to the bright world and to victory. Thus, a socialist country, if properly adjusted, can create infinite social benefits, overcome all difficulties, and achieve any goal.

Since the socialist country uses reason and science in adjusting the relationship between man and society, it adjusts the relationship globally and generally, which is the charm and superiority of a socialist system. Therefore, compared with capitalism, it is an advanced social system. When developing any system, considering any problem, we take the priority of sociality, overall, majority, and historical orientation, and then consider humanity, individuality, uniqueness, and locality. Of course, we do not completely ignore, sacrifice humanity, individuality, uniqueness, and locality but put their interests in the secondary position. Without violating the overall, we should also take humanity, individuality, uniqueness, and locality into full account. However, we cannot sacrifice the interests of the majority because of humanity, individuality, uniqueness, and

locality. Only in this way can we give full play to socialist superiority, not be dominated by external factors, make clear judgment, and resist any interference of bad thoughts generated internally or externally.

Socialist society regulates social relations among people by taking the society as a whole, paying attention to the harmony and unity among all persons in this society, the society, and nature so as to achieve the social realm and social relations with harmony between heaven and people. We can avail of the harmony with nature and society through self-regulation and self-effort. Society serves for everyone, with individuals also contributing to the society; therefore, man and the society, man and man have formed the harmonious, rational, and peaceful relationship in which people take what they need and contribute what they can do. When the individual interest clashes with community interest, the individual can maintain harmony with the society through self-change. When the interests of the majority conflict with the social interests, we can maintain the harmony of both interests by changing the relationship between man and society through the adjustment of political and economic order.

As for the socialist aircraft carrier, because there are no successful examples, we only try, test, and debug it according to its principles. We do not reach the normal sailing state, so various defects and contradictions will appear in the process of debugging. As members of the society, we should understand and tolerate defects and contradictions. After all, our starting point which is to liberate all mankind is good. It is inevitable for us to take some detours. As long as debugging the carrier is completed, it will sail formally. We can quickly catch up with any one of the world's advanced developed countries; I believe we all can see this day. This is not out of reach but just around the corner.

With the development and popularisation of information technology, the central government can realise its unified management of the finance in state-owned enterprises. However, only recently the requirement can be met, and it is the right time. With the popularisation of Internet technology and the enhancement of our productivity, the production relation of our socialist country also needs to be made with corresponding adjustment, which is consistent with the great theory that relations of production must conform to the development of productivity.

1. Political power in the hands of the people can solve our security problem.

2. The united finance management of the central government, the central government investment can solve the problems in funds, employment, and development.

3. China's positive, mature socialist market has been basically completed and is gradually connecting with the world. With the market, the operation and management of our enterprises can resort completely to the market, allowing the reasonable, healthy competition in the market to determine enterprises' decline and prosperity. There is no need of being too worried about them.

If the above problems are solved, all other ones will be easily solved. The socialist aircraft carrier

can smoothly sail and run faster and faster. We will be more and more powerful and become the most powerful country in the world soon. All the problems, such as lay-off, unemployment, the gap between rich and poor, the gap between urban and rural areas, the problem of Taiwan, and the issue of the Diaoyu Islands will be conquered without a single fight.

Considered from the perspective of the problems in real life, since the economy in a capitalist country can be developed, the capitalist system is really good in a sense and worth learning. This is undeniable in spite of its drawbacks.

On the other hand, the big-pot system and the old mode of planned economy were implemented in our country in the first years when the PRC was established. It was the fact that the low productivity at that time was exposed. Based on the above two points, we can make the following analysis.

Why did the big-pot system and the old mode of planned economy fail? What can the socialist market economy implemented in China recently and the economic system performed in a capitalist country have been telling us?

It is people that achieve all the good systems, so we must firstly understand people for the success of our career. We should know what people are, under what circumstances we can be the most enthusiastic and creative and create the greatest social value, and what people really need. All the systems are completed by people, and their purpose is to make people have a better life.

We can make a comparison of the capitalist system with the market economy performed in China after we carried out the policy of reform and opening up to the outside world and the old mode of planned economy so that we can find out their fundamental difference. What did the society provide for the labourers with the big-pot system and the old mode of planned economy? Let's recall the situation at that time. Everyone's salary was basically fixed. They could get a similar salary regardless of their performance at work. Individuals were not encouraged to other things, except their own work by the government. The houses were provided by their working units, and the state was responsible for all the expenditure on going to see doctors and children going to school. What's more, consumption was controlled by the state. In this model, the state was responsible for nearly all the problems of workers in their lives, so workers did not need to assume any risk nor the right to do so.

What did the society with market economy and capitalist system provide for labourers? It provided free trade and commercial competition. What did the state provide for those private enterprises and self-employed people? It provided policies and regulations. Similar to a capitalist country, everyone who plunged into the commercial sea is given a small wooden board of conducting any commercial activity within the scope of law. Those self-employed and private entrepreneurs are responsible for all their commercial actions, and the state does not provide anything else. Why has China's private economy flourished?

So are the capitalist countries. They also give each citizen a small wooden board of conducting

any commercial activity within the scope of democracy, freedom, human rights, and law and let them ride freely in the boundless commercial sea.

During the early period of China's socialism, the state provided people with the real things—housing, education, medical care, and salaries. However, what market economy and capitalist system have brought to people is the vague, abstract concept of conducting any commercial activity within the scope of law, rather than any real things. Why do people still scramble for them? Aren't they crazy? No, it is true that market economy and capitalist system do not supply people with real materials but give people an environment for individuals to develop freely and to realise their own value and personal ideals. In this environment, people may fail, but they are more likely to exert their potentials, achieve their personal ideals and maximum value, and get more opportunities to develop.

In view of this, to make every worker exert their maximum labour productivity, what they need is an environment that can stimulate their potentials, rather than the limited material conditions. This is the experience that has been summarised by Chinese people with their blood and tears since the development of the cause of communism. This is a profound lesson to bear in mind by every communist at the initial stage of socialism.

However, the environment for the working people in the socialist country is different from that of the capitalist country. Why? A capitalist system serves for the capitalists, so what it provides is the environment in which capitalists can exploit more surplus value.

On the other hand, the environment in a socialist country serves for the common working people, and for their more beautiful, harmonious, prosperous, peaceful life. Because of their different service targets, the content and significance of the environments are quite different.

I. Educational Environment

Education is of decisive significance for individual, family, race, and state; it can directly determine an individual's social status and productivity. The average education level of a country determines the strength of a country, prosperous or declined. The education received by an individual during the initial twenty years since he or she was born impacts all of her or his life. The educational environment refers to the educational condition that the society can provide for every citizen. The vast majority of capitalist countries regard education as an industry that can increase in the gross national product and commercialise it. As to the effects of education on individuals, it is indeed valuable. Education is a tool that can produce more productive labourers for capitalists, and its purpose is to satisfy capitalists' need for talents who can make more benefits for them. That's just so. They also have compulsory education, but the knowledge they give people is only the basic knowledge that a labourer should have. They impose high tuitions and take strict control of the education in operation, management, business, trade, production skills, which may pose a threat to their social status. The common people cannot afford it, so they can only work as advanced productive tools and are exploited. It is very hard for them to become bosses.

However, the employment environment in a socialist country is quite different. The state is one in which all the working people master their own affairs, the regime is one which serves the people, and the education institutions are established for people to create more excellent workers. All of them should be serving the people rather than the machinery for capitalists to produce the exploited generation after generation.

Thus, the educators and education institutions in a socialist country should do research on such a question: how to impart the knowledge that can improve the productivity to the ordinary people in the simplest, cheapest, rapidest, most widely spread, and most effective manner. To improve the gross national product is the work of entrepreneurs, rather than the task of educational institutions. They are two different things and cannot be confused. The educational institutions set up by the people are aimed at serving the people with their heart and soul. They are not the machinery used to directly improve the gross national product and increase the economic growth rate. This is the biggest difference between socialism and capitalism in education.

II. Employment Environment

The easiest and most effective way to solve unemployment issues is to create new enterprise and establish a new plant. These will create more surplus value and profit. The capitalists will establish new enterprise and a new plant in a capitalist society. It is the politician's responsibility to deal with unemployment rather than the entrepreneur's thing. It will surely raise contradiction in the capitalist countries. Government needs to solve the problem of employment. Capital is controlled by capitalists, whose purpose is to earn more money instead of considering the problem of employment. So solving the problem of unemployment and development in capitalist countries is fluctuating with market changes, and government has no rights to intervene directly.

While the socialist country is in public ownership as the main body of the country, the situation is completely the opposite. Politicians should all have the assets of state-owned enterprises, can directly solve the employment and development problems, where the need to solve the employment problem is where to invest, and where the need to solve the problem of development can arrive where to invest. Of course, the investment is in order to profit, but it can also solve the problem of employment and development. Profit is the most important, employment is the auxiliary function, killing two birds with one stone. But in many of our state-owned enterprises, despite the losses to the state loans, wages will continue to have the order reversed; this behaviour is one of the simplest economic mistakes our politicians make on state-owned assets, resulting in waste of capital, not producing its due benefits, not realising the due function.

However, at the beginning of reform and opening up to the outside, as discussed in other articles of the author, the central government did not really hold the economic power of state-owned enterprises, so it was impossible to achieve what I have said—solving the problems of employment and development directly. The superiority of the socialist system did not play its due role in solving the issues of employment and development. Consequently, lots of related problems arise, such as triangle-relational debits, lack of vitality, loss of state-owned assets,

losses, embezzlement, corruption, illegal charges, disunity among people, etc. I have even published an article on the Internet to make the following suggestions to the government: the central government should immediately take over the state-owned enterprises, give up the right to manage the state-owned enterprises, and close hopeless and lost enterprises. The state-owned capital should be used in the place in most need rather than wasted in those enterprises that make losses. The government should directly solve the problems of employment and development and carry forward the superiority of the socialist system.

III. Security Environment

It is said that the security problem is a simple and old problem that officers and soldiers catch a thief. Since the country existed, the security problem has been focused on by all the dynasties and governments in the slave society, the feudal society, the capitalist society, or the socialist society. It seems nothing special. But if we think so, it may be completely wrong.

In fact, security problems are various social factors including politics, economy, ethics, morality, and education that are reflected in the behaviour of people, and all the various conflicts between man and man, man and society are also reflected in the security issues. The security problem seems to be about officers and soldiers catching a thief, but actually it is to solve all the conflicts on the contradiction between man and man, man and society in various fields. If the essential problem cannot be solved appropriately, thieves cannot be caught. On the contrary, they will be more and more. If the essential problem can be solved appropriately, thieves will be less and less; eventually no thieves need to be caught. The real thieves are not in the streets, nor in the mountains, but in the hearts of the people. The shortcomings in the political system and defects in the economic system or the shortage of education and the bad social environment will lead to moral and ethical conflicts. To a certain extent, they will affect social order and social stability.

If we fail to realise this point and are blind to catch the thieves, maybe one day, when you suddenly wake up, you may find all the people around you are thieves. What should you do if even you become a thief unconsciously? Kind people find it difficult to make a choice.

The thieves who break the law and commit crimes should be caught. It is an issue worthy of studying and thinking over on how to eliminate the thieves from the basic system, stop them from the source, and eliminate them in people's hearts. There are fundamental differences between the socialist system and capitalist system on this issue.

Why must we build a harmonious society? Why is public ownership better than private ownership? Firstly, I need to clarify a problem, that is, the state capitalism and the individual capitalism.

In state capitalism, because all the people in a nation cannot effectively manage the state-owned assets possessed by all people, nor effectively maintain and increase the value of the state-owned assets, they authorise the government and the state under the leadership of the Communist Party of China to exert the ownership right of all the state-owned assets on behalf of

them.

The property law of PRC clearly stipulates that all the state-owned assets possessed by the country shall be exerted by the state council. Thus, China currently is performing state capitalism.

State capitalism is an advanced form of socialism and communism. And it is the only right, feasible organisation form and the only one proven by practice.

Other organisational forms of socialism and communism are fantastic, utopian socialism, and communism. They can only bring disasters, terrors, and evils to mankind. We have experienced them.

The individual capitalism is one led by the Western countries, the core of which is advocating private capital. The individual capitalism has its advantages and disadvantages. It is of significance in overthrowing and replacing the feudal dynasty. However, the wheel of history does not stop here, the science, human beings are making constant development in technology, culture, and civilisation. The serious drawbacks that existed in the society of individual capitalism are more and more obvious, so individual capitalism is bound to be replaced by state capitalism.

33. Strengthen management on government to the public assets of government

Advice on Repairing Corruption of Officials

April 2004

Corruption in official workers not only happens in China, but also happens everywhere in the world. In a socialist country like China, officials should insist on the principle of serving for civilians, but the corruption behaviour works the opposite to basic principle and country law. It's believed that corruption behaviour can be eliminated. However, many corruption cases happening around us are worth our meditation. We need to find the root and destroy it completely, since it causes a negative effect on the image of party and socialism. If we compare socialism to a mansion, corruption is like borers and termites that chew on it and will finally destroy it if we cannot eliminate them in time.

Because corruption is behaviour by an official, it's related to politics. Meanwhile, corruption is also an economic issue, and it's related to economy. Therefore we plan to analyse from the angle of politics and economy in an attempt to find the essence and root of corruption.

Analysis from the political angle:

China is a socialist country in which total assets of all state-owned enterprises belong to civilians. The Communist Party of China represents civilians to manage assets. In other words, the Communist Party of China represents civilians to exercise ownership and management rights. The head office of the Chinese government is located in Beijing, but officials who manage public assets are from the local government branch. The government distributes their rights to its branches. Distribution can be classified into two types: ownership and management rights. Meanwhile, the government uses party discipline, national law, regulations, and system to limit the range for given rights. It's regarded as corruption when officials disobey party discipline, national law, regulations, or system in order to illegally occupy ownership of assets that belong to the public. If officials keep to party discipline, national law, regulations, and system, no matter how much profit they make, it's not corruption. In essence, corruption is behaviour to deny the leadership of government.

Analysis from the economic angle:

When analysing from the economic angle, distribution can be also classified into two types: ownership and management rights. Management rights allow owners to manage production and organise economic actives. For companies, any action for management needs management rights. For factories, raw material purchase, product sale, and payment obtainment need management rights. Management rights can be needed for fulfilling duty as general manager, making profit for

company, or for working as a go-to. In broad sense, any behaviour to receive income on behalf of the government needs management rights. For example, tax income, road maintenance fee, education expense, and fine all need management rights. However, if we consume public assets, it needs ownership. For example, extra bonus, allowance, item transferring, car purchase, house purchase, restaurant expense, and travelling all need ownership. Ownership is needed for fulfilling the duty as chairman to consume cash.

Apart from management rights given to local government and officials, much party discipline, national law, regulations, and system are used to limit the range of ownership. It's regarded as corruption when officials disobey party discipline, national law, regulations, or system in order to illegally occupy ownership of assets that belong to the public. From the economic angle, corruption is a kind of infringement since they use extra ownership beyond the range given by government, to embezzle public assets.

Ownership and management rights sound familiar to people who study economy, but they are not familiar to most civilians since they are seldom talked about in daily life. These concepts will be easy to understand through the following examples.

They are various business beings in our society because of the influence of the reform policy. The simplest one is self-employed entrepreneurs. They open a barbershop or a grocery store to sell living items, clothes, cats, and shoes. People call them small boss. Capital and production tools all belong to them or the family, so they have full ownership. They have rights to manage their own business legally, free from interference, so they have full management rights. All in all, self-employed entrepreneurs have full management rights and ownership of their companies.

A bigger one than self-employed entrepreneurship is private enterprise, which is a bit bigger than self-employed company. Private enterprises have different sizes, such as a small one with only few workers and a big one with hundreds of employees. Here we classify private enterprise into two types:

1. management rights are incorporative with ownership

2. management rights are separate from ownership

That management rights are incorporative with ownership means people who invest in business manage a company directly. In this condition, the chairman usually takes over the position of general manager as a part-time job. Generally speaking, this kind of company does not have branches. It's usually small-sized, since no matter how excellent the chairman is, the employees he/she can manage directly are limited. The employee number usually ranges from ten to twenty. In such a small-sized company, the chairman or director owns assets of the company, so they have ownership. Meanwhile they take part in management, so they also have management rights. That's the incorporation of management rights and ownership. In such companies, financial personnel are usually relatives of the chairman.

With further development, it's possible for the company to be expanded and have its own factories, sales departments, branches, and so on. Besides, branches are usually distributed to different places. Under this condition, it's their choice to take part in management or not. The chairman can distribute rights to employees who are not shareholders but are good at some important skills by putting them in positions like sales manager, plant manager, branch manager, or head office manager. They do not invest in the company and have no ownership, but they have certain management rights allowed by the chairman. That's the separation of management rights and ownership.

In all types of companies, the chairman is likely to give full rights for production, sales, and management due to the trust in employees, but no chairman will give full rights for financial affairs and give absolute freedom to financial workers with no monitoring measures. Besides, no chairman will employ a chief financial officer he/she doesn't trust at all.

These things discussed above are part of basic common sense in modern enterprise management, which is not hard to understand. In the discussion above, it's regarded as corruption when officials invade and occupy ownership of public assets that government represents civilians to exercise. However, what gives chances for corruption to happen over and over again? The answer to that question is associated with understanding for ownership of economic society, which is mainly represented by recruitment right for financial personnel in the company.

In all types of companies including self-employed entrepreneurship, private company, and joint company, the financial personnel are always appointed by the owner of the company directly. The financial personnel are employed to manage, calculate, and sort out the capital of the company. The owner of the company gets a clear idea of financial condition through the financial personnel. Therefore, the financial personnel can be compared to the eyes and hands of the company owner. People who control the financial personnel can control the flowing of capital and know the overall financial condition. How much capital is lost, how much profit is earned, who should pay more, who should pay less, which debt needs to be lagged, which debt needs to be paid at once, when and how company should spend capital, purchase of house and purchase of car—all are operated by the financial personnel.

Control to the financial personnel is equal to control of the whole company. Importance of the financial personnel can be compared with military leadership in war, which determines the success.

With military leadership as strong support at the back, people can do many huge affairs, like overthrowing the government, eclipsing sun and moon, making exploitation, bullying civilians, doing things without rule and restriction. They can keep superior and subordinate in the dark, go opposite to the government, and make the world not different from hell. Military leadership in economic life cannot influence the world directly, but the effect caused is similar.

It's believed that many people have heard one popular thought, 'where there is a policy, there is always a byway to cope with it'. That shows that military leadership is in the control of

government. However, in economic life, military leadership has been out of control of government. People inferring from that thought have full ability to be immune to policy from government since they have strong economic power. The government has to refer people with economic power to put policy into practice, so they have nothing to fear.

It's seen that performing ownership of state-owned assets is really important. The government has enough reason to put it in a place equal to building of military force for more attention paid to management. When we go to the tax bureau to pay tax, we often see the slogan posted on the wall: 'Tax is the pulse of a nation'. It's absolutely true. Apart from tax, all state-owned assets are the pulse of a nation and need a special institute appointed to manage carefully.

However, management of ownership of state-owned assets is ignored in China. Ownership and management rights are distributed to lower branches instead of a special institute managed by the government directly.

The concept about ownership and management rights is not as obvious as traditional military leadership. Only after society production reaches a certain scale and the economy develops to a certain degree will it show up. It doesn't exist in slavery society, feudal society, and even junior phase of capital society. It's a concept of rights and economic relationship between people after the economy is highly developed.

Since our country was transformed from a feudal society into a socialist society and missed the process to get the economy highly developed that happens in a capital society, it's understandable that we do not have a clear idea of concepts based on a highly developed economy.

The analysis is made on a relationship between corruption and economic leadership.

There are two bottom-line conditions for corruption to happen:

1. Corrupt officials have the chance to get capital that belongs to the public.

2. Corrupt officials have a way to prevent their illegal behaviour from being found at once.

Corruption will be unlikely to happen if one of the conditions cannot be met. Therefore, corruption will be prevented on condition that we destroy one of the necessary conditions.

Features of corruption behaviour are concluded as follows:

1. It's confidential behaviour.

2. It's behaviour tightly connected with profit.

3. It's collective behaviour instead of individual behaviour.

Corruption refers to behaviour that aims to occupy public assets. It can be classified into two types:

1. Financial personnel take advantage of their position to occupy public assets.

Generally speaking, it's individual behaviour that is comparatively easy to detect and solve.

2. Official leader takes advantage of his/her position to occupy public assets.

This kind of corruption is abominable and invisible. It's usually a collective behaviour that is deeply hated by civilians. In theory, discussion will focus on this kind of corruption.

In a normal financial system, movement of capital needs to be operated by three persons: leader, financial personnel, and cashier. Without any of them, movement of capital cannot be done. In other words, corruption cannot be done if any of them disagree to cooperate. Therefore, any corruption case of the official leader must be a collective behaviour. Personnel and cashier have guilt of duty dereliction even if they announce they know nothing about it.

Even if the Chinese government has granted accounting law to regulate responsibilities and behaviour of financial personnel, it's still hard to achieve expected justice by using accounting law under current social situation.

1. Financial personnel are alone and helpless. They are just junior employees in the charge of leaders.

2. They need to feed family, get married, and gain status in the company, all of which they need support from leaders. Leaders have top rights for finance, administration, and HR management. Those rights are what leaders deserve and a reflection of the regime. Without those rights, leaders cannot be called leaders, and regime cannot be called regime. Naturally, the fate of financial personnel is determined by leaders.

3. Many leaders employ and promote people they trust as financial personnel. In that way, financial system means nothing but hot air, and conscience will be the unique element to decide how leaders behave.

Measures taken by the government like building anti-corruption bureau, encouraging civilians to report on corruption, and organising a detective group to reveal corruption are all subsequent measures. If criminals give chances easily for others to find the evidence, they are the fools instead of the leaders. Corruption that can be seen by every civilian around is more robbery than corruption. Therefore it's difficult to solve a corruption case for leaders.

In my opinion, it makes more sense to prevent corruption from the angle of basic system, since subsequent measure is never ended. As long as we improve basic system to prevent it, it can be really eliminated completely. In China, what leads to corruption is the drawback existing on the

management of public assets. Capital flowing is necessary for a developing economy, but it also gives chances for a corrupt criminal to occupy flowing capital illegally. Capital flow is necessary for a developing society, but we need to ensure no possible capital flow into the personal pocket in the process. To solve this problem means to solve the corruption issue.

Reasonable capital flow needs support from both entrepreneurs and officials. Management action and rights owned by them promote economic activities happening in society. Civilians give rights to government, and government distributes the rights to local officials to manage capital flow. People compare money to water, and those officials operating economic activities are hard to keep hands dry after touching water-like money. Those officials with wet hands are cases of corruption. Here is a method that can give chances for them to promote the economy but keep them away from water.

Like we discussed before, leaders have to escape from monitoring of financial personnel and cashier if they want to succeed. However, financial personnel are on the weak side in this defence battle. They are alone and helpless, which leads to failure in the fight against corruption.

President Mao used to point out, 'Our principle is to ensure government leading the gun, instead of the gun leading us.' Economic construction is not different from the real battle, and it's a silent battle in the dark. Many colleagues are lost and reduced to criminals with guilt to the public.

What makes them lost? That cash is like thousands of soldiers and endless bullets. They can be used for improving the economy, but they can work the other way to corrupt our officials.

As for capital, the government has to realise it's a coin with two sides. Besides, it's essential to keep capital in strict control. As long as we can make sure the financial personnel comply with government and national laws, corruption can be eliminated completely. Like the discussion made previously, financial personnel are alone and helpless in the face of corruption. Therefore, in order to solve this problem in essence, it's suggested that the government should manage financial institutes independently and set financial personnel of state-owned companies as officials so that they can keep away from the influence of corruption. On condition that financial personnel have enough strength to fight against corruption, this problem can be solved.

Politically, by taking measure, the government can centralise power on finance, which will help strengthen people's democratic dictatorship to protect exercise of government policy from opponent measures.

Economically, by taking measure, government gets feedback from financial institutes around the nation so that they can give instruction on any mistake that will destroy the government's image in public. Therefore, it's necessary to take this measure.

When appointing financial personnel, it's suggested that the government should pay attention to the following points:

1. Independence given to financial personnel cannot influence economic development.

Firstly, financial personnel cannot be restricted by anyone except government force, and especially cannot be restricted by leaders. Only independent work can reflect true financial condition so that the government can take correct measures to improve and adjust the current situation. Only independent work can monitor the leaders' work to ensure there is no corruption. Only independent work can really exercise government policy correctly to ensure that civilians can get the welfare they deserve.

However, independent work doesn't mean that it's allowed to influence normal economic development and doesn't mean that it's allowed for financial personnel to interfere with the action of leaders that are reasonable.

Except the right of leaders to appoint financial personnel, any rights of leaders work as usual. The only thing different is that there are some eyes around leaders for monitoring to ensure legitimacy and rationality of the leaders' work. Any action of leaders to operate finance will be monitored. Meanwhile, innocence and loyalty of leaders will be witnessed by financial personnel. With government's monitoring, leaders will have more motives to work hard legally.

2. Financial personnel need to receive necessary training to master financial acknowledge, understand relevant government policies and regulations, and master basic skills to fight against economic crimes. Finance is professional work, which must be based on enough financial knowledge. Therefore, financial personnel need to be proficient on financial knowledge.

New-generation financial personnel represent government and civilians to monitor the leaders' work. They need to check if any action of leaders complies with party discipline, national law, policy, legal regulations. They have to report to the government if they find anything suspicious. Therefore, they have to be familiar with policies and regulations from the government.

3. Financial personnel need to be relocated periodically.

People compared money to water. Theirs is a popular Chinese saying that flowing water is always keeps fresh and an often operated door can avoid being destroyed by a moth. It's hard to ensure that financial personnel won't be influenced by corrupted leaders around them. Therefore, it's necessary to relocate the financial personnel periodically, and by the way, they can test the performance of previous financial personnel to check authenticity and reliability of their work. By doing that, the government can get feedback from financial work in time to ensure they won't be influenced by corruption.

Financial work is complicated, but the work target is limited, inflexible, and dogmatic. Any financial personnel can do it well as long as they are given some time to get familiar with the local condition of the working place. What they need to do is just to operate data the way they do as usual. Therefore, periodic relocation of financial work is feasible.

From the political angle, building a financial team can help centralise government power and strengthen people's democratic dictatorship so as to prevent corruption from happening in China. Meanwhile, it shows the superiority of socialism and helps gain faith from civilians, which gives strong economic support to the communist government.

From the economic angle, building of financial team protects legal rights of civilians and standardises economic behaviour of state-owned companies and government branches, which paves the way for economic development based on socialism.

In addition, standardised management on state-owned assets maximises the faith from civilians, which enables us to get ahead with our reform strategy. As long as political power, financial power, and military power are in the charge of government, we can have strong support to try any method that is likely to improve our economy.

34. State-owned enterprises can catch up with and surpass the world multinationals

Complete Separation of Management Right and Ownership

April 2004

Now, the operation form of enterprises in China is varied, such as individual enterprise, private enterprise, collective enterprise, state-owned enterprise, joint-venture enterprise, wholly foreign-owned enterprise, joint-stock enterprise, etc. But what enterprises they are, Chinese or foreign, enterprises to the bad or Fortune 500 enterprises, there is one thing in common—to make money. All aim to make money, increase the enterprise's capital, and maintain the value of the capital. Enterprise means hope; that is, starting a business aims to make the enterprise better, more promising, and richer tomorrow. To sum up, all are for making money.

It is known that the survival is for the fittest, for the enterprise in the market economy that only the strong can survive and the weak are necessarily eliminated, which is a ruthless and exact fact. Only recognising this point can the enterprise survive.

Facing the cruel and marble fact, how can the enterprise become strong to remain invincible, grow constantly, and resist all kinds of waves? These are the problems that the enterprise should consider.

All successful businesses have two things in common:

1. The money that the enterprise makes can really be packed into the investor's wallet and handed in to the owner of the enterprise.

This sentence is easy to understand. To the investor and the enterprise's actual owner, the purpose of investment is to make money for self, not for others. Only investors really obtain generous return. The founder of the enterprise has the responsibility to make the enterprise survive. If the investors and founders think greater return will be obtained if they continue to invest, they often invest larger projects with the returns, enlarge production, or expand the operation scope. Conversely, if the investors and founders of the enterprise cannot obtain the return and even suffer loss, they will weigh the pros and cons and adopt corresponding countermeasures. For example:

a. If they think they can gain the return temporarily and make a profit instead of suffering a loss after they change the management strategies and adjust the enterprise, they will carry out internal adjustment within the enterprise.

b. If they think they can endure the temporary defeat of the enterprise and the enterprise shows

benign development and will produce generous returns in the future, they will maintain the status quo.

c. If they think bad management of the enterprise is caused by insufficient investment, such as advertising investment and equipment renewal and the status quo will be changed after continuing to invest, they will often continue to invest.

d. If the owners of the enterprise think the enterprise cannot make profit and market and the external environment have changed, they will often sell the enterprise assets, withdraw the investment as much as possible, and close the enterprise in order to reduce the loss.

2. The enterprise is managed by the person who is the fittest.

As per the analysis in another article, after the enterprise expands gradually and the staff surpasses a certain scope, the owner of the enterprise is not able to directly manage more people so that they can share corporate responsibility and authority with others.

In a popular way, the boss of the enterprise will not directly participate in the actual labour and let the people help them make money, and they just count the money after the enterprise is developed to a certain scale.

This sounds a bit of something for nothing, but you cannot understand in such a way at any cases. The behaviour that the boss takes out their own money to invest is also considered a labour and a kind of advanced mental work. Boss and investor are labourers, just for which China's constitution is modified again and again.

Investment behaviour, on the one hand, can make the boss create thousands in wealth but, on the other hand, can also make the boss suffer loss beyond retrieval. The money that the boss makes under the bullets in the market and unprofitable risks is legitimate income and is protected by the law. Hence, even though the boss does not participate in the operation and management of the enterprise directly, it is understandable that their income is also legal.

Next, we will introduce the relationship between the benign development of enterprise and actual managers after the enterprise's management right and ownership are separated. After the separation, the owner of the enterprise has the right to appoint anyone to help him or replace him to manage the enterprise. This person is the actual operator and manager of the enterprise as well as the owner of the enterprise's management right.

Rationally speaking, not considering other factors such as emotion, politics, trust, etc., only from economic benefit, what kind of person can replace the owner of the enterprise to manage the enterprise? To put it simply, the person who can bring the maximum return and profit can replace the boss to make more money. The person who cannot do well must step aside as a result of relentless market economy, especially ruthless international market economy. In order to survive and become the first, an enterprise should make such a choice.

So what kind of people can create huge economic benefit? What kind of people has the best ability to make money? Such persons are those who have experienced theory and practice. Regardless of race, colour of skin, language, everyone is equal in the market economy, and the fact can speak.

Now, we will analyse the state-owned enterprises from two points above.

Who is the owner of state-owned enterprises? All Chinese people are the owner, and the Chinese Communist Party on behalf of the national people performs the ownership of state-owned enterprises.

Who is the manager of state-owned enterprises? It is our party. The leaders of state-owned enterprises, especially large state-owned enterprises, are led by the party and even appointed directly. We do not hear that the boss of private enterprises, and even the American boss, serves as the head of large state-owned enterprises.

So, it can be said that state-owned enterprise takes the form of integration of management right and ownership, which is similar to the operation and management mode of small private enterprise with about twenty on staff.

It is certain that the existing mode has its inevitable reason.

1. The Communist Party of China, on behalf of the people, to perform ownership and management right, has the right to manage all the state-owned enterprises in any form.

2. To control the ownership and management right of state-owned enterprises in such form also reflects people's power. Directly using administrative means to regulate state-owned enterprises is the product of planned economy.

State-owned enterprises are owned by the state and all the people, and the ownership should be mastered by the people, which are the iron facts and unshakable forever, so the central government must protect and control the ownership of all state-owned assets with every means and absolutely can't let go.

On the other hand, management right refers to the leaders' production labour to operate the enterprise. For the factory, it means buying raw materials, organising production and processing, selling the products and recovering the payments for the goods, which are operative behaviour and the reflection of management right. Management right is embodied in a general manager's duty to help the country and enterprise to make money, workers' behaviour, and consumption of state-owned assets, such as extra bonuses, subsidies, practicality, buying car, house, inviting a person to have a meal and holiday for tourism, etc., and the boss and chairman's duty and spending money.

Therefore, after management right is completely separated from ownership, management right

means the worker's behaviour. However high the position and power are, you are the worker if without ownership and you must act according to the boss's face and rules and regulations. Otherwise, there will be many people to trouble you, which is the mode we need.

However, our party represents the interests of the working people. Most party members are born workers and peasants, rather than bourgeois, so working hard is our strong point. Compared with the big capitalists of those multinationals, operation and management are our weaknesses. Hence, it has some difficulty for the party to operate and manage the enterprises directly. While for those large multinationals, after the ownership is separated from the management right, those big capitalists can make own capital increase gradually and manage the enterprise well without direct involvement in the operation and management of the enterprise, from which we can draw lessons.

So in order to make the state-owned enterprises give the vitality into full play, the author suggests the following adjustments:

1. The ownership of state-owned enterprise is completely separated from management right, the financial institution is specially set up by the central government to treat the financial cashier personnel as state civil servants receiving unified management by the central government without receiving the management of leaders of the enterprise, and they should report the operation status of the enterprise to the higher authorities of the central government to prevent all state-owned assets from damage. The central government shall have the right to transfer the capital of the enterprise at any time and correct the enterprise leaders' wrong economic instructions so as to firmly hold the ownership of the enterprise.

2. The management right of state-owned enterprise is open, as the author points out that the management right is the reflection of a worker who works for the country and enterprise to make money, but can be replaced at any time. Their work is weighed by the performance.

The leadership doing well or badly can be reflected in the financial statement. To say it simply, who operates and manages the enterprise makes money and working for the people is not important, because this is just a form of representation.

The most fundamental factor to determine the nature of enterprise is the money handed in to whom. If the money is handed in to the big capitalists, the enterprise serves for the big capitalists. But if the money is handed in to the people's government, the enterprise serves for socialism. This is the most fundamental decisive factor and the most valuable thing.

Compared with previous modes, the following are benefits in having such a way:

1. The person can devote their talent for the enterprise and people intently.

The leaderships of enterprise will be affected in three factors in the existing mode:

a. The leadership should be held responsible by the superior. This is obvious because they are selected by the superior leadership.

b. The financial management is within his duty. If he makes mistakes as the result of inducement of money, the leadership should resist the temptation of money.

c. It is the leadership's duty to take responsibility for the enterprise.

There is an old saying that a man may not spin and reel at the same time, but our leadership does three things at one time, so they will feel the heavy pressure and difficulty. While after the management right is separated from ownership, the leadership is only responsible for the enterprise. Certainly, the behaviour should be legal. The only standard to weigh the quality of work is how much money the enterprise makes and the benefits for the enterprise, nation, and people. If doing well, he is the hero and will obtain the reputation, status, and money. If he is doing badly and making mistakes, he will step aside and be replaced.

However, the enterprise's finance does not belong to him, so he has no opportunity to illegally seize the money.

The leadership of higher level can transmit administrative order when he violates the rules. But he is not appointed by the superior but from social open recruitment or election, so he devotedly dedicates his talent to the enterprise and people.

2. The central government directly controls the enterprise's finance to strictly supervise the leadership's economic behaviour so that the corruption behaviour can be prevented and the status and image of party is maintained in the eyes of people.

3. The surplus fund is directly transferred to do more things for the nation and people.

4. People's democratic dictatorship can be consolidated and strengthened after the central government really controls national economy.

If the state-owned enterprises can carry out the adjustments above, they can catch up with and even surpass the level of large foreign multinationals in the organisational structure and have the power to compete with them in the international market. Besides, the superiority of socialist system can fully be displayed, and the advantages of various population groups can be mobilised to make them serve for economic construction of socialism.

The root cause for the insufficient vitality of state-owned enterprises is the mutual diversion and interference of management right and ownership, which are hard linked together. Therefore, the fundamental way to solve the state-owned business enterprise's insufficient vitality is the complete separation of management right and ownership, to realise benign development.

35. State-owned enterprises can solve the problems of employment and development

On the Use of Profit of the State-owned Enterprises

April 2004

State-owned enterprises, as the name suggests, are the enterprises that all the people own. These enterprises have always had the problem of insufficient vitality, and even some enterprises are considered by people as baggage because of many problems left over by history, such as triangular debts, too many retired workers, too-heavy enterprise's burden, bad enterprise benefit, etc. However, state-owned enterprises are not a burden but a cornucopia that can create numerous employment opportunities and much wealth.

As the author mentions in other articles, there is no essential difference among state-owned enterprises, private enterprises, and foreign multinationals, all of which aim to make money, increase surplus value, obtain the highest profit at the lowest cost, and keep and increase the value of capital. The differences among them are investors, beneficiary of enterprises, and money to whom. State-owned enterprises give the money to the country, private enterprises give to the boss, and foreign multinational groups give to the capitalist. There is no difference in other aspects, and it also should not have.

There is something in common between how to make the state-owned enterprises full of vitality and how big capitalists increase the wealth.

Firstly we can look at how the big capitalists operate and manage their own enterprises. It is very simple that big capitalists manage the enterprise's wealth macroscopically, not microscopically.

Big capitalists may invest in ten or a hundred or more enterprises, so how do they manage these enterprises? It is very simple that they just need to invest and create these enterprises. Certainly, they are very cautious about the investment. After they determine investment in the industry and think the industry is promising, they will invest. Otherwise they will hold the money to wait for the timing. After the enterprises are created, they will recruit managerial talents to help them manage the enterprise and make the enterprise operate normally. They will not directly be involved in the operation and management of the enterprise and only strictly supervise the finance to make all the money in their wallets. Except for the normal flow capital and staff's wages, the rest all belong to them. Big capitalists only need control the direction of investment and finance to make tens of thousands of people to help them make money, and they will close the enterprises that lose money or have no hope and withdraw the capital to invest in other aspects. This is the basic principle for big capitalists to make money. It seems to be very simple to say it, but it is not easy to do it.

1. How to determine the investment project is not easy for the common people to understand. It needs a smart mind and the eye of a politician, or it will cause huge loss if a wrong investment is made.

2. The person managing the enterprise's finance should have vision, experience, and knowledge. Whether the financial personnel are loyal, will do false accounting, will escape with the money, are corrupt and will betray the company, or have a working ability are a series of complicated problems, which is not easy for everyone to confirm. Any errors may result in huge loss and investment failure.

3. How can incentive mechanism be used to inspire the managers of enterprise to make money? On the one hand, it should prevent them from betraying the company, and on the other hand, it should let them give full play to their enthusiasm, which is really a troubling thing.

So the capitalists should have conspicuous and admirable points to manage dozens of enterprises based on individual ability.

We look at state-owned enterprises again. The author finds that state-owned enterprise has something in common with big capitalists' subordinate enterprises that the owner of the enterprise does not directly manage the enterprise. Why say that?

Big capitalists have ownership of the subordinate company, but they do not directly get involved in the enterprise's operation and management.

Party central committee has ownership of China's state-owned enterprises, but it does not directly get involved in the enterprise's operation and management.

Therefore, the economic relationship and the management idea of two kinds of enterprises are the same.

In theory, the state-owned enterprises can draw lessons from successful big capitalists and large multinationals in management mode. Besides, state-owned enterprises have more advantages than large multinationals.

1. The state-owned business is an economic entity supported by the country. Even if the private enterprise has a greater scale, from the points of economic strength and resources, the advantage can't compare with state-owned enterprise.

2. The credit of state-owned enterprises is much higher than that of other enterprises, which does not need more explanation because state-owned enterprises have the support from the country. The credit is the most important intangible asset in the business.

3. The loyalty of financial personnel in state-owned enterprise can be controlled by the nation. If the country arranges a special institution to manage the finance, the financial personnel's loyalty

can be controlled at the highest level with any administrative means, while the financial personnel's loyalty in other enterprises cannot be ensured through the nation's administrative means.

4. The state-owned enterprises are not invested in by one person, but by a nation and all the people jointly. So compared with those single capitalists, state-owned enterprises have more advantages.

Because the investment model of state-owned enterprises is the same as the capitalists, they can draw the lessons from the successful big capitalists' management concept to serve for our state-owned enterprises when the state-owned enterprises meet difficulties in the process of actual operation.

If we can understand, all the things are not complicated. Making money or boundless money is far beyond the common people and they will not dare to think, but it is little complicated for the investors who have money. The problem is whether we have the courage to want and do.

According to the investment theory of big capitalists and multinationals, the author puts forward the following plan for reference. If the plan can be realised basically under everyone's efforts, state-owned enterprises can theoretically create countless chances of employment and social wealth to move so many ordinary Chinese out of poverty and into riches.

Under the existing condition, where do the new jobs come from?

If the nation sets a new factory and enterprise, it needs a large number of new workers. On the other hand, if an old factory is closed, it is certain that the workers in the old factory will lose the jobs and become laid-off workers, which is simple to understand for everyone.

Therefore, in spite of the bad benefit, bad operating condition, and even loss, the nation still provides subsidies to the large state-owned enterprises to pay for the workers' salary in order to reduce unemployment and social pressure.

The nation's macroeconomic regulation and control mainly refers to the project examination and approval system. When the local governments or enterprises need to invest in new projects, they firstly should write the report and apply to the related department and apply the loan from the bank after the examination and approval.

The author thinks this mode is complicated, passive, and has holes, which is not conducive to investment and employment.

According to the author's points of view,

1. No matter from the economic law or actual problem, the finance department of state-owned enterprises should perform unified management by the central government. The profit created

by the enterprise should be allocated by the representative of the owner of enterprise—the central government. In other words, except for the salary, premium, and capital flow, all the money made by the state-owned enterprises should be allocated by the central government.

2. After obtaining the money, the central government should actively and purposefully set up new enterprise and factory and invest in a new project according to the report of all the enterprises and central macro planning.

3. For those enterprises with loss, the central government should assign a specialist for assessment. If there is no investment value, it should close the enterprise immediately and turn over the remaining assets to the country. Enterprises that suffered long-term loss are not allowed to persist, which is a waste of money of the people and country.

4. The central government should use all means to strictly control the financial leaderships' loyalty to the country because they hold huge capital. If there is fraud, it will cause a huge loss to the party and people.

5. The central government only pays the wage and bonus for local government and leaders of enterprise according to a certain proportion based on the money made for the people. Certainly, it should provide appropriate guidance and help in operation and management for them.

6. The central government hands in the actual operation and management of the enterprise to the local government and leaders of enterprise and law. As long as the business behaviour is lawful, it should not ask anything and interfere and should give them complete management right.

In fact, in simple words, people give the money to the central government, and the central government uses the money to set up better and more profitable enterprises for the people, to truly improve the people's level of life, and close the loss enterprise and non-performing enterprises.

Macroeconomic regulation and control is important, but it is not as direct and quick as direct investment. Government's macroeconomic regulation and control is an indirect management for the capitalist countries that have no ownership of the enterprise and cannot directly invest. In the socialist countries, there is no need for managing state-owned enterprises. The survival of state-owned enterprises is directly controlled by the nation.

Of course, people give the money to the central government, so the central government should pay attention to investment efficiency. But it is normal business to be successful or to fail, and not every investment can be successful. We also cannot require the government to achieve 100 per cent success rate of investment. Eight successful projects in ten can be considered as a basic success. It should summarise the unsuccessful experience, withdraw the remaining money, and continue to invest in other projects. If the investments fail one after another, it needs reflection. To sum up, efficient use of funds to make the capital flow quickly is the best resolution to resolve

China's employment and development.

Where there is need to develop, there are factories to set up. And where there is need to shake off poverty to get rich, there is reasonable investment. The regime should serve for the people and state-owned enterprises can achieve.

Chinese government is not the expert in capital operation; hence a lot of mistakes of low level are made. Capitalist countries, with hundreds of years' experience in capital operation, run better than China. For some reason, they have never thought to do it like this and why they do it like this. China's development mode is seen, so you can know the concept of national capital and problems from another perspective.

36. Active labour, passive labour, and the state-owned enterprises

About 2007

Labours are different from each other. We have to do labour every day and go to work and come back from work, which makes us bustle about every day. But the labours are different in categories, job division, and wages; in addition, we have realised no one studies them as theory, which are active labour and passive labour.

Definition of Active Labour and Passive Labour

The most representative people are the train conductor and the hawkers on the street.

The labour of the train conductor is passive. The labour of the hawkers on the street is active.

The active labour is the one where the fruits of labour have a direct relation to the worker's subjective consciousness.

The passive labour is the one where the fruits of labour don't have a direct relation to the worker's subjective consciousness.

The labour of the train conductor is the most typical passive labour, whose fruits of labour have no direct relation to their subjective consciousness of the work, which mainly means their labour attitude and enthusiasm. No matter if the attitude of the conductor is bad or good, you have to buy the train tickets. Few people will change their decision to take a bus or plane instead of a train because of the bad attitude of the conductor. People often feel happy for their having bought the right ticket. A reasonable person will not be too mean on the rudeness of the conductor.

So the business volume of the ticket conductor is decided by the supply and demand of the market, which has no direct relation to their performance. Their business achievements are not controlled by themselves, so they are called passive labour.

The hawkers on the street are exactly the opposite. Their turnover has a direct relation to their subjective consciousness. We can realise that the reason why the passers-by will buy his things after observing them is their active attitude to do business and initiative to greet customers. All these have caused the trust, interest, purchase desire of the guests, and they will buy their things. If the hawker is vicious, no one will buy his things except for necessity otherwise. So whether the hawker can attract customers, whether he can deal with business and his own work emotion will both affect his turnover. So we call it active labour.

Active Labour, Passive Labour, and the State-owned Enterprises

I remember that in the Cultural Revolution, all of us proposed to cut the tail of capitalism, which means to eliminate the private enterprises and individual labour completely.

Nowadays, in addition to some state-owned monopolies, the other competitive state-owned monopolies are all basically annihilated. What is the reason? That's because most of the workers in the state-owned monopolies are doing the passive work, while the workers of other enterprises are doing active work. Because the owner of the private sector takes the active labour, the whole enterprise is regarded as the active labour.

Human nature is selfish, greedy, lazy, and indolent!

Because of the ugliness and hypocrisy in human nature of the state-owned employees, they can only make a show of authority in the field of state-owned enterprises. They may find them at a loss when they meet with the company of the active labour.

So the private sector cannot be eliminated, and the state-owned enterprises simply cannot do the active labour. Thus, the state capitalism must coexist in state-owned and private enterprises. Neither of them could eliminate nor replace the other.

The existing state-owned enterprises can afford much more disposable funds for secondary distribution and public utilities, such as military, infrastructure, basic scientific research, transfer payments, and so on.

It's necessary to spend the money. The taxpayers will not agree to spend their money on those, but it is suitable for the residual value to do these. With the funding, our country will not be subject to the capitalists, and they can do something of justice, reason, and science, which is also the basic logic and principle of Marxism.

Although Marx said a lot, I think all of it is nonsense. He did not have any practice, and the only valuable thing is that socialist politicians can do something with the residual value of state-owned capital. It is superior to capitalism. That is to say, the state capitalism is the only advantage of the Marxist theory, which is the socialism improved by the later generation. The rest is all fantasy.

However, active labour and passive labour can be transformed with the development of productivity and the improvement of management level. Some active labour can be converted to passive labour.

For example, the Fordist form of labour, which is a pipeline operation, forces workers to complete the work in accordance with established requirements. It is a typical case that converts active labour into passive labour.

The store clerks of McDonald's, KFC, and some other brand stores will be mandatorily asked to entertain customers in accordance with certain standards by their boss. On entering the McDonald's door, you will hear someone saying, 'Welcome, this way, please!' I feel that they

greet in a fake way, but those are the mandatory standards of their boss. Clerks are forced to show initiative, but in fact it is passive.

Therefore, the state capital can march on to the areas of private capital gradually in the case of suitable conditions and eventually oppresses them into a corner. However, it may take a long time, and you need to accumulate a lot of experience on that field. But it can be achieved finally.

37. Harmonious society and capital equality

About 2007

Every individual in this world needs his own living space. It is the purpose of the harmonious society that every individual could have his own freedom to the largest extent and does not have conflict of interest to the largest extent.

How do we realise this? It needs an invisible hand to adjust and control people's demands, desires, and behaviour all the time. What is this hand? That is the absolute and utmost equality and integrity. How do we realise this?

My personal view: the largest inequality is the inequality of capital rather than inequality of human rights. But it is incurable because of the selfishness of humans.

People only know two things; one is money and the other is gun. Maybe it is profitable or has no choice, or human beings will do anything under the lawless situation. People are born to consider their own petty profits instead of others. This is human nature, and humans are all ugly.

How do we make society consisting of ugly people meet the needs of the majority? How do we make the majority live happily but not affect other people's interests?

The society should try its best to provide an equal, reasonable, and good living space for the people who can't make money. There shall be a strong power to restrict the people who are evil, brutal, and powerful. Uproot them when necessary.

Let the world achieve true fairness and justice.

Under the situation of capital inequality, putting forward the equality of human rights is totally a flicker and defraud. The capitalist and the poor are absolutely unequal. The so-called equality of human rights between the capitalist and the poor is like a spiritual heroin and anaesthetic.

How do socialist countries realise the equality of capital?

Here is the simplest example. There are two enterprises: one is private and the other is state-owned. The capitalist and leaders of state-owned enterprises do the same work, and so do the workers, provided that the two enterprises have the same turnover and profits. The boss of a private enterprise pays 80 million a year to himself, and so does the boss of a state-owned enterprise. This yearly salary is a legitimate income for the boss of a private enterprise, which is protected by law. This yearly salary is a corruption for the boss of a state-owned enterprise, which will be punished by law. But there is no difference in nature; they make money from their enterprises.

The corruption of socialist countries is illicit, but it is legal in a capitalist country. Hence, from this perspective, socialist countries are incorruptible thousands of times more than capitalist countries. The capitalist countries guarantee the inequality of capital by law and strong power. The state capitalism system of socialist countries guarantees the inequality of capital by law and strong power.

State capitalism belongs to the state, not the private boss in state capitalism. The bosses of state-owned enterprises are appointed by the state. The income of the boss is state-certified and paid by the state. The bosses of state-owned enterprises do not have the ownership of state-owned assets; they only are advanced wage earners who seem to do the same work as the bosses of private enterprises. However, the most essential things of enterprises are totally different. One has ownership and one does not, one is a boss and one is a worker, one could get the salary he wants and one's salary is paid by the state.

Theoretically, under the state capitalist system, the surplus value of the state-owned enterprises is divided to the state to the largest extent, and the state will divide the money to people in another way, while the bosses of the private enterprises possess the surplus value to the largest extent. This is the most basic theory of Marx.

Marx's so-called exploitation theory is valid under the theory of state capitalism. But it is not invalid in the field the state could not be involved in.

Do the capitalist countries make money in some fields and absolutely not make money in other fields? What fields? This needs asking to economists.

Here is a simple example: government capital could win benefits in the state-monopoly field and industry-monopoly field, such as steel, oil, energy, telecommunication, and so on.

It will be defective to use state capital to run a barbershop. Why? This is my theory: active labour and passive labour.

It will be profitable for the active labour of state capital, and it will be defective for the passive labour of state capital. Therefore, the private enterprises do active labour, and the state-owned enterprises do the passive labour in my theory.

Harmonious society is a social system with scientific management of all devils, heresies, evils, uncultured behaviour, dirtiness, oppression, absurdity, and integrity of human nature and producing by social operation militarily, politically, economically, essentially, and at source.

State capitalism, that is, the capital equality of communism, is the basic material insurance for harmonious society. The harmonious society has to be built upon state capitalism.

38. The deep analysis of the Tao Te Ching and the Diamond Sutra and Confucius-Mencius culture

About 2007

In my opinion, the deepest influence on Chinese culture should be the Tao Te Ching, while the thoughts of Confucius and Mencius are the specific form of the Tao Te Ching in the feudalistic productivity period.

It is said that after Lao Tzu wrote the Tao Te Ching, he travelled around the West and left the Diamond Sutra for India.

It's just a rumour, but the Tao Te Ching covers completely the Diamond Sutra in terms of dominant idea; the Diamond Sutra is a kind of understanding and explanation of the Tao Te Ching. It is one aspect of understanding and explanation. It explains clearly in a certain aspect, making people easier to understand. Frankly speaking, no one in China can really understand the true intentions and thoughts of the author of the Tao Te Ching.

39. Tao Te Ching

About 2007

It is a philosophical classic that focuses on the philosophy of governing a nation and the whole world from a macro point of view. And it can be also said to be a set of methodologies or thinking patterns.

But later I knew that Taoist school regarded it as a classic of Taoism, and they applied the dominant ideology and methodology to their own bodybuilding, which resulted in the famous Taoism kung fu in China—shadowboxing. Shadowboxing is quite familiar to most households in China and enjoys a much greater recognition than the Tao Te Ching.

Referring to Tao Te Ching as part of philosophy is based on the fact that it does provide a set of unique methodologies that can be used not only for a nation, the whole world, or even universe, but also for individuals, enterprises, and most of the existing systems.

The Tao Te Ching is the specific representation of the philosophy of yin and yang with explicit literariness. The philosophy of yin and yang is its dominant ideology.

Lao Tzu integrated the philosophy of yin and yang into the complete set of theories on national navigation. Yet the usefulness of the Tao Te Ching is not just limited to national navigation. It can be used for every single matter around people and all matters in the world. It is the most influential book to Chinese people, especially to their thinking patterns.

And what's more, what was embodied by Confucius does not go beyond the scope of Tao Te Ching. Confucius-Mencius ideology just specified the contributions of the Tao Te Ching to the construction of politics, feudal system, and administration and navigation and made them available in every specific and detailed matter.

Many Chinese scholars suggest that the Tao Te Ching is too profound to comprehend when making some comments on the book. Actually, an interpretation of Tao Te Ching should never be confined to the translation of its literal meanings. Instead, we should try to infer the author's dominant ideology and appreciate his intention of creation.

The author's intention in creating the Tao Te Ching is to illustrate at some length the administration methodology and dominant ideology of a nation as a system, or say, as an autocratic system or a regulable national system. Or to be specific, it is the thinking patterns of administrators of a regulable system (particularly of nations).

What have been proposed in the Tao Te Ching are some specific methods and suggestions, serving as just references that should not be interpreted from the literal meanings. As we can see, the first sentence of the book made clear the stance of the author—everything in the world is in

constant change. Ways of governing a nation or specific resolutions for certain problems that can be expressed via language and writing system are bound to be readjusted and rearranged according to specific social contexts with the passing of time, changing of situations, or the development of productive forces.

As an old Chinese saying goes, we should listen not to what people say but how they say it. The opening remark of the author made clear his intention.

A detailed analysis of the content in the Tao Te Ching will be provided in later sections. Here, the dominant ideology in the Tao Te Ching is to allow the king or leading group to administrate and coordinate within a nation as a system. When coordinating, administrators should let nature take its course and give judicious guidance according to circumstances so as to integrate members of the system into a united force to resolve conflicts for the purpose of reaching the harmonious state within the system where man and nature are of one soul and coexist peacefully in everlasting prosperity.

40. Confucius-Mencius ideology

About 2007

If we say that what's in the Tao Te Ching is all about thinking patterns and conceptualisations, then Confucius-Mencius is mainly about specific cultural products. Since Confucius-Mencius ideology is the embodiment and realisation of the concepts for a nation as a regulable system, it contains mainly the specific proposals put forward according to the there-then situation of productive forces and production relations:

1. The supremacy of imperial power

2. Dominance of the king over his subjects

3. Dominance of the father over his sons

4. Dominance of the husband over his wife

as well as the derived specific methods of each kind of ideology.

We can leave alone the other details for now. Four rules can serve to include all men and women, old and young in the society into a large system.

The kings are born with a mixture of multiple powers such as military, political, and economic power and serve as the administrators of the social system. What's more, Confucius and Mencius pushed the kings into a mythological position where they are not only political administrators, but also sons of nature, dragons, leaders, and managers of people's spiritual world, as well as governors appointed by God to be on his behalf. And many ethical codes have been established to consolidate the dominant status of the kings in political and spiritual ruling and administrating based on that.

Feudal ethical codes represent the formal establishment and confirmation of the holy status of kings in administrating and governing, as well as psychological hints. While officials at different levels under the leadership of the king are just the maintainers and executers of the system with which the king exerts his political power. From a political point of view, the political system can only work within the domain of the national political administrative system and people's political behaviour and cannot govern people's everyday life directly.

The doctrines of Confucius and Mencius also regulate father-son relationship and husband-wife relationship and guide people's daily life into the orbit designed by Confucius and Mencius. Such relationships are maintained and supported by political system and are compulsory.

Besides, Confucius and Mencius also advocated filial piety, strengthened the subordination in

father-son system, and made it more vivid; and the advocating of three obediences and four virtues (specifically, obedience to father before marriage, to husband after marriage, and to son after husband's death; fidelity, physical charm, propriety in speech, and efficiency in needlework) is to strengthen the subordination in husband-wife system.

Therefore, the doctrine of Confucius and Mencius is a rigorous system involving all members of a society and covering all social problems!

41. Diamond Sutra

About 2007

There exist lots of books on Buddhism, yet among them the most well-known one is the Diamond Sutra.

Buddhist sutra includes the Mahayana and the Hinayana. As far as I am concerned, only the Mahayana amounts to the title Buddhist sutra and constitutes the true intention of Buddha since it focuses on holistic research within the psychological domain of the whole of mankind, while the Hinayana just focuses on individuals as research subjects. In comparison, the Hinayana places more emphasis on individual behaviour and ethical cultivation while the Mahayana tends to be influence and work for social system.

In my point of view, Buddhist sutra and the Tao Te Ching depict the same thing, just from two different angles. They resemble each other a lot in terms of the theme conveyed and techniques employed, and Tao Te Ching has relatively more detailed and diversified expressions.

In Buddhist sutra, people with great wisdom are called Buddha, while in the Tao Te Ching, they are called gentlemen. Buddha is wise people, while Taoism is the great wisdom.

One talks about wisdom from the perspective of humans, while the other approaches it from matters. All matters are conducted by humans, so the core of the two turns out to be the same.

In Buddhist sutra, people with wit and wisdom are asked by the Buddha to take saving all living beings as their own responsibilities. And they are required to save all living beings by the roots and take them out of misery, not just solve a certain problem temporarily.

As the productive force changes, people have increasingly improved productive force. As a result, people's individual awareness range and social demands as well as the conflicts and misery they are faced with keep changing all the time. That is to say, when the productive force is very poor, what people want most might be something to eat and some clothes to put on; as the productive force improves, people begin to demand personal rights and development space, hence the emergence of the slogans and concepts of democracy and human rights.

With the development of productive force and improvement of people's awareness, people have needs at much higher levels. Just as what's in Maslow's hierarchy of social needs, the society also develops gradually from lower levels to higher levels.

With the improvement of people's living standard, apart from food and clothes and certain material foundation, people have more needs in self-actualisation and need to love and to be loved. The harmonious society is exactly an embodiment of self-actualisation in loving and being loved. To love and be loved is actually a kind of social security at a higher level from its essence

and profound significance.

Therefore, what Buddha needs to do is in constant change with the development of productive force. Yet the purpose is the same—to save all living beings by the roots and take them out of misery instead of to solve the problems temporarily. That is what Buddha needs to do and what is conveyed in the Diamond Sutra.

42. Comments on the Tao Te Ching and Diamond Sutra

About 2007

The author of the two books is an incredibly great person. He wrote the two books not for all human beings, but for those with outstanding intelligence and amazing comprehension abilities.

According to the current situation, the two books are probably only for 20 per cent of the entirety of mankind—the leaders and the powerful ones. People with average intelligence find it impossible to understand the true intention of the author. They only misunderstand what the author said, following the literal meanings, or they cannot understand it at all. The act of looking at the two books as something for fun, without any idea of the content is, if not acceptable, at least not disastrous compared to the acts of distorting the original intention of the author and randomly speculating, which may hurt others and themselves as well.

The administrators of a society, ranging from the king of a nation, the leader of a government, president of a country, to the authority of enterprises, often have certain control (more or less) over people's destinies and living environment. Their decisions determine the fate of the country, and the Tao Te Ching is written for them. They are the elites of the society, the administrators, the leaders, and the organisers. What does the Tao Te Ching tell us anyway? It is required that the elites of a society, the administrative level, decision-making authorities should be strategic and virtuous. They should govern the country, the local place, as well as the enterprises with strategies and virtues. Here, Tao and Te are not what we mean morality in daily discussion.

The two are totally different concepts. Tao in Tao Te Ching refers to the correct, rational, and perfect ways of handling things. Te refers to the accomplishments and performances established following the Tao—the ways. Tao appearing in what was referred to as an enlightened and great king and an unprincipled dim-witted ruler means exactly the same as ways and strategies. That is to say, this king had the appropriate ways of governing a country or he knew nothing about it at all.

With appropriate ways and strategies, a nation, local places, and enterprises can enjoy a full-scale reconstruction and an everlasting prosperity. They will stand as long as the earth, the moon, and the sun exist.

Without appropriate ways and strategies, a nation will decline and be destructed, plunging people into misery and sufferings and enterprises into bankruptcy with the evil forces in charge.

Governing a country, the same as managing an enterprise, requires ways and strategies. Then where do ways and strategies come from? They are from accurate, objective, and rational methodology. They are derived from the insights into the genuine and objective regularities of the country one governs and the enterprise one manages after scientific, attentive, thorough, and objective research and study based on the prior knowledge and the current situation. They

are the accurate conclusions drawn and the best projects put forward.

This requires profound knowledge and extremely amazing organisational and thinking capabilities so as to have incredible courage and incisiveness, to accurately locate his or her own position and direction, to draw conclusions that lead to the most appropriate objectives and methods, and finally, to lead people out of dangers and towards brightness and relief.

43. The essence of the Tao Te Ching lies in its implications for political authorities to rule with the characteristics of water

About 2007

The essence of the Tao Te Ching lies in its implications for political authorities to rule with the characteristics of water. They should behave like water—willing to be at the disposal of people and to be modest, to nurse and nourish all living beings, to make them prosper with wisdom, to gather strong power (the power of being the source of everything) beneath the soft appearance, to enjoy an everlasting prosperity and nourishment of everything—so that they can accumulate abundant virtues and wealth to make these benefit for thousands of generations to follow.

To gain prosperity, it is required that either the leader of a country, the minister, the governor of a province, the mayor of a city, the director of a factory, the county commissioner, or the boss of an enterprise should love his country, local place, enterprise, and factory wholeheartedly and attentively try to solve various problems existing in the world, the country, the province, the city, the factory, and the enterprise, to lead them towards prosperity and brightness and to enable people within these places to live and work in peace and contentment and to enjoy individual and national wealth. Such is how a country, a local place, an enterprise, and a factory can gain management strategies and moral support to make the country, the public, and the boss wealthy and the employees content. Such are merits and virtues!

The love and Tao mentioned here do not necessarily refer to the act of punishing the evil. To lay off extra employees in order to save all other employees' interests is also a kind of goodness, merit, and virtue.

44. An accurate understanding of the decadent ideas in Lao-Tzu theory and some suggestions for improvement

About 2007

There exist many decadent ideas in the Tao Te Ching, yet it should be noticed that any ideology was produced and put into use within a certain social context and background. Lao Tzu theory was put forward in accordance with the there-then social environment and productive force to the end of adjusting relations among people in society.

When was the book being written? It was during the Spring and Autumn Period and the Warring States Period when China was transforming from a slave society to a feudal society and battles were everywhere, plunging people into endless misery and sufferings. Seeing all these, Lao Tzu had a mixture of feelings. What people were in desperate need of back then was peace and security, and to lead a quiet life was the most luxurious wish and biggest consumption for them.

Therefore, the Tao Te Ching put forward by Lao Tzu is actually for political authorities. Lao Tzu held that they should conquer the unyielding with the yielding to reach the end of the whole world as one big family and that man and nature are of one soul. They should also nurse and nourish all their subjects like sunshine and raindrops do with the earth so that they can build a harmonious society.

In yin-yang theory, yang means destruction, abolishment, forging ahead, innovation, and fighting, while yin denotes cultivation, breeding, protection, reservation, contentment, and adjustment.

With the progress of different developmental stages, the progress of productive force to a certain level and social conflicts being accumulated to a certain degree, external forces will make it necessary and urgent to reform, and the society then needs revolution. If the authorities cannot see the true social conflicts or timely adjust relations among people, they are likely to resort to the means of war to resolve social conflicts. What belongs to yang in terms of wars include the idea that either you die or I die, being completely done with someone or something, to remove someone or something by roots, and to solve the key issue for the solution of the whole problem. So in summary, the means of yang are aggression and destruction. It is just like urban reconstruction. Without knocking down and destructing old houses, how can new buildings be built? The act of knocking down old houses requires the most extreme means of yang. Then new houses are built and residents move in, becoming host and hostess to manage the houses and make them prosper. That’s the process where yin works.

The current phenomenon of women in the dominant position while men are in a much weaker position can be traced back to the most deeply rooted, most ancient, and original theory of Tao Te Ching.

Lao Tzu advocated the employment of yin at an extreme end to solve all problems. However, as time passed, things changed gradually. The ancient Arcadian scenario in which men ploughed and women weaved faded away. Gone are the days when men undertook farming while women did all the housework and brought meals to their husbands day after day and year after year. It was the Western guns that woke up Chinese people from their fantasies and pulled them from their sleepy state back to reality. What is reality? It is competition—endless, fierce, and damaging competition.

Competition exists everywhere, among humans, among different areas and countries. It does not belong to Chinese only, and it is not what humans want in nature; instead, it is an obligatory course posed on us by external forces.

Those left behind are bound to be bullied, and a typical example was the burning down of Yuanmingyuan. To avoid lagging behind, we must compete. To be number 2 or number 3 assures no security. We need to compete to be number 1.

The balance of yin and yang as well as the harmony of celestial and terrestrial forces for the growth of all living things are present in the ancient Chinese philosophy of yin and yang, which emphasises both feminine and masculine. Therefore, the traditional Chinese culture needs to add and reconcile with the Western masculine culture, playing their roles in a scientific and correct way.

The current mode of social operation in China is a combination of Eastern and Western cultures, and the organic product of communist culture and democratic culture. They play their strong points in different areas to serve for the people and their fundamental interests, effectively and scientifically promoting social stability, social justice, scientific national management, as well as stable and rapid economic development.

45. Truth that can be expressed with language never lasts long

About 2007

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 1

‘Tao’ and ‘Te’ are different from ‘morality’ which is usually mentioned by us.

Tao Te Ching is not a book talking about ethics.

‘Tao’ refers to the way of dealing with problems. More precisely speaking, Tao refers to the most correct, cleverest, and humane way of dealing with problems with the lowest social cost and the best effect. Tao means an ultimate method of considering all big and small problems through careful consideration.

‘Te’ refers to the social benefits produced by the implementation and promotion of Tao, which is the best way.

‘Tao’ and ‘Te’ mean achieving good social benefits through implementing the most correct method, which is the moral praised highly by Lao Tzu. Certainly, morality in an ethical sense is included in it, but the moral is not limited to morality in an ethical sense.

It is the first chapter of Tao Te Ching and also general introduction.

Lao Tzu emphasised, ‘Tao refers to truth and a changing thing. It cannot stick to convention. Otherwise, Tao does not exist.’

From the method and strategy of governing a country, national policies, policies, laws, and regulations developed by gentlemen (namely, state leader and leading group) are determined by practical situations. In case the situation changes, the thinking mode, key work, and contradiction nature of the gentleman have to change at any time. Otherwise, a disaster will be triggered by wrong national policies.

It is very simple to understand. At the beginning of revolution and during the period of Japanese rampage, the gentleman had to highlight the contradiction with enemies and the opposition party and made his countrymen see the direction of revolution clearly and harbour a hatred for treason, invasion, oppression, flinch, and so on.

All in all, the purpose of hatred was to establish a new people’s regime. Therefore, hatred was Tao at that time because it could stimulate people’s desire of destruction and slaughter. In that case, the people’s regime could be established only through destroying and slaughtering enemies.

However, domestic contradiction turned into the contradiction of economic construction after the revolution achieved success and aggression in all directions was pacified. No one can make money by means of hatred. It is Tao of economy and money. Tao of hatred should be ended. Tao does not exist if people knowing nothing about Tao of economy take the helm of the state, issue confused orders, and wage a war randomly. Without Tao, a country will disappear and fall apart like Eastern Europe. China would have ended in the same way if Deng Xiaoping did not make vigorous efforts to turn the situation and separated from them.

Economic construction is Tao of business, which has no colour and class. What a gentleman should do is to combine Tao of business with national conditions and perfectly blend them instead of concentrating on economic construction with outdated struggle and Tao of hatred. In this case, Tao does not exist.

At present, Tao refers to perfectly combining Tao of business with national conditions with great wisdom, which not only consolidates the regime, but also develops the economy. Through looking at the card in his hand and others' hands, a gentleman enhances advantages, avoids disadvantages, achieves success one way or another, uses both hard and soft tactics, and achieves the goal to ensure healthy development in all aspects.

The Tao Te Ching is theory specially aimed at system. The state is a system that Tao Te Ching pays most attention to because whether a monarch has Tao is directly related to the life, death, happiness, and health of the people.

The state is a system. In particular, a despotic state is a system that can be regulated and controlled to the fullest. China's feudal dynasty is a national system of autocratic centralisation according to the systematic thought of Lao Tzu.

Socialism and communism are a national system of new generation and an autocratic national system that can be fully regulated and controlled. In such a national system, whether the gentleman (namely, state leader and leading group), the key figure in the control centre of the system, has the way of running the state is directly related to the operating condition and safety of the whole system.

If controlled well, a national system can fully release the potential of each individual in society. Each individual can fully display his value and get the maximum return. In the meanwhile, our country can be far ahead of other countries.

When driven, a car runs faster than creatures with two legs. Cars are the method of a system state while two legs belong to the way of a democratic state.

If controlled badly, contradictions will be constantly aggravated. Full of chaos everywhere, a state will fall apart, collapse, and disappear in the end.

Apart from the way of running a state, all kinds of knowledge are Tao. They are Tao of various

subjects. For various subjects, Tao refers to all kinds of professional knowledge and technology.

As long as they are truth, they can be called Tao.

When heaven and earth took shape in the beginning, there was no life in the world except for inorganic substances. Life started to appear after the existence of Tao.

Regarding the origin of life, I think that biological evolutionism cannot be explained, and creationism is reasonable, scientific, and logical. Growing out of nothing, creatures are not an evolutionary process, but a very complicated biochemical process.

Inorganic substances are stones, water, air, sunshine, thunder and lightning, and wind. How these inorganic substances in nature form life naturally without the help of any intelligence of science and technology is a problem that any top technology cannot answer and simulate so far.

Any life, even the simplest life—virus—is a thing that is infinitely superior to, more advanced and complicated than our computers. It is impossible for a life to take shape spontaneously under natural conditions.

Therefore, Tao appears before any life. Similarly, technology and drawings appear before machines. With the existence of technology and drawings, there are machines that can operate. Those technology and drawings are Tao.

Technology and knowledge are intangible. Therefore, Tao is characterised by 'invisibility'.

However, all life has its objective law—Tao. Therefore, Tao exists in everything. Every life has Tao. As a result, Tao usually exists.

For people, knowledge is infinite. No scientist is sure about when people can master all knowledge in the universe. Therefore, Tao is very abstruse.

46. If all people know why beautiful things become beautiful, ugliness will be stopped

About 2007

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 2

Comment:

The people around the world, i.e., common people, have a very narrow dimension of consciousness, and they often consider things with a one-sided view that they consider is right.

1. For instance, a teacup can be round when observed from above but square when seen from the front. Moreover, it might present another shape when observed from the side face. However, a teacup will always be a teacup.

This can also be illustrated in the literary quotation of blind men and an elephant. Common people often consider things with extremely one-sided view. Therefore, they might be cheated easily.

However, wise men will consider problems from multiple and different angles in a comprehensive way.

2. Some Net friends do not understand my articles and viewpoints and have objections against my perspectives. In fact, they just consider things with one-sided view rather than look at the problems from other angles.

3. For another example, many democrats criticise Marx on the Internet.

However, they never censure that Marx never acted as capitalist and worker, Marx would never be a capitalist, or Marx did not write *Das Kapital*. *Das Kapital* is just a tale of a tub and fairy tale without practice.

Their thoughts are restricted to a certain range, quite stubborn, just like other people. Actually there is no right or wrong. It is just either comprehensive or one-sided.

All thoughts, belief in capitalism, belief in socialism, or even belief in feudalism, are comprehensive or one-sided, rather than right or wrong. The envoys of devils just utilise such narrow-mindedness of people's thoughts to trigger narrow-mindedness and to realise their own purposes.

All thoughts, belief in capitalism, belief in socialism, or even belief in feudalism, consider that

they are beautiful and virtuous. In fact, they just do not know what true beauty is and what true virtuousness is. In order to judge whether a concrete object is beautiful and virtuous or ugly and evil, we must know this object in a comprehensive way and understand it from multiple angles and aspects.

Beauty and virtuousness mentioned by Lao-Tzu:

If a thing can benefit both parties, then it can be called beauty.

If a thing can benefit the opposite side but does not benefit you or even damages your interest slightly, it can be called virtuousness.

Lao Tzu considered that the world lacked beautiful and virtuous things, because people in the world just looked at problems by starting from their own perspectives and interests. They do not know how to do good and beautiful works.

The beauty and virtuousness mentioned by Lao Tzu do not mean minor beauty and minor virtuousness. When you give a beggar 10 yuan or 100 yuan, this is just minor virtuousness rather than virtuousness mentioned by Lao Tzu or true virtuousness.

What is minor beauty? When you sell a watermelon to passers-by who are thirsty, this is called beauty. You can earn money and passers-by can quench their thirst. But this is just minor beauty rather than virtuousness and beauty mentioned by Lao Tzu.

Common people around the world just don't know how to achieve and realise true beauty and virtuousness. True beauty and virtuousness are national policies, laws, regulations, and moral principles gained under comprehensive consideration and great wisdom in an authoritarian regime system.

Maybe common people around the world consider that this has nothing to do with them, and it is just the matter of the country. Therefore, they will not consider or care about it, unless their interests are affected. This is the reason why common people around the world don't know how to achieve and realise true beauty and virtuousness.

Democratic system aims to make the ignorant people that don't know how to achieve and realise true beauty and virtuousness control the national destiny. This is the fatal weakness of countries adopting democratic system.

Therefore, I consider that Lao Tzu's authoritarian regime system is a system more advanced than democratic system.

Experts guide common people and elites lead ignorant people. This is advanced productivity.

What does it mean to achieve and realise true beauty and virtuousness in the current situations

of our country? When the state-owned capital of China can profit substantially and the money gained can be invested in places with underdeveloped economy requiring a large amount of input from the government, such as rural areas, education, social security, national defence, science and technology, etc., this means to achieve and realise true beauty and virtuousness.

How can state-owned capital profit? Isn't this the system of capitalism to create surplus value to the largest extent? Frankly speaking, it is state capitalism, law of the jungle, and economic rule.

To know true beauty and virtuousness means to know Tao. As for the fundamental reason why ugly things happen in the world, most people don't know true beauty and virtuousness or Tao.

The fundamental reason for all ugly problems in China, such as corruption, gap between the rich and the poor, urban-rural gap, etc., is that state-owned capital management goes out of control. Strictly speaking, ownership management of state-owned capital is out of control. Anyone that has power can occupy state-owned capital. Why? The ownership of state-owned capital is transferred to lower levels in China, and Chinese people are confused in this issue.

True beauty and virtuousness can be achieved when Chinese people realise this point and are able to flexibly use state-owned capital. Thus state-owned capital will become a treasure bowl benefiting the people.

If common people can absolutely master the methods and skills of applying state-owned capital, problems like corruption, gap between the rich and the poor, and urban-rural gap will be solved effectively. This is the true connotation of the sentence 'If all common people around the world know why beautiful things become beautiful, ugly things will be stopped; if all common people around the world know why virtuous things become virtuous, evil things will be stopped.'

47. During national governance, common people should be encouraged to pursue material benefits rather than ideology

About 2007

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 3

Explanation:

Common people should be encouraged to reduce desires and to care about whether they have enough to eat only. Common people should be made to care about their health only rather than realise lofty ideals. Common people should not intrigue against each other and possess great political ideals. Those demagogic schemers should be prevented from acting recklessly and occupying the market. If the above scenes can be realised, the sages will be able to govern all countries well without great political behaviour.

Comment:

This sentence is somewhat reasonable to some extent.

In Lao Tzu's country with authoritarian system, there is a social division of labour among people in the country. In any country of our practical life, there is a division of labour among people. People can be doctors, cops, teachers, workers, or self-employed labourers. There are numerous industries. In a micro sense, with a professional skill, people are able to make a living in the society.

However, a human being is not an isolated individual. In a macro sense, various industries are associated. The development level of scientists decides the productivity and consumption level of the whole society. The development level of medical science decides the average lifetime of people.

Politics has a direct and important relation with all other industries. Politics decides war or peace as well as the productive relation of the society. Besides, politics can decide laws, morality, principles, etc. Politics is actually a complex and professional job.

In Lao Tzu's authoritarian system, noble persons can adjust social relations between men as well as the social order through rational judgment, analysis, and political power after fully understanding true and comprehensive knowledge mastered by human beings, so as to realise social harmony and express the maximum potential of every person.

Noble persons mentioned by Lao Tzu are individual persons or leading groups mastering political power. They will always start from state interests, national interests, and people's interests. They

come from common people, but they have better intelligence and political ability than common people. They are elites of common people but will always serve the people. They can represent people's interests, which are interests of people throughout the country, maximum interests, long-term interests, and fundamental interests.

Politics is professional and society is huge and complicated. In an optimal society, ideal society, calm society, stable society, and harmonious society, division of labour and trust must exist among people. All people are engaged in their own careers and interests, but they will not produce severe conflicts with other people. They are able to keep harmony with others. Such society is needed by us.

The basic condition for Lao Tzu's authoritarian system society is that people or groups called noble persons should come from common people, be superior to common people, and can absolutely represent people's fundamental interests. Three-representative thought is the basic condition of becoming people or groups called noble persons in the mind of Lao Tzu.

Without people or groups called noble persons, the basic condition of Lao Tzu's authoritarian system cannot be met. Therefore, the system will collapse soon.

If the authoritarian system managed by noble persons mentioned by Lao Tzu exists in the society, and the system is mastered by noble persons that can represent people's interests, then the following sentences of Lao Tzu will be tenable: 'Common people should be encouraged to reduce desires and to care about whether they have enough to eat only. Common people should be made to care about their health only, rather than realise lofty ideals. Common people should not intrigue against each other and possess great political ideals. Those demagogic schemers should be prevented from acting recklessly and occupying the market. If the above scenes can be realised, the sages will be able to govern all countries well without great political behaviour.'

In a country led by sages or noble persons, people do not need to care about politics or excessively participate in politics. Common people just need to worry about their houses, cars, money, children, and wives.

Actually, common people have two purposes to participate in politics.

1. Fun and curiosity

They want to confirm that they are safe. When common people go into politics, they just do for others, and they will never be elected. They have no such ability. They tell themselves that they can master their fate, but this is no more than self-consolation. They just cheat themselves. Actually they can change nothing.

2. Helplessness

Because of the ugliness in human nature, no one can be trusted. Therefore, they have to go into

politics by themselves and do for others. They just want to confirm that they are not betrayed and thrown into the garbage can.

Therefore, it will be a kind of happiness, beauty, and win-win result if people can elect or produce a collective and leader that will truly represent their interests and make them manage politics. Capable elites willing to make a contribution to the country should obtain the sovereign power of governing the country. It is also a sense of security and happiness if people have a person truly representing their interests to master administrative power and to maintain their interests.

Democratic politics means to let people acquire a tiny sense of security and vanity by spending a lot of time, energy, and money. This is a kind of pain and waste.

48. The universe is merciless and treats every living creature without dignity

About 2007

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 5

Explanation:

The universe is merciless and treats every living creatures like domestic animals; the deity is merciless, he treats the people like domestic animals. The space between heaven and earth is like a big bellows. There is empty between heaven and earth and couldn't force people to do anything. With the natural changes, everything happens naturally. People may feel days without changes if they talk too much, so please let people feel it themselves.

Comment:

These two sentences are the most extraordinary expression from Lao Tzu and the most worth thinking expression.

'Merciless' is the thought of governed by law of Lao Tzu. Mercy is the aim, and merciless is the way; only through mercilessness can we realise mercy. Heaven and earth is mercy, expresses it through tangible natural Tao; the deity is mercy, expresses it through perfect social rules.

The universe is merciless and treated every living creatures like domestic animals

Heaven and earth run by their own rules, the natural Tao, and nature won't pay preference to any creatures. Violating the rules of nature or ignoring it will definitely get punishment without any excuse to avoid.

What are the natural rules? Law of the jungle, survival of the fittest, the weak are doomed to die, and the winner takes all.

This is the real mercilessness. This is the truth. The Chinese learn from Lao Tzu, listen to Lao Tzu, but distorted it a lot and became a culture of sissiness. But the quintessential part of Lao Tzu is falsified by fools.

Even a word like 'chu dog' dare not to direct translation—a typical black sheep, a good-for-nothing.

The deity is merciless; he treated the people like domestic animals.

Netizens think this sentence is the thought of governed by law from Lao Tzu; it required the saint manage the country by law instead of emotion. I think it is partly correct.

People regulated the law and changed it day to day; a different law made by different people may have a different purpose in favour of a different person. Just like the laws of property, it aroused great discussion even before it comes out. Actually it isn't an argument, it is power-changing; every force tends to gain interest from it. So law may not govern the country successfully.

This book is the Tao Te Ching; the thoughts of Lao Tzu are not governed by law but by Tao. Only the law derived from Tao can govern the country. There is law if there isn't Tao, but the law without Tao can only exaggerate the social conflict, involving people in pains and injustice, and cannot accomplish the purpose of administering a country.

Tao is objectives, justice, overall, and proved by the practice. It can weigh the advantages and the disadvantages and fully consider every corner of the society. It is also considered the natural justice and human instinct, and after a deep consideration through elites' analysis, it can lead people to the right way.

Tao is the purest, absolute, without any affection, and only overall analysis and consideration. A result comes from reasonable sense. So Tao is merciless, unbothered by affection. It's all-or-none thinking. For everything that happens in a normal person, especially a big event, we need perfect analysis.

It's quite easy—those who refuse to admit that it's the state-owned enterprises that ruin the whole enterprises, those who refuse to admit that Karl Marx has no certification to write *Das Kapital*, and those who don't admit that the Islamic Wahhab is heresy, the people without Tao, they are blind, unable to see the essence of issues and they are incapable of managing the country's event and even don't have the ability to talk about our country.

The space between heaven and earth is like a big bellows. There is emptiness between heaven and earth and couldn't force people to do anything. With the yin-yang running, everything happens naturally.

Lao Tzu takes the heaven and earth like the bellows; it seems to have nothing between them, but once the time runs, everything is derived from it.

Heaven and earth can be taken as the social environment and social system in society, which contains law, ethical, moral, economic, and political relationships. The most outstanding social system never forces people to do this or that. It makes people naturally do things by their instinct. The country and the society never force people and bewilder people.

In nature, there is no stipulated rule between heaven and earth that the lion can only capture a special goat, but the lion will strive to catch it. Why? Because it's hungry. It responds to the call of nature. The fear of death drives the lion to chase the goat with great effort. This makes the

yin-yang operate. The lion satisfies its need and accomplishes its mission as well.

It's the same thing in human society that superior social relation and social environment shall not be obliged to force people to work hard, for people pushed by their lusts would work hard naturally. Capital is just such an amazing thing that fully meets the requirements and natures of natural law, heavenly Tao.

According to the Marxist theory, capitalists use capital to set up businesses and plants, which are called investment. And then they entrust professional managers and workers to work for them, manufacture products that shall be sold at the market, exclude workers' salary, the spending of raw material, premises, management, power, etc., and the rest of the wealth is surplus value; also you can say capital income or capital gains.

When the business reaches at a certain level, capitalists can take all the investment back, reinvest in a new company, or spend the wealth at their own will. This is what we call natural circulation as in the problem of chicken and egg, also the circulation of heavenly Tao.

The function of the capitalist in the whole procedure is dominating, operating, planning, and bearing risks. Capitalists have no means to compel workers to work for them or not. Labour force is the goods that are equally exchanged by capitalists at the labour market—service commodity. This is a fair deal and exchange based on mutual willingness that if the worker feels the salary is low, then he can choose another job, and if capitalists think the worker is lazy, then they can dismiss him at any time. It's the same thing anyway buying labour force that can benefit more, and this is the rule.

However, in order to keep a secure job and wage, workers have to bust their asses to satisfy their bosses. No need to threaten them and induce them. Fair deal is natural law. It is not a threat but a legal right for capitalists to fire any worker in a legal scope; moreover, this is the most basic right and also heavenly Tao, for a large loss would occur if the occupations arranged by capitalists do not match the workers. The plant invested by capitalists is a machine that serves for capitalists, and it is a legal machine. Capitalists surely have the right to arrange men whom they think are proper to run their capital.

The main reason that the capitalist countries boost rapidly is that their production relations and social environment accord with heavenly Tao, endless heavenly Tao, and heavenly Tao of governing by non-interference.

All the capitalists have to do is to push their business onto the track and then naturally the wealth would flow into their pockets. No need to compel and threaten.

This is a system as well, namely, capitalists' business is a system. The management theory is just the system culture. The basic principle of a business is just the system management. The system turns harmony, and then the wealth comes in continually, while if the system breaks down, then it is the bankruptcy.

A capitalist country is a country comprised of small systems one by one. But at the macroscopic level, their country is disordered, scattered, and individually independent, which has no complete system; in other words, it has a loose system.

A socialist country is to fund a big and wholesome system. Whether it is big or small, one principle shall be conformed to—heavenly Tao.

The reason I think that our egalitarianism failed is no Tao and, completely on the contrary to heavenly Tao and humanity, taking the social rulemaking and social environment construction for granted.

Chairman Mao led campaigns like the Great Leap Forward, egalitarianism, smelting steel, cutting the tail of capitalism, abolitionist movement, and so forth. This old man's intention was that he hoped to dominate people's minds to control capital, holding the idea that the people would work for the country if their minds can be governed, and inspiring the people's labour enthusiasm if examples can be set.

The result was severe that complaints were everywhere, hens gone and the eggs cracked, and everything broke down. Non-Tao, humanity was killed and ignored, therefore this was the result.

Reach for success, then knowledge has to be studied and humanity is the largest knowledge and also the biggest environment. Meeting the humanity can profit from others' conflict, gain wealth continually, get anything fluently; otherwise, the moment that capital is gone is the time to die.

Some people always boast of the prosperity in Mao's period. What was the situation then? The revolution just succeeded with the largest collective capital, which included political capital, economic capital, and national capital.

It's just like someone picks up a hundred thousand RMB and plans to start a little noodle restaurant. He is astonished seeing his business runs hardly after a few months.

When our country has to restructure the enterprises, it is the time when only two thousand RMB remains out of the hundred thousand RMB. The capital is thoroughly eaten, spent by staff of the state-owned company, and still they are sleeping soundly. How hilarious.

For a nation system, the most effective management is capitalism, national capitalism. The capitalism principle is just on the contrary to Mao's theory.

Chairman Mao wants to control capital by dominating minds—bitterly beaten. Capitalism is dominating minds by using capital—truth.

National capitalism is dominating people's mind by using state-owned capital. This is the Tao of how a country is supposed to be ruled.

49. More and more people are engaged in the study of knowledge according to Tao; the things needing to be done are fewer and fewer

About 2007

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 48

Explanation:

More and more people are engaged in learning. According to Tao, daily things will be reduced day after day. Finally, there's nothing to do. It seems like there is nothing to do; however, it reaches the point that nothing can't be done. The one supported by the whole world is the one who never forced others to do something. If one forces the world to do something for him, he will not get the support of the world.

Comment:

In fact, the Tao Te Ching repeatedly talks about the truth throughout, which is the characteristic of Tao.

From the very beginning, there must be a very busy time for those rulers with the concept of Tao, who need to make a thorough analysis and study of the social problems and finally determine the direction of social development and the best social structure and mode. Then by changing the political relations and economic relations between people, the society will achieve a state of expectation, which is a long-term stability, from the internal, that is, a so-called harmonious state. Under this state, everyone is able to enjoy his greatest enthusiasm for production, to maximise the labour productivity, and all aspects of the interests can be fully protected.

In the future, after this state is fully achieved, there is no need for government to force people to do or not to do the certain things. Instead, all people know is what they can do, what they can't do, and how to do it to achieve their own ideals.

Everything is done in a natural situation. The police do what the police should do, the judge does what the judge should do, the workers do what the workers should do, and the capitalists make money from the capital. In fact, the reason for the contradiction between workers and capitalists, cops and robbers is that they have different moral standards, thinking, views, manners, and lifestyle, and they can't understand or communicate with each other.

If every worker once had been a capitalist and then declined, becoming an impoverished worker, he would never hate the exploitation from capitalists and no longer believe in the concept of exploitation; that is because the theory of exploitation is the biggest lie that Marx put forward to arouse the workers to seize political power. Just as I have said, most politicians have to lie to

survive, and Marx is no exception.

In accordance with the view of Lao Tzu, the society with Tao is a harmonious society. Today, our country tries to build a harmonious society, in fact, that is to practice the concept of Tao. The harmonious society is indeed to be constructed, rather than relying on democracy, freedom, obscurantism to form spontaneously. Additionally, a harmonious society must be an autocratic society, because each ignorant person and every mortal are fighting to get the maximum interests for their own so that no one will have leisure time to care about other people's business. Therefore, democracy cannot build a harmonious society. The harmonious society is the patent product of the autocratic society.

Harmonious society is maintained by the power, also is in the power of deterrence. People have to sacrifice some of their own personal interests, making their behaviour not in conflict with the interests of other people and keeping it harmonious. Without the power of deterrence and in a lawless society, each person isn't a person; instead, each person is an animal.

If we can achieve the goal of a harmonious society under the premise of Tao, the autocratic society maintained by the power is what Lao Tzu called the inaction society.

The harmonious society is a social system that is customised for the autocratic society. Also, since the ugly side of human nature cannot be restrained without tyranny, it is the social state that can only be realised in the autocratic society.

However, human nature is the cradle of social creativity, which means when the society suppresses the ugly side of the human nature, it cannot dampen the productivity. So treating the ugly side of human nature should like treating farms not only to grow fast, but also it cannot blindly run and bite.

Capitalist society is the relations of animals in nature. Each American has a gun, and they protect their own interests and safety.

The feudal society of Confucius and Mencius is like a prison. Everyone is restrained by political and family relations layer upon layer; no one is able to move, which completely obliterates humanity. Now the relationship between men and women in a family still relies entirely on a feudal ideology and relations of Confucius and Mencius to maintain and turns humanity into restriction, constraint, distortion with the help of government.

Family relationship in the feudal society of Confucius and Mencius is completely based on male dominance and 'the father is the father, the son is the son'. Women are accessories of men, so women in feudal society have rights to manage family property and housekeeping; safeguarding heritage for women in feudal society is completely under the control of men, so it is perfectly reasonable.

But nowadays in society, men and women are equal and they have no subordinate relationship,

so the women are not eligible for housekeeping. The woman is just a pretext today, which is a means of sex extortion to men for women and a social psychology and phenomenon of complete distortion.

Since the equality of the sexes, the subordinate relationship does not exist, and the property should go Dutch. The law should be explicitly supported that the default property of husband and wife is independent. Property relations during the marriage, rather than the default common property, should be consulted by couples.

At this point, the Western civilisation completely eliminates disputes and completely independent. It is the truth, but also the root cause of the development of productive forces.

A harmonious society should fundamentally eliminate the root that causes social contradictions first. Anything that can bring about social contradictions should be extinct before it happens. By elimination, rather than man-made contradictions, the government earns a profit without working for it. Charging lawyer fee and lawsuit fee is shameless.

A harmonious society is to create an authoritative environment, like a fence with a pasture and an artificial fish pond. In this environment, the relationship between the government and the people should be harmonious and smooth; so is the relationship between people. Law, morality, rule, and system are disharmonious relations, which make the society in conflict.

The default independence of marital property is a harmonious moral and legal relationship. Today, marital default property is the morality and law that cause trouble.

Abandoning children with congenital disability is a harmonious moral and law relationship. Treating them is the moral and law relationship which makes evil and trouble.

Unified management of state-owned assets by the state council is a harmonious moral and law relationship. Giving the ownership of state-owned assets to the local people's congress and even the factory director is a relationship of moral and law to make evil and trouble. It is the source of great disorder.

Of course, if the ownership of state-owned capital can really play the most efficiency role, used by the government standing for the most fundamental interests of the people, namely, for the people, then Chinese society is a real harmonious society.

The basic principle of the Marxist doctrine is to benefit the people with the state capital.

In view of the fact that Marx and Chairman Mao has never been a capitalist, and they do not understand the operation of the capital, they think it is the state-owned enterprise that benefits the people, or that it is the work of the people that benefits the people. This is the greatest tragedy of communism and is the reason for the biggest failure.

50. Paths and methods are variable

About 2007

‘Tao’ means the channel for people to move from one place to another, and people can go to place B from place A.

‘Tao’ in the Tao Te Ching means feasible methods and paths for people to transfer their current living state to another ideal and reasonable one efficiently, rapidly, and specifically, and it takes overall pattern and interests of all people into account with the least contradictions and least social resources consumed yet with maximum effects so that it conforms to human nature completely and it can be achieved by people.

‘Tao’ in the Tao Te Ching means the paths for countries and all humans to embark on.

However, Tao can mean healthcare of one person, known as a path of healthcare, and methods of healthcare. Development of one enterprise can be known as developing the path of the enterprise.

Business has business paths, kingdom has ruling paths, husband and wife have paths to follow; paths are existent in the world, and people have their own paths.

The author thought the Tao Te Ching means the path of ruling one country originally in content and its other meanings are extended ones.

Truth can be known, but it may not be the well-known truth. As mentioned above, the author thought human nature is the developing path of the society and country; and knowledge level of people, technology level, and social development are determined by people’s cognition of themselves and nature as well as developing level of productivity. According to a specific situation of current stage, specific policies and methods can be made to adjust relations of people.

So paths will be changed with the changes of specific situation and paths are not constant. And paths cannot be described specifically with language and words. As policies and methods are under constant changes, the ones that can be expressed with language and words are not permanent ones. Perhaps, policies and methods can be completely abolished dozens of years later.

A path is just like our road filled with twists and turns. When people reach one stage, they will know the best scheme for the next stage. So path cannot be expressed with language, and path is not constant.

Tao just means methods that people think of so that Tao is invisible. As it is just a kind of method,

thought, and concept but not a visible thing and it is changed with the changes of time, path is very subtle.

However, policies and legal regulations are visible as they can be put into practice and produce huge effects on the specific life of people. So path can be regarded to be existent under its specific implementation and people can sense the path of executors via policies and legal regulations of executors.

Policies and legal regulations, as concepts of execution, can be regarded as representatives of visibility and invisibility. They are just two different aspects of one thing: external reflection form of Tao and dominant thought of Tao.

So the two are from the same source, but they have their different names: one known as policies and the other known as concepts. The two are changed constantly according to different situations. This is the source of all beautiful things.

51. Further comment on ensuring people know what beauty is, to stop the hideous

About 2007

If all people of the world know the reasons, methods, principles, and sources for beautiful things to be beautiful, the hideous will be stopped.

If all people of the world know the reasons, excuses, methods, paths, and principles for kind things to be kind, unkind things of the world will be stopped.

The existence of the hideous and unkind things in the world is just attributed to the problem that people do not how to achieve kindness or beauty in the true sense.

The things for people to achieve supreme kindness and beauty are known as Tao. It means to find true and mutually beneficial best method for coexistence and co-development of things after comprehensively understanding human nature and all things of human occurrence.

In fact, all contradictions of human society are concerned with distribution of interests. Contradictions of any form, scale, and level are caused by conflicts of interest, from a world war to quarrel of a couple. If we analyse surface phenomena of things with psychoanalytic method, the thing left will be conflicts of interest.

The so-called kindness and beauty mean mutually beneficial and win-win effects and a pattern to maintain and admit interests of each aspect.

What is beauty? I thought beauty and kindness in true meaning are existent based on the following conditions:

1. When personal rights and property rights of the two parties are fully respected and protected

2. When the freedom of the two parties of contradictions are fully carried forward and satisfied, but not to be forced absolutely, and such freedom should be the one at the inner heart of people, without any unwilling or compromising parts in any meaning

3. When the two parties can achieve mutual benefits and win-win effects and the things that can be obtained by each other are known as beauty, including spiritual and material satisfaction

4. When one party does not obtain specific interests but creates conditions for the other party to get interests, such a situation is known as kindness.

The things that can meet all above conditions are known as true kindness and beauty at the inner

heart of people.

However, in actual life, kindness and beauty are instruments and measures taken for covering their own benefits under most circumstances, and such things are false kindness, social engagement, and the ones trying to satisfy one's vanity when one cannot really afford to do so. Essentially, they are real transactions and unclad business relations.

In addition, kindness and beauty also have a meaning of another level: the ones which take various measures to prevent occurrence of the hideous are also known as beauty, and removal and punishment of the hideous are known as kindness.

In actual life, if we give certain special power and high status for one person but do not effectively supervise or prevent power, a lot of things are caused in China like scandals, escapes of corrupt officials outside, gambling abroad, crash of BMW into people, etc. Systemically speaking, it means the failure of system control, or the system fails to effectively control its components.

Of course, the mentality of Chinese people to resist against monitoring and prevention originates from a tradition of Chinese feudal society: 'a man being used cannot be suspended while a suspected man cannot be used', a typical thought of rule by man.

52. Lying and the subconscious

About 2007

People can communicate using languages, but the main purpose of language is not expressing feelings, but lying.

Why do I say it? There are some implications.

It is the subconscious, not consciousness, that controls human behaviour and mind, and the consciousness is just a disguised form of the subconscious.

Some of the subconscious doesn't contradict rationality, and it can directly enter into the consciousness, but a lot of the subconscious conflicts with rationality, after processing and disguising, entering into the consciousness to provide impetus for human behaviour.

It's something Freud called libido, which can directly control the human endocrine systems, and it's subject to the subconscious rather than consciousness.

When people want to do something under consciousness but against the subconscious, the latter will hinder the supply of energy to undermine the thing.

There is a Chinese saying 'Lazy donkeys piss or shit frequently when driving the millstone' (the same meaning as 'Idle folks lack no excuses'). Donkeys do not want to work, but they are forced to do so. Under the control of the subconscious, the nervous system will make trouble for work, that is, to piss or shit. And this feeling really exists, no fake.

Freud used the subconscious to explain a slip of the tongue or pen and dreaming; in fact, all human behaviour can be explained by the subconscious. It's just like sort one thing out and you'll sort out all the rest, not complicated at all.

Knowing the relations of interaction among the human subconscious, control system, consciousness, nervous system, as well as the control system of humans, we can easily explain human behaviour and fully understand human behaviour and consciousness and the subconscious from the inside to the outside. Through observing people's outward manifestations, such as facial expression, tone of voice, behaviour or demeanour, mental outlook, and all kinds of emotions, we can make an actual and accurate speculation of people's inner world and true intentions and have an insight into human lives.

Language is just an expression of human consciousness, or is just a misleading tool full of lies. It can be no representative of the subconscious. And humans' true nature and real purpose lie in the subconscious. Only when the language is consistent with the subconscious, and other presentations on behalf of the subconscious are in line with each other can we believe that

language is no lie for the time being.

Otherwise, there will be something that we don't know about but has a significant impact on the event. What we don't understand or grasp may blind us, and we are likely to misjudge others' real intentions. The polygraph training for agents, in fact, is a process of changing their subconscious by psychological suggestion.

Hitler had a famous saying, 'A lie repeated ten thousand times can be truth', which is consistent with the theory of psychoanalysis—because constantly repeating something to someone equals psychological suggestion.

53. All Chinese legal citizens should have the ownership of state-owned assets

About 2007

State-owned assets are also known as assets of ownership by the whole of the people.

What does 'the whole of the people' mean? That means all Chinese people are the 1.3 billion Chinese people.

State-owned assets should be the assets that 1.3 billion Chinese people jointly own, only then can these be called state-owned or wholly people-owned.

Whether the people working in foreign-funded enterprise belong to national people or not, whether people in retail belong to national people or not, whether people in private enterprise belong to national people or not, all of them are national people who should have ownership of all state-owned assets. This is socialism, legitimate truth, and justice.

Our ownership does not mean we have the ability to exercise this sacred power. Because the legal right we have is only 13 billionth of a $10 million factory, everyone should have the ownership of only 7 cents. That is, 1.3 billion people divide up $10 million; each person has a small part.

So individuals cannot exercise ownership of the factory. Similarly, all employees of the factory should have 7 cents of the ownership, so they can't be entitled to exercise ownership of the state-owned enterprises.

So who can be entitled to exercise ownership of the state-owned enterprises? The people who represent the interests of 1.3 billion Chinese people could be entitled to exercise ownership of state-owned enterprises. Only the central government led by Communist parties can represent the fundamental interests of the 1.3 billion Chinese people. Even local governments do not have this power. Local government can only represent the local people but cannot represent the 1.3 billion Chinese people. Therefore, the local government has no right to exercise ownership of state-owned enterprises.

Local governments have no ownership, and employees of state-owned enterprises should not have the ownership of state-owned enterprises. The people who are secretly against this power could plunder the fundamental interests of the country's 13 million people. Whether corrupt officials or employees want to carve up the state-owned enterprises is to plunder the property of all Chinese people.

But the Chinese people, from the common people to the government officials, could not

understand the power they have and the role the central government should play. That is why state-owned enterprises have no owner. That is because the national consciousness is weak, neglected, and absurd.

Initial stages for reform and opening up, the majority of Chinese consider the staff in state-owned enterprise deserve to possess its ownership. The state-owned enterprises owned by the people who hold power not only harm the interests of the state, but also harm the interests of the 1.3 billion Chinese people. Minority people embezzle state-owned enterprises, which results in misappropriation of property of all Chinese people. It is absolutely intolerable. No matter if officials or employees, no one has the right to privately sell state-owned assets and turn public property into private property.

To sell state-owned assets privately without authorisation of the central government is illegal, infringement, and theft. State-owned assets can be managed by a central government, used for repair of bridges and roads, development of education, national defence, labour, and social security, and the ultimate beneficiaries are the 1.3 billion Chinese people. State-owned assets fall into the pockets of individuals, just good for a few spoiled people, but no advantage for 1.3 billion Chinese people.

Therefore, I appeal to the 1.3 billion Chinese people's conscience that protection of state-owned assets is to protect your own assets. Any people, for any reason, misappropriating state assets are criminals, including the employees of state-owned enterprises.

The fundamental rights of Chinese people have not been properly maintained at present, in the condition that these are trampled by others; this is not wrong, but on how to protect their most precious right, different people make out different prescriptions.

1. Mainstream economists believe that the state-owned enterprises need privatisation and to find a true master.

2. Among bourgeois democratic innovationists, they propose a multiparty rule as the best way to safeguard their fundamental rights.

3. Of course, there are conservatives to maintain the Communist Party. They think first of all to maintain the leadership of the Communist Party, on this basis, to make appropriate reforms to safeguard the people's interests and national interests.

China is in the most chaotic thinking period since its founding.

I believe that these theories of China are not all errors, and all of them take a part for the whole, just grabbing one aspect but not grasping the essence of the problem.

What is the fundamental reason for Chinese people's fundamental rights to have been violated?

Currently, communists cannot make good use of the communist theory. At first, they use false thought, thinking that communism is egalitarianism and commune populaire. After experiencing setbacks, instead of the capitalist economic theory to build the nation—MBO—they used the feudal separatist social resources management.

Communism is the advanced theory like a precious gharry, but communists don't know how to use it well, so they use it to carry dung. People with blood and life change to the socialist state system, a precious gharry. In China, use it to carry dung and bash it with a hammer, because no one really knows communism and the people who really understand communism haven't let it run.

What are the basic rights of the Chinese people? The socialist system is different from the capitalist system. The fundamental rights and concept are also different.

I think that the largest national ownership rights by people are holding all state-owned assets at present.

Currently, the typical capitalist roader is MBO; they take the reason of equalitarianism failure to crazily slander the state capital, wanting to completely transform it, dig out the final socialism building block for China to finally turn into capitalism so they can be satisfied.

On the other hand, the Communist Party conservatives holding national executive powers but knowing nothing about the economy let the capitalist roaders dig up the final block of socialism, the cornerstone of socialism. But they are helpless, even worse, in collusion with capitalist roaders' concerted efforts of digging socialist foundation and the sweat of the people.

These are the severe violations and disregard for the basic rights of the people. It is the truth of people becoming untouchables.

I have to wake the common people up, to keep the cornerstone of people's basic interests. Down with the capitalist roaders, clean up the scum of the party, and safeguard the people's interests. But now the central government has done it, MBO has been halted, and meanwhile, the garbage in the party has gradually been cleared. So the state is out of the morass.

Now if you ask all the Chinese people, 'Do the people who pick up litter and the street vendors of China have the ownership of state-owned enterprises?' I estimate that 90 per cent of the people would say no; there is another 10 per cent of the people who would think I was crazy. How serious is the ignorance of Chinese people? They are confused what their greatest rights are.

People often say that Chinese people are not united; in fact, every Chinese person has a certain capital at birth.

The problem is that because the Chinese people are not united, this right is infringed by power. State capital assigned to each person is actually a great fortune. Why do we not have any sense?

Because the capital present with the form of national investment cannot be free to split. In principle, we can only get dividends but cannot be allowed to withdraw capital.

What is a dividend? That is in the case of all state-owned enterprises' profit; each of us has the right to benefit.

But the state-owned enterprises have been violated and lost money before, so there are no dividends for an unprofitable firm—not merely without dividends but also needing to repay a debt.

For these years, the state established the SASAC, improving efficiency of state-owned enterprises, to make state-owned enterprises have a certain profit. The central government took money contributions from Western development, exempting agricultural tax, which freed the tuition and books for farmers who have difficulties to go to school. This is the implementation of people's ownership. Although far from our goals, this is a good start.

State-owned enterprises and capitalist enterprise are essentially different; the most essential difference is that capitalists consume a large amount of surplus value. However, the residual value of state-owned enterprises is entirely back to the people.

Why did state-owned enterprises fail in early days of new China? That was because we did not have clear property rights. What is the proper ownership of state-owned enterprises? Look at the two types of errors of understanding on ownership.

1. State-owned enterprises belong to the nation, not me.

The idea is simple: literally understand 'state-owned'. State-owned, of course, belongs to the nation, not our home.

2. The state-owned enterprises belong to all workers of the factory.

This idea also has a theoretical basis. Workers are masters of the country. Right of the state belongs to the people, and the company's highest authority is the congress of workers and staff. As long as the employee congress passed, we can deal with the assets of state-owned enterprises.

The correct assets ownership is to get the average division of a factory into 13 million parts, with each Chinese person having an ownership. In this sense, unless the 1.3 billion people agree with a resolution at the same time, it would take effect. In practice, this is impossible.

Therefore, we need a special organisation that must be fully able to represent the common interests of the 1.3 billion Chinese people, 1.3 billion people to put their ownership entrusted to the organisation. This organisation will be able to exercise the legitimate ownership of the state-owned enterprises. Looking at the whole world, only the Chinese Communist Party has the

qualification to take on this important mission.

54. Public capital constitutes the foundation of people's life

About 2007

Public ownership, co-ownership, ownership by the whole of the people, and state ownership, which appear different in names and concepts, highly resemble each other. However, I think public capital is most appropriate, compared to other terms.

1. Public ownership

As a concept of application, 'public' is relative to 'private', referring to public goods rather than private ownership. 'Foundation of people's life' relates to the use of public capital, and its user is also the beneficiary, but not everyone is required to use it. For instance, everyone has the right to take a bus, whereas a car owner will be probably reluctant to use it despite enjoying such a right, since they believe that taking a bus means lower social status, unable to meet their needs.

2. Co-ownership

As a concept of possession, co-ownership highlights joint ownership. 'Foundation of people's life' is not intended for possession but for use, and besides, possession of public capital is an illegal and corrupt behaviour that turns public property into private property.

3. Ownership by the whole of the people

Ownership by the whole of the people is also a concept of possession. In actual operations, however, ownership by the whole of the people tends to be transformed into local ownership, ownership by state-owned enterprises, or ownership by employees of state-owned enterprises. This is the fundamental reason for the collapse of the state-owned enterprises caused by employees. Employees of state-owned enterprises are so shameless to privatise the assets owned by the whole of the people, resulting in the collapse of state-owned enterprises.

4. State-owned ownership

There is a difference between public ownership and state ownership. In principle, since the state is only a principal, everyone who needs to make use of the assets owned by the whole people must seek approval from 1.3 billion Chinese people; otherwise, they will be deemed to have performed infringement behaviour or the behaviour of illegal possession. As a matter of fact, the whole of the people can neither manage nor operate such assets. From a macro perspective, the most realistic way is to empower the central government that can represent the fundamental interest of 1.3 billion Chinese people to exercise the right of ownership. In a strict sense, public ownership does not stand for state ownership. Only when the state can represent the fundamental interest of 1.3 billion Chinese people can public ownership be replaced by state ownership.

In other words, when the state cannot represent the fundamental interest of 1.3 billion Chinese on the condition of widespread corruption, unrestrained gambling, absconding, and unfair clauses, the state's disposal of public assets is illegal. The government, which causes the loss of its people's money for whatever reason, whether intentionally or unintentionally, is unqualified to manage the property for the people.

Undoubtedly, experience can be accumulated little by little. While learning something new at the beginning, all people need to pay some price, but it is worth noticing that different concepts should be clearly defined.

55. People's life is a capital operation

About 2007

Investment begins as soon as a child is born, or rather, before the child is born. Husband's request for wife's preparation for pregnancy can be seen as a kind of investment, since they are clear that they will spend a great deal in raising a child in the future. However, majority of parents are pleased to make such investment, and many couples feel anxious because they cannot make such investment (without a child) immediately.

The child, who is of vital importance to a normal family, is more than a kind of investment. The child can give rise to three benefits:

1. Retaining the affection between spouses—Many couples decide not to get divorced for children's sake.

2. Rearing children as a support in old age—Chinese moral and ethical views argue that rearing children as a support in old age is a most traditional and reliable approach to solving living problems in their twilight years.

3. Inheriting family property—For the poor, there may be little property to be inherited, whereas for the proprietary class and middle class, the child will be surely the only heir, or rather, the son is undoubtedly the only heir.

In addition, from the national and social perspective, childbearing is a process contributing not only to a larger population, but also to a higher number of social resources.

To a certain degree, social development has a need for population stability as well as workforce increase. Besides, population stability and workforce increase are the indispensable elements and assurances for the development of social productive forces.

No matter how developed a society is and how high the quality of life is, the continuous decrease in total population will be bound to result in a severe crisis or even national subjugation and genocide when reaching a certain degree.

Therefore, for a country, childbearing is a kind of necessary investment.

Children are supported by others from their birth to their growth into adults who can live independently. They need others' financial help in respect of basic necessities, education, skill trainings, medical treatment, and security assurance. Instead of making contributions or creating economic income, they require the investment from others.

In this stage, the state is responsible for environmental investment and the nine-year compulsory

education, with parents for all other expenditures, mainly survival-oriented investment. As a matter of fact, in our life, environment is a kind of important investment as well. The environments described here refer to ecological and social environments.

1. Ecological environment is the natural living environment highlighting the indices like air pollution, noise, soil, and water quality.

2. Social environment is the manmade living environment emphasising the indices like social security, road traffic, social civilisation, public facilities, labour security, employment environment, and medical insurance.

Social environment investment is a concept completely different in socialist countries and capitalist countries.

In capitalist countries, tax revenue from the people is the only source of the government's income. Thus, investment and spending of the government is also the investment and spending of the people. It is understandable that the government short of money levies taxes to deal with official affairs.

In socialist countries, the government's income is not only constituted by tax revenue, but also by a large proportion of state-owned capital gains. Thus, governments of socialist countries can do many things that governments of capitalist countries cannot do, and for these governments, the major task is to make environmental investment.

Environmental investment is of crucial importance to the common people, because they live a life in social environment. Just like the fish living in water, people will have entirely different fates when living in different water. This point is easy to understand.

The social environment of the socialist country has been mentioned in 'How Socialist Countries Carry Forward Their Superiority in Socialist System'.

Public capital is required to build an environment essential to the common people from an overall perspective. Educational environment, employment environment, and secure environment have been described above.

I. Infrastructure Construction

Infrastructure construction cannot only transform our environment, including living environment, but also provide convenience for people living near the infrastructures. Land appreciation can create various benefits for local people.

1. If the infrastructures near your houses such as subway, station, wharf, and road are put into practice, your house will be sure to appreciate immediately, i.e., your assets will appreciate immediately.

2. Large numbers of people become rich overnight because of demolition. If infrastructures are built in front of their houses, they will be allocated with several apartments when the country requisitions local land.

3. Because of national investment and construction, many places that were wastelands in the past have been turned into downtowns, which have attracted more visitors and travelling merchants. As a result of this, local people will be provided with more job opportunities and get a higher income.

Why do parents spend a great deal in rearing their children, providing a life of high quality for them, hiring a private teacher for them, and sending them abroad for further education? The reason is that they hope their children have a promising future and find an ideal job.

There will be more job opportunities and chances of earning money in a favourable environment, which is the environment resource that can never be bought. This is also a part of national investment benefits as well.

You will never find a satisfying job despite being well-educated and highly capable if the employment and business environments fail to be built in the absence of national investment. A significantly positive result will be achieved by national environmental investment, as opposed to the lack of national environment investment. It can be said that national environmental investment plays a crucial role. Ordinary people usually fail to discover this point.

Thus, in socialist countries, the investment in children is categorised into two types: (1) parents' investment, and (2) national and environmental investment.

Environmental and national investment plays a decisive role. Thus, investment is a most crucial element, which is the largest capital for the people.

II. Fundamental Science and Technology Studies

Many fundamental science and technology studies need tremendous investment, which will be unable to create economic returns for a long period of time. Nevertheless, such studies play a decisive role in national security, national economy, and people's livelihood. All these require not only enormous investment to be made, but also national investment to play its role.

III. Safe Investment

Safety refers to national defence security, public security, etc. National defence security requires huge national investment, which represents national strength.

Public security is always of vital importance to the common people. People who have encountered public security problems can perceive its importance more deeply.

China performs well in respect of public security, which is closely associated with the socialist system. This is also an example for the public capital investment in a secure environment. The secure environment today is completely reliant on the infinite security assurance that public capital provides.

Mexico is an extreme example, spending $200 million on national defence every year, while the income of drug dealers is $2 billion every year. From the perspective of military expenses, Mexico's national army is overwhelmed by drug dealers' private army, as a result of which, Mexico is controlled by drug dealers on the whole.

Their presidents cannot find a way out, because the gap between $200 million and $2 billion results from their political system, ideology, values, and external environment. The United States, a bad neighbour and role model, has created a huge drug market for Mexico.

The fundamental reason is that Mexico lacks state-owned capital that can help to fight against the demon. This has reflected the hypocrisy, foulness, evilness, weakness, and ugliness of democracy.

The prerequisite for 'everyone is equal' is the equality in respect of public capital rather than in terms of human right. The most famous slogan of capitalism is 'All men are created equal.'

I have mentioned that men are not created equal, and 'All men are created equal' is only a capitalist slogan. Seemingly, people are spiritually equal. As a matter of fact, in the society with private ownership, equality cannot be achieved in a real sense because of the inequality in respect of means of production and means of livelihood, namely, capital inequality.

To achieve equality in a real sense, capital equality must be ensured. The whole of the people in possession of public capital will be granted corresponding dividends, which turn out to be the most fundamental assurance for equality. No matter whether you are poor or rich, healthy or sick, or tall or short, everyone competes against each other with the support of capital from their birth.

All the contents above have proved the importance and irreplaceable role of public capital, which proves to be the foundation of people's life.

56. The biggest problem for the poor in the world is that they don't know what their most fundamental interests are

5 April 2015

What are the most fundamental interests for the poor? And how can they be maintained? Human beings have not recognised the question yet.

The most fundamental interests are not only for the poor, but also for the rich, which is for all the people. While human beings have never realised it, this is the biggest problem for human beings.

This issue is the top-level design of the most fundamental interests and the most basic fairness and justice for mankind. There are some essential requirements for this top-level design.

1. Safe environment

No matter what race, what nationality, what faith, and no matter where we are at any time, the citizens should enjoy the government's security assurance not to be slaughtered, not to be murdered, not to be discriminated against, and not to be abused. Meanwhile, property rights and personal safety should be fully protected. And everyone is equal, and everyone should get the same and fair protection.

2. Material environment of living

No matter what race, what nationality, what faith, and no matter where we are at any time, the citizens should equally enjoy social public products offered by the state. No matter how much this protection is, it may be less in underdeveloped countries, while more in developed countries. However, in a country, such security is essential, and everyone is equal, which is the basic material insurance.

3. Development environment

No matter what race, what nationality, what faith, and no matter where we are, we are supposed to have the opportunity to equally get the social resources, make a contribution to the society, create wealth for ourselves and for society; moreover, we can show talents, realise our value as well as the ideal fairness.

If human beings can really practice the above things, then we are able to live in a country where we want to reside. But actually, an overwhelming majority of countries cannot achieve this, especially the poor countries, just because the whole world and human beings never realise the concept of top-level design. Perhaps the development of human society has not yet developed to such an advanced degree. But I think this is the idea and concept that should be owned from the

beginning of civilisation, which is a fundamental concept. What's more, from ancient to modern times, many ideologists and philosophers have been struggling for such a favourable world.

What I am talking about is, what is a politician?

The purpose of politicians is to reconcile and balance the interest between various factions and groups by social management.

Politicians may have to reach a certain social management goal, but they determine the policy mainly based on acceptance level of people's existing ideology. And when most people's ideology cannot reach a certain level of cognition, a lot of things cannot be done, even cannot be said for fear that there would be political unrest. And the ideologists and philosophers should lead the society to engage in the social top-level design.

Some of the specific issues include

1. Security assurance

It contains personal safety and property safety.

2. Equality and justice

Without being discriminated against, being abused, being intimated, being threatened, being oppressed, and being persecuted, violation of justice or those who did things against others must be punished, without any escaping from the crime, as well as no evasion, compromising, and exception.

3. Education

Free compulsory education

4. Employment

The government should provide free vocational training and entrepreneurial environment, as well as supporting and occupational guidance.

5. Social security

To provide the minimum healthcare and ageing social security as much as possible for all the people

6. National defence security

7. Infrastructure construction

8. Fundamental scientific and technological research

9. And other projects

The above are the most fundamental matters that should be provided by a normal state and society. In fact, every country has and practices them, but restricted by the social system, not every country can achieve the idealised level and demands.

Every country has some of the above fundamental social public products and basically has legislated. But it is two aspects between what is legal and what the real is. For example, Mexico prohibits drugs, but the drug dealers dare to fight against government troops. Moreover, each country voices against corruption at a legal level, but corruption is rampant in almost every country. The above requirements that I said are not a verbal promise. The fundamental security that I required is what the ordinary people can see and get and should be better and better, which can be achieved perfectly.

For instance, in the Western society, some of the above things can be satisfied with education and social security. But the security assurance as well as fairness and justice, employment supporting, and other aspects is far from enough.

When talking about security and assurance, the lowest requirement is that one would not be robbed, raped, killed by shooting, abducted, and be in traffic at any road regardless of day and night. There are a few cities that can achieve such a requirement in the whole world, whether in developed countries or in underdeveloped countries. That is to say, Western countries are far from the requirements in terms of security.

To my point of view, if a country can try its best to achieve some of the above requirements, it can be seen as a society with a normal development; otherwise, it is a society with problems. I think that the satisfaction degree of the above conditions determines the state and society serving for whom.

If the above conditions are met with the lowest limit, it means meeting the minimum operational requirements, providing minimum security assurance, the compulsory fairness and justice, and the minimum educational level, and so on. Bluntly, I think it is like a country where people are treated as beasts, and it is enough to meet the minimum survival requirements or let people work. And if the society is in order, just don’t trouble me. If it is in trouble, the authorities can also find a reason to make an excuse.

If only relying on taxes to raise money and then practicing the above matters, it will be regarded as a burden. The more you do, the more you spend. And the more you do, the less money you have, as well as the more you get tired.

While if you have the money firstly, then consider how to spend it, it will not be the burden, but a benefaction. Therefore, the key to the problem is that we should get the money at first.

With the money, the people to be served will not be disliked and avoided as beasts, or be regarded as a burden and debt. And the people are the real masters who have the dignity.

After the public ownership of land, the government collected not only the taxes, but also the land occupancy charge and rent. Moreover, with the appreciation of land, there is much more money. Therefore, ownership by the state is in the best interest of the people, which is the fundamental difference in whether you want to be a beast or a master.

What's more, the products from the land, such as oil, gold, diamond, mineral products, and so on, belong in the best interest of the people, which is also the fundamental difference in whether to be a beast or a master for people.

This is God's wealth, which should be shared by the people. However, it was robbed by the capitalists, landlords, and the kings. Therefore, people should take them back. Once being not regarded as a beast, you will be the master.

It is a simple truth, but people do not know what their best interest is and how to safeguard it, as well as how to use the love and wealth from God and how to increase the value of wealth. Marx's most basic theory is not wrong, only because they don't know how to use the state-owned assets and the state-owned wealth. It can be only said that human beings are ignorant, ridiculous, barbaric, and not civilised.

What are the beasts? It is spending the least money to maintain minimum survival requirement and ability to work. This is the beast.

What is the master? It is that I give you money, you should cope with the matters. If you do not do a good job, I will criticise you. This is the master.

Just think about it: does your country offer public products to meet the minimum requirements or to help people to deal with matters? This is the fundamental difference, as well as the key to the question.

Man is very stupid.

The fundamental logical error causing socialism's failure is that state-owned capital is not used to consume for the people, but to create a basic environment for people to work harder, more conveniently, and with more ability, as well as earn more money.

They tend to think that the money that can be put in their own pocket is their benefit, vice versa. That's what everyone thinks about, which is the reason and basic logic of the problems.

As for the poor, the most fundamental interest is not the limited money which can be in their own pocket, but the social and living environment. It is the perfect social system that brings living environment to people. Just like a fish if it lives in a polluted environment—it will be of no use, no

matter how hard it is, and it is a tragedy. However, if living in a perfect environment, you also can get whatever you want and be satisfied with everything even if you are going with the stream.

Why the poor are poor is that they are insufficient in all aspects, being unable to compete with the elites and get something with their capability. Therefore, it is necessary for us to gather the strength to create and share something together. This is the living environment where we live; of course, the rich need such an environment. Thus, such a perfect environment is the greatest wealth of mankind.

The fundamental reason why the poor are poor is that there is no top-level design. From their birth, some people are supposed to be poor, because they live in a poor country, or they cannot be educated by their poor family, or because they don't have the capital to compete with others. The social environment and law are not for you, so you are poor. No matter how hard you are, it is of no use.

Decades ago, with billions of population, China was the poorest country. But now it's not. Those Chinese who have a very low quality also go shopping around the world, while others should be polite. These Chinese were the so-called poor decades ago, who were looked down upon by others; they go abroad to go shopping maybe because they just want to make up the heart. People are the people, but after a few decades, they have become rich now.

If your country can also do a good job in the top-level design, it also can become rich quickly. Creating wealth is not complicated; so is living a happy life. As long as there is a right way, all people can live a better life.

Like those countries in the Middle East, the oil and wealth from God has been plundered by the king, chief of tribe, landlord, minister, and nobility. So how can you, the poor, have money? And who will take charge of you? Thus, you must be poor. This is the top-level design.

57. China's socialism is the improvement and progress of Marxism

About 2007

The reason why Western countries are hostile to socialist countries is that the theories Marx created have brought so much mental and material damage to mankind that they shrink away, from fear. As the Bible puts it, the original sin humans possess will make us pay with blood for all progress we make.

In a general way, a uniformly administrated social system is superior to fragmented administrated social system. How could humans realise uniform administration? How could a well-ordered society be built? To address these questions, public ownership system can be a rational choice.

But the realisation of a public ownership system and well-ordered system cannot do without the cost of blood. Now with bloodshed all over, we might as well calm down and contemplate some issues.

Everyone has learnt about Marx's profile. Without any significant setbacks in his life, he received college education and married his wife, a beautiful and cultured woman. He had never served as a capitalist nor did he have to work as a labourer because he was subsidised by a helpful person, Engels. As Mao Zedong put it, he who makes no investigation and study has no right to speak.

Because of the fact that Marx had never been a capitalist, he had no idea how much risk and painstaking effort a capitalist must take to make profit. Nor did he serve as a labourer even for one day; thus he could not imagine how impoverished an unemployed labourer would be and how suffering was without any money. Neither did he know why some capitalists made suicidal jumps from buildings, nor would he learn about why some poor people stole, robbed, swindled, and jumped into rivers, compelled by life. In spite of every cruelty outside, he was living like a parasite with a beautiful wife and children accompanying him. In such a case, he seldom experienced what bitterness and misery the common people suffered.

In order to graduate, every student had to attend internship and accomplish graduation thesis, and it would even take years for medical college students to finish interning. All of these weren't Marx's concern as he did not intern for even one day, make even one penny by capital operation, or work for a capitalist to make a living. No one would doubt such a man like him can become a writer of science fiction, but unfortunately, he represented himself as a capital expert and wrote *Das Kapital*. How confusing it would be since the publication produced by such a man should convince some people and was taken as the only foundation for massacre—violent revolution. What a tragedy for mankind! Maybe it is inexorable doom of God working. Humans step on their own blood to progress, and they won't ponder or advance without bloodshed.

The most ridiculous statements Marx made were 'Labour is man's primary need' and 'Capitalists don't work, they make profits by exploiting workers for surplus value.'

The author holds that the only correct saying made by Marx was 'Public ownership system is superior to private ownership system.' The rest of his viewpoints, apart from this one, are all nonsense. But at least this is humans' orientation of efforts.

To realise the objective of public ownership system, the Communist Party used to apply wrong directions; even the name Communist Party itself is also a misnomer.

The author believes that the only way to realising public ownership system is as follows:

Universally owned assets—the whole of the people jointly possess national assets and preserve or increase the value of national assets with rational operation to provide material insurance for the realisation of fairness and justice.

Not universally owned means of production—previous communists all believed that communism meant the whole of the people jointly owned means of production and worked together.

Universally owned assets refer to state capitalism, which is also the policy and direction China is applying currently.

But we shall not realise a complete state capitalism, for state-owned capital doesn't generate profit with voluntary labour; therefore, it won't work without the combination of private capitalism. Current communism China is applying does not differ from Western capitalism in nature; in contrast, China's state-owned capital takes a little more proportion than that in capitalist countries.

In addition, we are developing state-owned capital with certain targets, reasonable methods, and scientific concepts. In a communist country, state-owned capital development is certainly taken as priority.

To sum up, the author holds that China's model is the progress of Marxism as well as the scientific socialism. It is absolutely feasible that Western developed countries and other less-developed countries develop some state capitalism based on their own conditions. The author believes that these countries will do even better than China, so all countries will develop and make profits jointly.

58. Communism should be understood as a common capitalism

About 2007

Communist ideology has been practiced for so many years in our country, but in fact, the core concept has been changed a lot.

The governing idea of high level has been transformed from the state-owned enterprise to the state-owned capital.

In today's news economic reports, there are no state-owned enterprises, which has been replaced by the state-owned capital.

In fact, the word 'communism' should be abolished, and changing it to 'common capitalism' is the most appropriate.

What is communism? It literally means a doctrine of common labour and co-production.

What is common capitalism? It literally means a doctrine of jointly owning capital, commonly being the capitalist, and sharing out bonus.

Whether it is the workers or the government, do you like to work? Or do you like to share out bonus and be the capitalist?

No one likes to work. From the government to the workers, everyone wants to share out bonus and be the capitalist.

Because of labour, there still exists a problem that production can be divided into valid labour and invalid labour. Labour and production cannot represent the improvement of social wealth and personal income.

As for the capital, it can use money to earn more money, which is an endless matter.

Temporarily controlling the property is not necessarily able to preserve or increase the value. However, if the capital can be rationally operated and managed by a suitable person controlling it, it can preserve or increase its value.

Previously, the reason why communism failed is that there was no common capital. They believed that capital is a dirty thing without work; thus, they made the utmost effort to reject and avoid it. Or to say that communists were disgusted with being capitalists and operating capital.

However, after several years of the operation of common capitalism, they felt good. The country's

leaders were speaking harder. Once with a hard spine, their tone would be hard; once they owned enough money, their spine would be hard.

Owning capital means owning money. And after owning the money, they would be unscrupulous.

I think it's time for capitalism and communism to be reconciled. In fact, each of them belongs to capitalism. And the only difference is that one is state capitalism; the other one is individual capitalism.

The sole distinction between state capitalism and individual capitalism is that the state-owned capital of state capitalism accounted for a little more, while that of individual capitalism accounted for a little less. However, by the little bit of state-owned capital, state capitalism could play a more dominant role than individual capitalism.

The government of common capitalism is independent, and so is the regime, without any inference or restriction.

The government of an individual capitalist country is a puppet government, and they are the spokesperson as well as puppet of a monopoly capitalist, whose every movement is totally restricted by others.

However, the government of common capitalism can administrate the country according to just, fair, rational, advanced, and independent principle, offering services and public products for the society.

As long as a little changes in the capitalist countries, adding a little bit of state-owned capital, they can reach common capitalism. But the law-of-the-jungle culture is the best folk culture that can match up with common capitalism.

Chinese Lao Tzu's moral culture is a deadly poison in a common capitalist country.

59. Harmony is big love

About 2007

The current society of China is a completely human civilisation society with public ownership and state capitalism as the political and material guarantee and for the purpose of solving the deep-seated problem of the society and building harmonious society under the construction of powerful guarantee.

Harmonious society is to ensure the harmonious coexistence between man and man, man and society, man and nature. The purpose of harmony is to require the co-prosperity and coexistence between man and man, man and society, man and nature without essential contradiction to achieve a state of unity of nature and man.

What is essential contradiction? The contradiction between America and bin Laden is essential contradiction. The absolute irreconcilableness between two is essential contradiction. The conduct of Khmer Rouge in Cambodia in the past years was essential contradiction.

The root reason for essential contradiction between man and man is being unable to understand and communicate between man and man, causing mutual non-recognition of the other's interest, each restricting the other, and the contradiction cannot be reconcilable. Essential contradiction is represented in the form of absolute irreconcilableness and that one side must die.

The way to avoid essential contradiction between man and man is mutual respect, understanding, and communication really.

To achieve mutual respect, understanding communication really, one must achieve mutual unlimited respect, understanding, and communication.

Unfortunately, this is just a theory. As an individual, man can only communicate with the surrounding persons limitedly, but it is impossible to achieve unlimited communication.

Men are different; no one can really understand the other's thought.

Having no alternative but to give up our preference can only achieve no conflict of fundamental interests between man and man, man and society, man and nature as far as possible. As long as there is no conflict of fundamental interest, there will be no absolute irreconcilableness between man and man.

What is 'mutual unlimited respect, understanding, and communication between man and man, man and society, man and nature'? It is love.

As man cannot communicate with others unlimitedly but limitedly and even is unable to

communicate and understand, man always damages the fundamental interest of other persons and other groups inadvertently, intentionally and unintentionally, or deliberately.

How to avoid this? We need people of the whole society and even the world to adjust the political and economic relations between man and man, man and society, man and nature systematically, that is, to adjust the fundamental interest between man and man, man and society, man and nature systematically.

This can only be guaranteed in a completely human civilised society with public ownership and state capitalism as the political and material guarantee and for the purpose of solving the deep-seated problem of the society and building harmonious society under the construction of powerful guarantee.

Only public ownership societies can have maximum equal and fair distribution of social resources and interests. Of course, such equality and fairness are not absolute; there should be a process.

State capitalism is the only correct material guarantee of public ownership. Without state capitalism, the state-owned enterprises and assets will be melted like ice cream in summer. The fact we see is that it is the state capitalism that saves the socialism of China and saves public ownership. Because a harmonious society is for the purpose of solving the deep-seated problem of the society by adjusting the political and economic relations between man and man, man and society, man and nature.

With people living in the harmonious society and no need to adjust their behaviour painstakingly, the system will adjust the fundamental interest between man and man, man and society, man and nature naturally. Men only need to live according to their own habit.

Whether you are poor or rich, illustrious or ordinary, the family harmony, social stability, and favourable weather are the basic demands for men. Nobody wants to live in a horrific family or wants to be pursued and captured by the government, let alone to live in nuclear radiation.

Harmony is to love the surrounding persons, love society, and love nature. It is also to be loved by the surrounding persons, by society, and by nature.

Harmony is big love.

The current human beings are pursuing material civilisation extremely, but ignore spiritual civilisation completely. Because private ownership and capitalist system are the Darwinist law of the jungle, where the fit survive, while those not fit will perish, and the weak are the prey of the strong, and interest of the weak has never been considered.

Do you want to be loved by the surrounding persons, by your country, and the whole earth? Only a harmonious society, public ownership, and state capitalism can achieve this—harmony is big love.

Why do human beings need a harmonious society now?

Because all our past cultures and civilisations and all rules of the game were established under the premise of low productivity. People worked day and night but could only afford the food and clothing for themselves or the surrounding persons. In this condition, the fighting of human beings was of small scale and partial and did not have a large influence on the natural environment. Even if hundreds or thousands or millions of people died, it was just knife and axe chopping, and the previous civilisation could be restored after several decades.

However, with the improving of human productivity, the destructive power of human beings has also rapidly improved. The nuclear weapons owned by human beings now can destroy the earth for many times. Much destruction is irrevocable or can only be restored after many years, and all the destruction is large-scale and transient.

In this condition, human beings must set up a new rule of the game. There must be a higher requirement for the spiritual civilisation of human beings; the spiritual civilisation of human beings must be improved. Just as a monkey cannot drive a car, people with weak intelligence, mental disorder, weak sight, or achromatopsia and those not trained are also disqualified to drive a car.

God would not let a group of monkeys drive a car; if they insist on doing so without listening to the advice, God will make them all die, unless they become qualified men within the specified time. I don’t want to see this day, but it will come irrevocably, because it is the time to make a choice for the technical advancement of human beings, that is, harmonious or perishing.

60. The world can be great unity

About 2007

The world great unity refers to the people of the world, no war, no pressure, no discrimination, no suspicion.

Many prophecies said the world will be great unity in the end. I think the world can be great unity, but it requires hard work and efforts around the world.

At the beginning of the Bible, it has mentioned the contradictions at the root of the world.

> Genesis chapter 11
>
> 11:1 And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech.
>
> 11:2 And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there.
>
> 11:3 And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar.
>
> 11:4 And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.
>
> 11:5 And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men built.
>
> 11:6 And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.
>
> 11:7 Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.
>
> 11:8 So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth; and they left off to build the city.
>
> 11:9 Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.

God thinks that life on earth is better than too much, they need to get original sin of punishment, so he deliberately confounded the language of people, made people unable to communicate and understand, have mutual suspicion, hate each other.

Whether there is this kind of history, and frankly, ancient Rome, one thing is true, because people can't communicate normally, leading to them not understanding each other, having mutual suspicion, and hating each other.

The conspirators use the weakness of human nature, making people hate each other and kill each other. In other words, whoever spread hatred and suspicion, thought the slayer, are all conspirators. They are the envoys of the devil! This kind of person is at all times and all over the world everywhere.

Actually, if the abnormal communication between people, abnormal understanding, mutual suspicion, and hating each other are eliminated, then the world can be great unity. But abnormal understanding between people, mutual suspicion, and mutual hatred cannot be eliminated if we just rely on the language of unity.

The abnormal understanding between people, mutual suspicion, and mutual hatred—how do these come about?

It's human nature. Human nature is always selfish, greedy, mercenary, bullying, and ugly. But humanity is the nature of people; since people are born, that cannot change.

Both in religion and saints, they thought a lot, such as using sweet words to cajole or using harsh punishment to bully. But they can only succeed temporarily; they cannot change anything, apart from the numbered, as the white terror, nothing has been changed.

Of course there is another side of human nature—weakness, death, and a little bit of reason.

I think that there is a channel in human nature that would make people get rid of abnormal understanding, mutual suspicion, and hating each other.

That is, the artificial, wide-range, purposeful, planned, organised interracial marriage! Foreign marriage! Marriage is just a tool, not at all, what is madly in love!

Regard the large-scale intermarriage as historic, sacred mission, work to do, then it can achieve great unity.

Simply, nearly half of the people have blood relationship with neighbouring countries in the region. The existence of the country will be regarded as a stumbling block, be kicked by voters. And wars are not needed to achieve national merger and extinction, but through democratic means.

But in the meantime, there will be the envoys of the devil, like Nazis, to destroy ethnic integration. Deliberately highlight the diversity of ethnic groups. And deliberately stir up ethnic hatred and conflict. Then you may need wars to solve the problems.

But the idea can be widely spread and identified. Then wars can be avoided, and the devil can also come in a bottle.

Interracial marriage is one of the most ancient, effective, thorough ways of human nature.

61. I Do Not Think That I Am So Wise

9 October 2013

Sometimes I think I'm smart. I want to know why I think something is simple, normal, and ordinary, but others don't think so; however, the facts proved that I was always right.

I think my idea is that normal people should have, but I don't have anything special. The reason why people look so stubborn and stupid is that there are a lot of problems they never think of or never think about in a right direction. And they never think from good intentions towards others but are busy with calculating gains and losses, the pros and cons as well as fame and wealth, etc.

I don't think I'm smart. To be honest, I have only a college degree. I majored in science, but I have still not fully understood higher mathematics. The difference between me and others is that our ways of thinking are not the same. I think the world should be beautiful, but why is the world is so cruel, troubled, and unsatisfied? And the reason for this question is what I am interested in studying on. I dislike ugly, unkind, wrong, and vicious things, hoping to rectify them.

While as average people, you are just considering temporary fame and wealth as well as some ordinary things, instead of caring about or pondering over those problems of human society, because you may think that it is none of your business, and it cannot help you to make money, though it may seriously affect you to earn money.

I write down these things just in order to urge you to think about some problems and some simple questions in human society. The idea that I have raised is neither complicated nor abstract. I believe that everyone can understand it, as long as you don't consider it as a joke.

Many of my ideas are published on the Web or on the website of the government and sent to my friends in Taiwan through some other channels. In fact, they all seriously considered my suggestions and ideas; moreover, most of them adopted and listened to some of my suggestions.

Many ideas and practices have been put into trial use in China for more than ten years. Though there are a lot of restrictions as well as twists and turns, I think that it was achieved successfully as a whole.

China's model is not a patent in China, which is also suitable for other countries. It is suitable not only for the socialist countries, but also for the capitalist countries.

This book is for our ordinary people, and I hope that there exists a social system or social order that can really protect their interests. At the same time, the role of social elites in the country must be recognised and protected. In short, everyone's rights should be respected and protected effectively.

To be honest, what is the human society doing in modern times and the contemporary age? Don't you think it is ridiculous and funny? Or shameless and lamentable? The war and political battles will result in too much death. Is this action what has been done by man, the wisest of all creatures? It is a garbage action, which is worse than the animals.

I don't think I'm so clever. I just hope the human society can live a normal life. In my view, the life that I have described is the lifestyle which is supposed to had by an average person, while all of you are living in an abnormal way of life at present.

I think that you are abnormal, instead of me. I am a common as well as sober person. Those who do not recognise my ideas or the book that I wrote are abnormal, and it is the ignorance and barbarism and selfishness blinding your hearts and minds. Even the thought of normal people has gone.

But back to where we were, you cannot be blamed. It should be said that our human beings' science and technology level has been developed too fast, or that the level of science and technology in China has been developed too fast. Chinese way of life and the level of consciousness have been changed a lot. Never having been abroad, I do not know whether the foreigners' thought is as rapid as China's. Maybe you develop slowly.

But in my own experience, when I am watching the old movies in China, especially from the 1970s or 1980s, or the old movies when I was a child, I don't think the people in the movies are normal. Because their way of thinking is too strange, too stupid, and too outdated.

I don't know if you have such feelings. If not, you do not have the progress with the times, and you would be abnormal.

62. It's None of My Business

16 August 2014

I'm not a troublemaker, and I don't care about anything that has nothing to do with me. I never give money to those beggars on the street, not only because I have no money, but also it's none of my business.

I'm only a person who is interested in exploring, and I always want to make clear those things in the world. I remember that I have argued on physics problems with my physics teacher for two times. And both in the end, I achieved the academic success, and the whole grade corrected the problem that I supposed. Those physics problems are simple but a little bit rare.

I will stick to things that are right in my mind, and I'll prove it to the entire world.

With more and more things I studied, I think I was further and further away from this world. An increasing number of things have proved that only my opinion is right, and others are wrong. But in my mind, those things are simple and basic; they are basic requirements and basic knowledge to be a man. Why are people in this world so strange? Why are they so stubborn? And why are they even so evil?

One day, I suddenly discovered that something would never be come up with or done if I didn't.

I really don't know whether I should be pleased with my intelligence, or I should be afraid with the world's evil, backwardness, and ignorance.

I don't think I'm smart. It takes a long time to learn something, and I even cannot get it. I'm only a normal person. Others are just too smart or born evil.

I only want to go through my life happily and peacefully. But one day I suddenly discovered that those who used to have no relationship with me are all my business. No one would get it done if I didn't. I'm a part of the earth, and I can't be the witness of its decay without doing anything. But what I can do is just make some complaints and put forward some suggestions. Other things are not my business.

I think I'm just the boy who reveals the emperor's nakedness in 'The Emperor's New Clothes'.

This world is too dirty, too ignorant, and too deceptive to see the true world clearly. Everybody lives in a dream filled with dirt and hypocrisy. But I will say some true words to you.

It can be proved what I said are all truth whether you believe or not. But I gradually became embarrassed to say anything. I feel it's funny. But it is the fact. It's too cruel and too funny.

63. Reflection on inequality among people, based on 80-20 rule

About 2007

80-20 Rule

In 10 persons: 2 persons are wealthy and 8 persons are poor.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are in command of 80 per cent of the wealth in the world while the remaining 8 persons have only 20 per cent.

In 10 persons: 2 persons make money with their brain, while 8 persons make money with their body.

In 10 persons: 2 persons think positively while 8 persons think negatively.

In 10 persons: 2 persons purchase time while the rest sell their time.

In 10 persons: 2 persons seek an excellent employee while 8 persons are hunting for a good job.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are in charge of others while 8 persons are in the charge of others.

In 10 persons: 2 persons have their own business while 8 persons are working for other persons' business.

In 10 persons: 2 persons prefer work experience while 8 persons prefer a diploma.

In 10 persons: 2 persons believe that action prevails over results while 8 persons believe that knowledge is power.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are clear about what qualities and actions they should have to be wealthy, while 8 persons picture what they can be if they are wealthy.

In 10 persons: 2 persons prefer to invest while 8 persons prefer to buy.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are target-oriented while 8 persons are daydreaming.

In 10 persons: 2 persons seek answers to questions while 8 persons seek questions from answers.

In 10 persons: 2 persons look afar while the rest only care about short-term profits.

In 10 persons: 2 persons seize the opportunity while the rest miss the opportunity.

In 10 persons: 2 persons plan for the future while 8 persons consider what to do today only in the morning.

In 10 persons: 2 persons take actions based on successful experience while 8 persons take actions based on their own wills.

In 10 persons: 2 persons repeat simple things while 8 persons hate simple things.

In 10 persons: 2 persons finish tasks in advance, while 8 persons procrastinate on tasks.

In 10 persons: 2 persons can achieve targets while 8 persons fail.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are influenced by successes while 8 persons are impacted by failures.

In 10 persons: 2 persons are in a good state while 8 persons are in a negative state.

In 10 persons: 2 persons believe dreams will come true while 8 persons are affected by previous failures.

In 10 persons: 2 persons live with success while 8 persons do not want to change the current situation.

In 10 persons: 2 persons change themselves while 8 persons change others.

In 10 persons: 2 persons encourage and praise while 8 persons criticise and scold.

In 10 persons: 2 persons persist while 8 persons give up.

Reflection on inequality among people, based on 80-20 rule

Indeed, each one in this society looks similar, with one head, four limbs, and a body; they all can talk and think. However, everyone is different.

From the 80-20 rule, we can see that people are divided into two classes in which people in the respective classes think from different respects. We divide them into smart people and ordinary people. Wealth and resources are assets of smart people, who can start their own business from nothing, but they are able to accumulate wealth. Gradually, small profits grow bigger and they become wealthy.

However, when the remaining 8 persons (80 per cent) have those assets in their hands, they end up abusing and wasting it. Finally, they have to be homeless and even have nothing to lose.

People who appeal to equality have no idea, and they only think by killing the 20 per cent people they can achieve everything.

Eventually, God disposes and men only propose. Regardless of any struggles, dumb people remain dumb and they will never be rich. Without the talent to be rich, though a dumb person is appointed to be the president, he will lose everything and be laid off. That is called destiny.

Men are born unequal. If one wants to pursue equality, he should suppose it is true and not take it seriously, or try some self-comforting and cheating himself.

All can be seen as daydreaming.

64. Scholars should defend truth, rather than blindly protect certain people's interests

About 2007

Scholars have knowledge from both learning and thinking, which make them more visionary than ordinary people.

Because scholars are more literate than ordinary people, they are easier to earn certain people's trust. But scholars are neither beaters nor executioners.

Scholars should have independence, objectivity, and justice.

Because scholars are more informed than ordinary people, they are liable to let people learn the truth, rather than fooling people to win the favour of somebody.

Scholars only discuss the good and evil, beauty and ugliness, right and wrong, advantages and disadvantages on the basis of truth.

Another task of scholars is, on the basis of facts, to resolve disputes between common people, rather than taking a more foolish method to defend the interests of certain people.

That's what we call Tao.

Because there are weaknesses and shortcomings in human nature, humanity still has vortex and trap. Once people fall into a trap or are involved in a whirlpool, they can't help themselves, such as those into drugs, love, cults, religious extremism, etc.

Sometimes they completely lost control of themselves, and they have no ability to tell right from wrong. They just blindly do some repeated and foolish things.

Sometimes they brought serious trouble to the government and the world, so they had to be defeated.

People once involved into a whirlpool, only when they use their will, refuse to blindly pursue the truth, can they slowly break through the dilemma and return to reason? Otherwise they are just walking dead.

The biggest characteristic of these people is blindly, wildly, and irrationally worship someone or something, such as blind worship for God, Allah, and Buddha.

Scholars should rationally analyse problems and scientifically research knowledge, rather than

blindly believe, obey, and worship.

65. Politicians almost tell lies while philosophers must tell the truth

About 2007

Often, politicians say what they should say and do what they should do, rather than consider objectively and impartially. It is the great difference between them.

Only when philosophers tell the truth can they be convinced.

However, the politicians tell lies almost to cater to the psychology of the public and consolidate their status.

Therefore, politicians are good at telling lies. If a person who is not good at telling lies politicises, he will fail totally.

Politicians need to tell lies, while theorists should tell the truth.

Lin Biao said, 'You cannot succeed without telling lies.'

Hitler said, 'Ten thousand of the same lies will be the truth.'

But I am not a politician, so I must reveal the truth no matter if you like it or not.

The truth is the truth, and the fact is the fact.

Politicians will maintain their status through neutralising and balancing the opinions of most people. Philosophers must tell the truth to win the trust of the public and bring humans to another direction, a real world.

This world should not be filled with lies, and people should not live in lies.

I never tell lies and say the real fact and truth.

What I see is that the politicians in the world always tell lies about religion, especially Islam. They know clearly that Islam is a heresy and the root of all evil, the source of the devil, the axis of evil, and the nature of hooliganism. But they still advocate that Islam is a peaceful religion. This is because Islam is cruel and evil and commits all manners of crimes and they are frightened. The people believing in Islam are numerous and spread all over the world. They may be just passers-by. They are scared of revenge and are afraid of losing votes and job title and implicating families, so they say nonsense unconscionably, mislead the public and people, as well as harm themselves and others. So politicians like telling lies.

66. Women Only Have Consciousness, No Thoughts

About 2007

The Bible says the first woman was made from a man's rib, so she is the man's bone of bone, flesh of flesh.

I'm not sure whether the story is true, but I do believe that men and women are different.

According to the theory of yin and yang, the male is yang, the female is yin, so women have to obey the men.

All classical theory in our world is the same, namely, women must obey men.

An astronomer once said you only need a whip to talk with a woman. To a certain extent, I think he's right.

It occurs to me that neither a philosopher nor thinker was a woman in human history. No woman can become a philosopher or a thinker.

Why?

That's because women have no thought; they don't have the function. Just like men have no uterus.

Men can't give birth to a child; woman can't think. Women only have consciousness, no thoughts.

Consciousness is just a reaction and judgment towards the things around.

Being a philosopher and thinker is to judge, analyse, design, and guide human behaviour. It is a study of extremely abstract concept.

I know a lot of women; certainly some of them are very smart and capable of making money. I always had the feeling that their mode of thinking is different from men's, though it is hard to tell the difference. Maybe the aspects of psychoanalysis can find some answers.

I've pointed out that women's and men's subconscious are different.

Women's function of design of genitals is different from men's. Men are positive while women can only passively accept. Men can force women to do anything; women can't.

So in terms of sexual satisfaction, only the men can make the first move. Women can only attract

men, seduce men, recall the men's sexual drive, but they can't make men have sex with them.

According to the subconscious theory of Freud, men and women have different starting points when it comes to thinking.

The subconscious of men is masculine, aggressive, compulsive, and progressive. Women's subconscious is defensive, sustainable, receptive, and acceptable.

Philosophers, thinkers, and politicians are completely different concepts. The politicians balance relation of various powers to achieve a political purpose. So in most cases, politicians need to consider most people's ideas and acceptance, from the political point of view, by weighing different benefits to determine what to say and what to do, rather than consider things from the perspective of objectivity and justice. So in many cases, politicians are lying. They need lies to do big things, by catering to the public's psychology to consolidate their status.

But philosophers and thinkers study nations, the world, universal truth by studying the truth and facts to lead the human society to a new civilisation. They need to tell the truth to make people believe. Because the thought of philosophers and thinkers is always out of ordinary people's reach, even contradicting the public's existing ideology, they always find themselves in the position to fight against the whole society, against the entire mainstream society, which might lead to their tragic fate.

There was a joke, 'If you want to be a philosopher, you need to marry a bitch first.'

But I think the sequence should be reversed, that is, marrying a philosopher will make a good woman a bitch.

Women have to give birth to children and take care of the next generation. That's why they need a lot of material to guarantee family security and children's needs of life. This is the starting point of how women deal with general issues. The first thing is conservation, assurance, and security.

Philosophers' thinking is giving correct guidance to the social problems and studying the theory of truth. These are all vain and impractical things, which can't bring with instant benefits. And investment is never-ending. Sometimes they even have to directly fight against the government, the mainstream society, or the mainstream thoughts. And they will get themselves in trouble, even get themselves killed, which is incompatible with women's starting point of family security. Something men may take as glory or with enthusiasm, women may see as a scourge and avoid it like the plague. So women are subconsciously different from the philosophers. That's why they can't be philosophers or thinkers.

Therefore, women should obey the supervision of men, and men should take care of women.

67. The otherness of people's understanding

About 2007

We meet and come in contact with a lot of people every day. However, the degrees of awareness of people on an object have nothing in common with each other.

Take driving as an example; more and more people are learning how to drive, and when we go to the driving school, we shall understand the coordination operation of the steering wheel, the throttle, and the brakes. Knowing this can help us to drive in accordance with our desires. It can be regarded as applying and using the car by us. We call this driving skill and cognitive level on handling the car as application-grade level.

If the car broke down on the road and I just can't fix it by myself, I would call the maintainer for help. The cognitive level of the maintainer on the car is much better than most of us. At least they know the function and principle of each part of the car. Also, they know the way how all the parts work together in a car system. When a certain part of the car breaks down, or in other words, the system won't work, the maintainer can check out the faulty part and test and replace it based on the fault phenomenon and by testing method. Then the car system can run normally. And it can be handed to the customer. We call the cognitive level of the maintainer on the car as maintenance-grade level.

We know that the cars are manufactured by the car factory. And the cars are designed by the designers in the car factory. They could design and produce the cars based on existing technology and market demand and in accordance with their designing level and desires. The degree of cognition of them is the highest in the world. We call the cognitive level of the car engineer on car as design-grade level.

In fact, everything in the world has a process of cognition similar to that of cars. We have more than three levels of cognition on cars: use-degree, maintenance-grade, and design-grade. Almost all the things in the world have a three-degree level of cognition like that. Of course, the division of level of cognition on an object is a simple method. There could be a more exquisite division method or a simple method. I just want to show that the level of cognition of everyone on an object differs one from another, like that of this case.

Besides, even the cognition of the same type of people on the same object differs from each other. Take the car as an example; for the drivers, some may be dedicated in driving and some others just learned it not long ago, and the others can drive and solve some small faults. Those who can fix problems are the ones close to maintenance-grade. And there are also some car fans that can both drive and even modify a car by themselves. So all the drivers, the beginners, regular drivers, and car fans have different understanding and cognition on cars.

Everyone has different levels of cognition on the same object. And the cognition of different

people on the same object is different from one another as well. There are numerous types of objects in our daily life. Although we live in the same world, our cognition on all the things in the universe has a great deal of diversity.

The statement above shows that when we look upon all the things around us, we should keep one concept in mind—the conclusions made by all the people in the world for a single matter might be different from your understanding. Your understanding on things can only stand for no one else but yourself. You shouldn't wish that everyone could follow you. This is absolutely not possible. Making the Procrustean bed is a sign of obstinacy.

68. Let's make up

A Letter to Taiwan Compatriots

October 2004

Hello, Taiwan compatriots, I am a commoner from China mainland. I do not belong to any party or any organisation, and thus represent nobody but only myself. I have something to say to you because I think it must be said now for your careful consideration.

From ancient history, Taiwan has been part of Chinese dominion. For the Chinese people, it is just a small island, but the respect of the nation. Not handling the matter well would put disgrace to all of us. As a result, the world would find another ground for the labels for China being called 'inferior nation' and Sick Man of East Asia, if it cannot find a way to handle its own domestic affair. That would lead China to an absolute disadvantageous position in any international negotiation.

Let me talk about it in the manner of a common person, not on behalf of anybody but only of myself.

I think one must have some problems in his mind if he still fights for a certain ideology in the era of new century, and the one who still deceives others under the banner of ideology must suffer retardation.

The truly smart one holds the goal that is the most practical only for himself, not for anyone else. There is no sage in the world that lives only for anyone else; either it is communism, capitalism, human rights, or democracy. There is no real hero but only the instrument under the control of someone else. Each of us would become others' pawn only if we believe in others' lie and rumour; at the final analysis, I do not believe anyone but only myself.

I will not fight for anyone and only for myself.

If Taiwan gets independence, it would mean the Chinese people are incapable, weak, not solid, and any other country can come to gain some interests from here; in that case, all our future generations will be at others' mercy. For the interests of our future generations and the whole Chinese nation, CCP has really got a point to equate Taiwan independence to a war. To curb national separation, we must be prepared for a war. The view represents not only CCP, but also the whole of the Chinese people on China mainland. The announcement of independence is just the announcement of a war—there must be an equal sign between them.

For my personal intention, I do not want to fight. Nobody is born inclined for a war. But I will never be afraid in the face of a war. Anybody may go to die, but there must be a point in it. Anyone who breaks peace, destroys my home, and leads me and my offspring into disaster would be paid with his life. I hate them and I will cut their head off.

If we have to go to a war for Taiwan, I will be the first to join the army and fight to the end. I have no alternative for my wife and children when you break the peace and destroy my home.

There is one other thing I need to tell you. Since CCP came to lead us, we have never been defeated in a fight. I believe it can be a small case to win the fight with 13 billion against only 20 million.

Anyway, why don't you want to unify with China mainland? I understand you perhaps think we are living a poor life. But we all wish to get rich, and perhaps even a fool does not want to return to China mainland before we get rich. We are all Chinese and we can understand each other.

We are all so smart. Only price is the topic between the smart, and only fools come to talk about ideology.

What is democracy and human right? They are all just the gimmick and camouflage. How can they explode Chinese embassy when they are talking about human right, and how can they invade another country if they hold a strong view on democracy? I have seen so much of the gimmick that can be seen everywhere in history books. I do not believe anything except myself. Everything is false in my eyes except the thing that I can see and touch, such as my house, my wife, and my children. I only fight and live for them, and there is no way letting me to be a pawn.

Taiwan compatriots, let's make it up. Don't listen to the bullshit of the deceiving politics anymore. Both sides across the strait are calling to be the most democratic, aren't they? Let's draw an agreement and see who dares object to it. No matter what is said and what excuse is used, objection to the agreement is an objection to democracy and human right. It is a deception for the whole public, and it is a totally false democracy. Our fate is in our own hands. I want to see which side holds the real sense of democracy, China mainland or Taiwan authority, socialism or capitalism.

Think of your house, your wife, and your children. Let's reach an agreement, only if we both have the sincerity.

Nothing can be reached without reconciliation between brothers. Let's compromise and bury the hatchet, since we're all one family.

I know why you do not return to China mainland—just because China mainland is in a poor situation. This is the most practical and fundamental reason. Anything else, like democracy, human right, ideology, and thought are nothing but blind excuses. You always talk about these stupid things until you yourself don't even believe; as a result, only one thing is left that you are so implicit about—money.

If China was as rich as West Germany with gold seen everywhere, and even if you guys could get some even by swimming across the strait, you would never come to deceive us with the so-called ideology and thought. I know you too well; to be more precise, I know the entire human. Never

deceive yourselves anymore, be practical and economic, and set a price where, when and under what conditions do you want to return to China mainland peacefully. We are all brothers. Never say those things hurting feelings, such as fight, killing, win, or defeat. There is no point talking about it too frankly.

I even worked in Taiwan as a top salesman for Mr Chan Yongtai. Taiwan people like bargaining and giving the run-around. Let's come straight to the point—think of your house, wife, and children and set a minimum price that you can bear in mind.

Let me set a reasonable price.

Before that, I want to emphasise again I belong to no party and do not represent anybody, any organisation, and only the conscience of a Chinese person. Please consider it carefully; I believe the whole public in China mainland can reach an agreement with you, if the agreement between you and me can be possible. We are all Chinese. No matter how the strong power wishes to separate us, we share the same ancestors and cultural relics; we are all under the deep influence of Confucianism, and the blessing of Mercy Buddha and the god of wealth. We all know how Yue Fei and Qu Yuan died, so we also know what duty we shall take for our parents, wives, and children. Although we are in the disadvantageous and powerless situation, we must hold our own fate and refuse to be the puppet of the politicians and adventurists. We are not fools, and the smart only talks about business. Anybody who wants you to be the fool and cannon fodder, fight and kill him. Now I have finished all that I want to say, and let's sit to talk about business.

I think the conditions are reasonable and fair, and acceptable to us.

Taiwan will return to China mainland only when at least three big cities in China mainland have the GDP per capita reaching the average level of the island. Or else, we will never get a result in the issue; when the condition above is not satisfied, China mainland government shall promise not to use force against Taiwan.

In any circumstances, Taiwan shall never announce independence in a form, or else it can be deemed a war declaration against China mainland.

When the economic construction and revenue of China mainland reaches the level as stipulated in the first article, Taiwan must hand over power to the mainland, or else it shall be deemed as breach of agreement on Taiwan side. According to the agreement, the people in both Taiwan and mainland have the right and obligation in any approach to kill those who oppose unification in the island and put in joint efforts to achieve national unification.

The Chinese government must promise to retain the current political and economic systems after receiving Taiwan power (except if the local agree) and promise not to persecute the authority's military and political staff of Taiwan.

I am offering a peaceful settlement for Taiwan compatriots on my own conscience. I beg your

careful consideration for the following merits to you:

Turn cross-strait military competition to economic competition.

Taiwan authority can always find a way to get rid of the bother from the mainland. It just needs to keep its economy in the lead and leave the Taiwan issue aside. Those political shams under the banner 'For the interest of Taiwan people' shall turn the money that is designated to purchase weapons to economic construction. Even a fool can do well in buying things to destroy the world, but taking up economic construction and leading the people to rich life are really a technology. People are concerned only about money, not about the independence. If the authority cannot get people rich, they may as well hand over the power.

The mainland government has to push up the economy to recapture Taiwan. We cannot drag someone else down when we can in a messy economic situation. We need to solve the Taiwan problem with money and economic power, instead of pushing others down by overwhelming manpower.

Therefore, the proposal can bring the most favourable benefits to the commoners. The commoners can receive the most benefits no matter which side finally wins. For the officials, it is the real test for their ability.

It is a really stale practice to convert people's attention from the messy economy by stirring up a war. We do not need that old practice; instead, we need to put in more efforts to develop our economy and avoid the commoners as the cannon fodder.

There is another side who only knows how to pay lip service to the mainland or Taiwan, but what has it really done? We all know I am referring to America, who is only crazy about wars. It did that during the Second World War and is still doing it now. It has gained so many benefits from the issue of cross-strait relation, and what's worse, it remains greedy for more against the conscience. An old-fashioned warship piled just with waste metals was sold even for over 600 billion. How much commission has the authority gained? Now that you have so much money, you have to cheat the whole Chinese. Are you taking us for fools, trying to fight with the 1.3 billion people with those old and stale warships?

Use money to maintain monopoly and world hegemony, and help Taiwan with economic construction. As long as you can make investment to revive Taiwan economy and keep it in the lead, your ideology and thought will take root forever.

Since CCP led the mainland, China has never suffered any humiliation in wars or defeat to any invaders or separatist plotters. Each inch of the territory represents the respect of the Chinese, with no exception of Taiwan. The announcement of independence shall be seen as the war action. We must win the war of protecting national territory. Chinese commoners have long hated the few corrupt officials and have accumulated enough strength for a fight with all of the anger vented on to the Taiwan separatists.

Never take any hope for independence, and instead, take your time making some money and supporting your family. Never get involved in politics to be used as cannon folder. Remember the principle of being commoners—elect those who give you more money and kill those who want you to fight in a war. It is never wrong to hold such a principle (except the war against the national traitors and foreign invaders).

The third article is of course easy to comprehend.

Once the agreement is reached, we must keep it. Anyone has the right to punish those who breach the agreement and fool the public on both sides and even the whole Chinese nation. We are all businessmen who put honesty above all and bear top hatred for the dishonest. But I think only idiots can take the risk of breaking the public wish; of course, I don't hope there are any idiots who make that happen.

The fourth article is the consistent practice of the Chinese government to solve regional dispute. As it is implemented nationwide, I will not say much about it here. It is just that some Taiwan separatists are trying every means to even the old scores against CCP and blacken the image of CCP. Here I'd like to say something fair. Anyone who breaks the agreement is turning the people into the enemy. Agreement holds a position above all in business; the Chinese government also needs to maintain its international image, refuse to break promises, and make enemies with some small potatoes who damage its own image. I incorporate it into the agreement just to avoid others making irresponsible remarks.

I have finished all that I want to say. Now let's sit down for a talk to make the agreement more complete and implemented as soon as possible. Let's not prepare for wars any more, and just think how to make money. Just let the warmongers fight themselves and keep a clear mind to do the things that can bring us more benefits.

69. Whether the petition letter should be abolished depends on its function

About 2007

The petition letter is one form of rule by people. So why are officials afraid of petition letters? Why do they try to prevent petition letters? That's because a petition letter causes the pressure of public opinion and leads to promotion trouble for the greedy officials. Therefore they are afraid of petition letters and spare no efforts to prevent the petition letters.

The key to the petition letter system is public-opinion supervision of authority. The key lies in whether the supreme decision-making layer of the country wants the public-opinion supervision of officials.

If the supreme decision-making layer really wants to make things in order, there are lots of effective and money-saving methods for them to adopt. If the supreme decision-making layer just wants to do some superficial work and does not aim to solve the realistic problems, they can say and do anything they want. As long as everybody knows the fact, it is enough; it is of no use to say more. No one is foolish, and everyone is clear about the truth.

I just propose an effective method.

The country sets up a central petition letter network in Beijing.

2. The petition letter network is made in the form of a forum. But the forum has authority. Only the party and the administrator can make statements; others can do nothing but read.

3. The forum divides the column and the theme zone according to the provinces and cities in China. The events are written in the column of locality. It is clear to know which place has the largest number of petition letters, through looking at the quantity.

4. The column displays subgrade administration. For example, if petitioners begin to propose petition, display the petition title, but the party can see the whole contents. After petitioners propose the petition letter, the central petition letter network displays the petition contents to the local place. After the local government sees it, it can investigate and reply at once. After petitioners see the reply, they can end the petition or propose new evidence to make pleas on the Internet. It is all done in secret. The central government can make adjudication according to the reply and evidence of both parties and order the local government to finish it. In addition, the local government should reply to the handling results in forum. In this way can the petitioners make a reply concerning whether the local government executes the judgment. If the local government refuses to execute the judgment within the stipulated time, make the reply contents public, including the whole process of adjudication and petition of both parties. People in the

world can see the dispute and adjudication results of both parties.

5. The reply contents continue to be concealed to the public after the local government finishes ruling and petitioners recognise it. Only petition introductions and handling results are left there.

It is the most effective and easiest method. It is a matter of whether they want to do it rather than a matter of whether they can do it.

70. Ethnic integration policy

About 2007

The reason is simple why there have been wars and strife on earth since the ancient times. It lies behind the conflicts of interest between regions, ethnicities, and parties. And ethnicities and races have largely a negative impact as the main cause of the conflicts.

Why there is strife between ethnicities and races? The main reason is the huge discrepancy between them in language, faith, lifestyle, custom, economy, region, with language the most important one.

Communication can't be achieved because of the language barrier. Even though the promotion of Mandarin Chinese gained some effect, as long as there is the language difference, there is always an intangible barrier between people with different languages, which is difficult to bridge. It is an intangible barrier in people's heart.

There is a good explanation in the Bible of how the barrier came to exist. The Bible says God was afraid that people would be overly successful with the same language, so he made them speak different languages overnight, thus driving them apart, and wars arose.

It's a legend, almost a myth, which cannot be verified. But the reason in it is true—it is the discrepancy and barrier between people that generates conflicts and strife, resulting in human disasters. Human disasters are rooted in discrepancy.

Smart-aleck and always arrogant humans take it for granted that they are masters of the earth only because they have mastered advanced technologies, which is ridiculous in that advanced technologies can only take them into more dangerous situations. Conflicts were only swords when there was no nuclear power before, with the result of lower loss of lives, while now the society is so advanced and things have got so out of control that a city, even a country, can be razed to the ground all at once.

It can't be said that people are not improved, but their smart heads are always full of tricks for how to be stronger, tougher, and more powerful than the others. Only then can they get a good sleep. They are only thinking about how to escalate the conflict, instead of settling it radically, to conciliate the conflict and hatred.

Since the root of human conflict is the discrepancy between ethnicities and races, to solve the conflict is to eliminate it.

How to achieve it? It's very simple—interracial marriage, which simply means marriage between men and women who belong to different races, then giving birth to children.

First of all, to give birth to a child or not is one of the basic human rights, which the modern society, a civilised society, should respect and protect. And of course the nation can't force somebody to bear a baby with someone else.

Secondly, humans are higher animals with their own thoughts. Marriage and childbirth, the biggest thing in one's life, can't be manipulated by others.

What's considered crazy in capitalist countries is an achievable goal in a socialist country. Why? By what? Government capital.

A real socialist country should be one that represents the interest of the whole nation, holding most of the capital of the nation—government capital. There is a saying, 'Money makes the mare go', which may be vulgar, but the reason in it is the truth that money is too powerful to be neglected, and there are even situations where guns are useless while money can easily get things done.

For example, the problem of ethnic integration by large-scale interracial marriage mentioned above can be solved by government capital if used properly. It is illegal and infringes on human rights to force a person to marry one of different race with guns, but it is legal and reasonable to induce people to do it with money.

How to induce? Here are some of my ideas for reference:

1. China can adjust its one-child policy, like one child for spouse from the same ethnicity, whether they are Han people or minorities. And there is no limitation for spouses from different ethnicities, and the more, the better with national support of fiscal subsidies and special care.

2. Propaganda of interracial marriage to form the consensus of the glory of it

3. Interracial marriage as political duty to exam cadres

4. There should be some positions reserved for ethnic minorities in state-owned enterprises, with the house allocated and requirement for them to leave their home to live in the city and marry Han people.

5. Free board and lodging is provided in other cities for students of minorities, with arrangement of work and requirement of leaving their home to marry Han people.

Ethnic integration can combine the nation into a monolith, with no ethnic discrepancy existing within the nation and thus no ethnic conflict at all, leading to a harmonious and perfect country and society.

Especially in unstable districts, the government can introduce policies to award interracial marriage to lead the population structure of these districts into ethnic integration step by step.

As long as there are offspring from one of local ethnic minorities and the other of Han, it will enjoy a lasting peace with no worries. It is a contribution that could benefit generations, which deserves efforts.

Promotion of Mandarin Chinese is just a necessity for communication, which can't solve the fundamental conflict of ethnic discrepancy at all. Ethnic discrepancy is regional discrepancy. People take it for granted that the land is theirs because they have stayed there for a long time, such as Tibet and Taiwan, where the local people won't acknowledge those lands belong to Han or China. This idea can only be changed when they've left there and are distributed all over the country.

The increase of interracial marriage is a long-term investment, which is highly profitable, and it turns the national consumer behaviour into a national population investment behaviour. The difference between consumption and investment is that consumption is the behaviour of spending money with no big benefit for the future, while investment will bring a ten-thousandfold profit.

In government capital-holding enterprises, government, the capital investor, has the right to arrange children from interracial marriage to work there, which is proper and right. State-owned enterprises have to hire someone and pay him salary. Who would not take full advantage of the rights of a boss?

State-owned enterprises are a part of the national machine, which is quite suitable for solving ethnic problems, otherwise a waste of resources.

The cadres want promotion, so assign them something to do to show themselves, by setting target of interracial marriage. It's a perfect chance to weigh their working ability by interracial marriage.

Interracial marriage can greatly promote business and trade, leading to reasonable flow of social goods and materials, remarkable increase of job opportunities, and effective decrease of region gap and wealth gap.

71. 1.3 Billion Chinese People, 1.3 Billion Minds

About 2007

China has a population of 1.3 billion, each of whom has his/her own mind.

South Korean would commit happy dispatch, conduct self-burning protest, and cut-finger protest against Japan's declaration of sovereignty for Dokdo. Chinese will never do this.

China is in a state of disunity, which is objective fact.

Apart from centralisation of power, Chinese people will not buy into any story. China needs centralisation of power, which means Chinese people need an emperor.

Democracy, human rights, and liberty are rubbish and poison in China.

Chinese peasants are the best-behaved people in the world. As long as not being driven to the wall, they will not ask for anything. Democracy, liberty, and human rights are nonsense to Chinese civilians; what they need is just a little bit of money to live on and work in peace. The government that drives Chinese peasants desperate is the most incapable government.

Intending to call on Chinese people to do something with democracy, liberty, and human rights is in vain since nobody will take notice of it. Except for being punished by the people's government, no good outcome will be generated.

For progressives who sincerely want to do something good to Chinese people, making a fuss about centralisation of power and despotism is what they really should do. Otherwise, they will get no agreeable face from the Chinese government or the Chinese people and bring contempt upon themselves.

I'm not intending to strike anyone, just saying the truth.

Studying theories about Chinese people without knowing them is just like building a palace in the desert; you will get nothing apart from experiencing what is bitter.

72. It's suggested that China announce all corrupt officials fleeing to other countries and post a reward on chasing and killing them

About 2007

It's just ridiculous that the country cannot do anything to punish so many corrupt officials fleeing to other countries.

Corrupt officials fleeing to other countries should be sentenced to death for treason. Anyone can enforce the law. Since the authority finds it inconvenient, there are many who can do it. Just as the saying goes, generous rewards rouse one to heroism. No-cost deal will bring about more heroes.

While the authority cannot handle corrupt officials, they are extraordinarily brave and smart against their people.

It is said that Chinese people always have infighting. It's true.

It's not that they cannot do it; it's that they don't want to do it.

The Communist Party of China promises to represent the interests of the people, so it's entitled to manage money matters for the people. Now the money is stolen by your people. Therefore, you owe people an explanation.

Kill them.

Why are officials so unscrupulous? Because they know if they steal the money of private bosses, they will be hunted down; if they steal the country's money and the people's money, nobody will question them and nobody will feel distressed.

Just because they know so well the national nature of Chinese people, they are so full of guts.

All in all, it's the fault of Chinese people, and they deserve being bullied. Before liberation, they were bullied by foreign imperialist powers and now they are bullied by traitors.

All people mind their own business and play it safe. Ultimately, Chinese people are tied up by varied feudal ethical codes and ideologies, and don't have any courage and uprightness at all. They don't know what justice is and how to uphold justice.

A man has a clear-cut stand on what to love and what to hate. He extends gratitude to those who help them and revenges on enemies.

Those who steal people's money and are beheaded no matter how far they are chased are real men.

It is agreed that the Communist Party will be the boss if it is able to deal with any trouble that happens.

Domestic corruption and officials fleeing with money are completely two issues of different nature. Domestic corruption is a vulnerability of domestic finance management and a problem of financial distribution. No matter how greedy corrupt officials are, they spend money in China, and the difference is that the money finally belongs to whom.

For instance, a corrupt official takes a bribe of RMB 20 million, buys one house and one car, and has three mistresses. The money will be owned by automobile dealers, real estate developers, and Chinese people. Their consumption drives domestic demand. The masses cannot get any benefit, and they are unsatisfied.

Yet, fleeing with money is totally different with domestic corruption. It's the updated version of bribery and corruption. They know sooner or later they will come to light, so they take a drastic measure to end it and flee to foreign countries. By doing so, they evade the law.

At the moment when they transfer money to foreign countries, the money no longer belongs to Chinese people. No matter how they spend it abroad, Chinese people won't benefit at all. It will only increase national income of other countries who are competitors of China. Contributing to China's competitors will do no good to any Chinese person.

Hence, fleeing with money and domestic corruption are totally different contradictions. Fleeing with money is the most severe corruption and the most serious loophole of China.

To put it simply, if a husband snatches the meat in his wife's bowl, it's called domestic corruption. If a husband takes his wife's money and elopes with another woman, it's fleeing with money.

The two are completely different. Hence, fleeing with money is treason and betrayal of family.

When corrupt officials flee to other countries, they collude with family members to transfer national property. Their families are accomplices and should be sentenced to death as well. Accordingly, only when all their families are killed, justice is upheld and the interests of the people are safeguarded.

If the authority feels it's not suitable to send agents to enforce law abroad, they can sentence them to death in domestic trial and then post a reward on their death—anyone can kill them and immediately get the immense reward. The reward can be one tenth of the money which they took with them. Therefore, the more bribe they take, the sooner they will die.

However, if they can surrender right away and return money to people, they can be exempted

from death and even won't be held accountable. What people want is still money, not their lives.

Generous rewards rouse one to heroism. They will be hunted down by gangsters of the whole world, and they are bound to die.

In order to safeguard the interests of its capitalists, the US can randomly dispatch troops to sovereign countries. Even Hitler had a reason to extinguish a race.

Chinese people just want to kill two traitors but cannot have any reason, which is so ridiculous.

It's not that the authority cannot put their hands on it; instead, it's because the masses don't have the concept of safeguarding their legal rights. If China can get such amount of money back, how many children can go to school for free? What's the greatest interest of the masses? They themselves don't understand it. What a pity!

As long as several traitors are killed, the rest will undoubtedly return with their remaining money. More importantly, nobody will dare flee again. This is the greatest interest of people and the country's as well.

73. The Chinese wisdom: no fish can survive if the water is too clean—one should not demand absolute purity

About 2007

No fish can survive if the water is too clean. For the same reason, no company can bear one whose requirements are too critical. This is an old maxim.

But this is not just an old maxim. Instead, I think it is the truth which has gone through tests many times.

The words of wisdom are not obtained by me from official circles but from business circles. It is my personal experience after countless communication with the public masses.

For people who hate this saying like poison, I can be 100 per cent sure that they have not done business by starting from scratch. They don't know how to do business at all, or they have never done any small business.

The way of doing business is also the way of being a person. Doing business is being a person—this is the first rudimental lesson I have learned, and it is also the classic saying of my predecessors and countless successful marketing people.

What is called being a person? Or what is called being a businessman?

1. To study the nature of human beings and understand real people, especially the clients you need to deal with every day

2. To try to overcome the undesirable part of our nature

3. To take advantage of the weak part of other people's nature.

Thus, successful businessmen know people, the good and evil of human nature, and human weaknesses best. Because they have to deal with people every day and must deal with people successfully to make a living.

This aspect is most lacking in men of letters and all the Internet users.

In the conclusion of my experience in business circles, no fish can survive if the water is too clean. Such is human nature. Thus, I say that human nature is ugly. Human greed is a kind of natural instinct that cannot be changed by whoever who wants to change it.

Chairman Mao launched the Cultural Revolution to change humanity, but what was the result?

Crushing defeat that left people plunged into an abyss of misery.

Whoever wants to change anything must pay cost, and this is a bottomless pit that can never be filled to the full by human nature. It can only be bypassed and made use of. The defiant can only bring about one's own construction.

Nobody is perfect. There are both goodness and evil in everyone's human nature. Wise leaders should make use of the goodness in the human nature and try to overcome the evil.

Good systems can make use of the goodness of human nature and overcome the evil.

One of the essential measures of whether a system is good or bad is 'make good people do more good things, and bad people find it difficult to do bad things'.

Good systems can make use of and ease human nature. It is conducive to make everyone serve for socialism voluntarily and involuntarily. This is the truth and right way.

Do not consider corruption as a great scourge.

People's hearts are the same. In the social system full of loopholes, anyone can be as corrupt and seek money. It is only because these people are not bold enough or intelligent enough. There are no essential differences between them.

Evil people are as bad all over the world. This is also true of the human heart.

Therefore, to carry out anti-corruption from both origin and system when problems arise is to truly take care of the cadres, which is only the truth and right way.

Only hatred towards corruption cannot solve any problem.

74. The most disgusting words in state-owned enterprise

About 2007

Sacrifice—'I shall sacrifice my youth, I shall sacrifice my descendants, I shall sacrifice my whole life to my great homeland.'

This is the most shameless lie, which calls white black.

Everyone knows the state-owned enterprise is a sinister gang. There is only promotion without demotion, only entry without discharge.

It is obviously the workers want to stay and coast along in state-owned enterprise for their whole life. But they make up such a beautiful lie to deceive the public and win reputation.

Free men seek jobs on their own and are self-reliant. Workers of state-owned enterprise rely on government capital. This is the only difference between them.

While the staff of state-owned enterprise are lazy, parasitic, and indolent, they drag down the business. They are sinners through the ages.

On the other hand, free men didn't participate in the contemptible dragging-down progress. So they are the master of state and are the most innocent.

Master

The master of state is also one of the most contemptible lies. They thought they were the master, so they found a perfect excuse for many awful things such as

Because they are masters, they have the right to show up for work but do nothing.

Because they are masters, they can only be promoted, can't be demoted.

Because they are masters, they can only be employed, can't be discharged.

Because they are masters, they can pretend sickness and leave the office.

Because they are masters, they can sneak away and do personal things.

Because they are masters, they can malinger with salary.

Because they are masters, they share the welfare and get each penny.

Because they are masters, they can be allotted house without blush.

Because they are masters, their bonus can only be raised.

Are they the masters of state-owned enterprise?

Does the state-owned enterprise belong to them?

How can they exploit national people?

Please remember, the state-owned enterprise belongs to 1.3 billion national people. Everyone should have the profit, and no one can be ignored. As for the one who drags down the enterprise, they should compensate for our people.

The staff of state-owned enterprise are corrupt and exploit our national people. Therefore, they should be dismissed, and hire our free men instead.

Only the labourer makes the fortune. The capitalists squeeze labourers and do nothing. This is the most ridiculous lie by Marx. There are many elements to create a fortune:

1. Funds

2. Technology

3. Market

4. Management

5. Labour

We can see labour is only one factor to make a fortune. Moreover, the capitalist bought the labour from the labour market by equal-value exchange.

It is the capitalists that give value to labourers.

The work value of a labourer can only be recognised by capitalists. Otherwise, he is producing rubbish, not creating a fortune.

To call a revolution, Marx told the biggest whopper that the labourer makes the fortune. He called white black.

75. Distribution according to work is equalitarian, and distribution according to price is reasonable

About 2007

China broke down the equalitarianism in which people received the same treatment regardless of their performance, and then proposed the work-based distribution, i.e. the distribution according to the amount of work.

Work can be interpreted as labour directly. It is an unscientific proposal not much different from the equalitarianism. Work is divided into effective work and ineffective work.

For example, a transnational group CEO works for one hour, and a toilet cleaner also works for one hour. A worker in a top-100 enterprise works for one hour, and a worker in unprofitable enterprise also works for one hour.

They all work but show totally different work value. Workers create totally different labour value, so their income earned from work should be completely different.

The work of a transnational group CEO may produce a difference of tens of millions, hundreds of millions, and even billions of RMB. In a good case, the enterprise will be prospering with each passing day, while in a bad case, the enterprise may fail and go bankrupt, and tens of thousands of people may lose their jobs.

The work of people like CEOs creates labour value of hundreds of billions, billions, or tens of millions of RMB, so they should get the income of hundreds of thousands, millions, or tens of millions of RMB.

Not to mention the workers in unprofitable enterprises, their labour creates no value at all; instead, they are wasting social resources. Some state-owned enterprises make loans for payoff to prevent workers from unemployment although the enterprises are suffering losses.

These workers are sheer parasites, and they are creating negative value—social pay for the keeping of unprofitable businesses.

Therefore, the distribution according to work is a plot. The distribution according to price is the right choice. The distribution according to the value created by labours and the market value of labour force is the most reasonable. The labour of workers should have a market price in the labour market, such as the price per hour or the price per month. So after enterprise bosses and all these people pay workers according to the market price, the workers have no relationship with the enterprises.

Workers have traded their labour force with bosses and enterprises fairly—workers have received the payment.

76. Property law signifies that all wealth in China will be subjected to the state council

About 2007

Property law signifies that all wealth in China will be subjected to the governance of the state council. Since then, any related misconduct is blamed on one unit. Thus there will be fewer disputes.

The Chinese are always fond of disputing over trifles. It means buck-passing, irresponsibility, and lack of responsibility.

Who should be responsible for the collapse of state-owned enterprises? Who will be to blame for the fleeing of greedy officials? Who should be held accountable for overseas unrestricted gambling? And who should condemned for the sacrifice of state-owned enterprises?

One or two formalistic measures won't deceive the public.

Everyone knows the rule of Chinese government in all ages: bureaucrats shield one another. Once something happens, certainly various departments will be involved. This is the case.

Anything occurring in future, the state council should be the first to be blamed for the primary responsibility and then the party concerned. Ownership means power, but is more about responsibility.

The almighty money has extended its omnipotent hand everywhere, regardless of justice, while it is only a matter of application.

77. The rationality of unequal social status

16 February 2016

As far as I am concerned, there should be two kinds of concepts. One is for the ignorant masses who are fit for Confucianism since they cannot understand sophisticated theories. The other is for the wise who can adapt to the law of the jungle, which they have innately understood.

As long as their thought is free, people can make independent choice.

This is just like a sheep for the grass and a wolf for the sheep. Each knows his needs. Confucianism completely reverses the law of the jungle, just like the state of feminine tenderness and masculine features. From my point of view, people can bear two thoughts in mind with different handling ways. In this case, they can judge for themselves which one is optimal.

Those who favour one thought while neglecting the other will be defective in personality. Therefore, cowardice and foolhardiness are not perfect.

It is traditional Chinese aesthetics that one should be courageous and prudent. Courage means masculinity and the law of the jungle, while prudence refers to delicacy, convincing others by reasoning, and winning the game by strategies. Thus Chinese people should integrate both of them.

The Indian caste system represents two cultures and the combination of two thoughts. Those with low-grade caste are contented in poverty and devoted to things spiritually while the people of higher caste master the law of the jungle. Anyway, they coexist peacefully.

The caste system may be not scientific in all cases since intelligence, morale, and social status are not completely related to it even though there are some links. There should be other factors.

What's reasonable is that a society should tolerate the existence of different classes. Some people are wise and noble, while some are humble. Those lofty people may be smart, virtuous, and thoughtful, so they enjoy higher social status with strong capabilities to a supreme degree. However, some are degrading with demoralisation, low intelligence, and weak abilities as well as logical judgment, so they cannot perceive objects correctly. They are less skilful and vulnerable in the society, with hostility to the public and God to a hellish degree.

It is preposterous to grant two kinds of people with equal rights.

Democracy can protect the evil and heresy to some extent.

Skilful people learn how to be merciful while the less incapable know their distance to obey the rule. This is the scientific, sensible, and just social management and social relations.

If those highly competent do not cherish others, they should be blamed. Those with poor capabilities being hostile to the society should be blown ruthlessly.

Human beings are filthy, especially those inferior groups with low intelligence or skills, who will by all means make troubles and niggle to vainly attempt to get what they don't deserve.

I have profoundly understood that some people will absurdly try to change the will of God by creating disturbances.

Palestinians

God promised Palestine to the Jews thousands of years ago and wrote it in the Bible, while some confused inferior people are fanatically throwing stones, stinging the civilians with knives, and pretending hunger strike to threaten and challenge God for compromise. Those foolish animals!

God creates the land, so he has the right and will to divide it. It is not Palestinians that bring the wealth, thus you have to follow God, with no right to express discontent.

What you have created by yourselves can be on your hands. What God has created belongs to him forever, thus he has the full right to grant it to anyone. It is the gift and authority of God.

It is evil to blaspheme the Bible and revolt against God. Why haven't those merciful Jewish killed you?

Troublemakers in Hong Kong

Hong Kong is one part of China rather than an independent unit. God has vested the land for Chinese, not several Hong Kong people. If you deny this, you will end as Palestinians.

78. The corruption in China is mainly caused by the left

About 2007

The Left mostly possesses these characteristics—simple mind and developed limbs.

They mostly boast their excellence in class origin—the poorer, the more revolutionary; the poorer, the more glory; the poorer, the more reasonable. Therefore, the Left sympathises with workers and peasants, especially the laid-off workers and migrant workers.

In addition, their political level basically doesn't have much difference from laid-off workers and migrant workers—this is called having mass base.

Why say that the Left is simple-minded? There is a most basic standard—views on humanity.

Most children with Down's syndrome laugh foolishly all day; they inexplicably treat all people with friendliness and extreme trust, whether they know them or not. They always giggle no matter if they're treated well or badly.

Why do we say that the fox and the cat family animals are intelligent? Because they particularly guard against all others, even keep a distance from very familiar ones. They think all others may attack them.

All that admit the theory of original goodness of human nature are all simple-minded, only slightly better than weak intelligence.

All that identify with the theory of original evil of human nature are thinking normally; they have at least judging ability.

What most makes the Left's blood boil is 'You work, I rest assured.' This is the fundamental logic of the Left. And 'If you use a man, don't suspect him; if you suspect him, don't use him' is also the Left's logic. The Left has no earning ability, but their ability to spend money is biggest.

They eat up, dissipate all, grab all, and cheat all of the state-owned enterprises.

Why is the corruption in China rampant? It just originated from 'You work, I rest assured.'

'You work, I rest assured' is coming from the theory of original goodness of human nature. So it can't be wrong to say that the corruption in China is caused by the Left.

79. The violence by Yang Jia proves the evil nature of the right wing

About 2007

The story of Yang Jia is actually very simple:

Yang Jia went to travel in Shanghai; he rented a bike that was actually a stolen one and was confiscated by police, and he was in the Public Security Bureau as a thief and suffered a little bit. After he went out, he thought himself wronged and asked for compensation but failed. He behaved in a vicious and unrestrained way and became so frenzied that he killed six policemen to revenge on society. Ultimately he was sentenced to death and immediate execution.

On the Internet, the right wing expresses their sympathies to Yang Jia and accuses the public security organisation of infringing upon the human rights of Yang Jia, which resulted in losing control of his emotions, to kill six policemen. They deserve their fate, for Yang Jia deserves the right to revenge on society and policemen infringe the human rights at first.

My comments on this are as follows:

There is no bike-renting business in Shanghai at all, so it is very suspicious where Yang Jia rented the bike, for it would not be rented from formal shops; but rather, it was rented from the black market, which is an illegal behaviour that the law doesn't protect. So it is perfectly reasonable to be decided by the public security organisation as stealing bike or disposal of stolen goods. For the sake of protecting the public security of the whole society, the public security organisation strikes against crimes and theft and disposal of stolen goods, which is a perfectly reasonable and lawful and righteous behaviour.

The bike that Yang Jia got in an illegal way is cooperative crime behaviour by itself, and he was caught by the public security organisation to be punished severely is a sure thing. If spending money to buy the stolen bike and renting the stolen bike are not decided as crime, then our society will become the crime haven. Goods stolen by thieves will change hands; there's no such a thing that after thieves steal bikes, they ride them in the street.

Fighting against harbouring stolen goods and disposal of stolen goods by the public security organisation is just to protect people's interests.

For this kind of getting something for nothing by thieves: As to the rats running across the street, it should have cracked down and specially harmed the neighbourhood. As to myself, two of my electric motorbikes were stolen. My feeling then was they should be executed immediately when they were caught. For when these dregs of society and scum of a community are alive, they are just wasting social resources rather than dying clean.

Maybe when the public security organisation was handling the thieves, they didn't mention the

human rights of the thieves; they infringed the rights of the rats running across the street, stimulating the mentality of the undesirables who were contaminated by the right wing. Under the glorious guidance of the right wing, these rats running across the street veritably become democratic fighters and freedom soldiers, forgetting their scoundrel identity, and they are the accomplices of thieves.

The evidence of the evilness of the right wing 1—rat running across the street = democratic fighter = accomplice of thieves stealing the bike.

It is a glorious mission for the public security organisation to protect the property of the people and struggle against crimes. When it is spoken from the mouths of the democratic personnel, it becomes the evil root of human rights infringement. What on earth is more worthy, the people's interests or the human rights of thieves? The human rights of the painstaking labourers or the rights of the rats who break the law and run across the street?

The evidence of the evilness of the right wing 2—protecting the property of the people = struggling against crimes = infringing human rights = deserving one's punishment = death is not to be regretted.

Yang Jia's assault on police officers can clearly show the evil nature of the right wing and its damage as well as contaminations of human nature, making people lose basic conscientiousness and the sense of justice.

80. Chinese people need human rights or interests?

About 2007

You cannot have your cake and eat it too.

Democracy and interests of people are two similar concepts but are different in nature and sometimes clash with each other. Under many circumstances, a person can only have one.

Now, Chinese people are rich enough to speculate in stocks, with which they are now familiar. If you have stocks that are worth 1 million RMB, does it mean that you really have 1 million RMB in your pocket? People in the stock market know that the answer is uncertain. You may become richer after several days, or lose every dime. Only if you transfer your stocks into hard currency can you say you have 1 million RMB for sure.

Democracy is like the stocks; the future price may rise or fall. It is always uncertain and cannot be predicted. It is like fortune telling or just deceitful trickery.

Interests of people are hard currency. They are practical benefits that people can touch, feel, and use on food, housing, transportation, marriage, and other related issues.

Therefore, those who boast about human rights but remain silent on people's interests are either evil-minded frauds or manipulative schemers. They take advantage of the weakness of human nature and deceive common people to achieve their unspeakable purposes.

However, human nature is so greedy, ignorant, and complacent. The sacrifice people make only benefits others. Only those who help people gain benefits whole-heartedly, who represent and maintain people's interests, are the true hope of people.

The concept of human rights is a hollow one. Frauds who deceive people take advantage of people's imagination to achieve their purposes.

For example, they always tell some ignorant people—you give me 10,000 RMB today, you will get 20,000 RMB or more tomorrow.

That is also what democracy advocates do: you vote for me today, you will get more tomorrow. What exactly will people get tomorrow? That is just a hollow promise that will never be fulfilled. However, things done by those who mean to help people gain benefits and protect people's benefits are visible and tangible.

To cancel agricultural tax is to protect people's interests.

To ensure healthcare for everyone is to protect people's interests.

To make compulsory education free is to protect people's interests.

To use profits of state-owned enterprises on employees' social insurance is to protect people's interests.

To allocate state apparatus for assistance during disasters is to protect people's interests.

You want the uncertain stocks or hard currency? You want frauds or cash? You do the math yourselves.

81. Strongly supporting the imposition of high inheritance tax at once

About 2007

The son of the robber always robs, of the poor is always poor, and of the rich is always rich.

It is true that social resources are not distributed equally at birth. However, it is easy to solve this problem—to impose high inheritance tax like Western countries.

This argument seems to have been heard in our country, but it has never been implemented somehow, just like the disclosure of the official property.

That's because both the disclosure of the official property and the imposition of high inheritance tax will absolutely affect the fundamental interests of officials and tycoons. Perhaps the Chinese government is too rich to tax the ordinary citizens, lest it's scolded. However, it is not to tax the ordinary citizens but the rich people this time.

Usually, the social issues need to be considered when taxing the ordinary citizens, but taxing the rich people will be an exception.

A friendly reminder to 'the men on behalf the interests of the people': they should not swagger and bully the small retailers and should not always pretend to be pitiable when taxing the rich a little, according to the international practice.

I suggest that 50 per cent of inheritance tax should be imposed on the rich. These taxes will be taken as state-owned assets, which can be arbitrarily administrated by the state to solve numerous contradictions and problems in our country.

The exemption of the inheritance tax on the rich is the most serious kind of corruption for 'the man on behalf the interests of the people', which is collective corruption. The imposition of inheritance tax is to consolidate the foundation of socialism and realise communism.

There are a lot of people claiming to be Maoists or leftists on the network. I think they are just some tricksters under the name of Maoists or leftists. They have never considered the fundamental interests and the best benefits of working people. All of them play the fool or act dumb on the issues relating to the fundamental interests of the people.

It's time for you to speak out. You should strongly support the imposition of high inheritance tax at once, so as to connect with the world.

82. Chinese democracy will begin from the imposition of inheritance tax

About 2007

The gap between the rich and the poor is widening, which can be solved in an easy way by taxing the rich to help the poor.

Now the poor live under high pressures, the greatest of which will be their children's education.

Although China provides the nine-year free compulsory education, the high school and university education will also cost much. The imposition of inheritance tax on the rich, the exemption of high school and college education cost, the increase of scholarships and grants subsidies mean to subsidise tens of thousands of renminbi for the poor, to give the poor an equal access to education and to increase the social competitiveness of the poor. Thus, the wealth gap will be narrowed fundamentally.

The biggest gap between the rich and the poor is the capital disparity at birth. Some children are born with fortune and some with debt. Imposing high inheritance tax can lower the gap by a half from birth. Education subsidies can let all the people stand at the same starting line when embarking on a community.

The poor in China should know what they should strive for and fight against to safeguard their own interests. It is foolish to kill children or jump to death.

All democratic countries are imposing the inheritance tax, so China should start from the imposition of the inheritance tax to develop into a democratic country.

83. Why are there many difficulties and obstacles in taxing the rich in China?

About 2007

Only corrupt officials have hundreds of millions in family wealth, but they happen to be the makers of laws and policies. So is there any possibility for the imposition of inheritance tax?

This is a good question. It is worth discussing.

Who are the rich people in China?

Reform and opening up does make some people rich. So does MBO.

Property law protects the property of those people in the meantime. The question whether the rich should be taxed or not is the touchstone of the leftist, the rightist, the Maoists, and the pro-Americans. It will immediately show who they are paid to speak for, and whether the people raising their hands are the representatives of the rich.

Wait and see.

84. Why do some people always object to economists?

About 2007

Nowadays, some people do not understand the economy, do not study the economy, and do not know economists, but they maliciously slander economists only because economists do not support them. It is a very shameless behaviour and shall be spurned by the world.

From the objective perspective, economists are not bad kids. They are just fulfilling their responsibilities.

Many people know the story of Aladdin and his wonderful lamp. In a certain sense, economists are the djinni who can help the master of the wonderful lamp to realise his dreams.

Although 'Aladdin and His Wonderful Lamp' is not a fairy tale of China, it is a well-known story. A lot of fairy tales are rich in profound philosophy; instead of making children happy, only a few people can actually understand the oracle of the fairy tales.

The wonderful lamp is an object, while the djinn is omnipotent. However, the djinn also has no feelings. He only serves the master of the wonderful lamp, and he does not care about who is the master, it does not matter if prince or witch, just or evil.

A djinn has the following three characteristics:
1. Omnipotent
2. No feelings
3. The master's slave.

However, economists totally conform to these three characteristics. Therefore, they are djinni.

1. Economists can make money for their masters, and money answers all things.

2. Economists are non-partisan, and they only serve and work for the wonderful lamp and for the masters of the wonderful lamp. They don't care about who the master is and what the purpose of the master is. Their responsibility is to help the master of the wonderful lamp to realise his dreams—money answers all things. They can provide masters with the omnipotent money, namely, realise the dreams of the master.

3. Why are they called slaves? Because slaves make money relying on their masters, and slaves are faithful to their masters. Masters cannot be replaced by slaves.

What is the wonderful lamp? It is the ownership of capital.

The ownership of capital is divided into the capital of the capitalists and the public capital.

At the founding of the People's Republic of China, especially at the period of Chairman Mao cutting the tail of capitalism, the public capital basically accounted for 100 per cent while the private capital was 0.

However, Chairman Mao was not capable of operating and managing enterprises, and he could only lead the workers of state-owned enterprises to belly-worship; share bonus, houses, and benefits; discourage workers' enthusiasm; and force them to be discarded, and no one was willing to work. The public capital was insolvency, and the government was on the verge of bankruptcy. They could only throw off burden and sell the state-owned enterprises.

The founding of the People's Republic of China is said to be the period of possessing the largest state-owned capital. Chairman Mao held Aladdin and his wonderful lamp in his hands but took the economic men into a cowshed to be reformed through labour. He did not understand how to use capital, and he considered capital as an enemy; thus, the best capital operation opportunity was missed.

Nowadays, the state-owned capital is spent and wasted by the workers. The state-owned capital has to reform on the edge of bankruptcy and during the almost completely annihilated period. The capital changed from the state-owned capital to the private capital. Chairman Mao regarded the capital as an enemy and persecuted the djinn, while capitalists took him as the distinguished guest.

Economists are not serving for the capitalists, but they are serving for the capital. It is just like doctors who do not serve for the health people but only serve for the patients. It is not that doctors favour a certain patient by birth and are willing to serve for a certain patient, but their work object is a patient. Properly speaking, doctors' work object is illness. It is just like that the work object of economists is capital. Doctors serve for the people who are ill, while economists serve for the people who have capital.

It is just like the ancient allusions. The coffin shops' bosses wish somebody to die, while carriages and horses shops' bosses wish somebody to be rich. It is not because coffin shops' bosses are vicious by birth, but their work object is the dead person. Moreover, it is not because the carriages and horses shops' bosses are benevolent by birth and wish people to be rich, but because they will have business once somebody is rich.

Economists said a lot of words that were not favoured by somebody when Chairman Mao abandoned capital and the private enterprises' bosses mastered the capital. It is not because economists want to take somebody as enemies by birth, but because Chairman Mao actively abandoned capital and abandoned the work object of economists. The public capital abandoned djinni, while the private capital accepted, respected them, and put them in the important position. It is because Aladdin and his wonderful lamp were serving for the capitalists.

In the final analysis, it is Chairman Mao who made the mistake.

Fortunately, nowadays, leaders timely stopped the last batch of the state-owned enterprises to be privatised and learned to apply and protect the public capital. It is the lucky in the unfortunates.

If economists understand the times, they shall consider how to help the country to operate the public capital, making the public capital bigger and stronger. Otherwise, economists are unappreciative and make things unclear.

And indeed, it is the fact.

85. Rule by benevolence and righteousness is nonsense but by capital is valid and proper

About 2007

The core of Chinese traditional culture is the ethics of Confucius benevolence and righteousness and rule by benevolence and righteousness.

Confucius feudal ethics is entirely for realisation of his ideal of rule by benevolence and righteousness, which promoted political stability and economic development under the condition of lagging productivity in Chinese ancient natural economy of boxing and coxing, creating the ancient civilisation.

But in the Internet era of commodity economy and socialised production today, it has become complete obstruction and rubbish, dated back to the Industrial Revolution.

In accordance with the commodity economy, Western countries invented the individual culture of democracy, freedom, and human rights, against the restraints and constraints, promoting competition of the law of the jungle and survival of the fittest. Every man is for himself and God for all.

The ethics of Confucius benevolence and righteousness are pathetic and ridiculous chains and cages before commodity economy, socialised production, and the Internet. The ethics of benevolence and righteousness are against freedom, democracy, and human rights.

Benevolence is the kindness between people.

If the capitalists are kind to the labourers, their money will go down the drain. If the labourers are kind to the capitalists, they will go to black brick kilns. If the capitalists are generous to the labourers, they will be crushed and closed down by their competitors, because of lagging competitiveness. If the labourers are generous to the capitalists, their families will split up because of smaller wages and their wives' grievances.

The dramatic success of our reform and opening up has proved that rule by capital is valid and proper.

Rule by capital is not a capitalist capitalism, but a state capitalism. State capitalism is focused on rule by capital instead of benevolence and righteousness. There is no benevolence in richness, and vice versa. Benevolence and money can't both be gained, just like the old saying: you can't burn the candle at both ends.

Rule by benevolence and righteousness and rule by capital are against each other. It doesn't

mean there is no benevolence and righteousness at all in rule by capital. Just as the idea that men are superior to women doesn't mean maltreatment of all women but obedience of women to men, so rule by capital means obedience of benevolence and righteousness to capital, with benevolence and righteousness behind capital.

These two concepts are not contradictory, just like the relevance between money and relationship between fathers and sons, couples and friends, officials and civilians, enterprises and workers, country and individuals.

Everything is settled with no conflicts when relating to capital first and then relationship. If relationship is mentioned first and then capital, there will be conflicts and disputes. The relationship between workers in state-owned enterprises and the country is typical.

Workers in state-owned enterprises are only labour owners, while the country is the capital owner. It has the right to fire anyone, no matter how long you have worked here and how much contribution you have made. It is clearly divided that capital and labour are what they are.

In Chinese state-owned enterprises, workers did make it clear that country and family are different, leading to dramatic difficulty in firing a worker. What to do with that?

Where is the honour of the capital of the whole nation? And where is the interest of the whole nation?

The main purpose of the system transformation of state-owned enterprises is to fire spare workers. If it were easy to fire someone in a state-owned enterprise, it would develop well, with no need for system transformation and no loss of national capital.

Rule by benevolence and righteousness is the rule by men, while rule by capital is the rule by law.

Lord Ye once told Confucius, 'There is a righteous man in my hometown who reported that his father has stolen sheep from others.' But Confucius said, 'Righteous people in my hometown are different from that you mentioned: a father should conceal things for his son, and a son should conceal things for his father. That's where the righteousness lies.'

Confucius thinks if a father has violated the law, his son should conceal it for him, and vice versa. That's what's called righteousness. This is typical of the rule by men with no discipline and justice.

Modern Chinese are still harbouring this idea. The whole family will help to conceal corruptness of an official, taking bribes and fencing them, in faith of that success is a relative term. It brings so many relatives.

This is what Confucius called the ethics of benevolence and righteousness, which are in practice the rule by men, meaning the higher position of power over law, local protectionism, and partition of national capital, and which are the theoretical basis of officials ganging their own gait

with absolute monarch.

Why are Chinese local officials trying their best to stop petitioners? In Confucius' opinion, a petition is evil for it is against the local interest and the ethics of benevolence and righteousness.

Local officials are who they are. Whether you admit it or not, at least they feel good about themselves.

A petition is to report your parent, which is against courtesy and filial piety and is the worst offense. And it should be brought to justice and punished to warn others and protect the reason.

China's disasters are rooted in Confucius. Rule by capital should clarify the ownership of capital to be strictly protected. It should be identified by law: yours is yours, mine is mine, and what belongs to the country is its property.

Rule by law means what belongs to you won't be reduced even by a penny, and what doesn't will be given. Legislation is needed first in the rule of law, which is not aimed at punishing people but clarifying the relationship of property to be strictly protected and then protecting your own interest according to the law.

You have your rights to protect, I have mine, and the country has its rights. The property law is such a law that there shall be a clarification of the relationship of property regardless of the quarrels. Everything should be settled with no mistake in what belongs to the country, capitalists, workers respectively, because quarrels are endless and useless.

Ignorant, backward, and filthy, Chinese people have wasted too much time on quarrels and spent all their thoughts on petty benefits. People are always thinking about taking what doesn't belong to them into their own pockets, such as corrupt officials, couples, parents and children, and workers in state-owned and private enterprises who can't get too much not because they don't want to.

Conflicts among people are in practical fights over capital, money, and interest.

As the old saying goes, hundreds of people chase a running rabbit while never taking a look at the rabbits on market when passing, which is not because they don't want the rabbit, but there is no room for argument in settled distribution.

Settled distribution with no room for argument can be achieved by legislation, making the society stable, active, and optimistic.

This is the main idea of the ancient legalists, which is also the basic law of modern capitalist countries: 'The wind may blow through it, the storm may enter, the rain may enter, but the king of England cannot enter.'

It is by such firm faith in protecting property that capitalists pour all their energy into producing and labouring, leading to today's advanced and modern civilisation.

So rule by capital is the rule by law, while rule by benevolence and righteousness is the rule by men. The ethics of benevolence and righteousness is rubbish in governing, only useful when in textbooks to cheat little kids. Adults are talking about rule by law.

86. What is endurance? Endurance is an evil thought

About 2007

What is endurance? Endurance is an evil thought.

There is the spirit of bushido in Japan, and ninja. Japanese ninjutsu is well known around the world. In terms of Japanese culture, Japanese practice and understanding of endurance is the best. However, it's unexpected that some Chinese organisations should take endurance as their motto.

First of all, Chinese people's understanding of endurance is superficial, nothing like the Japanese. Endurance is, psychologically, suppressing temporarily the present emotion, mostly painful, by will, waiting for later revenge.

Although there is Buddhism in Japan, the concept of endurance is definitely not orthodox Buddhism. There is no such concept as endurance in real Buddhism, sometimes only a transition in personal spiritual practice, which is only a tool for people in the early stage of spiritual practice.

For endurance is temporary—there is still revenge and payback someday. There is no clue of revenge and payback in emptiness.

Orthodox disciples of Buddhism pursue the practice of emptiness instead of endurance. And the level of seeing and reaching emptiness can't be achieved by those ordinary old men and women who have nothing to do, and it's beyond their understanding. They can only have the idea of simple practice of doing well. So in terms of Buddhism or religion, endurance is an evil thought.

Religions with endurance as their motto must be cults. It calls on people to take revenge on the society, which is typically evil.

An Internet user asked me, 'Isn't it right to endure when you see a beauty on the road? Isn't it necessary to endure?'

What is endurance under such a circumstance?

You saw a beauty you like very much, but your reason told you not to be impulsive, and you should keep propriety and observe discipline. So you temporarily suppressed your lust for the beauty and then went to looking for other ways to vent, like porn sites or other alternatives to vent your feelings for the beauty. This is what's called endurance.

But orthodox Buddhism way is emptiness.

An orthodox Buddhist disciple will tell himself when seeing a beauty he likes very much, ‘Women are tigers,’ thus dispelling his feeling for the beauty. There is nothing, which is called emptiness.

87. Doctor-patient relationship, petition of petitioners, public announcement of complaints, Taobao

About 2007

In the past, GDP took command and money occupied the primary position. With the development of China, the Chinese government has gradually realised standardisation and rationalisation in many aspects, which should be a good thing. However, many shortcomings and even inherent defects of our system are shown in the process of realising standardisation.

It is very simple. All reforms, specifications, and adjustments are aimed at common people. The government finds it extremely difficult to carry out system reform.

Common people are investigated when the government conducts an investigation into melamine.

Common people are investigated when the government conducts an investigation into gutter oil.

Common people are investigated when the government conducts an investigation into group-oriented leasing.

Common people are investigated when the government conducts an investigation into real estate regulation and control.

Common people are investigated when the government conducts an investigation into the unlawful charges of schools.

Cracking down on naked officials gets no result.

Disclosing the assets of officials publicly gets no result.

Inheritance tax gets no result.

Separation of ownership and management right is completed very quickly, known as aircraft carrier, which can adjust direction on a coin worth one yuan.

There is no further news about making government affairs and property transparent.

Why? It is because of money.

Through separation of ownership and management right, the Communist Party can regain economic power. Therefore, you are quick in action and response.

Through making government affairs and property transparent, common people can have the right to know and supervise. Then, you walk with difficulty and pretend to be ignorant at once.

No one should be blamed. The ugliness and incurableness of human nature are completely evident. The event of Bo Xilai better reflects the same problem.

Full of ugliness, human nature does not have the concept of equality and universal love at all. Today, you are granted privilege. You hope that your descendants can also enjoy the privilege forever.

On the Internet, people usually complain about the bullying of local officials, public hospitals taking black money, and the difficulty of complaints and petitions.

I have mentioned establishing an Internet petition complaint centre and an Internet public rating mechanism of government credit very early.

I seldom praise others. However, Taobao is what I like in today's society. In the society with insufficient credibility and ugly and incurable human nature, we can feel a little comfortable and hopeful in Taobao.

If each of us can check the record of petitions and complaints, processing results and satisfaction ratings of everyone at any time someday, common people are the real owners of the country and the government really serves the people. Any concealment and black box operation deprive and trample people's power.

Many people will laugh at what I said. They think I talk idiotic nonsense. This is exactly the sadness, stupidity, ignorance, and unconsciousness of human beings.

This problem will be solved immediately as long as most of people have the same concept and consciousness state with me.

The last government has done a lot of work, tried its best, and made great achievements. However, many problems cannot be tackled for some objective reasons.

I write and publish this article on the Internet.

Now, it seems that the new government is focusing on solving related problems.

88. Reform needs awakening and support of the people

About 2007

The prime minister said that reform needs the awakening and support of the people.

Reform of China some time ago acknowledged, protected, and mobilised the elite, privileged class of interests, contribution, and enthusiasm to achieve.

But today, the reform into the deep water area, the contributions of the elite, privileged class are obvious. However, the negative impact has become increasingly evident. Social progress and deepening of reform, which need to adjust to their interests, limit their interest right away.

This time, the elite, the privileged class has shown some annoying behaviour.

Looking for a leftist bastard came to power and once again launched a cultural revolution, which is that simple-minded, well-developed limbs have inertia of thinking.

Protecting and safeguarding the interests of the people of the bottom and adjusting the elite interests are in need of reform.

It is not anticipated that only the elite and privileged themselves can do it. People at the bottom are all simple-minded brawn, well-developed limbs. Otherwise they would not be the bottom of the social groups.

The only result is a cultural revolution if you let them move up. No other choice, because they lack knowledge. In addition to beating, smashing, looting, murder, and arson, they do nothing, know nothing.

We must mobilise and rely on people at the bottom if we want to continue to reform—genuine reform. When we launch, rely on subalterns, we need to teach them what to do and what not to do.

Now, those in power are only using state-capitalist ideology to govern the country. But they did not dare to promote state capitalism. At the same time, they dare not let state capitalism be the national religion and educate the people on what state capitalism is.

In this case, the underlying best condition is to maintain the status quo. If state capitalism is not an important cultural ideology, deeply rooted in people's minds, all made in China after decades since the revolution will later return to the origin.

If the people at the bottom do not know what state capitalism is, what a country should do, what to support, and what the opposition is, then they would not need to dominate any revolution.

Because the results of their revolution are to make chaos, civilisation backward, and loss of life, which does not make any sense. A group of rogues get rid of another group of hooligans, and then they continue to be rogues.

Whether left, right, separation of powers, elections democracy thoughts to be implemented in China, they must be based on state capitalism above. Otherwise, we still continue to maintain homeostasis. Do not try anything, do nothing. No matter what they do, it will lead to chaos, loss of life and will only last for decades. If state capitalism is not an ideology and culture, a universal inherent culture, then anything is false, everything is clouds.

The left and the right, if you really understand what I say, want to do something for the people at the bottom, the only way is to educate them, to give them rights, which is the only way to solve the underlying problem of the interests but also is a prerequisite to engage in political reform in China. Otherwise, do nothing, what do not think. No matter what will cause chaos, loss of life.

89. The third plenary session

16 November 2013

Our leaders ambitiously made a lot of proposals on reform during the third plenary session, with more thorough efforts than my expectation. They had a great number of wonderful visions. However, how the visions will develop in the face of the hideous nature of humans only can be proven by time.

However, I believe the Chinese are very clever; so are our leaders. They would not have pushed ahead with the reform if they are incapable of doing it. I think they were confident to pull off the visions. However, it was sure that there would be difficulties, as humans are hideous, selfish, and dirty in nature. The people with vested interests want to maintain the interests forever. People only admit two things, say, power and money, can be the topics of their talks with others; anything else will fall on deaf ears.

I proposed to separate ownership from management many years ago, in a bid to enable the Communist Party to regain economic power. That was driven by interests. People who understood that would follow my proposal. Therefore, the aircraft carrier could adjust its direction without moving.

I really don't know what I should say till today. It's time for our leaders to say.

Sometimes, I think that only after Chairman Mao and Stalin killed many people could others understand what they were talking. Maybe that was a helpless choice. I don't want things to be like that.

I hope to turn wonderful visions into an ideological culture, promote them into everything in everyone's daily life, and this is a culture.

I hope people with comprehension can spread my article to enable your compatriots to understand what humans should do, what they shouldn't, and which kind of society and social system they should establish. Only after we overcome the dirtiness and hideousness in nature, by virtue of a reasonable social system as well as reasonable relations between different people, people and society, and people and nature, can we truly share the common prosperity amid coexistence.

I don't want to see such a sad day. If you really don't understand or don't want to understand what I am talking, I don't have anything to talk with you then. If you are unlucky to block the development of human civilisation, the society, and the earth, either with or without purpose, the outcome will be awful. People are negligible, dirty, and hideous.

90. State capitalism injects power to people, with kindness tendency and justice

25 November 2013

The saying that kindness and justice inject power to people with kindness tendency and justice has been familiar to us. In addition, it seems that the governors of all dynasties used the sentence to describe themselves. They all claimed that they were upholding the justice and they themselves represented justice.

Why did they say that? It was because their governance became legal, at least theoretically legal, only after they had said that. At least all the others believed that was right and wouldn't oppose or resist at once. It can be said that all the governors at all times in all over the world said so to maintain their leadership.

Some of them were absolutely cheating others, lying to maintain their leadership, just as Lin Biao's saying 'no great things can be done without lying' and Hitler's 'lies become truth after being repeated 10,000 times'.

Some of them intended to maintain the justice and do something good at the beginning. However, various factors changed the results, and they gradually got used to that.

I believe most of the governors belong to the latter. With good starting points, they originally intended to do something good. However, the results turned out bad somehow. A person's power is limited. Sometimes, he or she has to compromise to the evil force.

What's the reason for that? It's the Taoism and methodology proposed by Chinese philosopher Lao Tzu.

Governors without the principles of truth and right will only become fatuous rulers. People without correct means can only do poor things, regardless of their good starting points. No other choices are available.

What I have said can be found in Lao Tzu's Tao Te Ching. I repeated it again today.

Though I've said and written so much, I only want to express one thing:

Inject power to people with justice and kindness tendency through state capitalism (public ownership), enable them to do things well, enable the public to enjoy good days, and allow the country, people, and even the entire world and universe to run normally and harmoniously.

What is justice?

Justice is not fixed and unchanged. So is the governance of a country. In China, the country's policies have been adjusted since the leadership of Chairman Mao.

Not all the policies are correct or incorrect. Different things should be done at different times. That is to say, reform is endless. We should keep deepening the reform.

This is like cooking. Sometimes, we need to add salt, sometimes we need to add sugar, and sometimes we need to add water, big fire, or small fire.

What is unchanged? The Three Represents is unchanged. The party should always represent the development needs of China's advanced social productive forces, always represent the onward direction of China's advanced culture, and always represent the fundamental.

The Three Represents should not be said only. It should be put into practice. Otherwise, it will become evil instead of justice.

91. Anti-corruption, anti-porn, and economic development

27 April 2014

At present, the Chinese government is in the fight against corruption. Some of my government customers complained to me that they used to have dinner and send gifts. But they don't have any welfare this year; instead, they have to pay out of their own pockets.

Some of my other clients in catering services also said that business is not as good as before. The phenomena of doing recreational activities using public funds are gone. The consumption of ordinary people is limited.

Moreover, according to today's news, anti-pornography campaign in Dongguan gives rise to low consumption.

I'm not against pornography and not against the consumption by public funds. The prostitution in China is different from sex slaves in Eastern Europe. Sex slaves belong to gangdom behaviour that violates human rights seriously, which should be cracked down. Most of the prostitution in China is a means of making a living.

If discussing pornography, keeping a mistress is much worse. Why don't you crack down? As to those hotel prostitutes, they only make a few hundred yuan each time, which belongs to retail. On the other hand, keeping a mistress means having sex every day and the mistress can make a few hundred thousand per year, which belongs to large-scale wholesale trade. If the retail on the street is illegal, why would mistress wholesale trade be legal? How does this make sense?

The only explanation is face-saving project and image project. Street-based sex trade destroys the glorious image of the government. However, keeping a mistress belongs to backroom deals, which have no direct relationship with the government image.

It is known that prostitution spurs economic development, promotes employment, and provides some people the opportunity to make a living. But China's traditional culture makes it impossible to have a single person raise a hand and support prostitution. People only oppose from the legal level or the surface of the officer.

I'm not against pornography and I will not support it either. From the interests of the people, it needs fair discussion and study and needs to be legalised.

Before wiping out pornography, all the mistresses and those who keep mistresses should be arrested and sentenced. Rich people can have sex every day, but those who lack money will be cracked down and sentenced for one-time sex. This is unfair. This is discrimination. This is psychologically 'hate the poor and worship the rich'. One may steal a horse, while another may not look over the hedge.

Then let's discuss paying with public funds.

According to China's traditional culture, Chinese people prefer saving rather than consumption. 'Rearing children for old age, store up grain against famine.' Ordinary people don't like spending, so only the government can pay with public funds. At least, it makes sense logically. If no one consumes, what's the point of having factories?

As China's economy is indeed deformity, our government attempts to adjust the consumption structure and make reform. The government does not want more money to flow to the real estate; instead, it should flow to the entity economy. Of course, the government has the government's plan. But I have my opinion. Maybe after the adjustment of the government, Chinese economy will be on a path to the healthy development. I hope so.

But now it really has some effect.

92. The Safety Island of Abandoned Children

7 June 2014

Recently, I have noticed that our county has taken measures to build a safety island for the government to adopt abandoned children. And most of the children they adopt suffer from severe congenital diseases.

Indeed, it's progress for the government to adopt abandoned children.

How many people die of terrorist attacks and wars in the world?

They are all able-bodied people with family affection, friendship, and love. It's hard to imagine how many people would die in wars and political movements, starvation, and killings?

Are infants with serious congenital diseases so valuable?

Perhaps someone would say that our country is peaceful; I have never encountered killings or violence, and we are not short of food.

Please remember that everyone is seen as equal before God. I can't see any difference between African refugees and American citizens because they have the same value of life.

There are no so-called nobles and there are no so-called untouchables.

On the one hand, people keep talking about human rights; on the other hand, they turn a blind eye to others' disasters and misfortunes and even make disasters and misfortunes for others. These people are talking bullshit. They are garbage in the guise of pseudo-democracy and pseudo-human rights.

There is no difference between African refugees and those abandoned infants with severe congenital diseases in value of life.

It is nonsense to talk about human rights before figuring out cardinal questions of right and wrong for big disasters in the world. That's almost a heretical idea. I believe that everyone has the right to pursue happiness.

Congenital major diseases are the fault of God rather than the fault of young married couples. Such fault should be fixed by God. Young couples have no obligation to suffer from it.

We should not allow a child with some congenital major disease destroy a family's happiness.

I personally suggest that a child with some congenital major disease should be sacrificed

humanely two weeks after birth. If his or her parents insist on adopting their kid, they should pay for wasting of social resources.

The fault of God should be assumed by God. He should give a healthy kid to young couples so that they have the freedom to pursue happiness.

If the parents finally decide to abandon their kid two weeks after birth, it is feasible to take the kid to a government adoption agency, but the parents should receive proper punishment for their fault at that time.

The safety island of abandoned children represents progress, but it is just a halfway progress.

93. Hong Kong judicial power shall belong to the central government

26 August 2014

Hong Kong basic law is made by the People's Congress. In my opinion, Hong Kong should realise separation of powers, i.e. executive power, legislative power, and judicial power, among which the judicial power should belong to the central government.

In fact, the natives of Hong Kong are unable to manage its public security. Our Chinese government is in urgent need of helping them safeguard fairness and justice and improve their public security.

Hong Kong's violent criminals run amuck, which makes Hong Kong people live in misery, and complaints are heard everywhere.

Chinese government needs to help Hong Kong citizens to protect their land, get rid of the bullies, and bring peace to the good people.

In the three powers, judicial power is just a power of the execution. Independent judicial power also represents social justice.

I believe the judicial officers sent by China will manage Hong Kong's public security well immediately within Hong Kong's law. All the problems will be solved in one day, and all the rioters and separatists will disappear at once.

This is real democracy. Separation of powers should be more thorough. Everyone will be free from worry. The executive power belongs to the Hong Kong people. You can do whatever you want as long as it is within the range.

The legislative power also belongs to the Hong Kong people. You can make any laws you want as long as it is within the range.

It is better to have the Chinese government send officers to handle the troublesome case in which they may face the risks of being killed. Isn't it a good thing to have bodyguards to protect you?

This is the central government's duty and right of exercising sovereignty. The People's Liberation Army has so much equipment, so many soldiers, world-class special troops, and armed forces. They can be sent to Hong Kong whenever and wherever possible. Is there something wrong with that? Do you need to fear the violent?

Facts proved that Hong Kong people can do nothing in the management of public security, which made people complain everywhere. This needs to be improved.

The separation of powers is an advanced culture and system of capitalist system. This is capitalist culture, not communist culture. It is really a good system, which should be carried out in Hong Kong. But it still needs to discard the dross and select the essence for the benefit of the Hong Kong people.

Only achieving separation of powers, making judicial power belong to the central government, can the so-called general election without any conditions be feasible.

But I still hope the central government can choose a chief executive who is good at making money. Our Hong Kong people will make a lot of money with their help.

Paying attention to the nomination of chief executive and ruling Hong Kong through election is a thinking pattern of the rule of man. It seems that it will handle everything if you find a mayor on your side.

The real Western democracy is that under the separation of powers. The power of chief executive and mayor is limited. What power does a mayor have if he or she hasn't judicial power and legislative power? Is it real or magical? He or she only has the power of serving people. Besides, he or she should exercise power within the bounds of the law and under the supervision of judicial departments. So the essence of real democracy is making the system manage people, not people managing the system.

Chinese government's focus on the chief executive is the thought of the rule of man. They hope to find a top leader to manage Hong Kong. In fact, in democracy, the power of a top leader is separated. They even can't be called top leader and played a little role.

We need to control Hong Kong's situation by taking back judicial power, which can be called the rule of law.

Judicial power is a real power relevant to people's daily life. It is also a basic feature of national sovereignty. In the meantime, it is power needing great power to support. If this duty can't be exercised well or is limited by economic and military input lacking in deterrence, all these will incite criminals to bring serious harm to civilians.

Officials' collusion with criminals is an obvious reflection of judicial power's intervention by various factors.

Because capitalist countries have money and the expenditure of judicial power comes from capitalists, it is bound to have limitations. Their judicial fairness is limited.

It is known that it is illegal to occupy Central, but judicial authorities didn't take any actions, because law enforcement necessarily costs a lot of human, physical, and financial resources. In addition, they have minor delinquency; they have done nothing.

However, under state capitalism, in the aspects of government's law enforcement, their human, physical, and financial resources are infinite. This can safeguard fairness and justice.

Executive power is power that governs Hong Kong's economy according to the local situations and willingness. If Hong Kong hasn't executive power, they will ascribe the bad economy to the central government's limitation, like someone said earlier. Since we have reached an agreement on 'one country, two systems', the local people should have the power to govern the local economy and develop the economy according to their own will.

It is enough for Chinese government to have judicial power. They develop economy; we guard their security. We are responsible for arresting those who break the law and judge them. This is the best combination of separation of three powers.

Taking back judicial power is protecting national sovereignty and territorial integrity, which does not contradict 'one country, two systems'.

It is 'one country, two systems' for a region that doesn't have sovereignty but has executive power. Their nature will be changed if we give them everything.

The parade that happened at three on August 17 in the afternoon in Hong Kong is actually a parade that downed the Chinese flag. They spoil and tread on the national flag wantonly, throwing it to the side and trampling it, yelling such slogans as 'making the mainlander go back to the mainland, don't let locusts come to Hong Kong'.

Treason and rebellion have occurred in Hong Kong and happen all the time.

Because Hong Kong connives with terrorists, anti-party, anti-social acts and secession offend China's sovereignty of Hong Kong.

All the declarations and laws are on the basis of the inviolability of China's sovereignty. As long as China's sovereignty is infringed, all these declarations and laws can be overturned.

All the statements and laws like Sino-British Joint Declaration and Hong Kong Basic Law, which are on the basis of China's sovereignty on Hong Kong, are absolutely integrated and respectful.

As long as the behaviour of infringing China's sovereignty occurs, all these can be overturned. When negotiating with Britain at that time, Deng Xiaoping wanted to use Chinese time and method to take back Hong Kong by force. If he did so, Hong Kong would come back in the afternoon on that day. He didn't do that just because of his tenderness towards women.

If Deng Xiaoping knew after the return of Hong Kong, Hong Kong people would still connive with terrorists' anti-party, anti-social acts and secession, he would kick some ass.

Taking back Hong Kong's judicial power is not a punishment for Hong Kong people; instead, it is

the development of system. It can make capitalist democracy and socialist social management system combine perfectly.

The defects of capitalist social management are its inherent problem and fundamental flaws. The issue of terrorists is not Hong Kong's own issue, but the inherent problem of all the capitalist countries. This is a defect of the system, defect of the top design.

Terrorist activities and the disorder of social management will send the social thought and management out of control and then the productivity will decline as well. It is hard to develop the most productivity.

I hope to take this chance to combine these two systems; in the combination of the advantages of these two systems, I expect to see whether it can develop the most productivity and advantages.

Maybe it will unprecedentedly become the best social system and management model, which can be popular all around the nation. Besides, it is also within China's sovereignty.

94. Gangdom

30 August 2014

Gangdom is a main mark of social management failure and lack of control.

Common people's life will be directly affected if the social management is aborted and out of control. The harm from the underworld to ordinary people is the most serious, much more than government corruption and the outdated social system.

The gangdom bullies specially the weak, the ordinary people at the bottom of society. So I measure whether a country and society is successful or not in management by how rampant the mob is.

Because if the government is corrupted, the worst thing to the ordinary is to abandon them to their fate, the government will not torture them; they are too poor to get anything from.

But the gangdom will adopt thousands of means to oppress the ordinary people at the bottom of society. The people without any income at the bottom of the social heap will invite you to join them instead of giving you a hand. They not only grab everything from you, but control your physical power and the souls of those at the bottom, servicing the mob, committing crime: stealing, grabbing, cheating, and killing people. I vowed to make them perish from the world. I hate them.

The society full of gangdom is the most outrageous one.

No matter how advanced and developed you are in terms of economy, it is outrageous, failing to manage society. And this society has no quality to promote anything.

China clamped down on gangdom in the past, which was thought to be neither democratic nor legal by Western society. But I think this movement is necessary.

Even the comment from the Western countries which are so-called democratic countries is kind of dirty and shameless. They harbour and pamper the evils and monsters; they ignore and disregard the people at the bottom of social heap.

The so-called civilisation they believe in is exactly backward and ignorant, dirty, and evil. It is the follower and accomplice of Satan.

Marx once said, 'When falling to the world, each pore of capitalism, from head to foot, is flowing with blood and dirty items.'

Here, Marx wanted to express that the primitive accumulation of capitalism is as dirty and bloody

as gangdom. When doing primitive accumulation, it is the behaviour of the underworld, but they washed themselves with money afterwards.

So the capitalist system is a system that has opened a door for gangsterdom since the day it was built. This is what they call civilisation, human rights, democracy, and freedom; those are the amulet and protective umbrella for gangsterdom at the very start.

I am not negating capitalism totally, nor banishing it like Marx did, because capitalism is a relative progress and necessary stage of human society. The idea of human rights, democracy, and freedom is a kind of progress compared with the feudalism of the Middle East region and African areas.

Marxism is surely brutal at the very start; it took the wrong way and brought harm to human beings. But the capitalist system makes me discontented and angry for it shields and pampers gangsterdom at its original design. I hope people can improve it and step forward.

If the members of gangdom commit the crime of murder, its head and executor shall be shot. They have to pay for what they did. Like the Mexican drug dealer and IS, their organs should be cut off for money to compensate the families of the victims and the people's loss, except for a life for a life.

95. Diligence

21 October 2014

Chinese people are diligent, while people from other places are relatively fond of leisure.

The reason why God creates human beings, I think, is that he expects the human beings can change the world, while all of this needs labour or hard work.

One of my friends told me that the African who believes in Islam will pray five times per day, which can't be altered under any circumstances; therefore, they only have a low productivity. The work efficiency of two African persons is even lower than that of one Chinese, while their salaries are not so low, and their labour costs are even higher than those of the Chinese.

Besides, they are absolutely lazy and never save up. The children would rather hang a bowl on the neck to beg than attend school, even if it is free education.

However, this is absolutely inconceivable in China. Why is there such a kind of difference? Why are Chinese diligent and the foreigners in some places lazy?

In my opinion, this is related to the cultures.

Why are Chinese people diligent? China attaches importance to the traditional cultures and Confucius-Mencius culture. It will be despised to be poor, backward, ignorant, illiterate, degenerate, and lazy, by the whole society. These people will be unable to find wives and will be ostracised by the society.

Why are the foreigners in some places lazy? The foreign countries pay attention to personal cultures and Islamic culture. Traditional cultures and Confucius-Mencius culture make people diligent. Personal culture and Islamic culture cause people to be lazy. God doesn't like to see lazy human beings, because that is dirty.

I once analysed the traditional cultures and Confucius-Mencius culture, which can lead to a kind of connection and system and a kind of unwritten contract and care between people.

There is a kind of unwritten contract and care between parents and children so that the parents must manage and invest in their children from childhood. They must have a requirement for the children, conducting investment and strict management to them.

The children must support their parents when they are old, which is the present morality, while in ancient times when the law implemented it compulsorily, they would be put to death if they refused to support their parents. Therefore, the children must be well educated and invested in when they are young; thus, they will have the ability to create a good living environment and

support their parents. However, this kind of early investment and management is necessary.

When the parents become old, if their children are promising, people will give the credit to their parents and think they have good methods to educate their children and have made a successful investment. Therefore, they should be respected and supported, and that's a fact. The future achievement of the children is absolutely related with their parents' disciplining when they were young; thus, the success of the children is that of the parents and they deserve to be respected and supported. Similarly, the unsuccessful parents will be laughed at and looked down upon. The old saying 'There are three forms of unfilial conducts, of which the worst is to have no descendants' narrates the same truth. Namely, if some people don't give birth to or bring up children, especially boys, there will be no person to support them when they are old, which will lead to the decline of their family, and it is the worst unfilial conduct, also the greatest misfortune.

Of course, some people will say that the social security pension system of the developed countries is now very advanced, so they don't need this kind of original social relation.

1. The undeveloped areas absolutely need this kind of relationship to play a role.

2. The old people from the developed countries also need spiritual comfort, not purely material satisfaction.

3. There is also a population decrease in the developed countries, and the civilisation needs to be continued.

A child is better unborn than untaught. When one achieves success, he also wins a noble position for his wife. When a man gets to the top, all his friends and relations get there with him.

We can say that this is a kind of transaction and constraint, while it indeed conforms to the real intention of God from the angle of the social benefit, and it makes God joyous. Therefore, human beings can do well in the compulsory education and pension insurance naturally.

Actually, that the children are educated, managed, and cared for and the old people are respected and supported marks the successful management and operation of the society. In China, from the ancient times and the era of Confucius and Mencius, there exist the compulsory education and pension insurance functions, which make the society orderly and run reasonably. God feels joyous and has the sense of achievement at the sight of it filled with vitality.

However, people from other places might be not quite satisfactory. Though the European people have advanced economy, they hanker after an easy and comfortable life and are very lazy; besides, they are unwilling to give birth to and bring up children, leading to a negative population growth in the Western countries.

Two problems will be brought by the negative population growth:

1. It will result in economic recession, population decline, aged tendency of population, and reduced social demand.

2. In order to solve the labour force and supporting problems, Europe introduces lots of Muslims, which brings serious public security and culture conflicts, making the European civilisation and democratic civilisation of the Western countries disappear gradually.

Especially at present, in poor Africa, the children prefer to hang a bowl on their necks to beg everywhere rather than attend school. In addition, they also act in collusion with Islam, being so filthy.

There is a problem from the root of the cultures.

96. A life for a life and debts should be repaid

21 November 2014

‘A life for a life and debts should be repaid’ is a part of the traditional Chinese culture and is also being referred to as a heavenly principle.

Heavenly principles are the principles and jurisprudence being adopted universally. I have never studied exactly how many heavenly principles in China. However, ‘intolerable by the course of nature’ is often mentioned by Chinese people; what can be attributed as intolerable by the course of nature, in general, is also referred to as ‘a life for a life and debts should be repaid’.

There are so many principles in the world, and each of them is justifiable under certain circumstances. Cultural thoughts are various and diversified.

The course of nature comes down to eight Chinese characters only, which is ‘a life for a life and debts should be repaid’. Simple and clear, but it contains the most fundamental codes of conduct for human beings.

Only the people living in the places that are protected by those eight Chinese characters are granted the most basic social environment for their survival, then it can be possible for them to discuss civilisation, culture, and thoughts.

If even those eight Chinese characters are distorted and denied, the world is doomed to be in chaos. Because human beings will not even have their most basic living environment, let alone other civilisation, all of which are talking nonsense and will turn out to be frauds.

‘A life for a life’ can ensure the most basic security of human beings, which is the life safety and can guarantee the most basic point, which is the respect for an individual’s life. ‘A life for a life’ is the guarantee and respect for the lives of those people who are alive.

‘A life for a life’ is a scope which is used to restrain the evil and devilish behaviour and to limit the greediness of all human beings, thus to confine evil spirit and demons to a certain scope.

Evil spirit, demons, as well as greediness, are born with every person; the death instinct is included in the nature of human beings.

If the damage done to any other person can be limited within the scope of killing that person, then more or less, it is possible to relieve or compensate that damage.

Therefore, Chinese people often say, ‘Life is all.’ It is impossible to prevent one from fighting, plundering, damaging, or hating other people since human beings are born with greediness. In other words, dirtiness and evilness are born with all human beings as they are natural instincts or

inherent qualities of the latter. To sum up, these are greediness, jealousy, and evilness.

To completely remove all the greediness, jealousy, and evilness from oneself, sometimes, I think I cannot even do so, let alone other ordinary people.

Greediness, jealousy, and evilness are part of human nature, which if completely removed, would change human beings from what they are, in the absence of complete human nature.

In this sense, our social rules should be established based on human nature; to be more specific, these are established on the greediness, jealousy, and evilness of human nature.

Therefore, I oppose the act of hatred against sex industry and corruption. Lust and greediness are all about human nature. Advertising oneself as having no lust and greediness in order to manage the society conveniently and to establish a social system and rules in the complete absence of lust and greediness is a fraud and lie without any consideration of humanity, or it is even an excuse used to cover up more evil deals. The saying 'One may steal a horse while another may not look over the hedge' just originated from this point.

According to the belief maintained by Islam, lust and greediness in humanity can be eliminated by hiding women's faces. Now people have widely realised that it is a heresy showing no sign of humanity and is a terrorist organisation causing tremendous damage and trouble to human beings.

Lust and greediness are all about human nature and can be only restricted to a certain scope but cannot be eliminated. The course of nature, a life for a life would be violated if people were killed for their lust and greediness. Because Islamic extremist groups and some other organisations have violated the course of nature, they must be destroyed.

From an economic perspective, debts should be repaid is a course of nature used to regulate human behaviour. Debts refer to the compensations made for the losses of either party in economic activities acknowledged by both parties under a contract.

Each country shall set forth the rules that are used to regulate their economic activities based on their own actual conditions.

However, if this matter is to be arbitrated by God, debts should be repaid.

97. The loss of faith in this era

26 December 2014

I felt long before that our generation is in the confusion and grief of the era.

It was not until I noticed the reflection in literary works and the social identity recently that I had an apparently same feeling. And this is shown in love as well as in the idea of family.

There is a joke saying that the generation post-seventies in Mainland China is workaholic, often working overtime, and the post-eighties refuses to work overtime, while the post-nineties, who even refuse to go to work, are all delinquents.

The post-seventies is relatively a generation of having faith, which is decreasing generation by generation. Moreover, the gradual loss of this faith is mainly reflected in the aspects of love and career.

Compared with the Israeli-Palestinian conflict, the Syria conflict, the heresy terrorism of IS, the Ukraine conflict, and Taliban, the Chinese so-called grief is just like making a fuss about an imaginary illness, so Chinese people should be content for still living in paradise.

In spite of the fact that ordinary Chinese are lacking in faith, the Chinese government still has its faith, and they exactly know where China should be led to. As for the ordinary people's faith, they would definitely know when they are supposed to know. However, the grief caused by faith problems in other areas of the world is extremely serious, which is more supposed to be called hurt, horror, evil, and hatred.

Essentially, the grief that people in Mainland China are suffering is the same as that of the world, which is actually a loss of faith. The faith of ordinary Mainland Chinese is gradually disappearing, drifting along like an abandoned ship at sea.

As for the rest of the world, their faiths have been outdated and wrong, just like a grown-up is still wearing a pair of small shoes and small clothes; the spiritual civilisation is falling far behind the material civilisation, which has been losing control, just like one's behaviour is getting rid of the control of his ideology, like having mental disease. Moreover, the conflicts among various cultures have been interwoven with material conflicts, which has brought about an extremely complex and serious situation.

I think every one of us is actually a computer created by God, having our hardware and software, which are respectively the human body and the human ideology as well as culture.

Theoretically, we all share similar configuration in hardware, while the difference among individuals is located in their ideology, i.e. the software. And also theoretically, anyone can

survive with any kind of ideology, i.e., any kind of soul.

People should have different ideologies, which also means different souls, just like some people are still using DOS, while some using Windows 95, 98, XP, 7, or 10.

This is because humans' material civilisation has come to an age when a new operating system is needed. All the previous ideologies and souls need updating, or they won't be able to support the new hardware of the new era—a new material civilisation would generate its new hardware.

And all the existing griefs of the human society, the problems of ideologies and souls, are caused by this reason. The old ideologies cannot adapt to the current productivity development, which has led to serious impediments and conflicts.

Human ideologies in the past are all defective and unsound, including the chieftaincy tribalism, feudalism, Marxism, and capitalism, while anyone with any kind of these ideologies is regarded to be paranoid and defective, which is bound to fall into conflicts against the society and the world.

If humans want development and survival, all people must improve their ideologies, as well as update their operating systems and their souls; otherwise, there would be no necessity for humans to survive but to disappear. This is a task for all the humans of this era, which has to be finished, or serious consequences would occur then. Those who are unwilling to or cannot update their souls would definitely unable to coexist and to enjoy common prosperity with the world, and they are bound to be abandoned. I do not want to see any bad result on anybody, but that day will come.

Those who are unable to coexist with others are demons and rubbish, and they need to disappear from the earth. Those who don't love this world are also demons and rubbish, and they also need to disappear from the earth.

With souls updated, humans would need new missions and new tasks, so as to enter the new civilisation. Those who are reluctant to enter the new civilisation are required to leave, and to disappear. There is no need for humans to endlessly indulge in those meaningless conflicts and fights. All of these have reached their ends.

This is our mission of the era, or grief, or glory.

98. Criminals sentenced to death should be encouraged to transplant organs

3 January 2015

It is right that organ transplantation is voluntary. The problem is that involuntary can be converted into voluntary and vice versa.

Sometimes it is difficult for people to change their wills. However, it's not always difficult as long as a proper method is adopted.

Organ transplantation is not bad but can help to love to one another. If people can come around, they will agree that it should be a good thing to be able to help other people after their deaths. It is a good deed to save other people's lives.

To be honest, it is usually a taboo for people to talk about what will happen after death. Of course, death awaits all people, but they don't know when death comes, especially people who will die accidentally and come to a bad end in their day.

For organ transplantation, a young donor is the best choice. However, young people won't think about organ transplantation at ordinary times, and it's not necessary for them to think about it. Thus, it reveals a contradiction.

However, criminals sentenced to death are different, because they have enough time to think about it. In addition, the government and other people also have enough time and reason to discuss and communicate with them on this problem.

Another issue that criminals should consider is that since they have already hurt society and people, shouldn't they consider making up for their mistakes and doing some useful things for society and other people? It's a fair deal to sell organs to other people, and the money earned can comfort their families and realise their expectations.

It is a good thing to make a deal and do something meaningful before death. The key is idea communication, and the government should provide a platform and a market for it.

I think all criminals sentenced to death should be organised to attend training and study classes and compelled to learn every day. In the meantime, I think this is a practice that can enhance their ideological levels. They had no time to study, learn, and think about it before, but now they have time, conditions, and opportunities to do those things. Therefore, they should study and learn well, to purify their souls and enhance their ideological levels. As a result, they can do something useful for society and help and comfort their families.

If a market for the organ transplantation is available, maybe they can meet the right buyer and earn a pretty penny for the family.

Hitler said, repeat a lie a thousand times and it becomes the truth. Moreover, it is not a lie, so it needs to be taught repeatedly.

After becoming convinced, people just smile indifferently though it's a big deal.

'Path is shown up only when thousands of people walk through.'

People have done many ridiculous things and continue to do them. Organ transplantation is not ridiculous but serious. It is a good deed, but no one is willing to or dares to do it.

Human beings are barbarous, benighted, dirty, and hypocritical.

Human beings flaunt their glorious images over and over again. In order to enhance their images, consolidate their positions, and maintain their interests, they ignore the interests of the state and the society as well as human beings. This is the behaviour that harms others to benefit oneself.

For some flagitious devils' punishment, they should be deprived of a voluntary right and spared education and persuasion. They should be forced to transplant organs, do good works, and atone for their crimes. There is nothing wrong. People who took part in IS and other Islamic terrorist organisations should also be forced to transplant organs, because they are devils.

99. Some low-quality Chinese shopping spree abroad

23 February 2015

Democracy is the high-end consumer goods that can only be consumed and afforded by high-quality people with a certain level of quality and civilisation. Countries such as the backward impoverished countries or the extremely violent and wicked Islamic countries will always be troubled in democracy.

Democracy requires the populace's cultivation to be at the level of appreciating Mozart or Shakespeare.

Recently, a Chinese who took a trip in Thailand kicked a celestial bell in a temple and was filmed. This is an outrageous behaviour, in need of oral criticism.

In my opinion, that guy may even pee on the head of the Statue of Liberty in USA, if no one sees him.

Rich and wilful.

I believe that the guy that kicked the celestial bell must know nothing about Mozart and Shakespeare. These Chinese upstarts are characterised by being uneducated, with no quality, no faith, and no accomplishment, including doubting about communism. Except for money, they believe in nothing at all.

Democracy is high-end consumer goods. Chinese people featuring the low-quality, high IQ, shrewd, and wickedly smart are not suitable for it.

The question is, why are those Chinese so rich? This is a problem worthy of study. There is no absolute connection between being rich and high-quality, so there is no connection between being rich and democratic either. In return, the democratic system is the most vicious poison in the low-quality countries. It will just bring about disasters, chaos, and terrors to those low-level countries.

During recent years, China has undergone internal adjustment without a focus on economic development. The China mode has been adjusted in the pilot run. This means that the shopping spree of low-quality populations, such as the Chinese, hasn't started officially. In the future, such atmosphere will just be more frequent forever.

It is tolerable that the population could be low-quality, knowing nothing and nonsense, but not the elite class of a country. They shall not lead the public to death, hardship, wars, or disasters. This is just the compulsory responsibility that shall be assumed by the social elites.

America, Freemasonry, and Western states have been outputting democracy, wars, disasters, and errors to backward countries and regions in order to seek for the interests of big capital.

It is time to end them all.

The scientific state capitalism, or the scientific communist, will be the truth and righteousness to solve all of these problems, as the love and original idea of God.

100. Go home, 2012, God comes and the destiny of Chinese is decreed

15 March 2015

I knew that Christian party in Hong Kong a long time ago but didn't watch it carefully. Today, I took some time watching the video clip and 100 per cent sure God's oracle.

It was not religious propaganda, nor was it brainwashing. That was God's arrangement. Just ordinary people didn't know it.

China's traditional culture and Western culture are different since ancient times as I addressed before, and the Chinese culture is a systematic culture, Western culture is a personal culture.

Western culture is essentially different from Chinese culture.

I think that whether Western culture or Chinese culture, it's not fictitious culture like Mexican drug trafficking culture or Korean extremism. These are a masterpiece of humanity. Frankly speaking, that's what human intelligence is.

I think that Western-style democracy, freedom, human rights, and culture are the creation of Freemasonry's boss, Satan.

The Chinese systematic culture is the prehistoric civilisation left by God during the Creation.

As I mentioned, communism and China's traditional culture have the same origin. More accurately they are the same culture. That is why communism can succeed in China but failed in other countries. Because of the difference in cultural genes, communism can only be compatible with the Chinese traditional culture and prosperous. Otherwise, it can hardly be compatible with another culture, especially with Freemasonry's democracy, freedom, human rights culture dominated by Satan.

Western countries controlled by Satan or Freemasonry try their best to destroy communism.

What seems to be a struggle between people, in fact, is the struggle between God and Satan. Much more powerful forces are leading the struggle, and we're just the actors.

Life is like a drama, so is history. Just the roles vary. Human beings are small and mercy puppets either play the clown or the hero.

Perhaps only in the constant failures and struggles can human beings lift the soul and grow. Only in that way can human life be wonderful and meaningful.

I think Freemasonry and Western countries are necessary, for when human beings suffer, they

get to know God's greatness. If there is no Satan and Freemasonry, humans cannot see the ugliness of his soul.

What Mexicans said also confirmed this point. 'We are near the United States, yet so far from God.'

The United States is in dominance of Freemasonry, so they are surely far from God.

As it said in Russia, 'Where there is the US, there is misfortune', which confirmed this point.

I suggest that every American should buy a Diamond Sutra and read more spiritually to cultivate their minds.

I found that mankind can only choose, not thinking, just as a woman only has consciousness but cannot think. In facing the problem of selecting communism or democracy, people can only choose instead of thinking, no matter which they choose: left or right, democracy or communism.

I have read so many articles but never found a man saying, 'Two systems are reasonable in part and we should learn from them both to improve our own country.'

There is no constructive discussion but beating, smashing, looting, murder, and arson. Democracy is a choice for a man from Satan, while communism is from God. Human beings can only choose but not think.

The cause of this phenomenon is that the human brain is limited in computing power and the abstract idea, politics, culture, and religion are hard for them to understand, let alone master.

In my opinion, all thinkers, philosophers, religionists, politicians seem to just say one thing in his life, and they do understand nothing if unfamiliar.

Frankly, Mao did not understand capitalism, while the US president does not understand real socialism. Marx did not know capital, because he had never been a capitalist, nor had he been a worker.

The reason the gods did not tell the whole truth is that human beings can neither understand nor integrate two seemingly contradictory things into a coherent whole. So God segments the truth and lets it be spoken out by different people.

In fact, I now believe that what Satan and Freemasonry said is a kind of important truth. The key point is how we use or treat the problem.

In my opinion, all the truth, culture, politics, ideology, and philosophy are just tools, which we need for different cases. Just as we have no choice but to call out the most ferocious devil to deal

with the IS devil.

When dealing with public demonstrations, we need some ideas. If only the devil is in your pocket and nothing else, things will be very difficult.

As the Chinese government in solving people's things, there are many things that can be solved by money, rather than regime or suppressive power. So many options are available, and solving by force is the last resort. That is a harmonious society under the protection of power.

Democracies' government has little money in domination but has police. In that way, the contradiction is more complex.

In fact, money is everything; the government could use money to solve a lot of problems that cannot be solved by force. And I think that democracy is a tactical behaviour, not a strategic behaviour at the national level.

Communistic countries guarantee fundamental fairness and justice, and justice is guaranteed by the part of God's wealth, the main state-owned capital without obstruction, financial constraints. In simple terms, it is guaranteed by independent finance and force.

China now is implementing God's will just as planned during the Creation. That is a systematic culture or communist culture. Establishing the kingdom of God and the results are the same, no matter if you believe it or not, be it intentional or not. So it is the same whether it was called communism or the kingdom of God. It is called 'all roads lead to Rome'. That is the destiny of Chinese.

Chinese are chosen by God to accomplish the mission and led the nation's steps into a new destiny during this period in welcoming God's coming.

What I have written is the intention of scientific communism, public ownership. That means establishing the kingdom and implementing the law of God in using his wealth, which achieves 'God loves all, both black and white, regardless of the wishes of the rich and the poor', achieves fairness and justice guaranteed by money and force, achieves scientific rationality of a prosperous and harmonious society.

Establishing the kingdom of God is not chanting in the temple as before, but as the Chinese Communist Party did, establishing a model kingdom of God and stepping into the kingdom together with friendly nations. That is what we called the Chinese model.

At that meeting, the foreign Christian missionaries, many foreign workers God OF simultaneously felt the Holy Spirit and the revelation of God's oracle that is following China, and let God's nations prosper around the world.

No war, no barriers, no hatred, no poverty, no oppression, no suffering in the kingdom of God.

People go there like family members coming home. Foreign missionaries handed over the key leading to the future to China's churchmen, through a symbolic ceremony.

I guess that Chinese people do not know what to do. I think that the key should be left to the Chinese government, who may not accept it. This is a formal issue that may be resolved in the future and we need to do something practical.

Chinese churches should cooperate with the Chinese government.

No Occupy Central movement, no Hong Kong independence, no Taiwan independence, no Tibetan separatists, no cult. Improve internal stability and promote economic development. Oppose separatism and terrorism.

This is not shouting slogans; if you really feel the revelation of God, you must know that this is God's will.

It is not luck that the Communist Party rules, but God's arrangements and ordination. The Communist Party has its vital important historical mission—that is, to be a role model in leading the world, establishing the kingdom of God.

Chinese destiny is not just relying on a few Christians. As I observed that when you took that key, you might feel puzzled about what to do.

In fact, the Chinese ordained mainly relied on the Chinese Communist Party in fulfilling its mission, which has taken a long age and is almost accomplished now.

101. The Kuomintang should promote a referendum on reconciliation

5 August 2015

I think some of the Taiwan Kuomintang's ideas are correct, but its practices need to be improved.

Now I see that the Democratic Progressive Party mainly attacks the Kuomintang for its black-box operation in that Kuomintang hopes a lot of affairs can be carried out by the administrative means of the ruling party.

For example, if the Service Trade Agreement had been carried out by means of a democratic referendum,

1. the Kuomintang would have had no responsibility for its failure

2. people would have been roused by a feeling that they were not circumvented, and thus the Kuomintang would not have been caught tripping

3. politicians should play their role in clearly analysing the pros and cons of things and telling people about the interests and benefits of things. Thus, the party can get more support and more political propaganda. In this way, its influence is expanded

4. through a referendum on specific events, a party can know the people's ideological trends and their responses to some things. The party can adjust its practices and deploy the next focus of work, rather than just do some reflection after the election results come out, which will make no sense at all.

Many things in the West are handled by means of a referendum. Before a referendum, the politicians make a lot of speeches, stating clearly their position, just like the Greek referendum.

The referendum rarely occurs in Taiwan, only demonstrations and the impact of government agencies, which shows that Taiwan's democracy is not mature.

Democratic politics is that politicians are responsible for stating things clearly, and people are responsible for making decisions, especially for significant decisions.

The political ideas of the Kuomintang are basically right, but are not practiced in the right approach. The party needs to make good use of democracy to provide help and political support for themselves.

In particular, in terms of such a big event like reconciliation, politicians in their statements should say, 'Promote cross-strait referendum on reconciliation' rather than say, 'Promote cross-strait reconciliation'.

‘Promote cross-strait referendum on reconciliation’ means the initiative at the mercy of people, and thus no one will oppose it. If one referendum does not achieve success, another one could be held again next time.

‘Promote cross-strait reconciliation’ will give people a sense of being manipulated and betrayed, which will bring trouble to the party itself.

102. Chinese government should make clear the attitude to dogs

8 September 2015

Today, there is news about dogs in China again.

A peasant woman from Xi'an was intercepted by a dog-loving mob on her way to a dog shipment. At last, the woman stabbed herself in her protest of social injustice.

The attitude of Chinese government towards dogs has been always ambiguous.

As to Yulin Dog-eating Festival, Chinese government asked restaurants that sell dog meat not to hang their brands and not to kill dogs in the street.

People can eat dog meat as usual. However, it is just not allowed to kill them in the street (quietly kill them in the backyard). No restaurant is allowed to hang brands about dog meat, but one can give dog meat order with code, just like formal underground activists before.

What is it? This is called Western hypocrisy by the Israelis. I don't know whether Chinese have learnt other things, but I am sure Chinese have mastered Western hypocrisy.

That the peasant woman stabs herself today has direct relation to the ambiguity, injustice of government.

That the peasant woman stabs herself is a kind of protest with Chinese characteristics.

When encountering this kind of injustice, people should not stab themselves, but fight against the dog-loving mob with musket and stagger.

The activities of the dog-loving mob are illegal infringement of citizens' legitimate rights and interests. Citizens shall exercise their legal right of self-defence to protect their own interests with appropriate weapons.

Average people can be shameless, rogue, or ignorant.

Law enforcers or the authorities should not pretend to be blind towards this, or even good men.

Black is black and white is white. Right is right, wrong is wrong. Government needs to have a clear attitude and clear statement about what it shall do and shall not do.

A series of these incidents about people and dogs have occurred many times.

1. If the government wants to please the dog-loving mob, it's okay, but it needs legislation.

National People's Congress should vote on this issue that it's banned to eat dog meat in China. It is understandable and applicable with this proposal.

2. If the legislation fails to pass, then eating dog meat is legal. The government needs to crack down on the dog-loving mob's illegal activities, which seriously disrupt social order to protect the legal rights and interests of citizens.

3. The law should be enforced by law enforcement agencies, and the dog-loving mob has no legal enforcement right. Intercepting dog shipments will seriously disrupt social order. The government needs to severely punish these mobs according to law as a warning to others.

To do nothing or to be a good man is to avoid conflicts. This is a kind of malfeasance, a kind of inaction and corruption.

When such security problems happen, the police shall arrive on the spot within five minutes to solve the problem in accordance with the law. Don't let the disadvantaged groups be threatened and harassed for nine hours by rogue mob, and at last commit self-stabbing.

The final result is that the dogs were snatched and taken by the dog-loving mob.

This is purely a kind of government-assisted robbery of private property. If government thinks the dogs fail to meet standard of health and epidemic prevention and pose a threat to the society, government should seize these dogs and burn them with fire and bury them there. Or throw them in a cremator for humane destruction like the Western practice. No matter how to deal with these dogs, these dogs should not be controlled by the dog-loving mob.

This has encouraged the thugs' arrogance and spiritual motivation to continue to harm and harass people next time.

103. The government shall audit the authenticity of P2P project

4 February 2016

P2P and P2B started to overflow in China since 2013,

Since it is a newly sprouted thing, the government did not supervise.

This created a readily exploitable loophole for the swindle criminals of Ponzi scheme;

Now, the problem exposed is that Ezubao is a pure fraud.

In my opinion, government supervision shall start with the authenticity of supervision project. All financial projects must audit the authenticity in private organisation, fact-finding organ, or government. As a result, the false project financing is illegal fraud in financing, where the business personnel and relevant staff will be sentenced.

Because it is simple to audit project authenticity, it is available for us to judge the operation condition of units through the tax amount of financing unit. The reference is that the tax amount is in proportion to financing amount means authenticity, but the enterprises without tax payment indicate fraud if asking for financing in tens of millions.

The operations of P2P and P2B are different in various enterprises because their investment directions are distinct. Thus, it is difficult to formulate game rules for them; instead of supervising until all rules are implemented properly, government shall start with simple things, with expelling swindlers such as Ezubao from the market. Such enterprises are so many that they occupy about 20 to 50 per cent; some projects are just talking nonsense upon hearing about them.

It is normal and understandable that some enterprises encountered some problems and are in bad management while the projects exist. For the projects in legal operation, the losses can always be redeemed and compensated when encountering difficulties.

Governmental task firstly is to separate the swindle enterprises from those in normal operation. There could be some dirty tricks if government failed to achieve it.

104. In economic crimes, if the victim commits suicide, the main mastermind should be executed

3 April 2016

China recently is in the financial reform period, and there is much economic crime and fraud rampant.

Previously, such economic crimes were executed as illegal fundraising frauds, which some later thought were inhumane and needed integration with the West. So economic criminals are not sentenced to death.

Of course, this is justified, because the definition of economic crime is relatively vague. It is difficult to strictly distinguish the difference between investment failure and pure fraud. The recent death penalty for several economic crimes is more controversial.

Normally, if the money was raised to the actual investment behaviour, it is investment failure, and if with no investment behaviour, it is purely a fraud.

Of course, there are some loopholes, such as a small part of the money is invested in some unreliable projects, but a lot of money is transferred. It is difficult to define by using whether there is an investment.

Fraudulent acts can be criminalised in two ways.

1. The authenticity of investment behaviour. It requires professional professionals to evaluate the truth of the investment and whether the investment was worth so much money at the time, or a false project to concoct various pretexts and transfer assets. If the vast majority of money was used to invest in physical projects, the criminal can be considered to be investment failure, and avoid death.

If the investment project doesn't exist at all or it is assessed as a purely bogus investment project by industry insiders to transfer a lot of property, it can be characterised as malicious fraud and the criminal can be executed.

If the criminal invests in fake projects or projects without worth at all, in order to defraud money, we should sentence by standards for the consequences of it.

If the victim, because of a large amount of money loss, with mental breakdown, commits suicide by jumping, poisoning, hanging, drowning, or other, the mastermind is the murderer in the crime, and should be executed.

If the victim is emotionally stable, no one has committed suicide, the criminal can avoid death.

On the one hand, the punishment conviction is based on subjective investment behaviour. On the other hand, sentencing is based on the consequences, which is more appropriate.

On the one hand, we should protect the legitimate investment behaviour; on the other hand, we should punish the acts of malicious fraud.

You can't let the bad guys go by in order to protect the good guys.

You can't hurt a good man in order to fight bad people.

Business is complicated and I see a lot of that.

There are many bosses who work hard every day but fail to invest. They are heroes, and they should be protected.

There are a lot of people who are pure swindlers, have no bottom line, and have no humanity. This kind of person should be executed.

The two types of people are almost identical in appearance, and it is hard to distinguish them from outsiders.

But if we condemn at will, it will cause injustice. And we will destroy the economic development of the society and become the accomplices of demons.

We can collect money to invest, but we should explain the use of the money and it can be confirmed. If it is not clear, it will be a fraud and the criminal can be executed.

105. There should be legislation on compensation of dogs hurting people

7 April 2016

Today there is news a woman was bitten by a cur, while the owner fled with the dog. While walking, the owner said, 'If you catch up with me, I will give you compensation.'

There is no wonder that the man who owns a dog should practice running every day, for they can flee on time if their dogs hurt someone someday, so they can escape the responsibility and compensation. Buddha said, 'Everything happens for a reason.' He is so clever and reasonable.

I think there should be legislation on dogs hurting people. What's more, the legislation should be strictly enforced.

There is management of dogs in China, but it's futile and it can't protect people.

I think if dogs hurt people, the owner should:

1. Compensate the victim ten times the amount of the local minimum wage as the compensation for loss of work and mental damage.

2. Compensate the victim twenty times the amount of necessary hospitalisation costs as the hospitalisation costs and follow-up nutrition subsidies.

3. The dogs hurting people should be sentenced to death.

The dog owners should pay a certain amount of third party liability insurance premium when they buy a license for their dogs, just as people should annually inspect the car and buy compulsory insurance for traffic accident of motor-driven vehicle when they buy a car. If you want to keep a dog, you should buy a compulsory canine insurance for it. If there is an accident, some compensation is paid by the dog owner and the other parts are paid by the government from the compulsory canine insurance.

If the stray dogs hurt people, the government should be responsible for all the compensation. The government doesn't do a good job in security, so they should compensate the victims according to the above standards.

Only in this way can the dog owners supervise their dogs and the stray dogs are killed on time. And there will be no accidents of dogs hurting people. People's rights can be truly ensured.

Of course you can show love to dogs, but you must have a sense of social responsibility. When

you show love to dogs, you can’t do harm to a third party, or you are not showing love to dogs.

If you show love to dogs but hurt and threaten other people, this is not love and it is heresy. The demon has totally controlled the souls of people who love dogs, and they should be strictly punished and relentlessly stroke.

106. Arresting prostitutes indicates that the social system is in favour of the rich and against the poor

13 May 2016

I talked about this issue before.

It is tolerable that the rich keep one and even more mistresses by paying them luxury car, mansion, and big money in China.

A few days ago, a friend pointed at an upscale residential area and told me, 'Look, that residential area is for mistresses. You cannot see anybody go out in the morning, but see beauties drive in and out in the afternoon. We call it mistress residential area.'

If prostitution is defined as the business or practice of engaging in sexual activity in exchange for payment, other than marital sexual activity, then keeping one or more mistresses should be regarded as subscribing to a package service of prostitution, of which the sum of business transactions is huge, and the nature is bad. Girls kept by others as mistress and those keeping a mistress should be accused of engaging in prostitution for a long time. Their behaviour is absolutely lawless. According to the measurement of penalty for prostitution, they should be sentenced to at least eight to ten years' imprisonment and fined hundreds of thousands of yuan or even millions of yuan. Their luxury cars and mansions are essentially payment for prostitution, which should be confiscated.

I am confused why some leading authorities of law don't voice any viewpoint on the measurement of penalty for keeping mistress, but have concern about street prostitution.

I am confused why police don't investigate and arrest those committing prostitution by keeping mistress or being kept as mistress, but concentrate on street prostitution.

Such actions are absolutely in favour of the rich, but against the poor.

107. Fighting-to-death lawyers are cults

6 June 2016

Recently there was a case in China which causes fierce arguments. There is a question of factual justice and procedural justice in it. It indicates that fighting-to-death lawyers and the procedural justice completely violate the facts and the factual justice, which belongs to the behaviour of cults.

The most basic principle of judging any event and case is the fact, the truth of the matter. Just like Detective Conan said, 'There is only one truth.' If the truth of the matter is ignored, concealed, intentionally overturned, and rejected, then it is deliberately distorting and fabricating the facts, knowing the truth but not admitting it. This is a cult's and demon's act. They are the demon's disciples, who need to be exterminated. They need to be sent to another world, to reunite with the demon.

The fact is already very clear after online discussion as well as the evidence provided by the police and website users. The course of the incident is very simple, which however becomes a shaky case after the promotion and hype by the fighting-to-death lawyers.

According to some evidence, somebody is a highly educated young man, just being father, with a history of heart disease. He is also a skilled whoremonger who often went to erotic places though serving as a deputy level of government official. In accordance with the current Chinese law, government officials who prostitute are to be removed from office. That day, when somebody was going to the erotic place, he was reported by someone to the police who conducted the arrest in plainclothes. Afraid of losing the position, ashamed of his family, somebody strongly resisted the arrest, and ran away two times. He kicked the driver, bit the police, and tried to forcibly jump out of the car. Finally he was attacked by some disease and died on the way to hospital.

However, the fighting-to-death lawyers believed that plainclothes police in law enforcement did not wear police uniforms and record instrument of law enforcement; hence, there was a problem in the process of the police's law enforcement. Therefore, prostitution testimony provided by the police shall not be accepted. They insisted that the court should only consider the police violence, law enforcement killing an early father and gifted youth. The police shall be called to account the liability of killing the good citizen.

This is a typical example of cults. The fighting-to-death lawyers are the followers of the demon who are against God.

The basic logic of the fighting-to-death lawyers is the procedural justice that the West praises highly, and as long as any negligence is found in the procedure, all the evidence will be overturned. Finally, there is only the case of the police killing the good citizen.

This is a case where procedural justice completely overthrows the facts justice, as well as a case of the West and the world being controlled by the demon. They are completely finding the excuse to overthrow the facts, to help those criminals and the demon get rid of the crime. They are helping the evil and the demon to escape the righteous punishment of God. They are the tool of the demon against justice and God.

Black is black, white is white, right is right, wrong is wrong. The truth is the truth. There is only one truth.

The only basis for judging a case is the fact. Even the truth can be deliberately overturned, arbitrarily fabricated, not to mention justice and God. There is only the demon's grin.

The most important job of investigators is to restore the facts. As to how to get the truth, it does not matter whether God told them in a dream, or they went to hell to find the ghost. The case only requires the fact.

And the fact can be verified by verified by multi-angle and multipart. Because it is the truth, it can be verified.

As for the investigators exacting confession by torture, resulting in injury or injustice wrong case, this is another problem of the law and discipline. The punishment shall not cause the interrogator serious injury or excessive injury, within the limits of the range that the interrogator can afford. It is more worthy of praise when the evidence is obtained with no harm.

The West is called 'the great whore riding a beast' by God in the Revelation of the Bible. The fighting-to-death lawyers, incited by the West, regard the procedural justice as an excuse. Helping the demon get rid of the punishment is also a major sign of the great whore. They make peace with the demon, prostitute with the demon against justice, against God, and need to be exterminated.

People need truth, people need justice, people need God.

108. Marriage for the purpose of beauty is a kind of whoring, while marriage aimed at benefit is like prostitution and financial fraud

18 August 2016

The liveliest topic these days is a divorce case.

Both the husband and the wife rebuke each other for extramarital affairs and provide evidence.

Netizens stand on the contrary, cheering for the side that they support and joining in the fun.

But in my perspective, both the two sides are not good eggs and are troublesome.

It's purely a typical affair about prostitution, whoring, and financial fraud in Chinese style.

The man obviously married for the purpose of beauty, while the woman for money.

Their initial purpose is wicked. So how could they get a good result? That's daydreaming.

What annoys people most is that monks also join in this debate. The mortal may not see through the emptiness of the material world. But what about the monks? Why do they enter into religion if they cannot outguess this swindle? It's ridiculous.

It is true that all the religious magic disappeared in 2012.

Prostitution and financial fraud in marital form aimed at beauty or benefit is widespread in China.

I estimated then that the proportion of P2P fake investment is about 20–50 per cent.

The proportion of prostitution and financial fraud in marital form is higher than P2P fake investments in China. It is around 80–95 per cent.

There are marriages with the purpose of love as well in China. But the proportion is extremely low. Those people are rare.

Of course, it's normal that people take beauty and benefit into account in marriages. However, what occupy most of the proportion should be moral, ideal pursuit and values. If the proportion of beauty and interest is too large, the marriage will become an act of prostitution and whoring.

I think actual behaviour of prostitution and whoring is purer than this kind of marriage. After all, prostitutes mark the prices clearly and never deceive people, no matter young or old.

Why does the Chinese government prohibit pure act of street prostitution, but support vigorously dirty prostitution and financial fraud in marital form?

I hold the belief that it's a combination of Chinese traditional culture and Occidental liberal human rights culture. It is a consequence due to the fact that people combine the filthiest things in the two kinds of culture, according to hideous human nature.

Chinese people discard advantages in the two cultures and utilise the shortcomings that are favourable to themselves to bring about nefarious, Chinese-style prostitution and financial fraud in marital form. And the government shares the spoils as well.

According to Chinese traditional culture, the men should earn money to provide for women and should let the women be in charge of money, while the women must be attached to the men. The men can divorce their wives and be in polygynous marriages. Furthermore, Chinese traditional culture came from the feudal system of landholding. The greatest property in a family was land and house property. Those couldn't be transformed to cash, renamed, and transferred to foreign countries like the market economy now. They were fixed assets, which can only be inherited instead of being sold for cash. Even if the treasure was in the charge of women, women had only the right to operate instead of ownership. Men possessed eventually the right to handle the fortune. They were masters of their houses.

When it comes to the Occidental human rights culture, the property of both men and women is completely divided. The distribution of prenuptial properties and postnuptial properties is clear. Men and women only have to be on their own behalf. Women have title property and can convert their property into cash or transfer it.

The situation of marriage in China at present is: men earn money to provide for women and they let women be in charge of money, but the distribution and transfer of property are based on Occidental human rights culture. It is considered to be a merit in China that men have no rights in financial affairs. According to the man in this event, his wife diddled his 100 million yuan and fled to the United States. All of that is because of his lust for women. He even has no money to go to court. All of the relationships between men and women in China can be described as metamorphic psychosis and false pretences.

If an Occidental man wants to marry a Chinese woman, they have to make sure of this relationship. Otherwise, they may suffer losses and trouble somehow.

On the basis of Chinese traditional view of marriage, women think that they are entrusted to men for life when they get married. So they require the men to give them the right of being in charge of property. Therefore, they must sign an agreement that has legal effect before they get married.

1. If the woman put forward the idea of divorce, then all of the property will belong to the man.

The woman will leave without getting anything.

2. If the woman has extramarital affairs, the man will have the right of divorce and possess all of the property. The woman will leave without getting anything.

3. If the woman is infertile or refuses to procreate, the man will have the right of a polygynous marriage.

This is the real 'commit one's lifetime to someone' in Chinese traditional view of marriage. Otherwise, it's completely a flimflam and deceit and a kind of financial fraud in the name of marriage.

According to Occidental view of marriage and human rights, men and women have Dutch treat from beginning to end. They protect their own rights of economy and personal liberty. The prenuptial property belongs to themselves, while the common property in marriage will be divided according to the law. And each of them undertake half of the marriage expenses.

Two views have their cause and effect, as well as their own logic, which cannot be confused. Otherwise, it is behaviour of grift. And such behaviour will destroy social order and tarnish social morality. It likes that all kinds of evil spirits dance in riotous revelry and the evildoers appear everywhere.

The situation of marriage in China at present is: women think that they are entrusted to men for life and sacrifice their youth, so they ask men to put their property under the name of woman. Then women divorce their husbands for various reasons after a short time of marriage. And they require a large amount of property that should belong to men. It is shameless financial fraud.

Furthermore, there is a luxurious custom in wedding. The effect of this custom is letting their family members and friends know their wedding and letting men sink deeper in the swindle. The costs of wedding and house have risen up to hundreds of thousands, even more than a million. And the money is supplied by men. If they divorce, men have to seek another mate, which means that men are likely to suffer a similar loss once again.

In this economic activity, men may suffer great loss financially. In a word, men are in a disadvantageous situation. They may sink deeper in a financial fraud. And once they reach the end of their forbearance, they will make difficult decisions and start over.

The phenomenon that men are blackmailed by bad assets lies in another aspect: women refuse to sleep together.

Men have been locked up by bad assets at the start of the marriage, and they are blackmailed by the woman during their marriages. And women's main method is refusing to sleep together with men.

Women will ask their husbands for all sorts of unreasonable and shameless demands during their marriages. They want to control all the money and family affairs. Provided that their requests are not satisfied, they will refuse to sleep together. It is not a lie. We can find such plots in all Chinese movies, TV programs, dramas, and so forth. It is a prevalent phenomenon. Chinese men are blackmailed by the women without shame. They even think it is a sort of glorious mission.

So the humanness of Chinese people has already distorted and become abnormal. They have no self-esteem, either self-determination. All of them are eunuchs and swindlers.

The reason why telecommunication fraud is so rampant in China right now lies in this situation. Everyone grows up in deception and cheating. They grow up in a distorted and abnormal environment. So this sort of thing has a mass base.

Occidental view of marriage of democracy, freedom and human rights, is certainly purer by comparison. The intelligence of Chinese people is so high, and sometimes they are too shameless.

109. If telecommunication frauds make victims commit suicide, swindlers should be executed.

7 September 2016

Everything has its vanquisher in the world, and one thing would be overcome by another once it exceeds the scope.

Telecommunication frauds become more and more violent in China, like frauds committed by Taiwanese and frauds cheating university students out of their tuition.

Why it would become unscrupulous? It is mainly caused by the free-death theory developed from the Western human rights theory.

Seen from the behaviour, swindlers just tell a lie, since people won't be executed for telling lies, and telling lies is nearly irrelevant to the execution.

If swindlers are executed just for telling lies, Westerners would argue that it violates human rights, especially the right of personal liberty and democratic rights.

This is another case demonstrating that Westerners collude with demons to betray God.

Similarly, the conviction of swindlers should not merely be based on behaviour, while the results and essence are also equally important.

Killing for money is offensive to God, and it should be sentenced to death. This is a traditional Chinese culture, as well as the will of God for the Chinese.

If telecommunication frauds result in death, it is completely in conformity with all elements of killing for money, including money and lives killed. Therefore, swindlers (including the chief plotter or the one making phone calls), either mainlanders or Taiwanese, must be executed if victims suicided. But a rope can be provided for them to suicide, and it would save troubles for all of us.

110. Nail households should be settled by demolition

7 September 2016

Nail households refer to the phenomenon in which some people are unwilling to remove their houses for some engineering projects related to the land, building or road construction, resulting in the sharp turn, or the shabbiest small house among some modern building projects, which is unwilling to relocate.

It is a common phenomenon in capitalist country, due to the private ownership of land.

In China, where public ownership of land they are, it is ridiculous to see such a phenomenon.

Because hundreds of houses would be removed, rather than one or two, for a project. Others would be able to reach agreements with the demolition group, but one or two would refuse and become nail households, suggesting that the compensation would satisfy most people. Only a few fail to reach agreements, showing that they ask for too much, even things that are not supposed to be achieved by them.

Therefore, nail households are unreasonable and should be settled by demolition, to uphold justice.

Nail households actually damage the state interest with their individual actions. Especially, a nail house in the middle of the road might do harm to others' lives; thus, it should be demolished immediately.

The land is created by God and belongs to God. Public ownership is just government's execution of ownership on behalf of God. Besides, the government is entitled to change the use right of land, to make new plans for the use of land. It is a basic right of titleholders.

It is unreasonable for some people to refuse relocation once the government changes the use right of land. If some interests are harmed by the change of the use right of land, it is a problem concerning the compensation for interests, while disputes incurred by the compensation of interests shall be economic disputes, which shall be investigated, mediated, and judged by the court. It is not the relocation-or-not problem, since these are two different concepts.

Once the government changes the use right of land, local residents must relocate, court decision can be cited for those who are not satisfied with the compensation conditions, and the court decision must be executed.

Other protests, like murder, arson, assault, etc. fall into the category of criminal offence.

But suicide belongs to the basic human rights, and people have the right to commit suicide.

111. It is mandatory for pet keepers to pay to charitable foundations

29 December 2016

I have visited some relatively underdeveloped areas of China, where I have seen some emaciated old people were begging. In a sense, begging differs between poverty-stricken areas and developed cities.

In developed countries, beggars are mostly professional and don't deserve sympathy, because some of them even earn much more than workers. Furthermore, some people specially cripple orphans, force them to beg, and then exploit them. All of these constitute occupational crimes, so they are worth less sympathy. They will hurt more orphans if they are given money.

However, old men who beg in poverty-stricken areas are really poor and pathetic.

I even saw one who was still making crafts and arranging flowers for money and living in spite of no fingers. Besides, it was extremely cold and close to 0℃ there.

I really felt that they were worth sympathy and rather pathetic, but I didn't give him the money, because it was your business instead of mine. I would like to tell you who are supposed to pay to them—namely those who raise dogs and other pets. It is they that have to pay to those who need help.

People who don't raise dogs or pets need to supervise and force pet keepers to pay to wretched and needy people, which is not only generally acknowledged, but also justice.

They raise pets, which indicates that they are kind-hearted and have idle money. However, they don't love human beings, but animals. They raise animals, whereas they don't support people who need their favour. This is a distorted cult behaviour that shall and must be corrected.

It is right to be kind-hearted, which is necessary for all people. Nevertheless, people shall be firstly warm-hearted to human beings, or else it is impossible for them to love animals and beasts.

It is only in line with God's will and human interests when people give priority to love towards mankind before they treat animals nicely.

Some people don't love human beings but animals, and their love for animals outperforms their love for human beings, which implies that they are just demons with human skin and simply demon heretics.

I have only heard that some people fight for dogs, but have been never told that any people quarrel for giving money to beggars, which suggests that people who raise dogs love dogs more

than human beings. All of them are cultists and demons.

To prevent pet keepers from being led astray by dogs and becoming demons, people like us who don't raise dogs have to help them.

Anyone who keeps pets must donate to charitable foundations at 1/1 and based on general costs for raising pets. How much they pay for buying pets and how much they roughly spend monthly may be calculated. They are required to donate to the poor based on the costs, and these donations shall be received by governments on behalf of the poor.

At first, they must express their love to the poor. Only in this way are they qualified for loving animals, or else they are just cultists.

They must firstly donate to charitable organisations at 1/1 at least. If not, they are disqualified for keeping pets.

Those who are stubborn are apostles of demons, who shall be sent to another world to unite with demons.

I don't need much money, but I think that some people who raise dogs also have to give generously to the poor.

They shall give the poor as much as they spend on dogs. I have downgraded the poor to a level comparable to dogs, in an attempt to ask you for money. Do you think this is too demanding or necessary? Isn't this a generally acknowledged truth, a justice, and the minimum requirement?

Furthermore, dogs shall be sentenced to death if they bite people. Meanwhile, ten times the costs shall be paid to the injured as medical expenses and nourishment subsidies, while twenty times the costs shall be compensated as subsidies for lost work and mental compensation.

Provided that people are bitten by ownerless dogs, local governments shall compensate the victims based on above standards, because the injuries shall be attributable to their inappropriate control over strays and unreasonable protection of people's interests.

Moreover, such compensations shall be shared among the poor at the equal amount, because they are just the costs for raising dogs. Meanwhile, money shall be also donated to the poor at 1/1.

To be sure, working dogs shall be differentiated from those for fun. Work is assigned to guide dogs, police dogs, shepherd dogs, and explosive detection dogs. Rural people who raise dogs for meat are not required to donate. Instead, urban residents who raise dogs for entertainment and fun shall donate money to poor people.

112. Citizen information should be publicised in default, and the fraud should be heavily convict

1 January 2017

I have been engaged in sales, which is the most difficult job in sales—promotion.

Product sales are related to the business survival and death, and the number of customers has the most direct effect on the promotion. Where are the unfamiliar customers? It's the customer information. It's the name of a strange customer, telephone, address, mailbox, QQ, cell phone, SMS . . .

The specific products require specific information. The information of the parents just giving birth to a baby can sell a lot of products. Children's insurance, baby supplies, milk powder, diapers, parent-child activities, early childhood education . . . anyway, you need to buy these things from this store or another one. Sometimes young parents also do not know where to buy, and they need to inquire around for advice.

It's good to collect some marketing information appropriately for your own choice.

The Western countries proposed to protect citizens' privacy. I think the purpose of Western countries is not to protect the good guys, but to protect the bad guys.

There's fraud, murder, violence, drug trafficking in Western countries that are commonplace. Criminals that killed dozens of persons are not sentenced to the death penalty, but they are just enjoying themselves very much in prison. Those criminals even seem to be more chic than the outside world.

Fraud is nothing.

So they want to protect the privacy of citizens, fraudsters cannot find information, so they have to do other illegal things. This is to remove trouble for everyone; it's not to protect the good guys, but to protect the bad guys. They have insufficient policemen in order to deal with few troubles. The criminals won't be punished; there are bad guys everywhere. There are won't too many troubles for customers. The bad guys cannot find more customer information, so they do fewer illegal things. However, it also undermines economic growth.

At the early stage of China's reform and opening up, China developed itself by feeling the stones across the river, and it could do anything. There's no citizen information protection. So the economy grew rapidly in double digits.

Later, everything is standardised, and nothing can be done randomly; it's difficult to sell out the

product. Economic growth rate has declined.

The problem lies not in the publicised citizen information, but what people want to do with such information.

If there's any person killed by a criminal with a knife, then all the shops are not allowed to sell the kitchen knife.

If there's any person killed on the road by a car, then all the cars are not allowed to be driven on the roads.

If there's a terrorist hijacking a plane, all the planes are not allowed to take off.

It's the safest to walk on the road. No one can complain in case of any troubles, it's your own business if you fall down on the road.

The problem is not that the properly publicised citizen information is an issue, but the bad guys are problems.

If it's the problem of the bad guys, then it's necessary to solve the problem of the bad guys. This has nothing to do with other things.

It is not because of bad guys that we do not develop our economy, and the enterprises do not survive, the people do not work, and there's no tax of the state. This is ridiculous.

It's essential to heavily convict the fraud, and the fraudster should be put in prison for ten years, eight years, until they get old. They ruin our market, and I want to ruin their life. Those ones leading to the death of the victim must be executed. Their heads must be cut; only in this way will no one else dare to commit a fraud.

The loss caused by those criminals is not the money, but they destroy our market and economic development.

The fraud turmoil in China started from the death immunity for economic crimes. This is really a calamity with serious harm.

Some people must put to death. You can let them commit suicide, or hang themselves; anyway, they must be cleared out of this world.

In short, fraud that does not lead to any death can be immune from death; otherwise, the fraudster must be sentenced to death.

Now there are a lot of people stealing the user's bank account and password through a variety of channels, and someone withdraws the money in the bank card through a one-stop service.

This does not belong to the behaviour of stealing customer information, neither does it belong to normal business behaviour, but it's robbery, high-tech means of crime.

It's only to disturb the customers by getting the name, phone, and address of a customer. It is harmless. However, the access to the customer's bank card information does not disturb the customer, and it is part of the robbery. Both seem to belong to getting the customer's information, but the nature is completely different. It's necessary to treat this completely differently.

P2P false investment is a fraud, and the actual investment belongs to the commercial business; both belong to completely different behaviour. Both will be with completely different responsibilities.

For the behaviour of stealing the information of customer's bank card, such criminal must be executed. Because this is part of the robbery with huge amount, thus there must be the execution.

Other behaviour of obtaining the general information of the customers belongs to the normal business practices, and such behaviour should be protected and encouraged.

Robbery and commercial behaviour are not the same behaviour, so the treatment and punishment should also be different.

I think that the current government is very backward and slow towards the conviction and sentencing of the new criminal acts. The government cannot keep up with the situation, and it hits the good guys. However, this is a connivance of the bad guys and the demon.

113. Housing price in China is higher than that in America, is determined by Chinese culture

8 January 2017

Pursuant to Chinese traditional culture and Confucius-Mencius culture, there is a saying 'bring up sons to support parents in their old age, store up grain against death for a bad year'.

Actually, the culture is quite advanced. The sayings like 'bring up sons to support parents in their old age' and 'the son's errors should be blamed on his father's failure to teach' reflect that in ancient times in China, the traditional culture had the function of endowment insurance and compulsory education. Because of such functions, Chinese civilisation is able to have a sustainable development.

Being affected by traditional culture like 'store up grain against death for a bad year', Chinese people have held the ideology 'save money and accumulate wealth'.

Actually, the aforementioned Chinese culture is totally different from Western culture—democracy, freedom and human rights.

For the Western culture, democracy, freedom and human rights, the highest pursuit is that at the moment when he dies, he just runs out of all the money he made in the lifetime. That is, he does not waste any that he made and he does not leave any to others.

For individuals, such a culture can maximise his interest, while for a nation and a society, this is really bad or even the worst. If one runs out of all the money, he does not make any contribution to wealth accumulation of his family, the country, the nation, and the society.

Is wealth accumulation is necessary to the family, the country, the nation and the society? What role can the wealth accumulation play?

If one is born in a rich family, he will lead a happier and cosier life than the one who is born in a poor family; apart from the happiness and cosiness, the value that he can make and the way he makes value will be different.

If one is born in a rich family, what he needs to do is to increase the wealth, from million to billion or even more. Therefore, the value he made is the gap between the value he made and the value he inherited.

If one is born in a poor family, it is quite difficult for one to make millions in wealth.

This example reflects what Chinese people are widely talking about—different starting line.

Actually, starting line is also the impact on individual value by family wealth.

Similarly, the more wealth one can inherit from one's ancestors, the more benefits will be provided for the country, the nation, the society, and the government.

For a government, how to govern the rich and how to govern the poor will be different; the tax income from the rich and the poor will be different too. Of course, the social management will be different.

Why there are so many differences? Because capital varies. Actually, the wealth given by the ancestors to the younger generations is a kind of capital. Normally, increasing the value of the capital is a kind of wealth accumulation, which is also a way to make money. In fact, this is an important way to make money.

Therefore, we can say that for an individual, the country and the family, accumulating wealth and continuing the wealth will play a great role, which is also meaningful and beneficial.

In China, some economists said that the phenomenon that the housing price in large cities in China is higher than that in America is quite abnormal. This is an economic bubble and the bubble needs to be removed. I think they are wrong.

Why do I think so? Because the value of a house has different meanings for Chinese and Americans, the social demands in China and America are also different. This is a result of the different cultures in China and Western countries. For Westerners, they do not need to 'store up grain against death for a bad year', so it is not necessary for them to accumulate wealth. For Chinese, it is necessary for them to accumulate wealth and continue the wealth.

A house can have its value preserved or increased. So buying a house is being used by Chinese people as a tool to manage money and save money.

For example, if one spends several hundred thousand yuan buying a car. Some years later, the car is damaged and broken, thus its value will be zero.

If one spends several hundred thousand yuan buying a house. After dozens of years or even hundreds of years, it can still have the use value and economic value. What's more, there is a great possibility to have its value increased.

In my opinion, if China is able to make its population increase stably, a couple can have two or three children, the value of house will be always there.

However, if the fertility is low and the aging is getting serious, there will be fewer people needing to buy a house for marriage. If so, the housing price definitely suffers economic bubbles.

For Chinese people who are used to 'store up grain against death for a bad year' and wealth

accumulation, buying a house can play such a role.

But for the Westerners who hope they can run out of all the money when they die, a house cannot play such a role. Instead, a house will be a kind of burden for them.

This is just like that in China. One crab, which costs 5–10 yuan, is a luxury and delicious. But in some Western countries, crabs are considered to be toxic, no one wants to eat them, and no one buys it. For Westerners, crabs are valueless.

So the value of a crab is different for Chinese and Westerners, while the value of a house is also different for Chinese and Westerners.

Therefore, we cannot say that the phenomenon that housing price in some cities in China is higher than that in America means an economic bubble.

Normally, different cultures will lead to different social demands. Therefore, the value will be different.

Of course, drawing up policies to control and stop the house hype is a good measure. In first-tier cities where the housing price is too high, it is mandatory to control the house hype in order to avoid some risks. However, in the second-tier cities, third-tier cities, and fourth-tier cities, house hype shall be allowed in order to make people able to manage their money by buying house, as well as to inherit the wealth.

114. Criminals disfiguring a woman tourist in Lijiang need to be beheaded

26 January 2017

These days, an event is heatedly debated on the network; that is, a gang of rogues beat a female tourist in a restaurant brutally, cut her face with a piece of glass bottle, and shot it into a video for memorial.

I have just been to Lijiang, a place inhabited mostly by ethnic minority, and Han people there just accounted for a small portion.

Close to the southwest edge of China's railway line, Lijiang is an mountainous area with less developed economy and large population of ethnic minority.

In general, China's ethnic minorities are scattered on the border areas of China, so transportation there is inconvenient and the economy less developed than that in other areas.

For some reason, the police did not disclose the identity of the assailants. I estimate that they belong to the minority nationality.

China has a large number of minority autonomous regions, not including Lijiang, but it is surrounded by several minority autonomous regions.

Only ethnic minority in China dare to run amuck at society so fearlessly. They receive ultra national treatment in China, and their punishment for beating, killing, and doing bad things is different from people in big cities.

That is called ethnic minority policy in China, whose sympathy to and harbouring, connivance, and forgiveness of minority criminals can be seen from ways of police investigation.

The perpetrators said it was clear: They are not afraid of the police as they are with the police.

Such a thing may be very normal in the United States but a big event in China because in China it is a rare case that criminals call themselves as family of police, beat a woman, disfigure her, and shoot video in the scenic area, of course, except for Islamic terrorists.

From the analysis of the most primitive psychological motive, the event is all out of the supernational treatment of ethnic minority. They assume that the Han people have occupied their land and have a request from them, so what do Han people dare to do with them? 'Han people, do you accept it? If don't, tomorrow I will declare independence.'

Although no one speaks openly, that is what they believe. If you dare not speak, let me help you. Let me express what is in your mind.

Why did God give the Arabs the Koran? It is because they live in harsh desert area lacking living materials.

With the Koran, Arabs' population grows.

So the Koran is specifically applied to people living in poor areas, while the democratic system and the concept of human rights suits only capitalist countries with highly developed economy.

The idea of democracy is completely inapplicable to such a poor area as Lijiang, the result of which is the disfigured woman, who is able to directly shoot horror film without make-up.

Lijiang, a poor area, is fully applicable to the Koran, and according to the law of Saudi Arabia, those rogues shall be beheaded.

Without severe law like Koran, it is impossible to regulate rogue behaviour in Lijiang.

The poorer the place, the more applicable the Koran is, which represents justice.

We should treat people in people's way, while the demon in demon's way, defined in the Koran.

This event is not an isolated case in Lijiang, as a few years ago there were tour guides abusing visitors, which was shot by a video spreading on network.

In fact, it all boils down to remoteness and poverty of minority areas. Seeing crowds of wealthy tourists in their hometown, they are distorted in mind with serious jealousy and hatred to the rich. Abusing, beating, and disfiguring tourists are venting such abnormal psychology.

Ideology, culture and social rules of the rich are completely inapplicable to poor areas, as the poor have a set of logic, ways of thinking, and codes of conduct of their own. The reason of local police and government being considered a family is that they have a common living environment, culture, ideology, and logical thinking.

In the eyes of the locals, the disfigurement is called minor injuries, a matter of a few hundred yuan for medical expenses. While for the disfigured women, it is a serious injury that hundreds of thousands or even millions of yuan cannot cure. This is the difference between the poor and the rich in culture, ideology, and values.

Treating the poor with the law of the rich will provide rogues with surviving space and political protection.

This is why the revolution of Arab Spring does not work in the Middle East.

God tells the people through the Koran: In economically underdeveloped areas, need to be more brutal to deal with brutality, need to be more cruel to deal with cruelty, need to be more irrational to treat irrationality, need to use more bloody to treat bloody.

Humans' language is used when talking with human beings, while demon's language must be adopted talking with demon. The language that the demon understands are savage, cruelty irrationality, and blood. Only in this way can those who convert to God be protected, and the demon can be driven away.

There are no prices for the majority of goods and restaurants in Lijiang and Dali's tourist attractions. Goods and food there will be tagged with names but no price. Once I went to a roadside booth, for two steamed buns. I think the cheapest are several times more expensive than those in the big cities. In large cities, standardised market environment, such conduct is purely a commercial fraud.

I am willing to buy things with price tag even it is expensive. Without price and selling expensively, it is a commercial fraud.

Do they really not know that pricing goods is the most basic rule of doing business, or do they believe that they needn't put a price tag because of their hospitality?

Or do they think that the rich are granted to be swindled?

Or does the local government not regulate the market, and the Trade and Industry Bureau does not investigate such a fraud?

Or are the local government and the lawbreakers simply working together?

Because they have a common living environment, culture, ideology, and logical thinking, they are essentially a family.

The steamed bun reflects the attitude of the locals, and it is not difficult to understand the psychological motives of disfiguring the woman tourist—the rich hatred. Hating and bullying the rich are the psychological distortions in all the ethnic minority areas from top to bottom.

Gentlemen love fortune in a proper way. The poor area needs prosperity, but should in proper and appropriate ways rather than through the rich hating and bullying. The rich do not owe you anything. Tourism of the rich to the poor places is a way to help the locals get rich as well.

Dealing with the rich in such mentalities and ways is what a demon does.

115. The have-nots are not afraid of the haves

27 January 2017

'The have-nots are not afraid of the haves' is a proverb in Chinese language, which is not collected in the classical literary works or school textbooks. However, it is a social culture and social logic that exists concretely. In addition, since ancient times, it has been in existence, and it has guided people's behaviour. It is a social guideline that runs in parallel with all the classical cultures.

The classical culture and the culture learned from school textbooks are the cultures of the wealthy and the logic of wealth, and those poor people and the civil society have folk cultures and the logic of the poor. Without a comprehension of the cultures and logical thoughts of the poor, it would be impossible to administer the poor.

A very simple truth is that the social impacts and harms exerted by the drug use by the wealthy and the poor are not the same.

The aftermath of drug use by the wealthy is bankruptcy. They would deteriorate from the haves to have-nots and have to live on the street.

In contrast, when the poor use drugs, in order to raise money, they can do any evil things, such as robberies and murders, thus severely harming others: black society, blackmailing, drug making and drug trafficking, counterfeit currencies, robbing banks, illegal trade of guns, forcing women into prostitution, etc., which are all evils committed by the members of gangdom.

During the early establishment of the new People's Republic of China, almost all people were proletariats; with the implementations of reform and open-up, a great number of people have become proprietarians. Almost all the current urban dwellers are proprietarians. No matter how poor a person may be, their apartment is worth hundreds of thousands of yuan; these are the assets. Of course, for various reasons, a small number of people have no apartments, no bank deposits and are the have-nots.

In China's remote mountainous regions and countryside, their real estate are not the commercial apartments and cannot be traded on the market in case they have no money. They are the have-nots in the true sense, They are the poor people.

The logical thoughts of the haves and have-nots are totally different.

For the haves, since they have money and assets, first of all, they hope to protect their existing properties and create more opportunities for earning more money and lead a better life. Since they have assets, they are very afraid of losing their assets. They intend to lead a better life, and of course, they are more afraid of death.

The wealthy are fearful of running into troubles and are afraid to get involved in fighting, and they are afraid of being penalised. This is because in the capitalist nations, most people are wealthy and are proprietarians; therefore, their social culture and social logic are established on the basis of the wealthy.

Democratic culture, abolishment of capital punishment, compensation for spiritual damages, equality between males and females, human rights and liberty, etc.—all these things are sheer nonsense if they are taken in front of the have-nots.

This is because the have-nots and the proletariats have their own logic, and what they are most concerned about is not democratic culture, abolishment of death penalty, compensation for spiritual losses, equality between males and females, human rights, liberty, and philanthropy.

When the poor are together with the wealthy, what they feel first of all is a kind of psychological gap, self-abasement, fury, jealousy, and hatred. The reason why the democratic nations have been advocating philanthropy and equal rights is that they want the poor to listen to these so that they will not become hateful and will not hate the wealthy and the proprietarians. In the advanced Western nations, in contrast to the impoverished, most people are proprietarians and they are all wealthy people. They need to encourage the small number of impoverished not to have hatred and grudging against the wealth. They need to reach the level of the wealth through their own efforts.

While the wealthy have such thoughts, the poor have their own logic, i.e. the have-nots are not afraid of the haves. Since I am poor, I can do anything—for the poor have nothing to lose. When the poor make efforts, they could get the whole world. Therefore, the poor can commit robberies, severely harm others, be members of the underworld, commit blackmailing and kidnapping, make and traffic illegal drugs, make counterfeit currencies, commit bank robberies, sell illegal weapons, force women into prostitution, etc.

This is because the logic of the poor is different from that of the wealthy. For the haves and have-nots, the administrations of the poor and the wealthy should also be different.

The effective administration of the wealthy is such things as the current legislative system fines, imprisonments.

For the impoverished, the most effective administrative system is strict laws execution and vigorous behavioural norms, which is management like the Koran-type management in Islamism. If the poor commit robberies, severely harm others, are members of the underworld, commit blackmailing and kidnapping, make and traffic illegal drugs, make counterfeit currencies, commit bank robberies, sell illegal weapons, force women into prostitution, etc., all these are the social trash and tumours and all of them should be executed immediately.

The wealthy have different logic from the poor, and they have different starting points for the thinking about some issues. Therefore, the laws there lenient to the wealthy are not applicable

for the poor, and the poor need strict laws. In order to make the laws executable, no matter they are the wealthy or the poor, when measuring the sentences, it is possible to make the litigant compensate in money. For those who can afford to pay or have assets, their penalties can be lightened. For those poor people, when they have committed crimes, they should be executed.

Just like the suspect who ruined the facial appearance of a woman, firstly, he was requested to compensate 2 million yuan; when he failed to do so, he was executed. Those people who have a worth of 2 million yuan would never have done something like that. In my opinion, since it was not affordable and he risked everything, he should have been executed.

For those wealthy people, their severe harms to others might have been caused by impulsions and they can be compensated with money.

For those poor people who have harmed others, they committed despising of God and should be executed.

However, regardless whichever people, whether they are the rich or the poor, intentional murders of people should be compensated by the death penalties. This is the law of God, and is also the most fundamental fairness and justice.

In China, social security is guaranteed by the government with God's wealth, and the government uses God's wealth for conducting scientific administration, and employments, training, education, urban development, and social security are all operating normally. Therefore, it is necessary to take effective measures on those who damage the order.

In a democratic society, regarding personal safety, it is partially provided by the nation, while the individual has to safeguard the other part. The nation is unable to provide complete safety assurance and effective and scientific management of the society; therefore, regarding the penalties for crimes, they can only resolve the contradiction. It is impossible to realise fairness and justice.

Since a nation has no obligations for individuals, you have no rights.

In democratic nations, it is necessary to collect God's wealth to the nation; only when the scientific administration of the society is realised will it be possible to completely apply the crimes and penalties for fairness and justice.

116. Game regulation shall be required in usury; those going beyond the limit shall be executed

30 March 2017

When we watch the ref film during childhood, the usurious loan is deemed as the unscrupulous approach for the landlords to ride roughshod over the poor. Yang Bailao fails to repay the usurious loan. Hence the landlords ask Yang to pay the debt with her daughter. Yang's daughter escapes to the remote mountain and gets her hair white. Later on, the Communist Party carried out the revolution, and the landlords are killed. Hence, the white-haired woman wins a new lease of life.

The story of White Hair Woman was the model opera that everybody from our ages is familiar with.

Unfortunately the landlord staged a comeback, whereas times have passed and circumstances have changed. Currently the Communist Party no longer tries to suppress the landlord. These groups are requiring human rights and legal protection from the party.

In today's news, a male sophomore is required to repay 1 million yuan as he borrowed 40 thousand yuan half a year ago. Hence he is forced to drop out of the school, and all his family are avoiding the creditor.

Another piece of news several days ago is that a woman is required to repay 1.5 million yuan after borrowing 40 thousand yuan. The old couple lose their only daughter and are forced to repay the debt. Unfortunately the company of usury wins the lawsuit.

Why shall the borrower repay 1 million or over 1.5 million yuan after borrowing 40 thousand yuan half a year ago? During this term, plenty of means for fraud and coercion have been adopted. The borrower is induced or coerced to write the receipt for loan. The lender shall firstly remit the money to the victim's bank account, secondly induce or coerce the victim to counterfeit the money-borrowing evidence through drawing the money from the bank and returning to the lender.

The court shall require the victim to return the huge money amount of 1 million yuan merely in accordance with the evidence acquired by creditor through coercion and fraud. As a matter of fact, the additional 960 thousand yuan does not even exist.

Accordingly the civilian is jointly oppressed by the government and the criminal usurious loan. The usurious loan is perceived as financial fraud, and the government is deemed the accomplice.

In accordance with the current laws of China, for the loan with the rate four times larger than the

interest rate of banks, the exceeding part shall not be protected by the government.

If the creditor requires the borrower to repay the interest with the interest rate four times larger than that of banks, the victim, namely the borrower, is able to refuse the repayment. If the usurious loan company adopts the oppression and fraud methods, it shall be recognised as a criminal offence and financial fraud. The public security organisation shall promptly file the case and carry out the investigation.

The government capital is the treasure created by God. The civil servant raised by the government capital shall maintain people's interests, rather than be the accomplice of the landlord, or requiring the innocent people to repay the borrowed money that doesn't even exist.

Such usurious loan company shall specially ride roughed over the students without he social experience. They require college girls to take a naked photo to mortgage the usurious loan. Students are praised as the future of our country. They are oppressed by the gangdom before they can graduate. What shall they hold their view on the society and country? Is there anybody to still love our country? Is there anybody to safeguard our country?

In my point of view, the one issuing the usurious loan towards the students with the interest rate surmounting the legal scope and adopting the oppression and coercion, with the loaned money over 100 thousand, shall be executed at the gate of the school.

The usurious loan companies with the interest rate surmount the legally regulated interest rate are basically operated by the criminal syndicate. Such organised crime is notorious for beating, blackmailing, coercing, and even killing people.

Once in China, a man was sentenced to the fixed-term imprisonment for eighteen years for stealing somebody's hat. Accordingly, one who illegally acquired 1 million yuan through fraud, blackmail, and robbery shall be executed over 100 times.

The Koran invented by the God is to regulate the savage. For this reason, the Koran is suitable to regulate the criminal syndicate. The Koran shall be adopted to resolve the problem of criminal syndicate, in other words, the criminal syndicate shall be executed.

117. If financial fraud involves a whole family, all members should all be executed

22 April 2017

Yesterday I went to a party where a couple of customers tearfully complained to me that their money has been conned by P2P boss, and they wanted me to help them figure something out.

There are more than 1,000 customers, and one of them lost 800,000 yuan. Approximately 2 billion was taken.

Although the man behind this has been caught, he is acting dumb, claiming that he knows nothing about it. They only managed to retrieve some cars and salesman's commission, with a total amount of 50 million.

The boss has been caught, yet he dares to deny everything. It is clear that he is relying on the Western human rights system and is convinced that he can act provocatively without punishment.

It is right to talk about human rights, but ordinary people need money; they want their money back.

You give back our money, and you can talk about any right you want. Anything you say we will believe, you can literally talk about anything.

But without the money, it is all just bullshit and total nonsense. The whole system is plundering the wealth from people with the help of criminals; the system is the accomplice of demon and a part of demon. The whole system is demonic.

Human rights are suitable for the people who speak for humans and do the right thing for humans. This is understandable.

But that the P2P boss defrauded ordinary people's money is not what humans will do. He is an out-and-out demon. Since the P2P boss is a demon, we should treat him in demons' language and demons' way of doing things.

The first thing we need to do is to arrest all the family members of the P2P boss and then take out all the ancient instruments of torture, try them one by one, and let them be tortured. The money will go back by a miracle.

Even a fool knows that the money does not vanish into thin air. It was just transferred by the P2P boss.

As far as I know, some victims of this case, mostly old men and women, have committed suicide.

So the P2P boss has reached the threshold of exterminating every one of the family.

All the money has been transferred by his family, so they are all accomplices. All the family members get the benefit and kill others for money.

Once he gives the money back, the family can be saved from the execution.

Applying tools of torture before the decapitation in order to cut people's loss is reasonable and lawful. It is called waste utilisation.

As long as the money is back, everybody will be saved.

118. Westerners Ought to Help Persecuted Old People in China to Safeguard Rights and Interests

9 July 2017

Some people in the West-like to criticize China and seek the dark side of China to help some democrats, democratic lawyers, and priests-defend rights.

You were running wild before, and now there's a big chance to behave yourself. Don't let the people and the democrats down.

I went to the park and saw a lot of old people organizing the revolution the other day. Their rights have been badly hurt, and even many people have committed suicide. They have no way to safeguard their rights and interests, so they hope that the Western democratic countries give them some help.

According to what they said, the number of victims reached to two hundred million, and the amount of fraud was two hundred trillion, and they are the victims of financial fraud by P2P companies in recent years with most of the elderly. Due to the savings cheated, many victims choose suicide in despair.

Although I am not the staff of the Bureau of Statistics and do not know where these figures come from, I estimate that the data should be very close to truthful data.

According to those people, Chinese government officials colluded with the P2P bosses to cheat their money and then refused to recover the stolen money, even indulge the P2P boss. If someone calls for rights protection, he will be threatened and asked to shut up.

Westerners should send reporters to investigate because of too much of these case, evidence and witnesses are easily collected. They are worried about the lack of attention to them and you're just in time to help them. They need revolution, and you ought to help them protect their rights.

Trump always said that you make fake news, but this time you don't need to fake anything because it is genuine sensational news. People are expecting your real news.

119. Some of China's Pyramid Selling Organizations Are Evil Organizations, and the Chief Criminal Should Be Beheaded.

5 August 2017

About pyramid selling, Amway should be the earliest pyramid selling that I have ever contacted with since China's reform and opening up. I once attended their activities several times. They have their own unique products, which are marketed through the way that the upper line extracts profit of the down line.

I have also participated in the pyramid selling activities of some health products, which claimed that their health care products imitate the natural environment of the longevity village and can produce miraculous health care effects.

Of course, their products cannot be explained by western scalpel and microscope, so they cannot be referred to as clinical medicine. Not only their products but also the phenomenon of longevity villages can't be explained by scalpel or microscope. They can't be marketed through the propaganda of medical institutions. Hence, they can only be marketed in the form of pyramid schemes.

I didn't try their products and I am not sure about the effect. I only know that many people claim the magical effects of the products. Of course, I can't tell if they're sheer fraud. They only promote their products by means of pyramid selling. No accidents like detention, violence or murder has been heard.

Another type of pyramid scheme in China has been more outrageous. Recent news reported that some university students in Shandong province had been cheated into a pyramid scheme and then they were died of starvation and beatings. Bodies were found in puddles.

The multi-level marketing organizations with Chinese characteristics first introduce the victims to the pyramid selling dens in the name of recruitment, work, parties, and other reasons, and then illegally detain them, brainwash, and publicize heresies. They force the victims to join the MLM with money. Then let the victim deceive other relatives and friends to come to the dens and join them to continue the activities: illegal detention, brainwash, and heresies propaganda. Let the second generation of victims join the pyramid scheme and then the third generation, the fourth generation.

The recently reported victim was brutally murdered and tortured to death because he refused to cooperate with the pyramid organization. This so-called pyramid organization is not a commercial marketing activity, nor is it a marketing organization, but an evil organization, an underworld organization, or a criminal organization.

I have only heard of the violence of the heresy and underworld pyramid organization, but I have never seen it myself because I live in a big city. If there is violence, we can call the police. In a few minutes, police will be there to deal with the situation. How can there be mass violent detention behavior?

They tend to be in remote rural areas with low population quality and poor policing. The place will be convenient for them to carry out their activities.

When dealing with this kind of matters, I think, we should first separate the commercial pyramid selling with the underworld and heresy-like pyramid selling because their properties are different.

The commercial pyramid selling is commercial activities, while the underworld and the heresy-like pyramid selling is in the business form but actually a kind of underworld and heresy-like activity. Therefore, their properties are different. The mushrooms look like the same, but some are home cooking, and some mushrooms are poisonous. People will die immediately after eating them. It is not right to forbid all mushrooms because some are poisonous. It is not right to prohibit all P2P because some P2P are fraud. It only demonstrates that the ruler is simple and rough, with simple mind and well-developed limbs.

I think the boss of the P2P purely in the purpose of fraud should be decapitated immediately. I think that a pyramid selling organizer with the nature of the underworld and heresy should also be decapitated immediately. They are neither pyramid organizations nor business organizations. They are heresy and underworld organizations clothed in pyramid selling.

P2P companies in the purpose of fraud are not P2P companies. They are pure financial fraud companies that wear P2P clothing. Business organizations are built on the voluntary basis. Illegal detentions, threats of violence, beatings, maltreatment, and murders are completely out of the realm of voluntary trade but underworld and heresy-like behaviors in essence and their organizers should be decapitated immediately.

As for P2P financial fraud, cut off the heads of several fraudsters, and other fraudsters will hand over the money they swindle from ordinary people, and such behavior will not happen anymore.

The same is true for the underworld and the heresy nature pyramid selling. If some organizers have been cut off heads, the other group would break up, and that will be the end of such behaviors.

120. The Girl Who Was Dropped from the Building Has Sexual Blackmail Behavior

24 August 2017

The hot news of today is a girl who was thrown down by her boyfriend from 19th floor. The parents of this girl required ten million compensation which ignite the argument of Chinese netizens.

It is normal girls killed due to passion, but this incident highlights a problem in Chinese society—that is sexual blackmail.

In ancient China, the requirement for male and female is forbidding the non-couples to have excessive contact. And Islam require women to cover their face to prevent other men from seeing any part of the woman's body. All these are for the prevention of sexual blackmail. While the combination of China's democratic freedom thoughts and ancient traditional culture has produced unique sexual blackmail culture in China.

First, women receive various gifts in relationship, and receive great number of bride price, besides, they all want to charge all the income of the family or they refuse to have sex with their husband. These are all sexual blackmail.

And the man in this case can't endure the nine-year sexual blackmail (give gifts to the girl in the long-term but receive nothing) and loses his sanity. He dropped the sexual blackmailer from the 19th floor due to the break out of psychosis. This behavior is wrong, but people who suffered from it all can understand. People who suffer from long-term sexual blackmail need resistance, or they will lose their dignity, especially the man's dignity.

In consequence of the girl's intended blackmail behavior, I think the male perpetrator needs to sentence to ten years imprisonment, which can serve to warn others against following a bad example.

All the compensation requirements of the girl's parents are unreasonable; it is a further sexual blackmail behavior, which can be done either by living people or the dead. Both parties should take the case as a warning. This is a punishment for wrongdoers, and for other sexual blackmailers, warning still be needed.

121. Game Industry Should Be Limited in Development

1 October 2017

We have already discussed many topics about war and death but the Middle East War is about to come to an end, so from my perspective, we shall discuss the problems of game. Originally, I am a senior game player. My skills in games are not rated as "supreme," but at least above middle level. The game industry in China which has started from scratch is a hot industry now; I have witnessed its growth. The harms brought by games are less serious than that of gambling, drugs, gangland, terrorism, cults, and demons.

If we solve the problems of "gambling, drugs, gangland, terrorism, cults, and demons," we are supposed to turn to games.

The sentence in Chinese textbook of middle school "it takes a teacher to transmit wisdom, impart knowledge, and resolve doubts." Means that people are required to explore the truth and learn the great truth in this regard.

I think all the countries in the world are facing serious problems, since people all over the world are giving up pursuing "the great truth."

What people have learned in schools is just the production skills used in laboring process, while not "the great truth."

So what is the great truth? All that God has imparted to human beings is "the great truth" including: Tao Te Ching, the Buddhist Scriptures, Bible, the Koran, Huang di's Canon of Medicine, Science of Chinese Materia Medica, Yin-yang Philosophy, capitalism, communism, and so on. These are all included in the great truth. However, if they are not understood and integrated by people, the world will be in severe conflicts.

Since the great truth is imparted by God for human beings to use as tools, they will definitely solve one aspect of problem existing in human society. Only all the tools are used flexibly and all the problems be solved finally. That is the conflict and truth in the world. People are more willing to spend all the money on enhancing their ability of earning money and vying with each other in this way while no one actually learns the great truth imparted by God.

The parliament members of Hong Kong who have insulted China, as well as those leaders in student movement are obviously the student representatives who are ignorant and benighted. They never know what is called "the great truth."

We may wonder why they are ignorant and benighted because they, as the young generation, are intoxicated by games.

Beside learning the skills to survive, they always spend their spare time playing games, what is worse, there is no time for them to learn great truth at all.

In my childhood, I also play “games” every day, such as searching bird’s nests in trees, finding out the “booty” and killing them for feeding chicken, doing some farming work as feeding chicken, sheep, rabbits, and pigs or just playing some games for children, which is so interesting at that time.

Then, I come to the big city, everything in my childhood has gone away. All the activities and sports I take part in cost money, except for running, but I hate it.

From my perspective, it is for someone whose energy is excessive, so they would choose such activity to run out of it, otherwise they would get sick in spare time. Playing computer games is the best tool for people in the city to kill the time.

In rural areas, playing games can exercise our body, enhance our physical quality, flexibility, strengths, and body coordination. When playing with peers, children may enhance their social, organizational, communicating skills, and so on.

Computer games can never provide all the above functions. Except for no any benefits, they bring some negative reactions to the body, at least, there are people who have died in front of computers of Internet bar. Computer games are something like drugs which will control the thoughts of men for a long time. Before being bored to games, they occupy a majority of the thought of people, even all the thought in some situation.

When they do not finish the task in games, people seem to be lost in something they have not completed and keep thinking on how to finish it. The harms of games are known to people all over the world, otherwise the governments will not restrict teenagers and children to enter game room and Internet bar.

Now, game room and Internet bar are outdated; what is popular is mobile game. The game not only brings harm to the teenagers and children but also intoxicates the adults.

In spare time, people are just thinking about how to play games while not the great truth. It is not to say that some ignorant people are selected as the parliament members in Hong Kong, we just need to select some people with great wisdom and knowledge. But all the people are the ignorant ones, include those who insult China.

I have researched on the great truth, then in spare time, I have studied on games. But you are ignorant and keeping studying on the useless thing, which is the fundamental reason for the chaos of the world. No one study on the great truth, the simple and basic principles for running of the world.

I think playing games should be limited to one hour.

When one has played game for one hour, he should be forced to leave and play again after twenty-three hours, in this way, the control and interference of games will be relived and addiction in games is also prevented.

Children in rural areas are always able to find various activities and games, such as farming work and feeding livestock. You may regard it as production activity, but it is actually the entertainment. There are rare entertainment activities for people and children in cities and communities, since there are no sites and facilities for such activities at all.

Currently, there are exercise facilities for old people in communities, but no facilities and sites for adults and children at all.

In commodity economy, every piece of land is valuable, so there are many commercial facilities for adults and children, but you must pay for them according to market value. It seems that the population density is considerable in cities, actually, people and children are isolated to their peers, with no connections at all. It is not reasonable and deformed. I think the facilities in communities should be provided for free compulsorily and the site area should be calculated and determined according to the residential area within the community such as the indoor and outdoor table tennis.

According to the construction area of the community, the free site and facilities should be provided accordingly to residents living in it. They are as necessary as supporting facilities of water supply, power, and coal.

Communication of children and teenagers with their peers, as well as the activities they are engaged in will help to enhance their physical quality, mental health, and the communicating and organizational ability. It is very important. They should be kept away from games and take part in more beneficial activities and exercise.

Another problem is that most of the hot games, provide platforms for players to communicate, so players are free to send information to each other. Because the group game requires cooperation, organized offence, changing strategies, and attacking highlights of different players if they want to win the game, the players with lower level and more failures will be a burden to the whole group and make the game more difficult. It is originally a kind of game tool. However, in practice, it becomes a platform for players to abuse each other. The players who are willing to spend money buying equipment and time studying on how to play are accustomed to insulting those players with less experience by using insulting and intimidating languages.

Moreover, the game operators are not only encouraging such behavior, but also engaged in the insulting those players with lower level of skills in order to encourage more players to buy equipment.

One hot game in China also provides the so-called report platform. The game operator will send information with insulting intention to players, intimidate, and abuse them so as to warn the

players with lower level of skills. Additionally, they also limit the behavior of those players.

In this way, they are trying every possible means to encourage “those players who are willing to spend money buying equipment and time studying on how to play.”

I think the reason why the game can become hot is greatly related to the so-called report system. It is able to encourage players to buy more equipment, spend more money on games, and waste more time while insulting and attacking those players who are not willing to buy equipment and spend time on games.

Such game does no good to players themselves, but brings harm to their body health, decreases moral cultivation, and destroys the social harmony.

Games are based on corrupting the society, destroying social harmony and morality except for those behaviors to make money.

122. It Is a Ridiculous Thing to Punish Someone That Stop Another One Smoking in the Elevator

9 November 2017

Recently, a sentence arouses heated discussion on the network. An old man smokes in the elevator and another passenger tries to prohibit such action. During their quarrel, the old man dies of sudden heart attack. Family members of the deceased gather together to beat up the passenger and lodge a lawsuit against the passenger for claim. The court judges the passenger to pay fifteen thousand RMB to the family members of the smoker. This is a typical case in China. Old people often blackmail others. Once old people fall down to the ground, family members would solicit huge compensation from another party involved in the conflict.

Many old people who fall down the ground by themselves would in turn incriminate other rescuers or passengers as the wrecker and accordingly solicit compensation from them. However, the court supports the request of old people and their family members in most cases and the so-called wrecker, needs to pay the expensive medical fee.

a) In above case, the passenger who prohibits the smoking action of the old man is the innocent party who should be encouraged. While the old man who dies of sudden heart attack actually dies of natural death causes and the old man himself is the guilty party. The passenger should not assume any responsibility. Moreover, the government shall take it as a typical case and award the passenger five hundred RMB.

b) Family members of the deceased who gather together to beat up the passenger shall pay medical fee and cost of lost labor according to the state of injury.

c) Family members of the deceased who gather together to beat up the passenger shall be detained for fifteen days.

123. HIV-infected Patients Who Deliberately Contact with and Infect Others Should Be Executed

9 November 2017

There takes place a fantastic event in China recently. A man knows that his wife is an HIV-infected patient after getting married and having children. In addition, in the premarital medical examination, the hospital does not inform him about the disease of his wife. When the party involved files the hospital to the court and asks for compensation, the court refutes his lawsuit on the pretext of protecting HIV-infected patients. This is another case about the collusion between the government and the demon to do harm to the ordinary people. This event should be viewed from two aspects.

1.Judicial injustice of the court

Obviously, premarital physical examination institution fails to detect the severe venereal disease of the object. This should be attributable to work fault or malicious shielding. The institution should assume responsibility for this. It is a totally reasonable minimum requirement for the party involved to ask for compensation from the premarital physical examination institution. However, the court's sentence for the non-fault of the premarital physical examination institution actually belongs to malicious shielding and malpractice and impairs the fundamental interests of the public.

2. Defects in the legal protection for HIV-infected patients in China

HIV is a kind of infectious disease. Although HIV is not infected via spray and air like flu, it also belongs to a malicious epidemic with extremely high death rate. The Chinese government does not control malicious epidemic but approves its free diffusion. This proves the severe defects of law and lawmakers.

In order to defend their own great, glorious, and righteous image, lawmakers take all means to misuse their power rather than to defend the rights and interests of the ordinary people and defend justice and fairness. This is the most serious problem.

Few years ago, some HIV-infected patients once stored their blood in the needle tubing and randomly plunged into passengers on the street. However, it is impossible to verify whether it is a rumor or fact. I believe that even this is a fact, it would be still concealed by someone as a rumor.

However, in this case, the HIV-infected patient deliberately conceals her illness and even gets married to bear children with the victim. The victim is not being informed of the fact until there is no retreat.

In addition, the government maliciously indulges HIV-infected patients with their random diffusion of disease and maliciously helps such patients conceal the fact from the victim. That's the way it is.

In my opinion, the correct practice is to (i) isolate HIV-infected patients from ordinary people, (ii) demand HIV-infected patients to wear obvious marks clear to others if they live together with ordinary people, (iii) instantly execute HIV-infected patients or other patients with malicious epidemic who deliberately contact with and infect others.

As the old saying goes in China, "Do as you would be done by."

I suggest supporting all lawmakers in favor of HIV-infected patients to live with HIV-infected patients and have sexual relation with them for several times before their vote. This is the most reasonable solution. It is nonsense for those lawmakers who eat special supply food and have security guard to enact such law when they simply shake hands with HIV-infected patients.

As commented by some netizens, many black people who steal into Guangzhou are HIV-infected patients. It is well-known that Africa is the high incidence area of HIV. Black people who infect Chinese people via sexual relation must be instantly executed too. Moreover, all black people in China should receive the compulsory physical examination, or otherwise, illegal immigrants should be repatriated.

124. The Central Bank and China UnionPay Should Form the Government's Mobile Network Payment Platforms

26 November 2017

Now non-cash payment has become a new wave. It seems to be the mainstream and a new trend. However, the current payment platforms are all run by private enterprises. Moreover, they are controlled by foreign bosses. This poses a potential threat to our national security. There will be a problem if the government's role is absent from the main financial payment channel.

The development of Alipay certainly has its value, which adapts to the needs of social development. Internet transactions require online payment platforms. Initially, Alipay only served as a credit guarantee for online transactions. It used to be the temporary prepayment pool before the customer received the goods. Its role was to meet the requirements of almost all customers across the country and served as all the banks to pay and temporarily deposit payment for goods.

Later, after the fund pool of temporary deposits had financial management function, the funds in the pool can not only be withdrawn at any time, but also bring about the interests of fixed time deposits.

Driven by the interests, people deposit all their working capital into Alipay to obtain certain interests and are able to withdraw their capital at any time. The functions of smart phones are becoming more and more powerful with their popularity. Among the functions are fingerprint recognition, face recognition, QR code recognition, positioning, and high-speed data processing. In addition to supporting online transactions, new functions of Alipay have been developed, namely instant spot transaction, instant payment, and QR payment.

Many people now go out with their mobile phones instead of cash. Technology is developing so fast, Alipay is leading and has been leading the trend of the times. This is of course the value of its existence. Private enterprises are creating wealth for sure. It is right to create wealth. If enterprises do not make money or do not develop, it is just like soldiers do not fight or flee.

In contrast, our banking system seems to be working for Alipay. In fact, it does. Because all traditional banking belongs to bureaucratic system, they are afraid of risks. Although I have heard that some banks are also engaged in mobile payment but they have no methods to promote it. I don't think this is what a bank can do. But what the Central Bank or UnionPay should perform.

Since mobile payment has become the mainstream of the society, the government cannot be absent, or it is ineffective governance.

1. In the financial sector, people believe in the government-owned institutions but not in private

enterprises. The state needs to be responsible for the security of all funds entering and leaving the state-owned payment platforms, while the responsibilities of private enterprises are limited.

2. Moreover, the formation of a payment platform is simple; it's all about establishing a website, finding some technical staff, and downloading an app. There's not much technical difficulty involved.

3. The state-owned payment platforms need to provide services to all e-commerce providers, rather than being monopolized by a few companies, which is conducive to fair competition between e-commerce enterprises.

125.Crime of Disobedience

9 December 2017

In ancient China, the crime of disobedience was the crime of seriously infringing upon the rights and interests of parents and causing serious harm to parents. If found guilty, the one shall be beheaded and executed immediately. I said before that “filial piety” has the functions of old-age insurance and compulsory education, which can make the population increase and parents have the will to have more children in the age of filial piety. Because you don’t know which child you gave birth to may become a helpful figure in the future, a president, a prime minister, or a rich person, and bring prosperity to the family. Those who have committed the crime of disobedience are not filial to their parents, instead, they do serious harm to their parents.

In China and today’s world, this kind of behavior is considered as a common crime of injury or fighting. In China, I have seen a news report that a rebellious son often raped his mother in addition to beating his parents. His father was so unbearable that he killed the rebellious son. However, the court found his father guilty of intentional homicide. This case shows that the current legal system is not doing justice but making accomplices to the devil. The court made the above judgment according to the existing law. The framers of the existing law were largely influenced by the western human rights culture. They also want to play with human rights and claim to be a human rights democracy. It should also be in line with the West.

Western countries place too much emphasis on individual rights and interests and completely ignore social management and social order. They are already tasting the consequences. All western countries and democratic Russia have suffered severe population decline.

Chinese tourists traveling to Japan met an eighty-year-old man driving a taxi because they did not have enough pension. They can’t retire. At the age of eighty, they still need to work to support their family.

Europe has a shortage of population, an aging population and a large shortage of young people. To solve the problem of pension for the elderly, Europe actually introduced Muslims to pay for their pension on the grounds of accepting refugees. This has caused serious dissatisfaction among the local whites and has seriously infringed upon the interests of the local whites.

The problem of European whites giving birth to their own children cannot be solved, and they introduce demons to support them, which is evil in itself. This clearly shows that western culture has serious problems. The solution to this problem is filial piety and disobedience.

Both Europe and China must promote “filial piety” and setup crime of “disobedience.”

Giving all parents a guarantee and a power, a contract will surely make them confident and bold to have children.

If you can’t bear your children any longer, you can tell God to take them away.

What we need to do is to make laws to send those who have committed serious disobedience to God, letting them negotiate with God in person and letting God decide whether they should be left in heaven or sent to hell.

Of course, the death penalty should be carried out in a civilized manner, so that they can choose a way to see God at a specified time and place. Everyone needs to have a bottom line in their behavior, including their attitude toward their parents. Of course, we advocate filial piety, which is not mandatory and absolute. You may not like your parents, or you may stay away from them but you can’t seriously hurt them and seriously infringe on their interests. This is the bottom line as a human being. Otherwise, you need to go to God to make your words clear. This is called warning to others. After killing a few typical ones and a few leaders, the folkway will naturally be right, hence the problem of population reduction is solved naturally.

126. If Juveniles Deliberately Injure Others at School, Which Cause Other People's Death or Suicide, They Should Be Executed.

28 December 2017

Today, I read the news telling that Chinese government issues document dealing with the bullies in school, and the response is to send them to the reformatory school. In my perspective, for the ones with minor circumstances, they can be educated in the reformatory school. But for the ones with wicked circumstances who have caused other people's death or suicide, they should be executed.

The current Chinese law give juveniles and mental patients who have committed crimes with light sentences or exemption for the punishment. If juveniles and mental patients commit serious crimes, except for endangering the whole society, they are also people who are useless to the society compared with other people, thus they should receive harsher punishment.

For the juveniles who have committed serious crimes, they are just like the subquality products, which should be returned to the factory for reproduction. After executed, their living space should be left to the physically and mentally healthy people. Being lenient to the juveniles and mental patients is the evil law made by devils. Specially to protect the devils, generate devils in rebellion of the God and undermine fairness and justice. The best education approach for the juveniles is to execute one as a warning to others. The best teaching material is to use some people's death and blood to teach the next generation how to be an educated person, and whether to be a good man or a bad man. This is the effect of examples.

If there is a typical and educational case, the criminal should be executed at the school gate. Life for life is the doctrine of God. For the ones who deliberately injure others or bully others causing other people's death and suicide, they should be executed life for life, which is the will of God.

The mental health of juveniles is not fully developed, they are easy to be impulsive when encountering difficulties in life and commit suicide. Therefore, the juvenile bullies should think clearly. For the ones who bully others causing other people's death and suicide, they should be executed life for life. This is the best protection for the juveniles.

127. Good People and Bad People

8 January 2018

I grow up with my grandparents, although I only live with my grandfather for a few years before he passed away. They have always been telling me to be a good people. The distinction between good people and bad people is quite blurred.

Now, let me define good people and bad people in my own viewpoint. I am not a big fan of my grandfather, who is an alcoholic and gambles a lot. However, he is an intellectual and speaks English very well. He used to do business with foreigners before China's liberation.

However, whenever he is drunk, he will tell the story of "biting mother's nipples." I have listened for dozens of time and this makes me disgusted. However, the story tells profound truth. Modern people are anomic.

I think my grandfather should come back to life and tell the story of "biting mother's nipples" to all the Chinese parents and foreigners repeatedly. Everyone should listen to it for dozens of times, and the parents should then tell it to their children. This is the basic education and the good and the evil.

> The story of biting mother's nipples:
>
> There is a robber who has done a lot of bad things and finally got caught. Before being executed, the judge asked him if he had any requirement. The robber said that he wanted to be breastfed again by his mother. The judge satisfied him and brought his mother to him.
>
> When the robber saw his mother, he bit his mother's nipple off. Her mother asked the robber why he did this. The robber said that when I did bad things when I was young, my mother never told me that this was wrong. Instead, she spoiled me, which made me do more wrong things with more serious consequences until now, I was executed. My mother was the one who I hate most.
>
> In the past, the robber does highjack, now it is the financial fraud.

In my perspective, the definition of good people and bad people are like this. Whoever can create wealth through labor and serve others so that people can benefit from him or her, those are the good people. Good people create wealth through making contributions to others and the society.

Whoever harm others and the society or country to become rich are bad people. No matter if his behavior is rightful or not, it can be measured through the two standards. Because the law can be taken advantage of, some people are too powerful to believe that they make the laws. Therefore, it is not absolutely right to distinguish good people and bad people from whether their behaviors are legal or not. However, it is absolute right to measure from the perspective of whether they have brought damages to other people, the society, and the nation.

This is especially true to our times when the new things keep emerging and the development of law always behind, just like P2P and payday loan. When the robbers are robbing through P2P and payday loan, they are totally legitimate, however, they should be executed considering the consequences they have brought about.

I distinguish the good people and bad people through this standard in the conditions of P2P and payday loan.

If the companies and management are benefiting the country and people, I will follow them to help them and bless them.

If I determine that they are scamming, I will figure out how to destroy them and get them out of the market. I am the most familiar with the insurance company, there are good people and bad people within the insurance company. There are good companies and bad companies, good management and bad management.

Some say that insurance companies are deceiving people, this is not correct. Because the pricing, protection provided to the customers and services of the insurance products are following certain rules and scientific truths. Therefore, anyone who have bought the insurance product cannot be described as being cheated. Every product has its own value. Therefore, you cannot say that the insurance salesmen are deceiving people when they are selling the products. In fact, they are doting the good things, at least not bad ones. However, some of them are doing evil things and being the bad guy.

For example, a product needs to be paid for five years, but the salesman informs the client that only one year payment is needed, which causes great financial loss for the client. This is the evil thing.Also, in order to earn commission, the salesman will sign some invalid contracts and make the clients cancel the insurance in the next year, which brings huge losses for the nation and the company.

There are more than one thousand people who are doing this in my former company, this is coming across the bad people, bad bosses, bad teams, and bad companies.

Are they legitimate? Of course, they are, their bosses make them do this, which makes it legal.

Are they robbers? Of course, they are. If our nation and society do not execute them, there will be a lot of people protect them. Not only a lot of people are protecting them, there are also the

white-left wing in the western countries, the great whore, and devils.

Compared with the real immoral people, big liars and robbers, the bad people in my former company sound like nothing because there are too many people who are worse than them in this world. Too many people are harming other people. What we need are not laws and regulations, but also faith. The faith to goodness and evil. No matter you are legitimate or not, we will fight with the bad people to the end. Until we destroy them all.

We can analyze some typical cases and events.

1. Selling crutch

Selling crutch, the short sketch of Zhao Benshan, is widely known in China. Although this is an artist work rather than a typical case, the assessment and evaluation of the artist work is of great realistic significance.

Some people think that it is illegal to sell crutch, which should not be advocated and should be fought again. I don't think so.

Selling crutch to the not lame people is like selling insurance to the people who do not understand it. What we should care is not about bragging, but about the nature of the incident.

Now let's go deep into the nature of the phenomenon.

a. There is the part of deceiving and bragging in the transaction.

b. The transaction is based on real substance, which is the production cost and certain reasonable profit. Selling crutch and insurance is to sell the intrinsic value and reasonable value to the buyers through bragging. Although this is not right, but it is within the acceptable tolerance scope.

To lie a little bit so that the product with value can be sold to others is not a big mistake. Especially when people are in great poverty and need money, it is not making a little lie to sell a valuable product. Whether it is wrong, it is not determined by the fact of if one lies, but by whether the product is valuable or not, and by if you have sold the forged and faked products, toxic products or unreal products others in high prices.

To sell valuable products to other people is not making mistakes. However, if you have sold the forged and faked products, toxic products or unreal products others in high prices, this is something wrong and should be fought against and the criminals should be executed.

We are criticizing selling crutches verbally and flaunting about ourselves. However, to the people who have cheated others for millions of moneys, we ignore then and tolerant them, this is the real evil and behaviors of devil.

Recently I read a news telling that the staff of Agricultural Bank of China transfers billions of moneys from the clients in the name of deposit, and the bank claims that this is the employee's personal behavior and the bank is not responsible for it. This is the real robber and real devil.

Who is qualified to criticize the selling of crutch? If the real bad people and robbers are executed, then you are qualified to judge whether it is fraudulent behavior in people's defective behaviors of normal transactions. This is the nature of the incident, that is whether you are selling valuable products, or it is pure fraud. To play dumb and make profit in the pure fraud. But being critical about ordinary transactions, this is showing off, not upholding justice.

2. Selling Health Care Products

Some health care products have real values, but some are purely cheating the consumers. For example, I believe the products of Amway are of their own value. However, some products are just starch, which is to fool the consumers. I think it is robbing people when you make the consumers to buy products with prices much higher than the real value through cheating.

When they are making money, they are not making contribution to the society and other people.

3. Transacting Poisonous and Harmful Food

There is distinction of levels in regard to the poisonous and harmful food.

a. Expired food

b. Moldy contaminated food, such as meat of dead sick pigs, edible oil recovered from garbage

c. Harmful foods, such as nuclear radiation foods, cadmium exceeding rice, melamine milk powder, plasticizer cream, Sudan Red and other dyed food, industrial additive foods.

d. Chemical raw materials, synthetic food, fake eggs, fake noodles. These are not real food but pseudo food.

The bad people and robbers are also classified into different levels according to the harms brought to the society and other people.

128. The Wealth of the Condemned Should Be Used as Compensation for Victim

23 January 2018

Today, I saw a hot news on the Internet. Recently, a Chinese killer raped two underage feminines, causing one dead and another one serious injured. In consequence of nine hundred thousand RMB compensation from the perpetrator, the court decided to free him from death sentence. Because of the verdict, netizens believe that if one can free from death as long as he has money, then it is an action of selling righteousness and making deal with devil.

Why is the court made such judgment? Because of the request made by the family of the victim. Because the victim's family is very poor, they can't afford the medical expenses, thus the killer's family proposed this deal, that is saving the killer from death sentence with nine hundred thousand RMB.

It is said that China's has hidden rules—if the killer pays for money, he can free from death sentence. While if the killer is sentenced to death, then the family of the killer doesn't need to pay money for the victim's family.

I don't know where these hidden rules come from, which law they are based on. Because in according to normal logic, people should take responsibility with their own actions.The killer must be responsible for their own behavior. There's no need to kill all the perpetrator's family. People who commit crime or kill people have nothing to do with their family, the family needn't assume joint responsibility. It's okay. But it is a common sense that the killer should assume responsibility for their act of murder.

The responsibilities of the murderer, in addition to their own life, need to be compensated by the property bearing their own name. Therefore, wealthy people who commit crime should pay money and their life for the murder. These are two completely non-conflicting things. The court should compensate the victim by the property bearing their own name, and the rest wealth is legacy, which should be inherited by the murderer's family.

Once the murderer commit crime, the court should seal all the wealth of the murderer immediately, and allocate it after the end of the case, the money that used for compensation should give to the victim, while the money that belong to murderer's family should inherited by his family. Because the criminal need to assume the responsibility for their own behavior, it is not only the need to pay their life for the murder, but also the wealth of the criminal belongs to the subjects that need the court to judge, sentence, divide, and settle.

Because in the relationship between criminal and victim, the victim is entitled to require compensation for the loss that caused by the criminal's behavior. Therefore, the victim's family

has the right to the property of the criminal. It is justice and righteousness. But it is necessary for the court to decide how much should be compensated for the economic joint liability other than the death penalty, and how much should be inherited by the family.

Given the criminal's age is about fifty years in this case, he must have respectable property, and it should more than nine hundred thousand RMB. The property that bear his name shall be sealed by the court, and shall be judged after trail, other than employed by the criminal's family to negotiate with the victim. This is ridiculous. Unless some destitute criminals, they don't have property, but some people are willing to pay for his life, this is negotiable.

129. Medical Trouble Profiteer (MDP) Who Cause Severe Injury to Doctor Shall Be Killed at Site

16 February 2018

Medical trouble has always been in China. In a recent news, an MDP caused four times comminuted facial fracture to the doctor with a hammer. In other words, the MDP used at least a big hammer and hit the doctor's face four times.

In my view, the criminal shall be killed at the door of the hospital according to his behavior. On the basis of current judicial system, medical troubles belong to fighting and brawling due to economic dispute. Economic dispute, emotional outburst, and the amount of involved money is huge, so it looks like the dispute is reasonable, so death sentence is unnecessary in normal condition.

Some netizens believed that the hospital just earn blood money and want to strip every penny of the patient family. So the doctor deserve it, and the dispute is reasonable.

I think this is because the judicial system protects the devil. Because they are not sentenced to death, so they harass with unreasonable demands and breach the order intentionally. They should be killed at site as a warning to others.

Let's analyze this case. First, whether the disputes are reasonable or not. As for the netizens and medical trouble profiteers accuse the hospital earn blood money and strip the money of the patients' family, I admit that they are right.

For me, I will ask clearly about what I had done with my money, what effect it will cause and what I can gain when I spent every penny. Whether it is used to buy some things or cure sickness of my family. Even cure the sickness of the people I love most; my interest shall not be damaged. For this reason, I was called ruthless by my family. I know normal people can't be ruthless like me. But for living people, this is the most sensible choice. I think the reason that cause the conflict between doctor and patient is the doctor gave wrong guide and bad advice to the patient's family

Some diseases can't be cured at all, so it is useless to spend money on it. But as the family members, they don't know, don't want to admit or don't want to think in this way, but as medical organization, they should give reasonable advice to the family members.

When cure the patients to certain degree and the patient's family spend enough money, from the reasonable perspective, the medical organization should suggest the family members to treat conservatively or given up treatment, don't spend more money on it.

The patient may have a high probability cannot be cured, but the living person needs to keep

money to live well. And if the family needs to continue treatment, they must sign, and admitted to voluntarily pay the money on treatment under the condition that the hospital explicitly recommends giving up treatment.

Family members are often irrational when treating their loved ones. But the doctor knows very well that the patient is cannot be cured. Even spend more money, the doctor can only prolong a few months for the patients.

So I think the family members should get rational advice. And authoritative doctors should tell them to stop spending money and stop useless investment. From the perspective of the hospital, this is impeding them to earn money. But this is morality.

When medical troubles happened, majority netizens commiserate the criminals; the fundamental reason is the doctor has no morality, they didn't give rational advice to the patient for the benefit of patient's family. Not only will they not give rational advice to their families, but they will also receive red packets and kickbacks.

Second, from another perspective, medical trouble profiteer should be killed at site if they cause severe injury to medical personnel. I think maybe some medical troubles are to let off the dissatisfaction for the system. I suggest those people whose dissatisfaction with medical system to perish together with doctors with explosive and commit suicide bombing like Huang Jiguang (revolutionary hero) Dong Cunrui (revolutionary hero) and extremist of Islamic state.

People who commit suicide bombing are all fight for their belief. No matter they believe in God or devil, it is all beliefs. Although I want to eradicate Islamic state, but I think they are all real fighters, while the medical trouble profiteers are not.

If medical trouble profiteers want to become a real fighter, if they really fight for belief, fight for truth, then they should commit suicide bombing like Islamic state to attack doctors and hospital.

If some medical trouble profiteers carry on bomber to kill doctors and hospitals with an explosion. I think only when they swear to dead with black heart doctor can our society realize problems in the medical system, then our country will change the medical system.

Those hit the doctor's face with hammer thought that economic dispute cannot be sentenced to death. Is this a warrior? Is this fighting for the truth? This is the devil who utilize the bug of regime and judicial system, they utilize the collusion between the judicial system and the devil to extort and conduct hooliganism. Therefore, medical trouble profiteer who cause severe injury or death shall be killed at site to safeguard the order of the society. If suicide bomb which aroused by medical troubles, changes shall be done at medical system.

130. The Problem of Multi-level Marketing Can Only Be Eradicated by Sentencing the Leaders to Death.

9 April 2018

I happened to meet a group of multi-leveled marketing personnel in my travel the other day. This group of people, guided by several leaders, was brainwashing some college students on the train. They were so rampant that they even didn't care about the passengers around, including me.

I knew something about normal multi-level marketing in large cities before. The multi-level marketing comes into being because of the specificity in products. Mouth-from-mouth selling is needed in promotion and marketing.

In normal multi-level marketing, the product is introduced in the meeting or marketing. New members are attracted to promote the product into market in view of the advantages and benefiting effects in the product.

Differently, the multi-level marketing that I came across on the train had nothing to do with material products. It was absolutely fraud. I think this kind of multi-level marketing belongs to the illegal pyramid selling scheme identified by the Chinese government, which is nothing but getting something for nothing, mind control and fraud. It should be deemed as heresy and crime.

I think this kind of selling belongs to the illegal pyramid selling scheme identified by the Chinese government, which is nothing but getting something for nothing, mind control and fraud. It should be deemed as heresy and crime.

In my opinion, the leaders of pyramid selling shall be executed by shooting, instead of being imprisoned. They are devils and disasters to the society.

A strong hand is the only effective way when faced with devils. They should pay with their blood. It is also true of those who possess nuclear weapon and the suicide attackers.

Preach makes no sense and is in vain for the devils. The one and only way in dealing with evil is iron hand and blood repaying. Only the pictures of shooting execution of those leaders can stop innocent college students and teenagers from going astray. Any preach is a waste of time.

In my view, the pyramid selling that is similar to a cult and product-based multi-level marketing should be treated separately. The difference is in the product. We should confirm whether mouth-from-mouth selling is needed for the product; whether the product is good for human and the society; and whether the product is truly worthy.

It is fraud if the members just get some useless and shoddy things that can be made in a

workshop after giving in a large amount of money. This kind of selling should be defined as the pyramid selling that is similar to a cult, whose leaders should be sentenced to death. However, we should protect normal product-based multi-level marketing, in which the product is in fine quality with good feedback and reasonable price.

131. The Petition of Victims of Shan Lin Financial Fraud (Shanghai) to the Central Inspection Team

15 May 2018

The financial fraud cases in Shanghai happen frequently, but all of them are sentenced very lightly, I think this is problematic and unfair, and this is the root cause of the problem.

I was the former sales manager of Xinhua Insurance Company and worked for this company from the salesman to the excellent team leader for eight years from 2007 to 2015. So I am very familiar with the financial industry in Shanghai.

From the beginning of financial fraud up to now, I become a victim. I am a witness.

I think all the frauds are purely the collaboration of fraudsters and corrupt officials who take advantage of loopholes in financial reform and fraudulently engage in activities of financial fraud. Moreover, this is a premeditated and well-planned fraud.

The financial reform initiated by Premier Li Keqiang around 2013 aims to encourage the financial industry to serve small and medium-sized enterprises and private economy, invigorate private capital, and promote inclusive finance.

Its starting point is good, and some P2P, P2B, Internet platforms are indeed serving small and micro enterprises and the real economy.

But at the same time, there are a lot of so-called financial management companies, P2P, P2B, funds, online, offline, which use various names and flags, they don't do any physical investment, and don't serve any physical economy.

They fabricate false objects and contracts, engage in Ponzi schemes, and ravage the people's lifeblood for asset transfers and profligacy. I think the government has played a very bad role in this fraud campaign. Not only they did not protect the people, recover stolen money and crack down on fraudsters, but they also pass the buck to the victims, accuse them of coveting small profits, and ask them to bear the losses.

a. I think the financial fraud is claimed by the government as illegally absorbing public deposits or illegally raising funds. It is a conspiracy of some officials and fraudsters in the government.

As for the nature of the case, is it illegal absorption of public deposits, or illegal fund-raising, or financial fraud? It is understandable that common people do not know the difference among them. But the economic investigation departments that deals with economic crimes all day long are also confusing right and wrong, which is seriously doubtful.

Shanghai's judicial system and fraudsters are premeditated to setup a trap to plunder the people's lifeblood.

In fact, the difference among them is very simple, all those moneys collected by investment companies from customers are doing physical investment in according to the projects agreed in the contract, this is the behavior of private lending. It is in accordance with the policy of inclusive finance.

Those who fabricate false contracts and fabricate false projects are financial frauds. People do not understand, but the economic investigation department that deals with economic crimes every day are impossible not to understand. But almost all of malignant financial fraud cases in Shanghai from reporting to court trial, there is no word of "fraud" from beginning to end.

What does this mean? Does this mean that the whole judicial system in Shanghai has been bought off by fraudsters and is deliberately sheltering fraudsters? Are they helping fraudsters get rid of crimes? Besides, what else does it mean?

What is fraud? What is deposit? What is fund-raising? These simple nouns can be made clear by consulting the Xinhua Dictionary and by asking a Chinese teacher of primary school. And those economic investigation departments and judicial personnel that deals with economic crimes all day long are confusing right and wrong. They deliberately fabricate charges for we, victims of financial fraud, describe us as participants in illicit fund-raising, as the people who go for wool and come home shorn and need accept experience and lessons.

So I believe that there is a suspicion of corruption in Shanghai's judicial system. They collude with the fraudsters and maliciously setup traps to defraud us innocent people's lifetime savings, pension money, and life-saving money.

They conspire to treat us victims as Tang Monk's meat, lambs to be slaughtered, and feasts, everyone wants to have a piece of meat.

b. I think another proof that some people in the government conspire with fraudsters is the Disposal of Illegal Fund-raising Ordinance, which clearly states in Article 4 that "participants in illegal fund-raising shall bear the loss of their own participation in illegal fund-raising."

The government takes taxpayer's money, they do not recover the stolen money, they do not protect the people. Instead, they let the victims themselves bear responsibility.

It's like the villain rapes the beautiful woman, but the government accuses the beautiful woman of wearing too revealing, deliberately seduces the bad person. The government lets the bad person go, and letting the beautiful women go home and take the responsibility for self reflection. The government cannot be irresponsible like this. Are there any heavenly principles? Is there justice? Are you still communist?

It goes out to see that the streets are full of socialist core values, “Prosperity, democracy, civilization, harmony, freedom, equality, justice, nomocracy, patriotism, dedication, integrity, friendliness.” Of course, people need faith. That’s right. But our real society is that the common people are being maliciously defrauded of finance, there are thousands of cases of big size and small size. The amount of money from tens of thousands to tens of millions basically like a stone dropped into the sea to this day.

The Chinese government does not help the people return to the lost money but requires the people themselves to bear the losses of financial fraud.

Hundreds of millions of victims and families, what do they think of this twenty-four words on the street? Do they have faith? Do they make people around them have faith? I can say that only when they take back their money, will they have faith.

c. In 2013, I felt that there were great intrigues and risks in it.

When I was the manager of an insurance company in 2013, many colleagues of my team switched to financial management companies. I also interviewed and inspected many financial management companies. Because I was a group leader of the insurance company, they took a fancy to my client resources. Many financial management companies tried their best to get me.

Some financial management companies told me directly, “You can pull in the money from the customers. If something goes wrong, it has nothing to do with you. Don’t be afraid.” From the beginning, they thought about how to cheat customers’ money and how to retreat. This is purely a malicious financial fraud. All the financial fraud companies are conspiracy, they designed how to cheat money, how to retreat five years ago. The junior salesman was unaware because their grades were not high enough. Senior business executives must know the inside story.

I have seen too much. These are all a series of well-planned malignant fraud cases. Instead of fund-raising case and savings case. In summary, I ask:

a. Any case that fails to carry out physical investment in accordance with the project of contract and causes losses to the victim. They should be convicted as crime of financial fraud, and they should be heavier, faster, and more severely punished. Fraudsters with more than one hundred million fraudulent amounts who are unable to recover their clients’ losses should be executed.

b. The regulations on illegal fund-raising should be abolished immediately. It is a political conspiracy that the government shirk responsibility, and a few conspirators blame the innocent people for the responsibility of financial fraud. The people firmly oppose the implement of such policies and regulations.

c. We call for the characterization of Shan Lin Financial cases as financial fraud.

d. If the boss of Shan Lin doesn’t bring our money back, we strongly demand that Zhou Boyun be

sentenced to death. China used to execute all these financial fraudsters. So at that time, the social order was good and there was no malicious financial fraud at all. In recent years, financial fraud has been exempted from death penalty in our country. That's why financial fraud has erupted frequently. And those fraudsters actually cheat in the name of the Great hall of the people and the state. If this can be endured, what else cannot be?

Our country must take action to resolutely curb the rampant and unscrupulous situation of financial fraudsters for giving people justice.

If the state does not kill them, this is not enough to calm the people. If the state does not kill them, this is not enough to uphold justice. If the state does not kill them, there is no heavenly principles. If the state does not kill them, it will not maintain normal social order.

However, our intention is not killing, we want to retrieve our losses. If Zhou Boyun and his colleagues can retrieve most of our losses, they can be exempted from death penalty. Never forget what happened before. Finally, the victims of Shan Lin Financial ask the government to protect the people and bring justice to us.

132. Issue of Sex Trade Legality

24 May 2018

I have talked about it for many times before. A recent case happened in China makes people discuss this issue again.

An airline stewardess was raped and killed by an online car-hailing driver. And then this driver committed suicide by jumping into a river. Some people discuss the issue of sex trade legality. They think it's time to make sex trade realize disclosure and legalization, so as to reduce these malignant sexual assault cases.

In fact, if this taxi driver can satisfy their sexual desire in the sex trade market, why did he rape and kill her and kill himself to perish together with the so-called beauty?

If sex trade is legal, we can find out more beautiful beauties in the sex trade places, which have low costs and various types. Therefore, it has no need to rape and kill someone, let alone perish together with the beauty and head toward disaster for satisfying sexual desire for once.

It is really unworthy for this driver. And it makes people feel bored for ugliness and hypocrisy of the society. This is the law formulated by some so-called noble people in high position. To some extent, the old-fashioned law is the demon. The old-fashioned law can't regulate the social relationship between people but creates conflicts and tragedies artificially. This is an evil behavior.

Desire for the opposite sex and sexual behavior are neither criminal nor unforgivable. This is the inherent procedure of people. Without desire, mankind can't be called as the human anymore.

People formulate various laws and morality for realizing social management, maintaining social order and completing social governance. Instead, it is not the tool for people in high position to maintain their status and satisfy their vanity. To some extent, I think they are the demons in a sense. I have repeatedly emphasized that our social reality is that sexual behavior of non-marriage has become the social mainstream and consensus. However, fair sexual behavior of non-marriage in buying and selling is defined as an illegal behavior by some people in high position, so as to create tragedies and conflicts constantly.

Marriage in transaction and sexual blackmail have become the mainstream of China. Moreover, through the propagation of news media and cultural performance, the financial swindling in extremely ugly marriage form is being the mainstream culture of Chinese society.

Of course, sexual slaves become tools to persecute people in some western countries because many sexual workers can't be protected by law, so they become objects to be abused cruelly and crazily by ganglands and become their money-making tools.

It doesn't mean that I advocate sexual behavior of non-marriage, while this phenomenon exactly becomes the social mainstream. This is the objective existence and we must confront with it. Any person who denies the established fact and objective existence, they are the demons of heresies.

The fact is the fact. No matter what it is, we must confront with it and must admit it. It doesn't mean admitting this fact will affect reputation of politicians and their political career, so these politicians just don't admit it. This is the heresy, and this is shameless.

Why can this phenomenon become the mainstream?

Social development, development of human rights, and economic development greatly increase economic rights and other rights of women, which are almost equal with men.

In addition, those social regulations and cultures that restrained power and conditions of women previous are gradually disappearing. Previous cultures and social regulations can't adapt to the social reality anymore. Many people think that the Bible and the Koran greatly oppose to prostitutes. That is right. In fact, God not only opposes to prostitutes, but also refuses the sexual behavior of non-marriage.

Nevertheless, if God denies that the sexual behavior of non-marriage is the social mainstream, no one believes in God, the Bible and the Koran.

Words that God said several thousand years ago, the Bible, and the Koran can't provide guide and help for the current society. The issue is that after women have more rights, they refuse fertility and marriage for enjoyment. Meanwhile, they engage in the sexual behavior of non-marriage. Because marriage affects their quality of life, they make a higher price for marriage.

Therefore, the subsequent social phenomenon is the reduction of populations and reduction of total social demands. In addition, reduction of populations also lowers the speed of economic development. Meanwhile, western countries introduce Muslims and Africans or other low-quality populations, resulting in the serious national issue, failure of social management, and sharp social contradictions.

In China, marriage in transaction causes deterioration of social morality, reduces the overall moral character of the society, and forms the sharp social contradictions. Also, China has the trends and risks in aging of populations and reduction of populations.

About how to solve this problem, the practice in ancient times, the Bible and the Koran was to constrain and oppress women. Now, we should solve this problem on the basis of protecting women's human rights. We can't solve it by oppressing women.

I think that we need polygamy, transaction of babies or production of babies in factories, and legalization of sex trade. All of these can simply solve this problem.

133. China's Stability Maintenance

16 June 2018

I am fortunate enough to declare that I am a victim of Shan Lin financial fraud. I was defrauded of RMB fifty thousand yuan by Shan Lin Financial and I am actively participating in the so-called maintenance of legal rights.

It is just fifty thousand yuan for me but the biggest financial fraud case in history for Chinese people. I have analyzed much about the case.

Financial reform in China started around 2013, during which private capital was required to serve for small and micro enterprises and entity economy. There emerged thousands of financial management companies in China overnight that absorbed deposits with the interest rate five times higher than that of banks for the following P2P investment.

There were exactly some financial management companies serving for entity economy but the majority of them were making false investment escaping with your money under various names

Under my appeal, Chinese government cracked down on false investment three years ago but there were still some financial management companies with support having escaped the crackdown, such as Shan Lin Financial.

Under my appeal, Chinese government also combated and attempted to ban the usury last year. It is said that Shan Lin Financial made money by usury. When the government started to crackdown on the usury, Shan Lin Financial lost its profitability so it prepared to escape with money.

There are about 170,000 victims and 20 billion yuan failed cash of Shan Lin Financial. I do not know how Chinese government handled with this case. What I know only is how Chinese government prohibited the victims from protecting their own rights and interests.

a. According to the previous case law, Chinese government has identified all the financial fraud cases as illegal fund-raising and illegal absorption of public deposits. Furthermore, Chinese government has also formulated regulations on treatment of illegal fund-raising that requires victims to shoulder the losses and responsibility by themselves. Chinese government has identified their behaviors illegal, so they shall not be protected by laws.

When the government promotes financial reform, each major media, official media, various conferences, and officials also help to promote the reform. However, after financial fraud cases, the government identifies the behavior illegal and requires victims to shoulder the losses and responsibility by themselves. Thus, I am fully convinced that it is a trap. We do not know who set the trap, but we were definitely cheated by money, or even the country.

b. The special stability maintenance system of China. There have been tens of thousands of financial fraud cases in China and some even took place five years ago. However, as I know, there has been no one getting a penny back.

The investigation toward fraudsters of Chinese government is completely useless without any achievement. As far as I am concerned, the police said that there were thousands of fraud cases in Shanghai every year while there were only five hundred cops in charge of economic cases. Therefore, there cannot be anyone recovering for the money cheated. It completely owes to the insufficient police forces and the imbalance between the police force and the number of cases. Nevertheless, Chinese police have achieved greatly in controlling, suppressing, and intimidating victims.

b.a) Firstly, the police forces of each place have arrested all the salesmen of Shan Lin Financial regardless of the business volume. In order to cut off the connection between salesmen and customers and prohibit the salesmen from organizing customers for right maintenance, a large number of salesmen were arrested and the salesmen who were not under arrest yet were intimidated or threatened by the police. They were required not to contact any customer. Because the customers do not know each other, they cannot mutually contact. Only the salesmen know the contact information of customers. Chinese government has numerous police forces with extremely high efficiency for arresting salesmen and stability maintenance instead of any time or police forces for catching the fraudsters.

b.b) Chinese government has assigned a large number of Internet agents to monitor and scout the speeches and behaviors of victims. As victims, we often get together for meals and information exchange. During meals, most victims received phone calls from the police to be required to report where they were.

Now, network real-name system is required in China. If the police attempt to investigate any speech online, they can obtain all the information of the spokesmen, such as phone number, name, and address, at any time. The police have arranged agents in the group chat of each victim to monitor the speeches and behaviors of victims at any time.

b.c) Chinese government suppresses the petitioners. In a petitioning activity yesterday, some victims entrusted a representative to Shanghai Public Security Bureau to know about the case progress. Because the economic investigators failed to provide the victims with any case progress after two months, the victims were eager to know how much Zhou Boyun could compensate for them. They were so eager to know how much they could recover because some money comes from their parents' lifelong deposits or the young's years of struggle while some money is for patients' lives or children's education.

Thus, they assigned some representatives to know about the situations in Shanghai. There were about seventy representatives in total in each province. However, since the day before yesterday, there was news that all the representatives had received phone calls from the police that they were not allowed to go to Shanghai for inquiries.

Yesterday, some representatives were intercepted by the police halfway while some representatives were arrested by the police in disguise when getting off the train.

There were seventeen representatives being arrested by policemen one to one when they were having meals in a Shanghai restaurant. It is said that the police have known from technical and agent measures that they have discussed the petitioning in Wechat so they must be arrested and repatriated home.

There was even one representative repatriated home calling me to ask if I could help them to prosecute that Shanghai police intercepted their petitioning at a Shanghai people's court. I was too busy to accept the appeal.

According to what I know, there was one representative reached Police Station of Pudong District to inquire after overcoming numerous difficulties and obstacles but failed to get any useful information.

Chinese government is the richest government in the world because it masters a large number of large monopolistic state-owned enterprises apart from taxation. However, it only arranges five hundred cops for tens of thousands of economic crime cases in Shanghai. For lack of money for hiring cops? Definitely not. The government owns numerous money.

It can be indicated how much the government has spent through the efficient suppression and arrest of salesmen, the efficient monitoring of victims' Wechat records and efficient arrest of petitioners.

However, for the past five years, in the numerous financial fraud cases, the criminals were only sentenced for about five-year imprisonment while there was not even one victim recovering a penny. Furthermore, the government has even formulated Regulations on Treatment of Illegal Fund-raising to legally require the victims to shoulder the responsibility and losses by themselves.

Apparently, state machinery is serving for the fraudsters, for the corrupted officials. The officials are colluding with the banditry to persecute the citizens.

In view of this issue, state machinery becomes the tool that helps the monsters and persecutes the citizens instead of serving for the citizens.

In my opinion, there shall be police forces of corresponding quantity for cases. It is a must for them to recover the money of citizens and catch the fraudsters. If the fraudsters refuse to return the money, they shall be sentenced to death. The citizens will always support the government no matter how much recovery of cheated money costs. Otherwise, it is the collusion between officials and the banditry. Don't talk nonsense.

According to the latest information, there have been more than twelve petitioners among the non-local petitioners who went to Shanghai to inquire about the situations these days losing

contact with their family. They might be arrested by the police. Since it has been several days, they even did not inform their family within twenty-four hours.

There may be more people losing contact. This is the current known number of people losing contact.

134. China's Harmonious Society, Fairness, and Justice

9 August 2018

Since 2013, there have been countless Internet financial fraud case where fraudsters have swept away the hard-earned money of countless innocent people. Instead of helping victims recover their money, the government slandered victims, "The sufferings were caused by their own actions with vicious expansion in their greed and blind pursuit for trifling advantages. They've lost their own money. It was just penny-wise and pound foolish."

They misjudged their crimes or even released crooks and refused to recover the money for victims. What's worse, they even formulated Regulation on Disposal of Illegally Raised Funds, based on which victims should take their own responsibilities and undertake their own losses in a legal sense.

"Public service advertisements" of Shanghai Municipal People's Government are released in subways in Shanghai every day, which say, "Any participant in raising funds illegally is people's enemy. They are negative examples for sacrificing their money on trifling advantages. Those involved in illegal fund raising deserve bad luck. They need to undertake their own losses and take their own responsibilities."

After the victims of Internet financial fraud have been cheated out of all their property by the government in partnership with the fraudsters countless times, and after they have failed to defend their rights and lost their money countless times, finally they figured it out and decided to unite to safeguard rights.

The first thing they did was to defend their rights together in Beijing on August 6th. But what is the final result? The victims suffered Chinese governments' "Harmony."

What is Chinese governments' Harmony? It means strictly monitoring the words and deeds of all victims, using the resources of all countries to undermine the victims' rights protection actions.

Because the action on August 6 was an online call and organized for a long time, everyone knows about it. Of course, the Chinese government, which has mastered the world's most advanced monitoring technology and has the world's largest number of banknotes, is fully aware of it. They issued documents, demanding all local governments and departments to adopt different methods to prevent victims from raising complaints in Beijing. They knew who would protest in Beijing from surveillance on social media and communication tools like QQ, Wechat, Micro-blogs, and mobile phones. They put everyone who ever bought wealth management products and suffered losses into a blacklist.

Then,

1. Put some people's ID information into a blacklist for traffic control so that they were not allowed to buy any trip tickets which required for real-name certification like train tickets and air tickets.

2. Required all local police stations to warn all potential petitioners, who were demanded to write guarantee letters for no more petitions.

3. Sent policemen on trains to arrest people who bought P2P and train tickets to Beijing.

4. Grounded or deliberately delayed some train schedules and flights to Beijing.

5. Policemen arrested people in hotels based on blacklist in Beijing. Sometimes they just broke in.

6. Blocked people on blacklist by establishing checkpoints on roads to Beijing.

7. Chinese governments sent out policemen to examine everybody's ID cards on roads to Beijing. Anyone who was listed into blacklist would be arrested immediately. Chinese governments were said to have arrested several thousand people on the day of August 6th, most of which would be forced to send back home while a few organizers and activists would be sent into prison.

8. A large number of buses and policemen stood by on roads near some petition officers in Beijing. The policemen would load those people who reached petition destinations after barriers one after another into buses, which would be locked up in temporary detention locations and sent back home or sent into prison.

It was said that Chinese governments had accomplished their task for harmony once again. And China was in harmony again with nationwide celebrations for peace, prosperity and praises for merits and virtues.

The following are some representative online comments from netizens or participants in petition in Beijing.

1. The most classic sentence today, "No one ever hopes for utter chaos, and everyone knows how important social stability is. But such social stability must be established based on universal respect and promises for social fairness and justice, instead of keeping us silent in the face of your corruption through misuse of laws or blackmails. So damn well said! (Reprinted)."

2. "I do not know what on earth is going wrong! I went to Beijing because I felt so dark in Hangzhou; I thought that it would be brighter in Beijing!"

"At the beginning, I always could not figure out why we were so afraid to be known by Chinese governments. Wasn't it the exact intention to let them know to go to Beijing? I ever thought that so many people's joint strength would surely arouse their attention and that Central Government would issue a highest order to maintain social stability by speeding up cracking criminal cases in

Hangzhou.

Unexpectedly, the highest order that we received was to block traffic at home, forcefully detain us, arrest people in public on trains, delay or even cancel flights!

I always thought that my enemy was fraudster. What the fuck! Suddenly I realized that I was a wanted man and that I was an enemy of the state! Right, policemen in Beijing said today that they would arrest anyone who ever bought P2P. Goodbye, Beijing! I ever thought I only hated Hangzhou!"

3. Thanks, my dear comrades. Thanks, everyone, and thanks, my dear comrades. Thanks for being around with me from the very beginning. If I were alone, I would surely be driven crazy, or even scared the hell out of my soul!

I ever thought that I was looking for a light, but I realized that bright roads were filled with absolute darkness! I ever thought that people's interests were above everything else, but people turned out to be nothing.

It looked like that today's campaign had failed. Layers of siege interceptions separated all of us. But actually, today's campaign did not fail at all. For these financial refugees, they have doubled, tripled, even quadrupled police presence. Because they were scared!

Meanwhile, today's spontaneous campaign presented us with strong awareness on truth, firm wills and clear directions.

Dear, comrades, we must live well. Let's see what's going to happen to these claw-baring demons!"

A harmonious society should be realized only after social internal conflicts are truly settled and social fairness and justice are truly protected.

But not that when people suffer injustice, persecution, fraud, blackmail or serious injuries, governments do not stand up for people's rights and benefits, maintain social justice, wipe out the evil or save people from sufferings while making people undertake their own losses, admit their own misfortune, swallow up their grievances and accept persecution, fraud, fraud, extortion as well as serious injuries.

It is NOT a harmonious society. It is heresy.

135. The Chinese Government Protects Deadbeats

16 August 2018

I used to publish an article to call for crackdown on usury. The Chinese government did act positively and cancelled the usury. However, I participated in a client meeting of a financial management company today. The boss told us that the state prohibited violent collection when cancelling the usury and said that it was underworld behavior. This generates a problem that is to protect deadbeats.

In this society, a large number of clients of debt companies maliciously don't repay. The company I invest in now also has the problem. The arrival rate of the accounts receivable greatly declines. It poses a serious threat to the financial security of the clients.

Surely it is contradictive. Usury must inevitably require violent collection. Without violent collection, there would be no usury. But dealing with deadbeats also requires violent collection, and without violent collection, it will inevitably support deadbeats.

Does the usury need to be hit? Of course, it needs to be hit. Does a deadbeat need to be hit? Of course, it also needs to be hit. So is there a need for violent collection? I think that violent collection is required for deadbeats, but there must be no violent collection for usury. And it is necessary to ban the usury. I think that it is most reasonable to go to the county magistrate to sue in ancient times, and deadbeats not caused by usury must be beaten with a board. They must repay.

In the event of arrears caused by usury, the debt should be declared invalid. There is no need to pay back. Loaners of usury should be beaten with a board. And the debtor-creditor relationship caused by usury should be announced to be invalid. Loaners of usury should be beheaded when a person dies because of it. But in modern society, why do police only enforce the law like a robot? The superior said that allowing usury is turning a blind eye to violent collection. The superior said that cracking down usury and cracking down violent collection are protecting deadbeats and supporting deadbeats. This is because the police cannot properly handle things and do not know what to do? Or are the police in the policy taking advantage of the policy, deliberately picking a fight?

Part 5

Century Sentence the truth about extreme Islam

1. Religion should follow a principle—religious authority should never violate kingship

About 2007

Only under this principle is a religion righteous; otherwise, it is a heresy.

It is strange that the Tao Te Ching doesn't mention any immortals or evil spirits in terms of religion. It isn't a religious doctrine, but it became the law book of Taoism. Diamond Sutra doesn't mention any immortals or evil spirits in terms of religion either, but it is considered the law book of Buddhism.

Religion is distorted and developed by some ignorant people.

Some ignorant people who couldn't understand the profound philosophy, not to mention to carry it forward, make use of things they don't fully understand, to elaborate their own ideas and make up some derivatives of a law book. It is those that are understandable and can be inherited for those ignorant people, who cannot develop the law book but can only spread it.

Religion is like this, let alone heresy.

Righteous religion is inviolate to kingship.

Heresy is ignorant of kingship.

Striking a blow to heresy is eliminating evils and guarding righteousness.

Apart from striking it, there is no use to say anything.

Any religion violating kingship must be exterminated.

Religious authority should never violate kingship. What does 'violate' mean?

'Violate' is meaningful, including invasion, offence, and so on. While 'violate' in 'Religious authority should never violate kingship' means 'get involved in'.

To be exact, it means getting involved in bad things, such as getting involved in difficulties, mistakes, and ignorant actions.

The religious authority should positively avoid being involved in kingship in case of bad relations, which is the basic principle of righteous religion.

Those which violate this principle are all heresies and should be prohibited and exterminated.

Religious authority and kingship are not equivalent and equal at all.

People should be treated equally, but immortals and humans, spirit and substance can't be equal. They even can't meet each other, just like the Yin and Yang worlds. Immortals and evil spirits in Yin couldn't manage princes and generals in Yang. Princes and generals in Yang couldn't be in charge of the immortals and evil spirits in Yin as well.

The world we can perceive belongs to Yang. In the world in the charge of princes and generals, immortals and evil spirits, monsters and freaks are not qualified to be equal. They have no choice but to obey and coordinate. This is just the difference between righteous religion and heresy.

Religion is religion. Politics is politics. Matters involved in spirit belong to spirit. Matters involved in material belong to material. Yours are yours. Mine is mine.

Mixing everything without making any distinction between enemy and friend, good and bad is a mess.

People all like messing and like making a profit in troubled situations. Those who have great power have the final say.

Then, the world must be chaos.

2. Terrorism and Islam

About 2007

According to Internet data, there are approximately more than three thousand terrorist organisations all around the world. It is a fact that Islam is the religious belief of most of the terrorist organisations.

In my opinion, Islam has the largest number of taboos and the strictest canons among the three main religions in the world—Buddhism, Christianity, and Islam. It is certain that canons exist in other religions, but they are not so strictly executed as the ones of Islam. I heard when I was very little that persons would be stabbed to death with the knife, on the spot, if they unintentionally cut pork on the cutting board of a Muslim. It is outrageous to fiercely revenge for such a tiny mistake. The Chinese government always has a bias towards Muslims by reason of respecting the folk customs, for sure.

It is unknown whether the strict canons constrain thinking ability of the brain and make people seem dull, or the comparatively dull people tend to be deeply convinced of religion. The comparatively dull people are simple-minded and will not think independently but follow what others say. I have no idea on the correlation of the above, but I'm sure they are related.

I also believe that radical behaviour occurs among people with other religious belief. It is natural that people behave radically when they are on impulse. However, in some regions, radical collective behaviour conducted by people on impulse with the same certain religious belief could be regarded as terrorism.

It needs to be further studied on the common points among those people, the reason why they collectively conduct nonsense behaviour and the theory guiding the behaviour. It is my topic to study how to correct misbehaved people.

Religions, for centuries, have always been modifying the relationship between people and have played a role during the process of modifying. It is absolutely reasonable that religions have had effect in modifying the relationship between people all through the years, which cannot be ignored and denied.

However, what I would like to make clear is that the previous functions of religion are out of date and have nearly come to an end, just as many predictions mentioned before. Human productivity in the past thousands of years is incomparable with that of modern people.

The crystal radio was widely used at the time I was born, and it consisted of one transistor. But now, hundreds of millions of transistors are equipped in our mobile phone. Productivity has made such development over the decades. It cannot be imagined how barbaric people were when religions were born thousands of years ago, but it can be imagined how ignorant people

were, and at that time, harsh religious canons were required to normalise people's ignorant and stupid behaviour.

As our ancestors were barbaric, ignorant, and stupid, threatening, fooling, and cheating worked for any uncultivated, ignorant, and stupid people.

But what age is it now? It is the age of nuclear weapons and the age of artificial intelligence. How can barbarism and ignorance still work and have their own market in this age?

How can barbaric and ignorant religions have their importance in this age?

No matter whose nationality spirit is, it would only lead people to survive and prosper, to live a better life and would guide people to be good. How could spirit lead people to conduct a terrorist attack, which blasphemes against Allah?

To people who would like to start a war or take vengeance on someone violating their interests, please do not use the name of Allah and please do not carry out any deeds in the name of spirit. Please first withdraw from Islam. Spirit does not allow people to conduct any vicious deeds, and people who carry out the above-mentioned deeds are considered vicious.

The Bible mentions that the spirit leaves honey and milk for someone. I have found that a large number of countries with Islamic belief make their fortune by petroleum and natural gas instead of developed technologies, industrious hands, and the brightest minds.

This is because Islam has constrained the thinking ability of brains and makes its followers seem dull and odd, who are all brawn but no brains, and who have no real skills but to stab recklessly.

I hope Islam could make some reform so as to meet the requirements and developments of technology and human civilisation and not fool the followers with barbaric and ignorant doctrines.

It was heard in some speeches from bin Laden that he thought Americans robbed them by power, high technology, and economic methods, which led him to revenge. It was too vicious and too stupid.

There is an old Chinese saying that one fails to shit but blames the unattractive close-stool, which is applied to the above situation: those countries which could not make fortune and technology by their own skills, which were lazy and were unwilling to work, which relied on selling petroleum left by ancestors, begrudged the United States for being well developed and its ease of making money and doing business.

People could not be shameless and stupid to that extent.

This is unreasonable. The earth is for each citizen on earth. Barbarism and ignorance should step

aside for civilisation. This is truth and rightfulness. Please do not blame others for mistreatment but self-question why so stupid and ignorant.

Civilisation cannot be stopped, and it constantly needs development and moving forward. It is true and rightful that whoever prevents the development will suffer failure.

3. Terrorism is heretical organisation

2 March 2014

Yesterday a terrorist organisation from Xinjiang slaughtered twenty-eight innocent people in Kunming City.

Terrorist organisation and heretical organisation are of the same nature. Those were soldiers of the devil Satan and believers in Satan.

I said before that theocracy could not infringe majesty; on the contrary, the theocracy would be a heretical organisation.

Majesty is a power used to adjust human social and economic relations and maintain the social order of human society. The majesty stands for social benefit as well as collective benefit.

Trampling upon majesty for personal benefit means ignorance of collective benefit, social benefit, and social order, which is an evil expansion of personal desire. They are beside themselves, doing whatever they want, even obsessed and crazy, which is the manifestation of the devil Satan.

Humankind is rather ignorant and barbaric. People who believe in terrorism and heretical organisation are all so ignorant that they lose their minds.

Their minds have been sold to the devil Satan and are all under the control of Satan. People in such a state, like they have taken drugs, lose their minds, and there is no way to redeem them. Only death can terminate all, so they are supposed to die.

Terrorism is even more so; at least a heretical organisation recognises value of other people's lives, but a terrorist organisation even doesn't recognise the value of people's lives at all. So shoot-to-kill policy should be applied to all terrorist organisations.

Humankind is rather barbaric as well as ignorant; even some of them are irredeemable. Only with the death of some of them can the world be peaceful. I think those people who do not respect the social order and others' benefits trample upon the social order at will and harm others' benefits with expansion of their own personal benefit unnecessary to live in this world. Maybe only death will make them understand what to do and not to do. They are people of the devil Satan and should be sent to where they should go. They should be sent to hell to be reunited with Satan.

People's benefits are more important than anything else and do everything for people's benefits, which are government's work, truth, and justice. Here the so-called people should be considered as all the people, national benefit, and collective benefit. So I am against expansion of personal desire in capitalism, which is also a kind of evil manifestation.

4. Islam is the root of ignorance

3 March 2014

From the past time to now, barbaric things and folly have been always dirty and ugly during the development of human and society, so we should reject these.

But I think nowadays Islam is the most brutal and stupid religion in the world. Before killing people, terrorists prayed to Allah. Does Allah induce you to kill someone?

Those people are seemingly in the name of Allah while they are actually controlled by vicious thoughts. They are the real apostates and devils.

As per a prophecy on major religions, after 2012, all the supernatural power that guides human souls will disappear. If people cannot exalt their souls, they will be destroyed.

The most obvious one is Islam. If Islam still doesn't draw a clear distinction with terrorists, Islam will be a heresy that will launch holy wars to it.

Through understanding Islamic countries around the world, we can know minutely which country contributes to the civilisation of mankind.

Islam presents brutal, ignorant, backward, ugly, vicious, and fierce characteristics.

It is apparent that Islamic countries only rely on petroleum. Without petroleum, people in Islamic countries are the same as refugees in Africa. Should Islamic countries live in this world, and should they be perished with savage, ignorant, backward, dirty, ugly, and brutal images?

Bin Laden hates America, who has exploited their Islamic countries. Is this a reason? It's their savage, ignorant, backward, dirty, ugly, and brutal characteristics that perish them, so they have no right to blame others who have deprived them of their rights. How ridiculous and shameless!

I often witness that the rich Arabs make a large amount of money from petroleum and live an extravagant life. Some of them can be even called parasites.

They have the same purposes like bin Laden. The difference between bin Laden and the rich is the form of expression, but they are same in essence.

It is believed that the rich support terrorism implicitly or explicitly. What's more, they stand by the followers of bin Laden. They caused the terrorist attacks of China.

Relying on science and technology as well as trades, the United States has become a prosperous country. Even though some people of America are very arrogant, they deserve that for they have

substantial capital.

The local Arab tyrants purely depend on the honey and milk that left by God to live. Considering this, how can they be so arrogant? Without wisdom and industrious working, they are just like rubbish and dirty parasites.

I have said that it is the ignorant, savage, and cruel doctrine of Islam that limits the normal thoughts of people and leads them to go astray. Hence, the ideology of people is refined into a narrow range so that they are unable to recognise and understand the world appropriately.

This consciousness in the era with backward productive forces can unify thoughts against invasion of other nationalities. This function can fully play the role in savage age.

But now it is an era of civilisation; the evocation of such barbaric thoughts is not suitable for now and should be abandoned immediately. People who aren't willing to abandon the evocation should be wiped out.

It is neither freedom of religion, nor democratic, nor free human rights. All of these are nonsense once the significant and important things are mentioned.

Innocent Chinese people are hacked to death by these Islamic believers who carry ridiculous evocations. Religious freedom, democracy, freedom, human rights are all hollow words.

Evil is evil, and brutal is brutal.

There is no use in holding various excuses, because pretending proves the truth of hypocrisy. Evil and brutality should be abandoned, and people who aren't willing to abandon the evocation should be wiped out. Human beings don't need them; neither does the society with civilisation. They are obsolete trash, which is just like to the left and degenerative food, belonging to the toxic and harmful substances, which should be cleared.

Religious freedom, democracy, freedom, human rights are all nonsense.

Justice is the justice, and the truth is the truth. There is no argument. I hope that virtuous people who are affected seriously by Islamic terrorist attacks translate this article into Islamic text, and then send a piece of this text to every Muslim, helping them to make a right choice.

5. Heresy should be executed with lawful authority like terrorism

3 June 2014

Both heresy and terrorism belong to religious extremist forces. Their ideology cannot be conjectured with normal logic at all.

Just as involving in the whirlpool and drug addiction, their ideology is completely abnormal. Heresy is irresistible just like hysteria, obsession, and psychosis in psychoanalysis.

I don't know how to change them. Religion, which is against kingship and harmful to society and people, should be executed with lawful authority since no other better ways can be resorted to.

They are incorrigible, so punishing and eliminating them can possibly save others.

6. Religion

17 August 2014

China is a nation without religious belief.

The religion was destroyed from 'Four Obsolete Ideas Faith Removal' in Chairman Mao's era. Now the Chinese only respect money rather than anything else.

This is an awesome sign but bad turn. The benefit lies in that Chinese people work hard day and night, and make great efforts to earn money, developing the productive force.

The bad side is that they abandon moral bottom line and dare to do anything.

I think the role of the religion exactly depends on its functions on the human being. I think religion is a kind of thought, a type of extremely illiberal pursuit of culture.

For example, the Taoism is the pursuit of the unity of nature and a kind of culture. People practice hard to integrate with nature, environment, societal harmony, and the culture as well, and it is also harmonious societal culture advocated in China presently. The rest are all derivatives.

Buddhism advocates that the sages with super intelligence shall treat benefiting and redeeming the masses as their own responsibilities. Presently, the folks are extremely sordid, rich, but cruel. The ruler and the rich are capable of looking down upon those with disadvantaged social status, and the owner of BMW who despises the beggar is strangled and deserves to die. The saving and redeeming of the masses is classical spirit in the Buddhism scriptures. Others are derivatives completely.

The doctrine of Christianity is to impel ordinary people to thank God and be thankful for the Creator and to obey God's rules. I think God should be replaced with public interest. Everyone seeks the interests of himself and herself, while God benefits everybody, and God is to serve the interests of everyone, hence God represents public interest, state and nation interests, and interests of the people all over the world. The others are derivatives completely.

The Koran of Islam stresses social system, and God orders man to establish social order and to abide by public interests and Tawhid.

I think these doctrines have three requirements on conduct, and the man is required to the following:

1. Keep harmony with others, society, and nature.

2. The spirit of saving and redeeming the masses.

3. Admit public interest and abide by social order.

For modern man, the knowledge and information mastered are incomparable when compared to those of the ancients, and it is not over-demanding to require modern man to fully realise the three points above-mentioned. The students of primary schools in China are learning higher mathematics, and it is not overly strict to impose those three requirements on their moralities. And they should keep these requirements.

More knowledge indicates stronger power of the man to change the world; corresponding stricter requirements will be imposed on the people's moralities. Otherwise, they will be destroyed and become terrible like the mad with the atomic bomb.

I think the people with higher moral standards should be in power; they are provided with the ability of self-discipline, being safer for anyone else. The people having lower moral standards should be given freedom to allow them to act as ordinary ones to live freely without any worry, minimising their hazard to the society.

Religious extremist forces are derived from derivatives and disgusting like mice and cockroaches. And they visited China to make troubles.

I think the United Nations should set up special military organisation to wipe out religious extremist forces and terrorist organisations and eliminate them from the earth and send them to meet their god Allah. This stuff is not needed on the earth, and I hate them, along with drug traffickers settling in Mexico and golden triangle.

I think rare modern people may realise the three points above-mentioned if they are treated as reference standards. But the kind-hearted people are born with these three qualifications and requirements.

Why couldn't the ancients be required to fully achieve three points aforesaid?

I think maybe the productivity of ancients was backward, and the civilians are characterised with narrow sight and poor knowledge. It is undoubtedly practical to impose excessively high requirements on them; while their top priorities are to have enough to eat and wear and to take reproduction, the level of morality ranks inferior. Consequently, only one of three religions may be chosen to be practiced, to restrain their believers. It is impractical to have overall cultivation.

I have been living together with the poorest members of society since I was born, and I have been looking into them and trying to change them.

Chinese people take no religious faith, let alone measuring the people living at the bottom of Chinese society with three religious doctrines; in that case, nobody could reach the target.

I find I can't change anyone, and the leopard cannot change its spots.

Finally the law of God applies. The fish is capable of having tens of thousands of spawn, but only one or two spawn may survive and grow until the mating season.

This is the law of God, the law-of-the-fittest survival, and the law of natural growth and extinction. Heaven and earth act fairly and treat all living creations without dignity.

I'm always annoyed extremely by them, but I finally realise and decide to give up; maybe natural development of growth and extinction will be the best choice.

Now let's look at those who go too far and excessively.

I'm not bearable to the people living at the bottom of China. Let us have a look the people staying in the rest of the world. You are worse than those Chinese people living at the bottom of the society.

While reading worldwide news, you are more fanatical than them, causing losses of lives and even becoming incorrigible.

Chinese people take no religious belief and conduct dirty. However, religious believers like you act more dirty and troublemaking.

I would think that it is unnecessary for the human being to exist as long as they act as such terrorists, when I was irritated and lost my temper.

Maybe the venue where I stay is the most evil and horrible place. And it will be better to move into a new site. But I think it is my job, and I want to clearly grasp the nature and essence of people, which is extremely evil.

I think my kind-hearted man naturally achieves three requirements. Kind-hearted people will naturally keep harmony with the environment. Kind-hearted people will certainly save and redeem others, when they are capable.

Kind-hearted people will naturally respect social interests. And the kindness is related to social system and the environment.

A Chinese idiom goes that the orange tree will bear distinctive styles of fruits in different kingdoms and environments, and their tastes vary significantly—the orange seed taste delicious in the north part of Chin while becoming bitter when they grow in the north part of China.

Identical people will generate totally different minds in different environments. The environment includes social system, social environment, social order, and social culture.

The kind-hearted people have lived under the system of state capitalism or the system of public ownership of improved Marxism.

Kind men will go evil-minded if they live under capitalist system, and they will degenerate into Mexican-style drug traffickers or the members of Mafia.

I intensely felt this point when I heard that tens of thousands of people rounded up violent terrorists.

It is just the environment makes everyone then want to act as upright people. Everyone wants to be kind to each other. Hence, they unite and work together with a common hatred, to eliminate violent terrorists.

If these same people visited Afghanistan, I'm afraid the situation would be significantly different. The tide may be reversed, and it is that the environment changes the mind.

Therefore, I propose that the religion-related ideas have to be combined with social system.

7. IS, organ transplantation, human rights

20 August 2014

IS is really a troublemaker that is not only evil and barbaric, but also stupid and incompetent. After getting rich with the oil left by God, they become restless and start to make troubles.

Those whom God wishes to destroy, he first makes mad.

Islam is not only the root of all evil in modern civilisation, but also a disastrous group that makes everything bad. In today's news, the IS cults even want to kill off all infidels and cut down the heads of civilians to cover poles.

I really hope that a military organisation can be established by the United Nations and these Muslims in the IS can be arrested. Death has been insufficient to compensate for the heinous crimes they committed against humanity. I think they should donate their organs to people who are kind and need organ transplants.

They must pay the price for what they have done. The world needs fairness, justice, and respect for human rights. We are all equal in the sight of God.

'Those who kill will repay with life'—it is justice.

Those Islamic cults should not only pay with their lives, but also donate their organs and compensate those victims for their crimes. The theory of human rights advocated by the United States is just an accomplice in the face of such evil behaviour. Those evil spirits hide and grin behind the umbrella of human rights.

Justice should be kept without bargaining or strings attached. They should give all they have to compensate for their mistakes and to save others.

The US has worked as a world policeman for many years, but its security management seems really bad. It suggests that this way is out of date or has an original design defect, which makes the US unable to uphold justice, and on the contrary, the US becomes the accomplice and umbrella of evil. Now America has become a disciple of Satan.

I hope the world goes back to peace, and who can help me?

8. Troublemakers always come from badlands—Somalia and Islam

8 September 2014

Somalia is a familiar name and best known as the game *Black Hawk Down*, which I played a long time ago and passed many times. The game was later made into a film.

Afterwards, China also sent troops to protect Chinese cargo ships from being hijacked by pirates.

In 2015, a new terrorist organisation Al-Shabaab came out and specialised in making terrorist incidents. They killed civilians and wanted to steal bin Laden's spotlight.

I used to think it was an interesting place, but later I thought it was a terrible place. Now I think it is a stinking place!

A statistic I have read shows that the average IQ of Chinese and Japanese is 105, that of Caucasians is 100, but for Africans, it is only 70.

Thus, Somalia belongs to the regions with the lowest IQ. In addition, the place believes in Islam. I have understood that a place where a bad religion is believed in cannot obtain a high IQ, because human thinking will be bound by harsh doctrines.

Islam makes the silly and poor place worse. How could it be safe? How could it be peaceful?

It is already more likely to see troublemakers in a poor place. Without the resources of oil and gold, this place will only become worse. Having suffering a lowest IQ, added with the lies of Islam, they become more unsalvageable. The evil Islam specialises in cheating people with low IQ, adding intimidation and abetting crime.

As a result, these Somalis became robbers after the turbulence. Still feeling unsatisfied, they turned into terrorists.

These are typical cases showing the evil of Islam.

In China, silly children are cherished and pitied. Stupidity is not terrible but relatively lovely. But in Islam, such children will be fooled and misguided. Somalis are the victims. Islam is really nothing but nothing. The result is caused by Islam. Specifically look for silly people to cheat and then teach them to stop at no evil. Islam is the real evil.

9. Traditional religions originated in the slave society

12 September 2014

Such similar expressions are seen in many religious teachings.

No one believes that a god will be subject to the punishment of another god. I think the religious elements' propaganda in this way was related to the productivity and social environment then.

At that time, the society was slavery, the social resources and productivity were very low and backward. It's impossible that any god can take care of all people around the world, and God can only take care of a small number of people.

At that time, people were living in a harsh competitive environment, which was an environment with the malignant plunder of the resources and life, as well as means of the environment of the production materials. So God at that time could protect a small number of people.

Therefore, there's God in all ethnic factions, whether it is true or not, that's all.

If not to say so, then it will be difficult to unite the vital forces, but also impossible to resist foreign invasion, enslavement, and genocide.

God would be killed, expelled, and genocide that does not protect the interests of a small number of people about to be massacred, expelled, and genocide.

People have died, ran away. God would even have less market share. Therefore, it must say that it's essential to terrorise the infidels, and punish terrorists, heretics, and apostates, thus there will be the religious market in order to survive.

At that time, religion intimidated, punished, and killed the infidels and apostates in order to survive in the extreme conditions at that time, at that time living in extreme poverty substance, the survival time in the case of snatching the survival data.

Indeed some of the religions played the role of unifying the thinking and action, but also solidarity, action against foreign enemies in the extreme environment at that time, which has been sustained until today.

Now, some areas and some countries also use the function of religion to unify thinking, unify the action, solidarity, and strength to fight against foreign enemies.

But now what's the era?

It's the atomic age, the Internet age, and the information age.

It’s not to kill the other party just for prey. Otherwise, his family, the tribe would starve to death.

Go and look at those local tyrants in the Middle East. Are they leading a life in an age of killing the other party otherwise the families and people of the tribe would starve to death?

They are simply the parasites of some civilised eras, and they belong to insects, rather than the human race.

They believe that Islam is not to protect their family’s food and survival. They believe that Islam is in order to better maintain their parasitic lifestyle. They provoke Islamic terrorist activities in order to fight for the greater benefit of themselves, by plundering the wealth of the world, in the guise of the name of Allah.

In order to make themselves live better insects’ life.

The oil is left by God, but not the wealth created by them through their labours.

There’s no fixed time for God to leave the resources to whom.

In accordance with the law of God at that time, the people with more power had the right to speak and were the controller of the society; those who were dishonest and disobedient would be killed.

Oil and resources do not necessarily belong to the Arabs. Thus they make riots in the name of Islam, terrorist activities. All of them were unfounded.

Now it’s a civilised society, there’s no extinction, people do not talk about the slaughtered.

But if you still hold those religious teachings of those who carry out his genocide era of the massacre thing.

The civilised countries should seek revenge for the smallest grievance, tooth for tooth, and they should be with the rules and means of massacres and genocide era to tell you about something.

ISIS is supported, schemed, and instigated by Islam and its believer countries. It is the whole of Islamism doing evil things.

Do not think that playing the fool, we can’t understand duplicitousness. The times have progressed; humans also need to progress. Some things left in the slavery times need to have progress; there’s the need to make improvements and even the need to abandon. Otherwise, you would be abandoned by the earth.

Problems of today’s world are not the purely economic issues, but religious issues become our biggest troublemakers. This makes me very annoyed.

Could those religious people in the end take control of your band of believers?

When your so-called religious brothers commit murder and arson, I feel that the religious people simply do not have the attitudes of breaking with the religion, but observe those who support the violence molecules overtly or covertly.

Now the problem of the world is simply not an economic problem, but the religious issues.

All those dirty religious fail to take control of the believers, but they have become the devil's accomplice, or themselves are the devils.

I have never heard of that Islam would expel some people from Islam, in order to make the adjustment of Islam's gateway, to have a jihad of fear violence molecules waged.

That represents all Muslims are all bad, and to become the enemies and be the competitors of the people around the world.

10. Religion and human liberation

23 September 2014

Every religious doctrine has an ultimate goal, which is the liberation and relief of people.

Christianity believes that the people who are faithful to the Lord can get relief. God loves the world, so they could enter heaven.

The doctrine of Buddhism believes that people can get maksa only through their own practice. Or a wise man leads everyone to create a harmonious society and get common liberation.

The doctrine of Taoism believes that people can integrate into society by their own meditation, so as to maintain the harmony with society and environment and be liberated.

All the religious are civilising humans to love each other and unite as one. At least they should love each other within an ethnic group.

The original intentions of all theocracies are to broadcast universal love and mutual love; however, in real life, theocracy becomes a political tool which serves to seize the crown, consolidates the monarchy, and becomes a political means and the means and tools of seizing power.

Theocracy originally was not conflictive, but after the interpretation and execution of the ugly and dirty human nature, theocracy has become a tool used by humans to fight with each other.

The most obvious example is that different factions are appearing in the same religion, and there are malicious struggles between different factions. They strike violently and even start a war and slaughter.

God is God. God will not change because of different people and different explanations. And the will of God will not change because of different people and different explanations.

It is the ugly and hopeless humanity who creates the fight between different factions and religions for their own evil intentions and self-interests.

Nowadays people make use of religion, in the name of God, to make so many dirty things which are the blasphemy of divinity.

It is really necessary to carry out the liquidation for some ugly and hopeless people.

Different religions have different understanding and explanation of God, which just shows that different people have different emphasis for the understanding of God.

The mind and consciousness scope of humans is limited. It is impossible for the so-called missionaries to understand the entire will of God; they just catch some fragments and begin to preach.

I think the most typical one is the Marx's theory of communism. He said so much and did so much, but I think that only one sentence can be the oracle; others are Marx's own compilation or his own understanding and distortion of the oracle. The sentence is 'Public ownership is superior to private ownership; humans need to get liberation through public ownership.'

As I explained in other articles, every religion has one correct doctrine they practice from different angles; however, the meaning of God is to let humans practice comprehensively so they can truly get spiritual perfection and liberation.

Otherwise, there is no necessity for humans to exist. The existence is just a waste of time and resource, and just a trouble for God. Therefore those troublemakers who do bad things in the name of God need to be cleared up like garbage quickly.

Humans can get the real liberation when they practice according to the complete oracle.

11. Islamic nations are in urgent need of ideological renewal

24 September 2014

At present, the biggest problem of the world is the belief of Islamic countries' ideology.

There are many ideologies in the world. Even though each ideology may have some conflicts, it will not immediately turn into a large-scale and sharp conflict because of the separation of countries. However, Islamic countries' ideology that has the largest problem is the biggest troublemaker of the world.

Each country that has different ideology and culture is quite normal, because each country has a different history, geographical conditions, and culture and economic development. Therefore, it can be said that the ideology of each country is not identical.

The conflict between the United States and the Soviet Union was actually a conflict between two different ideologies. The ideology of the Soviet Union is an experimental stage of public ownership, and finally it proved that the failure of this temporary experiment led to the collapse of the Soviet Union.

However, one experimental failure does not represent the failure of public ownership. For example, Thomas Edison experienced failure three thousand times before the light bulb was invented. The failure of the Soviet Union for just one time is not surprising, but the failure paid a heavy price.

On the basis of the failure of the Soviet Union and in accordance with the national condition, China has successfully debugged and tested the public ownership.

Now, China has (1) rapid economic development, (2) stable political pattern, (3) national unity, (4) social management in perfect order.

With such a large population and so many nationalities as well as great internal and external pressures, China has achieved the above-mentioned four indexes.

So we can announce that the public ownership ideology of China has succeeded and can stand the test of time, and time can prove the progressiveness of China's ideology.

The underlying code of all China's ideologies is in this website. There is no secret, and anyone can understand it.

Whether you can understand or whether you believe or whether you want to change it or not, it is your option.

In my opinion, nowadays the biggest troublemaker of the world is the Islamic countries' ideology. The ideology of other countries can be renewed slowly, but the Islamic countries' ideology is in urgent need of renewal. No matter what happens and what costs the world has to pay, the Islamic countries' ideology needs to be transformed, because it is the poorest, the most ignorant, and the biggest troublemaker of the world and poses a threat to the entire world.

12. The biggest problem of Islamism is the integration of religion and politics

25 September 2014

The biggest problem of Islamism is not the religion itself but the integration of religion and politics.

There are many religions in the world. China is no exception.

Why do so many people hate Islamism? The fundamental reason is not Islam itself, but its theocratic system and ideology. In fact, it doesn't matter what people's ideology and faith are if they don't interfere with the regime of crown range.

Christianity and Islamism share the same scale of believers and similar creeds, but I don't find Christianity annoying.

In a broad sense, atheist scientists also have their religion.

Some dog lovers can be said to believe in dogs, and tens of thousands of people can launch a demonstration against the government for dogs. Some people believe in pigs, and pigs are scary to Islamites. There are people who believe in snakes, elephants, mice, and so on.

Westerners believe in capitalism, equality, and freedom of human rights.

Communists believe in communism.

There is no right and wrong in believing which religion. This is in the range of divinity.

As long as religious authority doesn't interfere with royal right, they can exist together, which is called cultural tolerance.

If interference happens, it will cause disorder to royal administration of society. Thus the religion can be called a cult to be killed.

The fundamental problem of Islamism is theocracy, and religion and politics are closely integrated. If they are not theocracy in Islam, there will be no problems in Islamism.

Islamic theocracy in which religious authority acted and royal power cooperated to harm people results in the will of the state, and thus, evil spirits control royal power.

If there was no theocracy, evil Islamic spirits would have been imprisoned, and there would be no

need for the whole world to conflict with one another.

If theocracy is eliminated one day, there will be real peace in the world, or peace will never prevail. There are problems in all theocratic Islamic countries, besides IS or al-Qaeda.

Only when religious authority does not interfere with royal power will we talk about tolerant society, spiritual freedom, personal freedom, human rights, and democracy. Otherwise it is a blank sheet.

Those countries under the banner of democracy in the Middle East but also engaging in political and religious nonsense are a scam. They have no freedom, no democracy, and no human rights.

The governments in the Middle East are in the control of cults and evil people.

They fool the people for their own benefits, make conflict, and murder deliberately in order to win the fossil fuel interests in the name of Allah. They are just parasites in disguise.

They plugged themselves democracy, human rights, and freedom. Is it necessary to go on an election under theocracy? This is just a sheer and shameless fraud.

Some people in the Middle East are very rich because of fossil fuel. However, the material wealth does not enrich spiritual ascension.

Dubai is claimed to be the most consumerist place in the world, and some people show off their wealth by travelling in Dubai.

That place is in the leadership of a sheikh, which is the product of the primitive society and even lower than the slave and feudal society. The material abundance and spiritual civilisation are completely separated. So to talk about with anything with those primitive people is to cast pearls before swine.

They are people who created a theocracy which has been passed on from the primitive society. It is always the same from their forefathers like Mohammed until today. Whether people wear bark or use a golden toilet, their ideas and cultural have not changed at all. They seem glorious in appearance, wearing a suit and using golden toilets, but actually they are just primitive people holding spears.

Theocracy is a kind of serious invasion on human rights, which leaves people no choice and no freedom in religious belief.

Some evil people control the country, persecuting people by religion as well as politics.

Mohammed of the primitive society did nothing wrong, because of the time and circumstances.

But in network and nuclear era, in order to let a few people and their generations live a glorious life, to use golden toilets, they still take theocracy to persecute, oppress, mislead, and fool people. That is unforgivable and evil.

I hope those nobility using golden toilet in the Middle East can keep pace with the times and give their citizens democracy, human rights, especially freedom of religion, and eliminate the social system of theocracy.

13. Essence of terrorism is theocracy replacing kingship

26 September 2014

Westerners fight against terrorism but support Falun Gong.

Actually, Falun Gong and terrorism are similar problems in terms of spiritual level. They are the same in spiritual motivation and spiritual essence. Their essence is that theocracy offends kingship and tries to seize the power of kingship.

Therefore, it is self-contradictory for Western countries to support Falun Gong but crack down on terrorist activities, in terms of spiritual level.

Falun Gong is a religion, so is Islam. Falun Gong goes against CPC and socialism and aims to seize power. Similarly, the main appeal of Islamic mobs is also seizing power. They are the same in essence, that is, theocracy offends kingship and tries to seize the power of kingship.

The political and religious thoughts of terrorists and Falun Gong are rare and extremely ridiculous in the world of kingship. There are numerous neurotics and psychos around the world, which is nothing strange. The world is so large that it can tolerate all the people with slight psychiatric disorders. In the normal world of kingship, the thoughts of terrorists and Falun Gong belong to the category of psychosis.

But now the problem is that psychos attempt to seize power through terrorist activities in an organised way, which exerts a bad influence on the society.

To protect their own interests, Western countries oppose one group of psychos to seize power but support another group of psychos to seize power. So the US-led Western countries are thrown into confusion and don't know what to support and oppose.

Hence, they are busy fighting against devils made by themselves. Consequently, they reap the whirlwind by creating devils.

America and Western countries take great pride in the obtained achievements and believe that the world can be controlled by them.

In fact, they are still very naive and moronic in terms of spiritual level. After eliminating the terrorist organisation led by bin Laden, America is confronted with the issue of IS. After the issue of IS is settled, other more horrible extremist organisations will occur one after another.

As long as Islamic theocracy exists, this issue can never be solved.

It is not the problem of Islam itself but the problem of the original, ignorant, unenlightened, evil,

and depraved theocratic social system, ideology, and culture.

Everyone enjoys freedom of religion. As long as they abide by and respect kingship as well as behave within the scope of kingship, they can profess any religion. But it becomes a problem when theocracy tries to seize the power beyond the scope of spirit.

It is not only the essence of Middle East issues, but also the essence of terrorism and Falun Gong issues. Thus, it is the right thing for China to fight against Falun Gong as evil spirits and demons. Now, peace reigns over the land of China, and occasionally a few cockroaches run out from Islamic countries, which is nothing surprising. Islamic theocracy in the Middle East is a cockroach on the earth and the home of evil spirits and demons.

America and Western countries should take advantage of their rich material resources to remould the spirit of people in the Middle East. However, Western countries seem to be powerless and at loose ends in this aspect.

That's why I say Islam is just like Falun Gong, which mixes theocracy and kingship. In evil organisations, theocracy tries to seize the power of kingship. Islam must be remoulded from both spirit level and material level. No better solutions except elimination should be resorted to in case that remoulding fails.

14. No democracy in Islamic areas

1 December 2014

Democracy is luxury goods for civilised human beings.

Areas controlled by Islam are extremely vicious. Establishing democratic system in these areas is equal to letting the devil hold the power because people there are mentally controlled by the devil and evil spirit.

Only law is feasible in Islamic areas. Democracy finds no way there.

Westerners always criticise North Korea. But how much harm has North Korea done to other countries? It seems unobvious.

Disorder in North Korea is their domestic affairs resulting from ideological and political differences and interest disputes. They are just physical conflicts among humans.

But chaos caused by Islam goes against the whole world. It is a spiritual fight between religious authority and kingship, between human and devil, good and evil.

In these mentally devil-controlled areas, we have no choice but to take the way of violence with violence, specifically, political violence with spiritual violence.

In these countries, we have to wipe out devil and heresy in a spiritual way. Democracy can only be achieved when the ready will of peace and common prosperity gains overwhelming popularity.

Western countries and people are civilised kinds, but it's not the same everywhere in the world. Many regions and countries are still under the control of the devil, which is evil, savage, ignorant, and dirty.

Why didn't Americans talk democracy with Indians and select a president by vote as soon as they occupied America? Didn't they drive these Indians like driving flocks of sheep?

Why? Because they are barbarous, benighted, and dirty. They were too poor to afford democracy.

Western democracy is built upon the civilisation created by great minds like Shakespeare and Mozart.

Islam will never be treated with democracy until some giants of literature and art like Shakespeare and Mozart emerge among them. Otherwise, they have no choice but to accept dictatorship. Justice can be upheld only when the devil is suppressed.

People who fail to graduate from primary school know nothing about advanced mathematics. Don't believe that a monkey in a suit is no longer a monkey and a devil in a suit is no longer a devil.

Spiritual civilisation cannot be achieved by only wearing a suit. We have to play a double game when speaking to different people. Otherwise, we will achieve nothing. This is our only choice.

There is something wrong with the basic logical thinking of Western countries. They always fail to get a clear understanding of the situation, which results in shooting themselves in the foot. They are well-intentioned but not good at getting things done. Thus, they usually bring troubles to both themselves and others.

For the areas under Islamic theocratic regime, we should highlight freedom of religion, human rights, personal freedom, and spiritual civilisation. Democracy should never be mentioned, because the devil will take over the power in that condition.

For the areas where Islam is not in power, we should emphasise justice, law, order, and spiritual civilisation. We should adopt problem-oriented strategy. Don't be simple-minded and impetuous to appeal to arms regardless of the realities of the situation.

Man-to-man matters will eventually be clarified one day. But disputes between humans and the devil will never come to light. The consensus will never be secured. We should never get the devil of spiritual word involved in the conflicts among human beings. Don't mistake the devil for democracy.

You can only be protected by a sound social order rather than democracy. Because you can't afford it at all.

15. The devil is set free every 1,000 years

7 December 2014

It is described like so in the Bible.

The contemporary world is in chaos. It is time when devils are tyrannising.

In America, the landmark country of democracy, everyone has a gun averagely. The homicide cases by policemen occur frequently. In fact, American policemen cannot do anything about it. They may be killed if they do not fire a round. It is unnecessary to earn a living at the cost of the life. The issue of gun ban is essentially an issue regarding social management rather than an issue to judge whether the behaviour of policemen is normative. At a critical or dangerous moment, people have to protect their own lives. It is human nature.

Issues such as the conflicts between the black and the white, and racial discrimination, are just blasting fuses/incentives instead of main problems. It is the abuse of guns that aggravates those contradictions.

The failure of social management leads to the extreme opposites of policemen and suspects. It is impossible to protect life through the sets of rules regarding angels. As a result, life safety is threatened tremendously. At this time, the devil is tyrannising and it controls the whole situation. According to the theory proposed by Maslow, self-security is the primary need of humans. When the self-security demand at the bottom level is threatened, any sense of rationality is of no use.

When the whole world faces such a situation, it is the time when the devil is tyrannising. It does not mean that someone is a devil; instead, the behaviour of most people is controlled by the devil.

Religious extremist force could be attributed to the tyranny of the devil.

The national separatist force could be attributed to the tyranny of the devil.

The armed drug trafficking can be attributed to the tyranny of the devil.

The gangland force can be attributed to the tyranny of the devil.

Officers and bandits collude together to oppress and exploit common people. The collusion between officers and bandits can definitely be attributed to the tyranny of the devil.

The collusion between officers and bandits is common in many countries, typically in Mexico. Nevertheless, the situations in numerous countries are similar to that of Mexico. Some people even give explanation with the excuse of God. It is unreasonable to involve such a significant

target.

It is said that the most chaotic place in the world is Brazil rather than Mexico, where one person is killed every ten minutes. Brazil also close to America. The implementation of democracy is thorough but vicious.

Mexicans have some conscience more or less, and at least they complain to God when they are harmed by the devil.

However, Brazilians even neglect this. Maybe they are poisoned so much that they totally sell their souls to the devil and integrate themselves with the devil.

They reject neither the devil nor injustice, nor do they require equality, even though their relatives are shot dead in streets. They may forget the terrible scenes immediately. They simply take those events as democracy, human rights, and freedom. What nonsense it is! How do such events happen? I have watched some films that reflect the public security of Brazil. The scenes in films correspond with the reality. It is so horrifying that I could not believe. Is it the so-called democracy?

In such a great world, wonders never cease.

Mexicans are essentially provided with the conscience to fight against the devil. Most people have the sense of justice. A female journalist pledged her life to disclose the collusion between officials and bandits. She was killed at last. To make complaints to God is also a way of struggle. Because of the intense resistance of Mexicans, drug dealers have to escalate their terroristic means. For example, they may dismember the body or even peel off the skin to threaten the public.

Brazilians never mind whether their relatives die or not. They are accustomed and inured to the unusual. They even feel sedate while facing the death of their relatives. As a result, there is no need for drug dealers to dismember the body or peel off the skin, which is too troublesome. Everyone is free from worry. This is the collusion between citizens and bandits rather than between officials and bandits, and the former is even more serious than the latter.

The tyranny of the devil is the tyranny of odiousness in human nature.

To lock the devil in the bottle is to constrain and restrict the odiousness in human nature through a reasonable social system, so as to control the odiousness within a specific scope that is allowed by laws.

Why does God determine to set the devil free every thousand years?

In my opinion, this is similar to the situation of China.

China has undergone the despotic society for thousands of years. It was an orderly society which, however, suppressed human nature, as was described by Confucius.

An orderly society could promote the development of productivity at the beginning. However, the social productive forces changed a lot after thousands of years. Those previous social systems could not improve the productivity; rather, they may restrict the society. At this time, the devil should be set out to change the order and rules of the society. During this period, human nature could be developed freely, and the devil could tyrannise. In the process when people try to lock the devil, social systems such as new socio-economic relations and political relations could be reformulated.

Now it is time to discuss the legal system and order.

For thousands of years, China had been an orderly society and the most developed country in the world. At that time, the GDP of China occupied 50 per cent of that of the whole world. Subsequently, with the development of productivity, China gradually declined because of the socialised mass production. After a chaotic period, China now returns to an orderly society, a society based on science and civilisation.

At present, the world should follow China and return to the orderly society which is based on science and civilisation. It is time to end the chaos and lock the devil in the bottle.

16. Procrustes

7 December 2014

When I was still a little child, I read an ancient Greek myth about Procrustes.

He had two beds, and whenever he encountered a pedestrian, he would catch them and put them on his bed. He would cut the excess part of their body when it was a tall person so as to make them fit his bed, and for those short people, he would put them on the longer bed and use equipment to extend their body so as to make them fit his bed. As a result, all those people caught by him were tortured to death.

I have been impressed by the story. Although it is a fairy tale that happens in the spiritual world and seems ridiculous, I feel that there are also many Procrustes in real life. However, they are dressed in human skin, and most people cannot see it.

I think those Islam extremists are typical of Procrustes.

According to the Bible, Islam is now a cult seriously misguided by some false prophets who are already possessed and need to be exterminated.

Why they are called a cult? It is because they are dehumanised, distorting and twisting human nature.

It can be said that the suppression, distortion, and devoid of human nature is a temporary means of savage society in order to survive.

However, it is a civilised society now. If they still use those means of Procrustes to treat believers and intimidate people in God's name, it is a cult.

Both lust and greed are human nature, which is also created by God. Whether you like it or not, they are all things created by God.

We should respect those God-created things, for God must have his reasons to create them, and the hatred and hostility towards those God-created things is the disrespect and contempt for God.

Lust and greed are the source of human vitality just like the power of car engines. In addition to power, a car also needs brakes, gear shift, and direction control. Only by the perfect combination of these, there is a good car and the society can run efficiently and soundly.

To limit lust and greed within a certain range and fully mobilise them for flexibility is good and also the intention of God to create everything.

However, the Muslim cultists curb, intimidate, and kill people's lust and greed as the opposite of human nature. Therefore, they are a cult like Procrustes, and false prophets misleading the public. They are also the devil's minions and his disciples needing to be corrected. If they cannot be corrected, they must be exterminated.

17. It is a typical cult behaviour to sentence rape and adultery behaviour as capital crime

14 December 2014

Nowadays, many criminals are sentenced to death for their rape and adultery behaviour, which is considered typical cult behaviour in Islamic countries. Once the regal power dominated by the cult organisations, such as the conservative Islamic regions in Saudi Arabia, where the devil behaviour is used to fight against humanity.

It is generally recognised that rape and adultery as improper behaviour need relevant punishment instead of death penalty, which should only be identified for severe damages such as rape-murder, serious injury, or other worst cases.

Except mental hurt brought by simple rape or adultery behaviour, what harm does it have from merely substance point of view? It is considered unreasonable if a death penalty is sentenced to the violator only for the mental hurt brought to the others. It is also considered as not only a kind of devil behaviour, but a government-based devil behaviour, which plays a negative role to provide service for devil group like a servant instead of maintenance of justice.

Rape and adultery behaviour has indeed brought damage to social stability and ethics from the perspective of social management and social order. They are also considered as relatively more severe behaviour, which could lead to destructions to social order and therefore deserve punishment. Comparatively, the Occupy Central activity in Hong Kong is also considered as destruction to social order, which has resulted in hundreds of billions in losses. However, who will be punished and responsible for all of this?

Besides, the concept for rape or adultery at present is ambiguous and subversive. It is often heard that a rape case is reported to police by a prostitute who is paid by a whoremonger with 50 yuan less than what they agreed on. As a result, both of them were punished for this. So funny!

In some areas, rape behaviour could bring certain effects to a family's harmony. Any woman who suffered from rape or was involved in adultery may be discriminated against by her family members.

In feudal and uncivilised society, any woman's loss of her virginity is regarded as a serious incident. In my opinion, the death penalty sentence for a rapist in Islamic regions is probably due to this reason.

In general, women are considered to undergo more harm from rape behaviour. Some women even commit suicide after being raped. This is caused by the feudal chastity concept. However, in current modern society, many people have promiscuous sex and even expect as many sex

partners as possible. They just feel puzzled what harm it can bring by doing so and why they need to commit suicide.

Chastity concept, a type of shameless lies and deception fabricated by feudal lords, oil tycoons, landlord class, and feudal ruling class, was to maintain family blood purity and prevent family assets outflow from women's sexual behaviour with others. In addition, they make these lies for the aim of avoiding helping others to raise his son and oppressing women, together with slaughtering their sexual rivals.

Women are persecuted and induced to commit suicide by them, who still show boosting attitude to those women who have committed suicide. In India, any woman who has lost her virginity shall be hung from a tree till her death. After that, they even produced a film based on these tragic stories. What they have done is only to protect their family assets, which are considered their own fundamental motivation. Except for this, all are nonsense and deceptive tricks.

In Chinese feudal society, the situation is exactly the same. Today, such a concept is dominated as ever by the Islamic cult organisation to give publicity for their people, which is completely same in purpose and nature and has no differences between them.

In some Arab countries and Chinese feudal society, a family always existed as polygamy. This dirty theory is designed to serve for their money concept and maintain the continuation of family business and inequality between feudal lords and landlords.

They may have been forced to do so because of the low productivity in feudal society.

It is shameless and unreasonable for Sunni and Procrustes in Arab-Islamic cult-controlled regions in the Middle East to continue such cruelty on women and sexual rival behaviour.

Hence, such a misleading concept, which still exists and is in effect regarding women's chastity in today's socialised production era, as well as the sexual rival behaviour, is considered shameless and devil behaviour. It is also recognised as crimes against humanity.

Rape behaviour is required for a criminal sentence, which usually takes several years in prison. A rapist sentenced to death shall be considered as devil behaviour done by cult or Procrustes. For extremely serious behaviour, death penalty shall be considered reasonable.

18. All leaders of Islam are false prophets

16 December 2014

So-called spiritual leaders of Islam deny the Bible and its prediction of the founding of the state of Israel. They do not help Israel to establish their own state. Moreover, they get tangled with Israelis. It's obvious that Islamic leaders are exactly false prophets mentioned in the Bible. They may totally know nothing about the Bible and God. They simply mislead Muslims, bring trouble to Israel and the rest of the world, and cause chaos everywhere. They are extremely heinous. Islam is a total heresy.

Most chaos is caused by Islam. It's nothing but heresy.

It's those false prophets instead of Muslims who should be blamed for their evil behaviour. They merely talk nonsense and have no ability to lead Muslims. They even breach the Bible, which is written in black and white, let alone deliver God's will and make prediction. Islamic leaders must be arrested so as to stop them from poisoning the Muslims' minds and the world and causing troubles for God.

19. Preventing global Islamisation

27 December 2014

I've heard that in lots of places, especially in economically developed places, people want to lead a cosy life, and they do not hope to have lots of burdens, so they give birth to fewer babies. The fertility rate is maintained at low level. However, couples of Islam give birth to about five babies on average.

The caused problem is global Islamisation. The terrorist and violence activities in the world at present are related to this and have direct causality.

Islam plunders resources in the world. Their population grows rapidly, and they have a steady flow of human resources and armed forces resources. As to them, it is unalterable principle matter to let redundant low-quality population be body bombs, because their population is originally low-quality and redundant. Their couples have multiple times of fertility rate than other races in a lifetime, just for plundering resources in the world.

Their birth is targeted at low quality, high occupancy, plundering, and slaughtering. So these body bombs fundamentally do not need complex mobilisation and complex ideological work.

I've seen news about one ordinary woman, who fundamentally did not contact jihadist ideology, carrying explosives to conduct suicide explosion activity seven days after marrying a terrorist.

The explanation offered by authority is that Muslim women have no culture and are in low quality. They have to obey their husbands, and they do what their husbands require them to do. If the husbands tell their newly married wives to carry explosives to conduct terrorist suicide attack, their wives would do it.

No wonder that Muslim has so many suicide attacks.

If you tell educated and family-responsible Westerners who value human rights to do it, would they do so?

Absolutely not, people with human rights consciousness and self-awareness absolutely would not do it. It is done by people with mental disorder, the disciples of evil, and the soldiers of evil.

What are the human rights theory and human rights organisations of Western countries doing? They are serving for evil, acting as the protective umbrella of Islamic evils, and making body bombs. They are transporting evil soldiers for Islamic front lines. Human rights organisations are betraying humankind, helping evil to restrict humankind, dealing with and slaughtering mankind.

So Western human rights theory is insanity, an evil theory; it is shooting itself in the foot and

helping evil to deal with itself.

Couples in Western countries do not feel like having children, for they would like to maintain their own quality of life.

Chinese government artificially controls the non-Islamic population growth, encouraging Islamic childbirth. It is called minority policy.

If things go on like this, the conflict of either genocide or global Islamisation will break out one day, leading to the complete surrender to the devils of Islam.

They are having this program, which is actively implemented across the world, aren't they?

There is a Chinese saying that the barefoot are not afraid of those in shoes, and the saying that the hooligan is utterly fearless.

It is most appropriate to describe the culture of human rights in Islamic and Western countries.

Islamic culture is really the culture of the hooligan.

1. Firstly, they try to have children for population growth so that they will become the majority in a few decades. And it is no doubt that they will be elected under one-person, one-vote policy.

2. They are dirty people who keep producing offspring but disregard parenting. The generations of procreation simply copy more and more population in low quality who are bandits of terrorism and suicide bombers capable of finding the theoretical basis in religious code.

3. Islam has purposefully seized power with the unification of politics and religion since ancient times. It's the perfect match to combine the Western electoral system with the Islamic procreation culture and the vicious seizure of power with theocracy for the extinction of mankind and the ruling of the devil.

When the Islamic hooligan culture appears in the pitiful and poor state, it can always win the compassion and mercy similarly given by the dog lovers. But they are definitely not the pets casually manipulated and discarded by people. It is easier to call up an evil spirit than to allay it. They are the devils carrying out mission and intent, implementing the plan step by step. And it is not so easy to drive them out during trouble time. So the terrorist attacks, explosions, suicide bombers have come one after another just around you.

They usually look quite ingenuous, pretending to be honest men. Once made brainwashing, they will get their true faces completely exposed in just one week. They are becoming the ghostly bombers, devil's bandits, and killing machines, as they are devils by nature.

The 'dog lovers' are so many in Western countries, even protecting the Islamic culture through

legislation. They should look beyond the surface, never showing compassion and mercy with kindness to the dirty and ugly devils.

When the Islamic hooligan culture comes across Western civilisation, Western civilisation will soon be destroyed by the Islamic hooligan culture, in the shackle and cage of their own systems of democracy, human rights, and freedom.

So it begins. I am watching you destroyed by the Islamic hooligan culture step by step and slowly heading for death with yourself as accomplice.

It is only after you become a more ferocious hooligan that you can deal with the hooligan. Or else, you have to wait for death without other solution.

The Western way does not work and becomes garbage when meeting a real hooligan.

Humans are really brutal, ignorant, dirty, and hopeless. We need to defeat Islamic regime at global scale.

The unrest countries need to help the secular monarchy to destroy the Islamic militants. The peaceful countries with the seizure of power need internal reformation, becoming secularised away from Islamisation.

This is contemporary task must be completed. The devil must be bottled up and thrown into the dungeon. This is what is said in Bible.

The devil should be firstly disposed before humans' things are discussed.

20. Man and man talk about the interest; the devil and man talk about the distortion, abnormal condition, monstrousness, evil

30 December 2014

It is very correct that politics is the concentration of economic performance, said by Marx. Many things, disputes and wars, many massacres, hostility, and suspicion have happened between man and man since ancient times. But in the final analysis, it is for the sake of interest. As we all know, everything happening in the world is the things related to interest ultimately.

Political issue is the problem of economic interest. If the economic interest has been solved, the political problem will not exist.

Why slavery is not good is that the slave owners get too much while the slaves receive too little. The profit distribution is unfair and unbalanced, so slavery must be overthrown. Other things such as buying and selling slaves, massacre, and war are all interest problem.

Why the feudal system is bad is that the lord gains too much while the citizens obtain too little. Other things such as feudal ethics are all for the sake of maintaining the interests of the feudal rule.

The principles of the systems of capitalism and socialism are the same. People always discuss the best reasonable profit-sharing arrangement and state institution.

Because everyone has desires, requirements, and hopes to meet any obvious need. Moreover, it is best to get the maximum interest.

All kinds of things related to people, such as politics, economy, culture, law, morality, ethics, literature, art, military, healthcare are interests.

So no matter how large the divergence between man and man, in the final analysis, we will find our common point and reach consensus. This is because we have the same purpose, which is to receive the maximum interest and meet our subconscious and motive.

People can be divided into natural instinct and acquired cognition. Each person's social environment is different; all people's natural instincts are the same, as well as their subconscious and motive. Their demand of natural instinct and satisfied patterns are the same, which are all Maslow's theory of needs.

But the subconscious and motive of the devil are different with people.

Their subconscious, desire, and motive have been modified after they were instigated and took

drags by heresy. Their appearance is as same as normal people, but not their soul. Their souls, which have been sold to the devil, are not belonging to humans.

So we have nothing to talk with the devil and we have no common language.

People discuss the interest. We speak about the nutrition, taste, and price when we eat pork, which are all interest. We can find these things from the subconscious, which is the inherent programs and the underlying response fixed in the human body when God made humans. But the inherent programs and the underlying response have been modified by the devil.

We can talk about the interest of pork with them, but they are not willing to do this and even stab you with a knife. This is distortion, this is abnormality, this is monstrousness, this is evil, this is the devil.

We have nothing to say with the devil. There is no way to change all this apart from wiping them out.

So the Islamic extremist groups must be wiped out while the moderates need to be transformed slowly.

All in all, Islam needs major religious revolution and modifies the teaching on a large scale. The diehards are the devil, which must be killed.

The conflict between man and man can hardly be avoided. The key question is that the problems are solved by man and man or by the devil and man when we come across the conflict.

The way of dealing with a problem between man and man is the problem of profit distribution, which is an interest problem and business problem.

If the conflict between Palestine and Israel is a dispute between man and man, that is business.

Because God orders the Palestinians to remove, they need family allowance and resettlement compensation, which are certainly paid by the Jews, who can easily earn more money. How much money you need, how much money can the Jews pay? That is business and a transaction.

If it is the dispute between human and the devil, there is nothing to discuss, only fighting and killing the devil.

There are no common language and no words between man and devil, no common interest, and no business to talk about. This is because they are distorted, abnormal, monstrous, and evil.

All humans are needed to wipe out the devil and defend the justice.

21. Female circumcision means discontent to God

2 January 2015

Recently, a heresy called the IS required circumcision of 400 million women, and some have been circumcised by some native tribes all the time.

Circumcision should be punished, for it is humiliation and unsatisfactory to God and the Creator. Everything in this world is created by God, including the human body and organs.

God has his own reason to create each human organ in his way. Circumcision means that women's body organ, created by God, is unreasonable and should be man-made reconstructed.

Circumcision is a horrible surgery which changes human organ structure and original design. It is a brutality to women, humiliation, unsatisfactory to God, and a demonic behaviour.

Such women's organ, created by God, has its own function.

Savage, stupid, evil heresy, and demon disciples mutilate women and serve the devil in order to realise their immoral purpose. This is a demonic behaviour. It should be restrained and severely punished.

Any jihad should be waged to save the natural life, to protect the world.

Male circumcision is a minor surgery which can improve life quality and boost physical and psychological health. We might promote it.

22. The intensification of contradictions was able to solve the contradiction completely

4 January 2015

There is a saying in China that long-term pain is not better than short-term pain.

Toothache is not an illness; if there were tooth pains, it is no use if you do not go to have them extracted and make no treatment but to take light painkillers. It must be painful for a long time so that whatever things were delayed.

I think that the global issues of Islamic cult need to be thoroughly solved; you need to put them on the table and let them choose to give up or choose death, to surrender or to kill.

You should put those mice completely out of the nest, and the mask completely torn off, in order to let us have a look of their true appearances. We can solve the contradictions only to expose them.

The human rights theory of Westerners is playing sissy, just can't cope with Islamic cult. Islam was a dirty religion that doesn't fit modern civilisation; we must abandon it immediately. And Muslims must be resolved immediately. Let them choose to give up immediately, or not give up.

In fact, the change of human idea is the most complex and also the simplest. They can change at one moment.

During the separation of ownership and management right of state-owned enterprises reform a few years ago when the so-called aircraft carrier in a coin of the above 180-degree turn in order to adjust the direction, Taiwan and the mainland were in a moment of peace. Taiwan and the mainland instantaneous adjustment direction are driven by interests. We all saw the benefits, also let go of struggle, to make money. So we can use interests to solve problems between the person and person, so do the disputes.

But Islam is a cult, with interests not being able to make any effect. They are the devil, the madmen; they are crazy, and they are out of their minds. When talking of interest with them, they can't understand, so they are not so good results.

We must use the deterrent force, the lash of the whip. The threat of death. The deaths of a batch of people can solve the problem. Don't pull a few teeth; the toothache can never be good.

We do not damn people in Islam but damn its idea.

If you put those articles about Islam which were written by me, read them, and recite them again

per person per day, I think they will soon give up Islam; at least the culture of young people no longer believe in Islam. That they may not die can also be useful for the world and the country. If the cultural literacy can improve a little bit more words, they can also become popular persons and accepted by the people of the world in need.

The earth is large, and it is not to say that there is no living space, but the conflict of ideas, the backward ideas of the world, and the destruction caused by obstacles make civilisation angry. We have to throw out the garbage and make low quality of human thought and low-energy people transformed.

They did not die or we civilised people will be killed. The whole world is in a great disturbance by that handful of trash humans. Dragged terribly, fatigued, their descendants will be gradually killed by them. No peace forever.

When there are mice at home, we should give them a little rat poison to poison them and find a stick to knock them dead, rather than putting them into a neighbour's house. We are clean. We are sweeping snow in front of our house. Ultimately we still harm others. This is war, not a sissy dinner party. No end of troubles for the future. Even now there is nothing; future generations will be killed by them. No peace forever. This problem must be solved thoroughly.

The story of the farmer and the snake is the truth. Men and snakes, men and the devil have no common language.

Right is right, wrong is wrong. Evil is evil. Ignorance is ignorance. Backward is backward. Barbaric is brutal. We must let them make a good choice. To give up or not give up is the choice of life or death.

The article about Islam written by me is the best antidote of our spirit. Adhere to read every day, and soon there will be no people believing in Islam. It is of no use to us to teach Islam, specialised in the production of low quality of the population, low energy of human evil religion, and will always in trouble. Tired, tired of them. Evil, dirty. We need to ruin them immediately. The globe shall ruin cults.

I think we need to carry out ideological attack on them, attack on their culture, ideological transformation, and cultural transformation. A good transformation is not dead. Kindness knows no bounds.

If more than a hundred students in Pakistan are not dead, they are still in trouble with terrorists and pull an unclear and unknown road, abolishing the death penalty and muddling along.

They are people; we do not cry when we do not see a coffin. Muddle along, dirty, evil, ignorance, short-sighted, egoistic. Ultimately we harm others.

Before this, there were so many wars that happened, causing so many deaths, without having

any meaning. It is in order to fight for power and money. Plundering resources is the evil of war.

While the war on Islam is the only meaningful one, it can save our homes, save our children, to give the offspring a peaceful environment, peaceful earth. This is justice. In order to maintain justice, we must fight, we must struggle with the devil. Necessary blood should be flowing. Humans bleed too much for the evil, and now we also need some blood flowed for justice.

In order to protect the truth, goodness, and beauty, to protect their families, children, the world no longer should be hurt by the evil, ignorance, savage injury. In order to give their families, children a world of permanent peace, peaceful, and happy environment, we must give the heavy hand on the evil, ignorance, savage. This is a man's job. This is also a man's responsibility, as well as a man's duty. We cannot play the fool, cannot escape, and cannot be sissies anymore.

Please ruin Islam completely, as I am sick of them.

23. Western countries should do some control and cultivation towards Islam and forbid Islam

7 January 2015

I think the Western culture is really fatuous. The most ridiculous and poorest thing is that it lifts a rock only to drop it on its own feet.

It sets many barriers and limitations to itself. But at last, it gets enmeshed in a web of its own spinning. It's encumbered by itself. And that it never knows how it died.

For a country, sovereignty is the most basic right for nationals to manage their nation. If this right can't be guaranteed, people's benefit will not be protected at last.

France should immediately announce that Islam is an illegal organisation in their country. Never be irresolute. Never tolerate evils. Never breed evils. It's the sovereignty and the holiest sovereignty of a country. It's also the most basic sovereignty to safeguard nationals. Islam has already attacked France and still flaunted the freedom of religion. It's to say that the ten journalists and two policemen who died can't desire their expectation. The deaths should be more.

Pakistan finally understood that Islam is wicked after over one hundred children had died.

France still doesn't know it. Does it mean that the deaths of the people aren't enough? Not enough. They should be more. Then France will know that the sovereignty is more important than the human right.

Those terrorists just hide themselves under the umbrella of human right, which is flaunted by the West and hurts the civilian cruelly. To kill some journalists, they thought automatic rifles were not enough and they should use bazookas. It's more and more romantic, creative, and exciting. It's just a beginning. The most wonderful thing hasn't started yet.

It says that the childish theory can't protect nationals or journalists. A country has the right to require nationals to obey some rules including forbidding Islam and announcing that Islam is a heresy. It's the sovereignty of one country that is holy and can't be violated.

Have those terrorists already explained clearly? They fight for Allah. So the people who believe in Allah in France should be guilty. All of them need to be punished. It's an action in a war. It's not to invite somebody to dinner.

This is a war between God and the devil, which is a war between justice and evil.

From now on, Islam will take more actions and be more and more evil. Humans and God will get angry together. It's the last radiance of the setting sun. If God chooses who dies, he makes the person crazy at first.

Until all the world knows that Islam is evil, dirty and silly, then they need pull together to wipe it out.

It's written in the Bible that Islam should perish. It's a heresy to use a prophet to mislead people seriously. The whole world needs to clean it out.

I think that if the Western countries to drive them out, they may join the battle in Iraq. They ought to deliver my articles about Islam to every Muslim. Force them to read one time every day, and carry these articles about Islam with them everywhere.

If they can read one time every day, they will forget Islam and Allah completely in some months. My articles can damage monsters and call human nature back. If their human nature really can't be called back, let them die. They are really devils and can't be called back. I have no other methods.

It's a war. Humans need to bleed for their previous ignorance. They need to bleed now to create a peaceful environment for their descendants. Or humans needn't exist. Humans will disappear.

The last page of the Bible will be turned to at once. God didn't hope to see dirty humans exist any longer.

The humans need to change or disappear.

24. Islamism has been discarded by the divine

10 January 2015

Today, I heard some Islamists saying French terrorists blasphemed Islam and Allah. In fact, these lunatics have made this world a terrible place not one day or two, but for several decades. They have also blasphemed Islam and Allah for years.

Are they blind to all these? Then what do they care about? Why do Americans and many other Westerners bleed for that? When they are bleeding, what are some Islamists doing? Are they having a good laugh at them?

In fact, to bleed and to keep off the bullets are the missions of Islamists. They should arm themselves to eliminate the scum of Islamism and make Islamism a pure religion.

Islamists often leave their religious conflicts unhandled, thus causing a great chaos and harm to the whole world. Now, all has been out of hand and irritates both man and God. Islamism should be destroyed. However, these words are too late.

Islamists said, 'Those lunatics blasphemed Islamism and Allah first, so we turned out to hurt those Westerners.' Now, all is clear. What were they doing earlier?

Frankly speaking, some Islamists are playing the hero, while some are playing the villain; some are playing the moderates, while some are playing the extremes. All in all, they act in collusion with each other and make a profit in a troubled situation. In fact, it is not that easy.

When they are saying these words, they are helping the terrorists, whitewashing themselves, flaunting themselves, and covering their own crimes and dark side.

When their Hezbollah launched rocket shells at Israeli civilians, what were they thinking about? Did they realise that they were hurting Allah?

If they want to show their sincerity and perform a meritorious service to atone for their crimes, they should send their ground forces to eliminate all their extremist organisations, including Taliban, the IS, Boko Haram, and jihad.

They should clean their own community; otherwise, they are the same, just bad in different ways.

I thought even if Allah is here, he would have no choice but to announce the dissolution of Islam.

In fact, all religions are the same. No matter which god we worship, we are worshipping. Even if Allah gives them up, they can still eat well and sleep well. It is not a great deal. Just think that those having no religious belief also live a comfortable life.

Now, Islamism has become the most serious negative asset of the divine. Islamists must immediately lay down their arms and surrender to the whole world. Islamism has become a heresy. No one should believe it. Islamists should be transformed; otherwise, they will face the most severe punishment given by the gods and die. All my friends, it is time to make this world a better place.

25. The world should face up to Islam, expose Islam, and criticise Islam

12 January 2015

China has an old saying, dogs that bite people don't bark.

It means that a barking dog, when it encounters things, doesn't bite people. It implies that people's bravado gives them courage so as to conceal their inner fear and weakness. These kinds of people have no real skills and cannot make a difference.

Of course, this metaphor is not very appropriate. But it can explain its specific meaning, because this is the case.

Encountering such evil Islam, they even don't dare to announce that it is a heresy. Is it a sissy? So we cannot rely them to do anything, and we cannot expect them to protect our homes, families, country, the good and the beautiful, and justice.

Can you dare to announce that it is a heresy, point out and publicise their evil, and let all the people see the true character of the heresy? Those few French reporters did that, but they very carefully did a little bit. I think those few cartoonists also just did a little bit. Because they didn't really expose the devil, the ugly, and the heresy. They just said a few words, but they suffered such a disaster. Incredibly, you who control massive forces and grasp the nation's arms even are less than those few cartoonists, and you are cowards. You don't dare to maintain justice and expose the devil. Aren't you a sissy? What can you do for the public?

You should first face the problems and then solve them.

When you see the Islamic devil, do your legs shake? And you even daren't say anything. You only dare to say a few words of nonsense, fish in troubled waters, muddle through, and muddle along.

First of all, we should announce that they are a heresy and then the whole society should conduct a big discussion. Why are they a heresy? Where are they evil? We should find a place to clarify it clearly. We should make all over the world hear clearly. Even if we make a wrong decision, it doesn't matter, and that is called freedom of speech. Human rights, freedom, and democracy.

Why are the Islamist people evil and cruel, and no one would dare say their folly and discuss their scandal?

Do they averagely give birth to five children?

Are they plundering the global resources?

Do they have a unification of the state and the church? Or do they want to gain the political power?

Did they never make contribution to human civilisation? They don't have any invention, literature and art, and contribution to human civilisation, so they belong to a population with a high quantity and low quality.

They are making terrors and disasters within the global scope. And most of global terrors and disasters are made by them.

In their world, the rapist should be sentenced to death, and stealing should be sentenced to death. They cover their face with a piece of rag, and if they eat pork, they should be stabbed to death. They pray five times a day and find a stone to batter to death.

Are the laws of Islam dirty? Are they evil? Do they violate human rights? Are they incompatible with civilisation?

Are they evil? Are they dirty?

Why aren't they letting the citizens know? Why aren't they letting your citizens debate?

Why do they not let the people all over the world know? Why do they not let the people around the world discuss?

This is not only the truth but also a fact, but why do they not let the truth come to light?

Why can't people discuss the truth? Why can't people discuss the fact?

If we want to solve the problem, we must admit the problem and face the problem, and put the question on the table and let everybody make a discussion. The whole society and even the whole world should make a discussion. We should find a TV station that would broadcast and say this every day. Everybody presents the facts and brings out the facts and reasons; everybody manages what's going on in the world. There should be a dedicated channel that broadcasts around the world.

If you cannot do this, what can you do? What can you complete?

You can just steal persimmon in the middle of the night and only bully the weak.

If you meet a real rascal, you even dare not say a word. And you just play dumb, hide your capacities, bide your time, and muddle along.

What can you do?

Right is right, wrong is wrong. Black is black and white is white.

I must find these rogues and speak clearly and let them give a statement for all over the world.

Religion is an idealistic problem. Thought is a publicity problem, and it is a problem of communication between human beings. It doesn't mean that if there is a religious conflict, it will be bloody.

Religion is a problem of publicity. If it speaks more, people's ideology, the rights and wrongs will be naturally changed. If they hear a lot, they will neglect them, and habit will be second nature. So it will naturally no longer be a problem.

If they meet ideological problems, they dare not say, don't say, and even don't want to say.

We fear that they don't say any word and calculate on their own when they meet ideological problems. And eventually, it will accumulate hostility and cause a disaster.

What the devil is most afraid of is to see the sun. If they see the sun, they will be half dead with fright. Therefore, what the Islamists most fear is that others reveal their weakness and speak ill of them.

Are you Westerners smooth talkers?

When you attacked China, how much did you issue malicious remarks? Now, you are still speaking ill of China.

I feel very strange. Why don't you dare say a word when you meet Islam? The *New York Times* said that they Americans aren't 'Charlie'. Where is your moral integrity?

It's funny and surprising. It is just like stealing persimmon in the middle of the night—only bully the weak.

China has an ancient civilisation, and Chinese people have self-restraint and they are civilised and law-abiding. They won't make terrorist attacks. So anybody can speak ill of us at random, and we pretend not to hear and don't make a terrorist attack. Meanwhile, we also don't revenge.

We don't mind what you say, and we still insist on socialism, and now, we are going to be number one in the world.

What you did is wrong, because you always bully the weak and fear the powerful, which isn't a deed of a man and a gentleman.

Why don't you take out the courage to speak ill of China, the smartness of peaceful evolution, and the determination of Vietnam War and Korean War to face the Islamic devil and rogue? In

this way, the problem of Islam can be completely solved. Otherwise, this will be endless forever. And it will also hurt the offspring.

What's more, criticising them and changing their thoughts are not letting them die, but just changing the ideology.

The people of Islam are confused, and they want to die, so we should help them. This is their own choice, rather than ours. Only when we aggravate contradictions and face contradictions can the contradictions be resolved.

If we don't face the problems, how do we solve them?

What Egypt said is very correct, religious reform is the best.

Throwing out all Islamic rubbish culture and fusing into the modern civilisation—that is the best result.

But the problem is, will they listen to you? Do you have the final say? Can you control the situation?

I think that Western countries had better rely mainly on themselves, because anyone else is unreliable.

What the Islamists most fear is to expose their scandals, make a spiritual attack on them, transform their spirit, and change their culture.

The most stupid thing for the Westerners is that they believe in freedom of religion and freedom of worship, and they allow this kind of harmful cultural thoughts.

You should take out the spirit that you wanted to extinguish communism at that time to put out Islam. In that way, everything will be easy to handle.

It should make a high-pressure spiritual situation to Islam, because mental high pressure is more effective than a high-pressure force, and its effect is immediate. Meanwhile, the supreme art of war is to subdue the enemy without fighting, and it can make the devil be half dead with fright.

The external high-pressure spirit can translate into their internal impetus of transformation. Their internal transformation also needs an impetus.

If everyone wants to be a good man, doesn't set out the problems and aggravate the problems, there would be no impetus of reform within them.

On the contrary, the evil will come out and hurt the world. And the truly wrong party is the West itself. You are not ready to fight with rogues and devils. You are indecisive sissies. How can others

help you?

If we are fearful of the devil, the devil will think that they are reasonable, and then the devil will become the truth.

26. Germany Raised a Thought-Provoking Question

17 January 2015

Today, Germany finally raised a thought-provoking question with academic value: Why do Islamists read out Islamic sharia when they kill people?

This is the key point that distinguishes justice and evil, the devil and true God.

Islam of this kind has betrayed the true God and Allah. These Islamists are killing for demons. They are killing people of God. They want people of God to surrender and be fearful. They want devils and evil to rule the world created by God.

You should have considered this question earlier. One should have asked this question.

You cannot recognise the devil once it is in a human being's clothing. You think they are human beings, calling for protection of their human rights.

It is foolish, ignorant, and ridiculous. It is like lifting a rock only to drop your own feet.

There is another thought-provoking question raised by the US and Britain, which is about redressing twisted ideology.

What is twisted ideology? Who has twisted ideology? What is the harm of twisted ideology to this world? How do we correct twisted ideology?

These kind of questions need to be raised, discussed, and thought every day worldwide. If answers of these kinds of questions are clear worldwide, then problems can be completely solved and things can be done. Or else, cults can never be solved and our future generations will be played to death by these demons.

27. It is better to enforce the religion reform

17 January 2015

Today, Egypt proposed religious reforms.

The religious right now are in the end time of law, the social conditions when the religion just prevailed are totally different to the modern social conditions. Many regulations proposed in that time were practicable, while in modern social civilisation, they are the emissaries of the devil. They help the devil against God.

After thousands of years, the religious doctrine and God's supernatural power at that time cannot play a role. Thus, the new ideas are needed to keep pace with the times to correct.

We need new doctrine and law conforming to the time.

Do not take out those ruthless practices and doctrine again to be disgusting. It is the outdated doctrine that is in the devil's use. It is used to harm his subjects, to persecute God's subjects, and to threaten God's subjects. It services for the devil to rule the world.

Throw away the rubbish Islamic culture, integrate into modern civilisation. It is the best result.

But the problem is, do the neuropathy and Procrustes listen to you? Do you have the final say? Can you control the situation?

From the primitive religious sense, religion can regulate behaviour and improve the soul.

But because thousands of years passed, social productivity has occurred earth-shaking changes. Many concepts need to be redefined. Values, justice and evil, good and ugly are required to be redefined.

And those Procrustes chase the doctrine of barbarism in the era of civilisation. Destroy civilisation development and civilised society by savage standards.

God creates the world, hopes that people become more and more civilised, more and more developed, and life is getting better and better. That is the glory of God, but also God's will.

The devil uses outdated religious doctrine to control some low-level, ignorant human to be against God, destructs God's world, and attempts to control this God-created world.

We now need to be clear about what is barbarism, what is civilisation, what is dark, what is bright, what is good and what is ugly, what is God's will, and what is the will of the devil.

Clear the problems and then redefine the doctrine. If you really don’t know, it is okay that you disbelieve anything. No religious belief is better than believing the devil.

Demonism people must suffer and be destroyed and punished.

I will fight against them to the end.

28. Islam needs mental transformation

18 January 2015

This is in fact a spiritual battle, and wars are continuation of spiritual battle. This is a battle of spirit and culture. We should destroy Islam in spirit, culture, and ideology. As all of the gods have abandoned Islam, it is only left with a soulless body. Islam is incarnation of injustice and evil. Once attacked, they cannot resist.

The one who resists spiritual, cultural, and ideological attack can be regarded as rat and devil. These kinds of people should be totally destroyed. and this is where force plays its role. Or else, it would be too difficult to find terrorists all over the world. We should force them to come out and destroy them.

Spiritual attack can let the devils show their original shape and then we can destroy them. In this way, we can end the war soon and solve the Islamic problem.

I think air strike is too simple. We should change the main battlefield to spiritual one and let material wars be complementary. Western people put the cart before the horse and usually use forces instead of intelligence. It makes things worse and enemies giggle at it.

Those terrorists are not afraid of wars. Their lives are rotten and worthless. People with bare feet do not fear people wearing shoes. It is useless for cultivated people to fight with them.

They fear spiritual and cultural attack the most as they do not have culture and spirit. They cannot say any truth. They do not have any truth at all. Therefore, culture and spirit are their weak points and blind areas. We can attack these parts randomly, and it will not cost much compared to the cost of airborne missile, network, television, radio, newspapers, and media. These spiritual and cultural attacks have propaganda effect worth tens of thousands, or even hundreds of millions of yuan, far more effective than airborne missiles.

The best policy in war is to thwart the enemy's strategy. It is out of date to use force. To break the enemy's resistance without fighting is the highest realm of war.

29. As recorded in the Bible, Islamic extremists refer to the religion that worships the beast and image of the beast and acts monstrously

19 January 2015

What is the beast? And what does acting monstrously mean?

Acting monstrously refers to hanging human heads on the telegraph pole, circumcising women, and killing people with stones. Rapists shall be sentenced to death, those who commit adultery shall be sentenced to death, and so shall those who steal things. Those who eat pork shall be stabbed to death. Both men and women cover their faces with a rag for fear that people might know what they look like; they dare not show their faces. They give birth to babies but do not raise them correctly as they should, repetitive manufacturing high-quantity but low-quality population. Kids and pregnant women are forced to be suicide bombers. Born to be humble and valueless, born to be terrorists, Islamic extremists kill people and set places on fire, committing all manners of crimes.

Are those brutal acts? Are those monstrous acts? That is the weird and monstrous ideology in the eyes of American and British people.

If those were not brutal acts, then what are brutal acts? If those were not weird, then what is weird? If those were not monstrous, then what is monstrous?

According to the Bible, they worship the beast and its image. Islamic extremist groups worship the beast five times a day, which shall not be altered under any circumstances. And that is worshiping the beast and its image.

It is also recorded in the Bible that these people make the fire come down from the heavens. There are guided missiles dropping from the skies to attack these Islamic gangsters every day, and that is fire coming down from the heaven.

Where do those guided missiles come from? Those hooligans get themselves into trouble, don't they? It is the righteous fire. The fire is brought about by devils, but Islamic gangsters confuse people and slander God by insisting that it is God who brings the fire, thus those who believe in Islam are against God and they fight against soldiers sent by God.

According to the Book of Revelation, all those who refuse to worship the image of the beast will be killed by the beast. Islamic extremists clamour for killing all heretics. It is absolutely true.

Therefore, the religion that worships the beast and image of the beast recorded in the Bible refers exactly to Islamic extremists and their believers.

Thus, they are devils, beasts, false prophets, and the enemies of God. They should be thrown into the fire lake where the sulphur is burning. They should go to hell and eternally suffer from the six great divisions in the wheel of karma.

While those who believe in Islam are to be punished by gods; they shall be cleared up, wiped out, and be judged on Judgement Day.

After thousands of years of development, the human society today needs to enter a new era and a new age. God loves the people, while those social pests and believers of the devil shall be completely wiped out before we enter a brand-new era. They should disappear permanently in the world created by God.

30. Moderate Islam doctrine is questionable from the perspective of Iran

23 January 2015

Some of Iran's views are against Israel and America but supporting Islam to rule the world.

Anti-Israel is derived from Hadith. God wanted to punish Jews so God asked you to attack them, but now God wants the state of Israel founded. Why didn't Hadith tell you to help Israel find Israel?

So your so-called Hadith is questionable. It cannot represent God, or it has been changed or abridged.

I think the Bible should be the original work of God, but there is something wrong with Hadith. It is not what is supposed to be. God's will has been twisted in Hadith.

There is no denying that America has its trouble, but Islam has more serious problems compared to America.

America needs to accept criticism and improve its work in many ways. Islam will be destroyed if it refuses to improve. It is not a matter of criticism.

It is very simple because what America represents is innovation, development, technology, advancement, and civilisation.

In comparison, Islam reflects conservatism, old fashion, backwardness, barbarism, ignorance, dirtiness, and evil.

You always say that America is unjust, unfair, and no peace, but God would rather choose injustice than foolishness and barbarism that are not needed to rule the world.

All kinds of problems emerge as the society is developing. New problems will appear as the old are solved. It is in a process of dynamic balance. No forever justice and fairness, which is also in a dynamic balance.

'The Tao that can be spoken of is not the constant Tao' in Tao Te Ching expresses the same meaning. Nothing is eternal. Everything is balanced dynamically.

China has travelled the same road before. It aimed to achieve development, stability, harmony, and justice. Some people think it is right to get dirty first and clean up later. GDP should be the main indicator of national revenue.

In light of China's development, every step forward in any periods of history and any policies introduced would represent fairness and justice. Corresponding policies should be made under different environments and conditions. Therefore, the meaning and definition of fairness and justice are different. And the practices are different accordingly. A fixed model should not be used to judge fairness and justice; for example, cracking down on Falun Gong cult is an action of practicing fairness and justice. Today, whichever organisation is defined as cult needs to be put down just the way Falun Gong was suppressed. No explanation is needed because this action is to uphold fairness and justice.

What America pursued we can say represented fairness and justice under the social environment and historic background at that time. Although they are not flawless viewed from different perspectives and by different measurements, they signalled fairness and justice at that time. The definition of fairness and justice varies as environment changes. You can't take what was in the Koran thousands years ago as a yardstick of measuring fairness and justice in modern society. This is evil and foolish.

Injustice is unavoidable. Some people get the bigger share of the pie, while others get the smaller one. All in all, the economy, technology, and human society need development.

Doing business has business evaluation and doing politics has index of performance evaluation likewise. God will check the indicator of social development.

America's index is the best. Its ideology is not perfect, but it's in the process towards civilisation.

Islam's index is the worst. You did some despicable things, and your ideology is very weird.

What right do you have to accuse America? You don't have the right to accuse America of not donating to you and not giving you justice. And this so-called justice is from Hadith that is not recognised by God.

Your self-claimed fairness and justice need a new definition. It is questionable, so it needs to advance with the times.

Islam ruling the world is total bullshit.

Walking down the wrong path will be destroyed for causing trouble for God. You will not rule the world but be ruled.

It is right for fairness and justice to unify the world. Fairness and justice need to unify the world, but this fairness and justice is neither by your standards nor by Islam's standards.

Islam is a personification of evil, the messenger of demon. You should understand what's going wrong around you. Your explanation of fairness and justice is a Procrustean kind of paranoid. The definition is used by the devil. The devil takes advantage of your ignorant and barbaric

understanding of fairness and justice to make a mess against God. You become the accomplice and follower of the devil and a synonym of barbarism, foolishness, and evil. You need reflection and punishment.

Religions should do what they are supposed to do. You can chant your holy book and worship your god, but you should not take seizing power as your goal; otherwise it is a cult that should be suppressed without any explanation and discuss. Your doctrine was wrong since Mohammed. It needs to be corrected or it is a cult.

In a word, in God's created world, it is always right when a man works hard to build a fortune and develop human civilisation. He deserves appreciation and support no matter how hard it is or how bumpy the road he travels because they are making the world a better place as God's wish. They help develop human society, such as America and China.

You don't work hard to create a fortune but find all kinds of excuses to envy and hate others, especially those people and nations who are more excellent and rich than you, which is the ugliest behaviour. God will discard and punish you no matter what excuses and pretexts you make because it is against God's will. Animosity is the hatred and dissatisfaction about God. It is evil, just like you hate Israelis and Americans. It is extremely ugly and terrible when you don't develop human civilisation but envy and hate others. It is an evil thing that should be combated.

31. Religion should be the spiritual improvement established on the basic guarantee of society

31 January 2015

A variety of religions can be found in the world today, among which there are also a few mainstream religions.

Freud gives his own interpretation of religion and taboo—that they are the results of repeated, continual, and strong hints. Just as Hitler said, repetition transforms a lie into a truth.

This is not without reason. There are indeed some ingredients contained in religion. Religion can be divided into the traditional religion, orthodox, or small religious ones as well as cults. They all contain the strong hints that Freud said. In addition to hints, orthodoxy is also equipped with an imperial decree that adjusts the relationship between humans. The imperial decree also requires repeated strong hints. There is hardly any imperial decree and truth contained in the cults, only the repeated strong hints similar to Hitler.

However, for people who do not have religious beliefs, there is always a repeated strong hint regardless of which religion. In other words, there are results and components of brainwashing. This is beyond doubt.

People without a religious belief always treat those people who have a religious belief with an inexplicable paranoia component.

Humans are small and insignificant although they have been equipped with certain knowledge and abilities. Relative to the universe, earth is just a speck of dust. The arrogance of humans is pathetic and ridiculous for the whole universe. Human beings might just disappear without a trace if their activities destroy the development law of the universe. As if it had never existed, everything starts over again.

There are so many unknown things waiting for humans to discover. How would human beings be established in the universe? First of all, they need to have an idea of becoming one with the universe, achieving coexistence and common prosperity.

The greatness of the universe and the smallness of human beings are beyond human imagination, which can let humans disappear for many times.

The current status of human beings is that they are incompatible with themselves, not to mention their compatibility with the universe.

Humans are still dirty, ignorant, pathetic, ridiculous, and small creatures now, who still have not

learned how to be compatible with themselves and how to achieve compatibility between humans, including coexistence and common prosperity.

I feel so funny when I watch some science fiction movies, such as *Star Wars*. Is the battle needed between stars? Just let humans disappear, that is okay, truly a waste of time. It is just an easy thing. Human beings always pathetically imagine the universe with their own mind and ability, just like measuring the sun with the power of ants.

Religion is paranoia of some aspects, which also can be said of some requirements for spiritual improvement. So people with a religious belief always look down upon the infidels; they think that they are dirt and cheap, which is the cause of killing every infidel.

Let us go back to the original point, how to build a basic social environment, before we discuss the spiritual improvement.

In my opinion, humans need to first establish a basic environment before talking about the spiritual improvement.

What is the basic environment? That is, the environment established by people without religious beliefs.

First of all, humans return to their original nature, a society without religious beliefs, and some people need to improve their spiritual cultivation—we have no objection, but certain rules and orders are needed.

These are basic ideas and concepts that we should have.

According to the theory of Maslow, the basic needs of humans are hierarchical. Spiritual needs are higher needs, which are established based on the original impulse and the original needs. It is nonsense to talk about spiritual needs if the basic and original needs of humans cannot be met, then it is a cult.

Islam has deviated, and this is the case. But they talk about spiritual needs instead of the basic needs of humans. Praying five times a day makes them freaks. The normal thinking of humans is to talk about material, and then to discuss the spiritual improvement, spiritual fulfilment, and self-realisation after the material is satisfied.

Is there a title better than 'madman' that can be used to describe people who pray to Allah with an automatic rifle all day long while being on short commons, killing people for Allah?

Put spirit aside, and let us talk about material and security satisfaction.

According to the theory of Maslow, physiological needs, to be fed and clothed, having a wife and children are first, followed by security needs. Ensure their safety, security of society. This is an old

issue that human society has been studied on and fought for since ancient times. And it is also a popular topic for politicians.

From my point of view, the best answer to this question is the Chinese models, which are also the views and a dominant idea I want to express for writing so many articles.

For the Chinese have no religious beliefs. They always said they have a communistic belief, but in fact, they do not. Few people believe communistic belief. Apart from me, there are some senior officials of the Communist Party. But it is the truth.

For ordinary Chinese, communism is a kind of social environment and social system, rather than religious belief. At least it is not a belief right now.

They live relying on this kind of social system and survive in such a social environment. But they do not believe in this social system.

I recognise the model of China is because of understanding instead of belief.

We insist on a brand when we want to buy a car; it can be said that we believe and trust the brand, but it is slavish to some extent. They do not know the internal structure of the car and why it has excellent performance, why it is reliable and durable, and why it is safe and comfortable. They only know it is a brand. However, the designers of the cars do not follow blindly, because they know why.

My understanding of the human society and the Chinese model is by no means belief, nor hearsay, but an in-depth understanding. I have been studying the subconscious of humans and the bottom codes of the culture.

To explain all behaviour of humans, the study needs to be carried out from the subconscious, the bottom motivation, and the primitive impulses behind all behaviour of humans.

It can be said to truly understand humans and human society after a complete explanation of various behaviour of humans from the level of the subconscious, and design the best social systems and running model of society.

The Chinese model I describe in the website is the best running model of society in the assumption of a human society without religious belief.

I think it is a basic model that every country should have. Each country can add something to the basic model according to its own situation. For example, religious belief should also be a spiritual improvement established based on being fed and clothed, personal safety, fairness and justice.

But this improvement must be based on coexistence and common prosperity, without affecting the others.

For Islam, the biggest trouble in the world, a careful study with psychical analysis also needs to be carried out.

Using psychical analysis to analyse the thinking structure and logic as well as the bottom spirit motivation of Shia, Sunni, Iran, Saudi Arabia, and the IS. Where is the bottom original impulse of their perception of the world? Which things belong to God, and which things belong to the devil?

There is sufficient scientific basis and rigorous logic supporting my identification that the IS, the Sunnite Wahhabi, the Taliban, Boko Haram, and jihad are pure Procrustes. It is the result of an in-depth study and in-depth psychical analysis.

Strange phenomena of mankind can be easily found. In addition to Islamic Procrustes, there are many others. It would hurt the self-esteem and self-confidence of many people if I list them in detail.

You can analyse your own behaviour through psychical analysis. Always do not do something stupid and poor.

32. Incorrect ideology and demand of extremist organisations

3 February 2015

One of the reasons of extremist organisations hostile to the United States and the West is their destruction to laws of Islam and Allah.

Most of the Islamic law and God's law should be followed, and this is true. The problem is that some of the laws of the chieftain age do not adapt to the development of modern human society and should be abolished, developing with the times. However, most of God's laws should be followed. For example, some people have sex with animals and make it into a video spreading on the Internet. It is not allowed from both God's law and Islamic law. I also think that those who have sex with animals must be put to death. The laws of God should be followed. That's right. Westerners indulge those who have sex with animals, with light sentence for them. It is sinful. These days, an American had sex with a dolphin, which is against the Bible, and he should be put to death.

Behaviour like homosexuality, negligent homicide, adultery, etc., should lead to a light sentence to develop with the times. Those who throw others down from the roof should be publicly beheaded or stoned to death, because it is a brutal act. Islam did a lot of brutal acts.

Having sex with animals is different, because it is one of the animal acts essentially. We should combat poison with poison, and combat brutal act with brutal act. So those people should be sentenced to death.

Behaviour like homosexuality, negligent homicide, adultery, etc. belongs to human behaviour, so we need to handle it with humanitarianism. It is reasonable to punish it with light sentence.

Many Islamic laws were developed to adapt to the social conditions of the age, thousands of years ago. Now it is the era of civilisation and of network. The law of the age of the wild is not applicable, so it needs to be abolished.

If those Islamic extremists apply savage-era law requirements to modern human society, rebellion and violence are unreasonable, unjust, and evil.

I think the reason why you think this time is not satisfying and quite uncomfortable is that some people do not have the law of God and Allah. Some people do not follow the law of Allah, and it is not fair for you to execute the law of God. Thus, you suffer a lot from that.

This problem needs to be viewed from another perspective. I think this problem should be viewed like this: In order to adapt to the development of modern society, the law of God and Allah has changed with times. However, you do not know that the laws of God and Allah have changed and continue to perform the old laws, thus generating the conflict and contradiction

with modern civilisation.

It is not wrong to obey the law of God, but you do not know the true meaning of God, so you execute the wrong law.

Now the law is: God loves everyone, regardless if black or white, rich or poor.

God created the land and oil, so mineral resources belong to God; you live in this land, so you also belong to God. The land, oil, and mineral resources should be shared between you and the chief, the king, the minister, the president, and the prime minister. They are the common property of yours.

You now feel unjustly and unfairly without pride or material wealth. That is because the chief, the king, the minister, the president, and the prime minister deprived you of love and wealth given by God.

You want fair, justice, pride, and wealth, then you should go for the chief, the king, the minister, the president, and the prime minister for your love given by God and realise scientific communism.

Don't always tangle with Americans and Westerners, and that is a wrong direction.

The worst thing Americans and Westerners do is that they provide weapons to the chief, the king, the minister, the president, and the prime minister to suppress you and to fool you by advocating democracy. That's all. However, the chief culprit is the chief, the king, the minister, the president, and the prime minister of your country. They robbed the oil, diamonds, and the land given by God, so you should go to them for a revolution and get back your things, instead of trying to fight with the Americans and the Westerners to death. That is a wrong direction.

Your appeals are not right now, so you cannot get the support from God. It is unjust. You must change the appeal and change the direction to get the support of the gods. It is the act of justice.

33. Mohammed said the fire would come out of Yemen

11 February 2015

Mohammed, the prophet of Islam, said, ‘Now the fire will come out of Yemen, which makes people go to resurrection field.’

‘The fire will come out of Yemen.’ This sentence means that Yemen is the place where the ruffians and devils of Islam start to build up their fortunes. Because bin Laden and the main ringleaders of terrorist organisations of Islam like al-Qaeda, Ai Fatah, Aulaqi are all Yemeni and start to harm the world in Yemen.

‘Make people to go to resurrection field.’ Make all the people go to the battleground, let them kill others or let others kill them, be reincarnated in a new body, and become a new person in the next life.

So Mohammed predicted long time ago that nowadays Yemen would become the nest of ruffians and devils. Yemen needs to wipe out these Procrustes and devils and destroy their nest.

The Wahhabi of Sunnites of Yemen should be exterminated; they are the place of origin of devils, a den of Procrustes, and a black nest of ruffians. All the devils in the world are developed and trained from there.

34. Do not stop them from joining the IS

27 February 2015

The IS is the most obvious evil organisation in human history. It even does not have a basic slogan, which can confuse people's minds.

Previously, if those politicians wanted to launch people to make a revolution, they always made up a wonderful and sweet lie to confuse people's minds and incite a disturbance.

Now the IS even omits this; they are pure evil, pure dirtiness, pure foolishness, and pure devilishness.

The IS even are worse like this, but still there are people who want to join the devil's organisation. Why don't we try to stop them to enter it?

The devil showing his original shape is not a bad thing, but a good thing. What we should do is not to stop some guys from joining the IS, but to arrange soldiers and chariots to come to the battleground to wait for them and to execute and to wipe them out reasonably and legally on the battlefield. Meanwhile, make them die like warriors and give the common people an explanation.

Why violate their human rights? Why stop their own self-choices?

They have the right to choose between good and evil.

They have right to choose between God and the devil.

They have right to choose between life and death.

This is a process to get rid of toxins.

It is normal that the trash needs to be eliminated from the inside of the body.

The whole human society has been polluted seriously. We need to purify the race and to wipe out the devil's followers and envoys.

If we stop these devils from going to the battlefield and keep them inside the country, then in the future, they will come out with another violent way to harm society.

Let the devil's envoys and followers join the IS, let them go to the battlefield. Then it is the best ending and choices that wipe them out on the battlefield.

The relation between good and evil always needs a result, an explanation, and a war.

Respect people's own choices, even death; they should die decently like a soldier.

God needs those devil's envoys and followers to die earlier, giving a break to the world.

It is sissy, hypocritical, and harmful to stop the devils from committing suicide and put them in prison.

The scientific communism is to guarantee that God's law can be carried out both from the spirit and material. The devil should be repressed and should be wiped out.

The people who help God uphold justice should get the infinite material guarantee and due spirit and material reward. The evil should be punished and the devil should be wiped out.

God's justice should be executed, and it is not right to bargain with God about his justice. God's justice should not be limited.

The fortune created by God is the guarantee of justice, the guarantee of all the things, all the materials. It is holy and inviolable. It should not be bargained.

Those people who betray justice and God and follow the devil will never be forgiven.

35. Wearing an over robe, a veil, and a beard shall be strictly prohibited to wipe out Islam extremist organisations ideologically

29 March 2015

I consider that the CPC is combat-worthy when working on ideology under the socialist system in China.

Islam extremist organisation is a kind of ideological problem. In ancient times, the ideological problem is called rebellion, disloyalty, impiety, disobedience, or heresy, and it may cause decollation. Just like 'keeping hair or head' in the Qing dynasty.

Indeed, decollation is a way to solve all problems, which can remove the source of the trouble and wipe out the form and spirit thoroughly.

However, it is civilised now, and importance is attached to human rights. Decollation is not allowed, and troubles are following.

If someone is not decapitated, it is also difficult for him to be changed.

Someone says the two most difficult things in human society are as follows:

1. Give your money to me.

2. Add my thoughts to you.

Transformation of ideology means to change the mind of the opposite side, which is the most difficult thing.

It is difficult, but there are still some methods. From the angle of government, I believe this method is some methods and ideas used in Singapore—power politics and government suggestion.

Freud considered religion as a kind of psychological suggestion, which can change the subconscious.

Why do people in Islam extremist organisation wear masked over robe, veil, and beard? From the psychoanalysis, it is a kind of psychological suggestion.

Just like the Young Pioneers wearing red scarves, it is a kind of psychological suggestion: The organisation has admitted me, and I will draw close to the organisation.

The Christians wear crucifixes; it is a kind of psychological suggestion: God abides with me, and Christ will grace us.

If this suggestion is broken by external force, then the subconscious will be changed unconsciously.

In ancient decollation, one side is to execute the troublemakers, and one other side is to show it to the living. It suggests to the living, if you act recklessly, you will be decollated. The death is the example.

Recently, the government of China has legislated to stipulate that it is not allowed to wear masked over robe, veil, and beard in Xinjiang. If you are unrepentant after repeated education, then you will be sentenced.

I think it is correct, combat-worthy, while civilised and effective. It is an excellent method and grip, which is necessary to be popularised in the world.

As this law, our government can do some practical work and concrete ideological work, which is in the air, to the specific work object and target.

It can remind the terrorists and those in incubation period all the time that extremism, which is impracticable, can be punished and sanctioned by the law.

The government of China publicises, helps, and educates those people not of the same clan to standardise behaviour through all functional departments. The policies to object to extremism are fully publicised through the changes of clothing and appearance. The sprout thoughts of extremism in incubation period are contained and eliminated through the changes of clothing and appearance.

Wipe out the demon in the rudimentary stage. In fact, it is better to transform, help, and educate their minds than to strike the contradictions when these break out. This is another form of care; the government is responsible for the people and takes care of them.

Just like the father likes his children. From the religious meaning, this is the love of the Heavenly Father that CPC, on behalf of the Heavenly Father, gives to the people.

If the children do something wrong, the father will punish them, just like those Islam terrorists in incubation period doing something wrong or are going to do that. The country will represent the Heavenly Father to punish them. The punishment is to prevent them from making the bigger mistakes, and it is the responsibility and love to people.

In comparison, it shows that the capitalist countries are backward and ignorant. They don’t have the systematised and efficient organisations while the CPC has, and they cannot organise such a huge and complicated project.

They say that is the freedom belief; you can believe what you like and wear what you want to. It will be treated after there is any disaster, or someone is murdered, which is called the protection of human rights; these are all baloney.

It is irresponsible to those people injured by terrorists, and the terrorists as well. Representing the Heavenly Father, the people and organisation haven't educated the children well and cause them to do the faults.

Speaking of the counter-terrorism in Western countries, they send secret services to monitor and intimidate the terrorists, which is too stiff.

That executioner decapitating the American reporter likely said that the reason he became an extremist is that he was threatened and hurt by secret services from the UK.

In comparison, it is acceptable to send the aunts from sub-districts to work for it in China. If it cannot be solved indeed, then the public security organisations go into action, which doesn't waste resources.

I consider that it is one of the most obvious superiority of the socialist system, which is a society with organisation and systematic management.

In comparison, the catchword of human rights and freedom in capitalist seems to be nonsense aiming at the problem to deal with terrorism.

The premise of freedom and democracy is that who we faced are good people and civilised people; only on this foundation the prerequisite can work.

To deal with poverty, falling, ignorance, evil, terror, and demon, only the centralisation means of socialism can work, just like that in Singapore.

For the common Muslim, it is untouched to strictly prohibit wearing masked over robe, veil, and beard. While for the Islam extremists, it will impact their mentality to strictly prohibit wearing masked over robe, veil, and beard, which can kill the extremism contradiction in the cradle and rudimentary stage.

I suggest that all countries legislate to strictly prohibit wearing masked over robe, veil, and beard anytime in order to defeat the Islam extremism ideologically.

36. Bountiful Saudis pay money to hire goons and accomplices globally

31 March 2015

Saudi people often give money to other countries. However, gifts blind the eyes and the giving will be repaid. Sooner or later, they are going to work for the Saudi even with their life like goons and accomplices. The giving is bundled with price and terms, which indicates that a Saudi doesn't donate for charity but pays money to hire goons and accomplices on purpose.

By contrast, American billionaires also donate very often. Some of them have even established organisations with special intention of calling upon the rich globally to contribute to the poor and take the lead.

Actually, the amount of their donations is quite enough to stage a coup and start a war in some small countries and districts. They don't follow the Saudi style but contribute to the poor.

Doing the same thing with different starting points will bring different results.

American people donate to the poor to help them for benevolence. However, Saudi's donation is to bribe goons and accomplices with purposes and terms evilly and badly.

It is true that donating to poor people is a kind of good deed and charitable thought. But I think it is of low level because it can only settle problems for a small number of poor people at a seeming level and in a short period. Therefore it belongs to Theravada Buddhism. It is good to give little well and accumulate little virtue.

Mahayana Buddhism asks for greater good and greater virtue. It demands establishment of a social system that enables all people and the poor to get rid of poverty and obtain liberation and redemption on a global scale.

However, it requires ultra-super wisdom.

In the past, there were many people intending to establish a system to liberate all people in the world, including the overthrowing of feudal dynasty slavery, overthrowing of feudal dynasty by establishing democratic system, and Marxists' intention and slogan of liberating all people and establishing a perfect system, which all were interfered with problems and disadvantages and only turned out to be progress instead of reaching the target.

The existing model and theory adopted in China is an effective approach to reach the target, which has already set an example.

Following Chinese style and putting it into force in poverty countries is some kind of a good deed with merits and virtues, which is more powerful than donation. It can guide all people to settle all

problems finally.

I have seen many countries' politicians acting positively so as not to lag behind. They use better ways to build a better country of their own and solve problems facing their country. They try to help other countries to settle different problems in a better way.

This is charities' thought, good deeds, and benefaction as well as hopes of a human being.

Just as the way Saudi follows, some countries spend money on the way of evil instead of beneficence. They pay money to bribe some countries to set up wars against other countries so as to obtain personal benefit, like the Saudis.

There is a popular saying in China currently that money is capricious. But Saudi is not capricious but behaving badly with money.

Capriciousness is neither good nor bad, but behaving badly is an evil and ugly behaviour indeed.

Today, Saudi crazily seizes the oil resources which belong to the gods, to defend their royal family and personal interests. They invented the evil Wahhabi heresy to remain their obscurantism and governing; they also collected and hire sidekicks, messengers, and goons from Middle East countries to set up evil wars against the sovereign state Yemen, bombing the refugee camp and slaughtering civilians. They are definitely unforgivable evils.

Civil countries should curb such evil deeds. The axis of evil, rogue nature, and Wahhabi heresy should be cleared to maintain a peaceful world.

So clever is the old king of Saudi that I have been failing to catch his tripping as I always intend to criticise Saudi. The new king seems very lovely and has no idea about the situation, thus stirring up trouble as soon as he was in power, which in due time creates chances to collect all the present and past disputes. It's time to end all disputes.

37. Saudi Arabia's invasion of Yemen is an unjust war

3 April 2015

Saudi Arabia has recently initiated a war against Yemen. This war is unjust and vicious.

1. This war is a pure conflict of the Islamists. Yemen hasn't infringed any interest of Saudi Arabia. Saudi Arabia initiates the barbaric war against a sovereign state, Yemen, purely out of the religious conflict and its fatuous ideology, so it is unreasonable and vicious.

Moreover, the Houthis' armament is not a common anti-government force, because they have been energetically supported by the Yemeni army. Fundamentally speaking, this is not a common anti-government behaviour, but a domestic military coup. In other words, it completely belongs to the internal affairs of Yemen, where Saudi Arabia has no reason to intervene.

Therefore, Saudi Arabia's invasion into Yemen disobeys international law and ruins the international order.

2. The ideology maintained by Saudi Arabia is the vicious Islam Wahhabis that have caused the severest damage to the world. This religious sect is the most vicious in today's world. They are the messengers and followers of the devils that just crawled out of hell. They are purely a heresy and a common enemy of the world.

Almost all the existing terrorist organisations in the world are Wahhabis, the fundamentalism of Islam that originated from Saudi Arabia. Based on our probability calculation and basic logical thinking, it can be concluded that the Wahhabis are a questionable and evil organisation.

The vicious Wahhabis are not a question of human right or freedom of faith, but injustice and wickedness. This is a question of civilisation and ignorance.

The question with the devil cannot be discussed with belief or human rights. What we should declare is justice and civilisation.

The civilised society and all the countries in the world should clearly recognise the vicious nature of Wahhabis and thoroughly draw a clear distinction with it. Moreover, we should eliminate Wahhabis ideologically, because only by achieving that can we return to justice and civilisation.

3. The monarchy of Saudi Arabia is the source of this disaster.

In light of creationism and the Bible, the petroleum of Saudi Arabia was originally a gift left by God to the local people, so it should be the wealth shared by all the Saudi Arabians. However, it was intercepted by the king of Saudi Arabia as the private property of his family.

Why are the world's Islamic terrorist organisations somehow related with Saudi Arabia? Why can Wahhabis exist and expand?

In order to maintain his royalty and reign, and fight for the private interest for his family, the king of Saudi Arabia transformed Islam into a heresy called Wahhabi and designated it as the state religion, which has been forcibly popularised through the royalty. Therefore, the monarchy of Saudi Arabia is the source of the evilness and disaster, and the cradle of the devil.

38. The nuclear negotiation

4 April 2015

This unclear negotiation stands for a worldwide success and progress with great maturity, rationality, and development. However, a few countries like the US cause serious differences and interference in domestic nuclear negotiation, reflecting ignorance and backwardness of democracy.

According to Chinese scholars, China politburo's decision can never be changed by a hundred of the richest Chinese plutocrats. In the US, however, the White House's decision can be changed by only twenty rich American plutocrats.

This negotiation exposed the backwardness, ignorance, and evil of American democracy. But current leaders of the US are some of the most rational, practical, sensible, and brave leaders in recent years, which also show in public opinion polls. Thanks to good luck by now, while no one knows what will happen in the future.

Iran also shows some constructive progress and practical performance in many ways recently. Iran is one of the most sincere countries who try their best to solve the problems. Unlike North Korea who might fight in the negotiation, Iran is a country with culture.

Iran plays an important role and contributes the most in fighting against the IS extremist organisations though they didn't admit it with words.

During the fighting against the IS, Iran believes that there are still some rational people in Islam. The most evil part of Islam is Wahhabi state religion founded by Saudi Arabia, which is an axis of evil and the birthplace of the IS. Iran keeps fighting against Sunni, which is more than a sectarian conflict but a fight against evil.

Saudi Arabia should send ground forces and regular army to exterminate IS. Saudi Arabia has the obligations to fight because the evil comes from them. However, they only throw some bombs behind, without showing any sincerity. Moreover, Yemen's war launched by Saudi Arabia shows their Wahhabi evil nature. In contrast, Iran shows their determination to protect Islam and the dignity of Allah, which is worthy of respect.

We should also praise some participating countries that show their sense of duty and rationality in the negotiation.

Israel didn't perform well this time. Although the Bible described the founding of Israel, it caused hurt and hatred of Arab countries with many slaughters and wars. The current attitude of Israel can never solve that hurt and hatred.

Israel didn't help Iran and Hezbollah fighting against evil IS in the name of God. Instead, Israel bombed army and officers of Iran and Hezbollah. This is shameless and is not a good manner a big country should have. But Israel has never been a big country.

If you don't trust Iran, ask the US to deploy some nuclear weapons in Israel in case Iran might produce nuclear weapons in fifteen years. Even if there are problems, they will happen in fifteen years. There is no need to make a tremendous row. We should calm down.

In these fifteen years, it is urgent and crucial to solve the problems between Israelis and Arabs. If the relations between them turn harmonious, the nuclear weapon issues will not exist.

Israel should send ground forces together with Iran to wipe out IS. Israel should build friendship and trust with Iran to bridge the gap so that Iran would not use nuclear weapons to beat it.

39. Wahhabi religious sect has misunderstanding on the explanation of 'mushrikeen'

13 April 2015

Mushrikeen is a felony in Islam.

Wahhabi and Saud family have massacred Muslims' other religious sects and non-Muslim heretics in the name of the crime of mushrikeen.

But mushrikeen is not something as evil as Wahhabi and Saud family explain.

The original meaning of 'mushrikeen' is that there is only one god on the earth, and no other things can be placed at the same position as Allah.

This is not wrong.

Respecting and loving Allah, however, does not mean we cannot love other things. Other things created by Allah need our kind treatment and our love. Respecting and loving the things created by Allah is a form of expression of respecting and loving God. Allah does not allow people to place other things at the same position as Allah, because Allah is forever supreme.

Allah loves and allows all, only if people do not place other things at the same position as Allah.

The respect and love towards Allah and love towards Allah's creation are not contradictory; everything is created by Allah, and love towards Allah's creation is an expression form of respecting and loving Allah. The proverb 'Love me, love my dog' is the same meaning. It is fine if we do not place them at the same position as Allah, and it is fine that we know Allah is forever supreme.

Hatred towards God's creation is hatred and dissatisfaction towards God. Oblique accusation is in this meaning.

Allah hopes human beings are full of love. That is the success of Allah and is the real honour.

But Wahhabi heresy can call white black and make a downright lie, changing Allah's loving world into a devil world.

This needs to be corrected.

40. Baghdadi is Dajjal in prophetic Hadith and he is bound to die in Syria

21 April 2015

According to prophetic Hadith, Dajjal, the Baghdadi of IS, will appear in our times. According to the prophetic Hadith, 'He will appear on a mountain road between Syria and Iraq, in the meantime, there is nothing left wherever he goes.' IS is starting to develop in the adjacent place of Syria and Iraq, which is Baghdad indeed.

An evaluation of Baghdad and IS in prophetic Hadith is that Dajjal is his nickname and he is deceptive and mendacious person.

It is truly broadening people's horizons as the hoax of Baghdad and IS, who are exactly the fraud and evil. And then it cannot be imagined that someone believes the trick and still fights for him as a suicide bomber. Beyond my imagination how the people are poisoned deeply. The words 'deceptive' and 'mendacious' are quite proper to describe it.

On the other hand, it shows someone's foolishness and filth. These people, lacking basic ability to judge good and evil, join IS. This kind of behaviour is deserving of execution. They do not belong to human beings, so they should be sent to see their master in the other world—the evil. There is no place for them in the earth.

According to the description of the prophetic Hadith, Baghdad is a one-eyed person, matchlessly bad, a big liar, subversive, lame and with red hair, while his right eye is hideous and prominent with one-eyed shape.

I have seen the picture of Baghdad. I found that his eyes were all right. I estimated that he was injured seriously in Americans' bombing and eyes were blinded by it and legs became limp. Or why he did not dare to show in such long time.

Prophetic Hadith also wrote, 'Dajjal would escape from Iraq to Syria and die in Syria.'

That fits the current situation in the battlefield. IS suffers the defeat in Iraq. It is estimated that the battle with Iraq will be over soon. And then he only escapes to Syria, and all of them will be destroyed in Syria.

It is very proper that the IS and Baghdad are described by the phrase 'matchless evilness'. How can human beings be so bad like that?

We say the drug traffickers in Mexico are bad enough, but they just do bad things locally for money. Their thuggery cannot influence the whole world, but IS hires suicide bombers and

creates terrorist incidents all around the world. IS is not only for money but also for creating a regime. They can misguide normal persons. So the evil of drug traffickers in Mexico and IS are not on the same level and IS is the worst.

The prophetic Hadith also wrote that the Muslims wanting to fight against the IS need to read the pre-ten sentences or last ten sentences of Cave Chapter, which means no different.

'People believing it and doing the good will reside in the paradise Allah created and can live forever; if you want to meet with Allah, you need to do good.'

Thus, it is observed that the Islam is a religion with kindness tendency and Allah teaches followers. With that in mind, the way to fight IS and Baghdad is doing good things and never being evil. However, the IS is truly wicked. Allah teaches us being good is the ideology to fight against IS.

Besides that, the prophetic Hadith wrote the other trait of IS: powerful ability to manage money, which agrees with the situation of IS.

'He starts to summon a nation to believe him. People trust and response him. And then he commands the sky to fall rain and orders the land to grow lush plants. Afterwards, he summons another nation, but this time, people refuse to believe him and refute his fallacy. He left immediately. And then these places suffered great drought, becoming barren, while people who live there are impecunious.'

These words describe that obeying IS will get fortune, or get nothing. Moreover, IS does not depend on plunder at all, but on witchcraft. Currently, we call it the ability of managing money. However, there is no such description in that time which is described like witchcraft.

The prophetic Hadith wrote, 'Dajjal was the most worried thing to yours', since he is as follows:

1. Very wicked, creating most of the damage in Allah's world

2. Deceptive and can puzzle most followers in a short time

3. Understanding witchcraft of managing money, with the richest gangster group throughout history.

All of that agrees with IS and Baghdad.

Those countries and persons who support the IS with money and weapon behind the scenes, please do not think you can't be known. With time, when Baghdad is killed, all of you will be cleared and destroyed by Allah.

However, the Koran also indicates good news: when the Wahhabi of fundamentalism is destroyed and there is no war in the earth anymore.

41. Terrorism and genocide

29 April 2015

Terrorism is a new invented term which has never been heard from feudal society and earlier.

I assume that terrorism is an abnormal product, developed after the slogan of 'human rights, democracy, and freedom' provided by civilised countries such as America. In addition, there was no terrorism before the slogan of 'human rights' was provided.

Simply speaking, terrorism could not have existed without a so-called society of 'human rights'.

Why? It is because those terrorists were all killed in an institutional society. And anyone who wants to be a terrorist also dropped their ideas. Therefore, there are no more terrorists in the society.

So terrorism is nurtured by those people who support 'human rights'. They just reap what they have sown.

Moreover, terrorism is not the only 'precious product' they ever made; there will be more of it. In fact, some signs have been shown—Europe will be occupied by Islamic countries. Europeans will have to pray to Allah every day, otherwise they will be beheaded. That time is coming soon, and the next generation of Europeans will be controlled by Islam.

This is the outcome of supporting 'human rights', or of making 'human rights' the top priority. Some of the supporters even developed 'dog rights' and 'cat rights' based on the 'human rights'. Dogs and cats are just food from God to human beings. A dog can bite a human without punishment, but a human would be imprisoned if he or she bites a dog. Are you all insane? I assume these ideas should be eliminated.

Ethnic massacre and genocide definitely are the only solutions to barbarians.

Civilisation is not wrong, but it depends on the specific situation. And you should clearly know who your opponent is.

If your opponent is a civilised person, you should treat him or her civilly. If your opponent is a barbarian, you should be more barbarous. Ethnic massacre and genocide definitely are the only solutions to barbarians.

Why are civilised people unable to explain clearly to the barbarians? That is because barbarians don't follow or even understand the rules. So for them, rules mean nothing.

A proverb for treating with barbarians is 'truth only exists in the range of a cannon'. Firing at

them with a cannon is the only solution. We do not need to talk to them, because it is totally in vain, and they won't listen or understand the rules you tell them.

What is barbaric, and what is civilised? Let's take an example.

Japan was defeated in World War II, but they admitted it and strived for developing the economy instead of managing suicide attack or suicide bombing to come at America. This is civilised.

What is barbaric? Islamic countries and Islamic extremist groups are the perfect models, who have lost in the battlefield and try to hide in and under the shield of 'human rights'. They drop their guns, pretending to be normal citizens, and they pick up guns, becoming terrorists who only shoot under women's dresses or behind children. This is barbaric, filthy, evil, shameless, folly, and infernal.

Don't consider this as funny, and ethnic massacre and genocide are necessary in this circumstance. This is truth as well as justice.

The extreme solution for human beings to settle disputes is, since ancient times, war, which could never be replaced in a short time. However, there are civilised wars and barbaric wars—war of human beings and of devils.

Probably, all of the Japanese are low in IQ and have a blind spot in differentiating good and evil ideologically. They cannot identify the evil nature of World War II. However, Japanese were reasonable and admitted the failure when they failed. They committed hara-kiri rather than support terrorism. Compared to the Islamists' hooliganism, bushido spirit is much more civilised and advanced. From this point, we may say the Japanese are civilised. However, Islamists are absolutely barbarians, and we have nothing to talk about with them.

I like one line from the movie *General Patton*: I wrote a piece of poetry for my enemy, asking him to fight with me with tank. We shook hands and got in the tanks to duel, and the victory of this war depends on the victory of him or me.

This is a romantic fantasy and unrealistic but, indeed, is a solution for civilised people to settle disputes. Whether they lose or win, the war is ended, and they never bother each other again.

Some inferior nations commit terrorism, and their people shoot under women's dresses although they have been defeated in the war. They think this is funny and reasonable. What they have done is purely evil and interminable, and we need to fight back against devils in a devil's way.

Islamic countries one day will shed blood like water, and all achievements will start again from scratch if they do not conduct religious reform and integrate into the modern civilisation. In conclusion, civilisation will never bow to barbarism, and God forbid occurrence of such a thing.

42. Religion and taboo

30 April 2015

Many religions have taboos; for example, the Buddhist's taboo is killing. Some religions adore snakes, and thus forbid people to kill snakes. Besides, some have mice adoration, who not only put forward the prohibition of killing mice, but also feed mice and provide food to them. Even some nationalities' taboo appears to oppose the slaughter of dogs, and their king prohibits the eating of dogs, because a dog saved the old king's life. The famous case is the taboo of Islam that a Muslim is forbidden to eat pork, and this is written in the Koran.

Christianity seems to have no taboo.

I think the Buddhists' taboo, that is, the prohibition of killing, is reasonable. This is because Buddhism pays attention to the equality of all beings, loves all beings and all other living beings. Thus not killing is fair and reasonable.

The description of the animals except for humans and the relationship of between humans and animals in the Bible is the most correct. All other religious taboos about the animals are baloney.

According to the description of the Bible, God said, 'Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.'

All living things on the earth are controlled by human beings. They can be treated as food or pets. It also can make them more or less, even to control their life and death.

It violates the Bible to take any animals as a taboo. Those pigs, dogs, rats, snakes, and other animals are the food of human beings, or they can be available for viewing and playing, but not adoration and not being treated as taboo. They are managed objects, and just managed objects.

Thus it is absurd, unreasonable, and foolish to prohibit eating pork, and it violates the Bible. It should be abolished.

It is unreasonable for Islam to have certain other taboos, including a woman wearing burqa and veil, and a man with long beard, which expresses foolishness and dirtiness.

According to Freud's theory, taboo is a kind of psychological suggestion. It is a kind of group hypnosis. It can be said to be a collective trick.

Islam's taboo is a pretext and instrument for those religious extremists to control their Muslims, is a kind of group hypnosis and a collective trick, and is a device to threaten, intimidate, and dupe

their people. It thus has no scientific basis and economic value. It must be abolished at once.

43. It is repeated a few times in the Koran that Allah will destroy the Koran

11 May 2015

It is recorded in the Koran:

He keeps the original of all the heavenly scriptures that the Lord [Allah] has written off and declared at will. (Koran 13:39)

The Lord shall utterly annihilate the Koran if he intends to do so. (Koran 17:86)

The Lord commanded Mohammed to read aloud, so he will never forget anything but that the Lord makes him forget. (Koran 87:6, 7)

The laws recorded in the Koran are extremely strict and all-embracing. Moreover, Allah intended people to show mercy and do good by punishing the evil.

The Koran is an oracle used to normalise humans' social order and code of conduct. It is totally different in management style and concept from Taoism, which advocates change and inconstancy.

God gave different nations different oracles, management methods, and thinking patterns.

To my point of view, the people of that time couldn't accept complex ideas simultaneously because of their limited ability of thinking. Furthermore, many ideas came into being owing to the development of society. Taking democratic culture and human rights culture, for example, they were proposed by America after the Second World War. This is because the ignorant mankind would be at a loss as to what to do and thus show no obedience if very complex ideas were given to them.

So God could only divide the complex ideas into different doctrines and then let different nations and religions preach at different stages.

In those days, the Arabs lived in the desert and went short of living resources, so their behaviour had to be restricted by severe law. Therefore, the Koran was an oracle given to backward, ignorant, and savage nations.

The Koran was, as it were, successful. Its success was evident in the development of population in such a region of severe water shortage.

However, human productive forces have been enhanced at present, and there is no exception to

the Middle East, where productivity is also being raised.

We can manage the society in some civilised, scientific ways. If so, we can solve the contradiction between resource scarcity, social management, and social distribution.

So it is reiterated in the Koran that the Lord can destroy the scriptures in the Koran as he wishes. The Koran can be disobeyed or written off at will if people can solve problems in a more scientific and civilised way. But man should first be virtuous.

The Koran intended mankind to do good but not abide by the laws stubbornly. However, all the Muslims' actions at present are contrary to the will of God. All the sects of Islam are evil and seriously problematic. The believers are following the evil, doing evil, and walking on the evil road with the Koran as a support.

So if the Muslims are incorrigible and unable to give up the evil, Islam will be considered an evil religion, and Allah will destroy the Koran. This has been said explicitly by Allah in the scriptures.

In the dharma ending age, the Muslims should release themselves from the bondage of the Koran and turn to absorbing the world's advanced culture and thought to build wealth reasonably and lawfully, so as to raise the living standards of the people and administer the country effectively. Only this is what Allah is delighted to see. Only this is his real intention and his glory.

44. The Koran and doing good

28 May 2015

The Koran is an expression and law of Allah which was enacted by Allah for Muslims thousands of years ago.

The law enacted by Allah is quite detailed including all works of life, which is much more detailed than the Bible. The Bible is just a record and description of God.

Allah really gave a lot of thought to the Koran. There are about two hundred characters of 'good', and Allah never forgets to warn Muslims to do good.

Allah expects human beings to do good. But Islam is the most 'evil' religion and completely makes God disappointed.

There are many reasons for this.

The concept of 'good' evolves constantly and is not changeless.

The Koran is a law from thousands of years ago. Social condition thousands of years ago is totally different from current situation, and the people's productivity at that time was completely different from the productivity of people nowadays.

For example, the productivity was low at that time, and the living materials were quite scarce; stealing others' things might do great harm to them and stealing food might cause the death of others, so the thieves' hands shall be cut off in the Koran, under this situation at that time.

However, the productivity has improved nowadays; the harm from pilfering is limited. Some laws even state that a minor crime below a certain amount will not be registered.

It is obvious that the law of cutting off thieves' hands in the Koran is not suitable for modern society, so measurement of penalty in the Koran needs rechecking. Moreover, some new types of crimes may not be recorded in the Koran because there were none of these kinds of crimes at that time.

Cutting off hands because of stealing thousands of years ago might be for keeping justice, which is doing good. However, cutting off hands because of stealing in current society is doing evil.

Therefore, the concept of 'good' should keep up with the times. In this sense, the fundamentalism of Islam called Wahhabi is the largest evil.

Mohammed pointed out in Hadith: 'The so-called heaven for them is the hell, and the so-called

hell for them is the heaven.'

Moreover, the main ideologies of the current Islamic revolution of Iran to overturn the Pahlavi dynasty—(1) unification of the state and the church, (2) anti-American, (3) anti-Israel—are wrong and evil.

Two sects of Islam, the Sunni and the Shia, are both heresies. Either the Sunni or the Shia, heaven, they say, is hell, and hell is heaven. They take congregations and the world to hell by different roads, but the destinations are all hell.

It could be said that there isn't a good person in Islam from junior to senior and from young to old; they are all bad persons. Islam needs an out-and-out religious reform, or as the Koran says, 'Allah will destroy the Koran' (17:86), and make Islam disappear.

2. The wise men should do great good.

There are big and small concepts of good, and the wise men should do great good.

a. Eliminate the roots of conflicts and wars and realise the harmony of the world.

Wars and conflicts constantly appear and they never stop, while wars do the greatest harm to common people, so the roots of conflicts and wars need to be eliminated fundamentally. The roots of conflicts and wars are conflicts of interest, culture, ideology, and thought.

As the Koran records, 'I have made a Torah and a law for each nation. If Allah desires, he will make all of you as one nation, but he divides you into many nations to test if you could observe the Torah and law he grants. Therefore, you should scramble to do good. All of you belong to Allah and Allah will tell the debate about right and wrong to you' (Yan Xizhang 5:48).

God divides human beings into different races and countries and gives different ideologies, civilisations, languages, and cultures to different races and countries. Because the ability of thinking of humans' brain is limited and the ability of accepting ideology and culture is limited, God has no choice but to divide the ultimate civilisation into sections and impart different cultures to different nations.

God endowed to Chinese the Tao Te Ching, Arabs the Koran, Indians the sutras, Jews the Bible, and the subsequent Marxism, Western democracy and human rights culture.

Moreover, different races from different countries cultivate themselves in different directions of culture. However, the real purpose of God is to make humans cultivate themselves comprehensively and improve their souls until civilisation of humans reaches a certain extent and humans' brains develop to accept all cultures. Because all cultures are the will of God and are the cultures God expects humans to practice. Humans will not be completed if only cultivating themselves in one aspect.

The incomplete ideology of humans leads to constant wars and conflicts, which is the real reason of humans' wars and conflicts. If humans want to return to the Garden of Eden, the issues on improvement of humans' souls and incomplete souls of humans have to be solved. We need to accept, learn, and tolerate all cultures God endowed and admitted. Heaven will not accept the human with an incomplete soul. The humans who could not improve their souls and accept all cultures have to come again and again between hell and man's world and never enter heaven.

You are always making religious riots and conflicts of sects; God will never allow you to enter heaven, because God needs to deal with religious riots and conflicts of sects. It is impossible for God to find troubles for himself. IS also wants seventy-two virgins after death, which is impossible; maybe there is something wrong with your brains, so do not let your imagination run away too far. All of you need to go to hell for rebirth.

It is good to eliminate wars and conflicts of humans, and it is the biggest good.

b. Fair and reasonable division of wealth

Marxism and the culture of human rights, public ownership and private ownership—they seem contradictory, but actually they are complementary. Just like when dealing with things, we need different tools. The usage methods and the functions of spear and shield are different. We consider them contradictory because we only could use one of them, and think one is useful and the other is useless. Actually this kind of view is a fallacy and the reflection of ignorance. Marxism and the culture of human rights is only a kind of tool. When dealing with something, we need different tools; only using one is a reflection of ignorance, paranoia, and evil.

We need public ownership and also need private ownership. The problems they solve are different. Sometimes we need to use public ownership to solve some problems, and sometimes we also need to use private ownership to solve some problems. China's model is the model combined by public ownership and private ownership. I have discussed this before.

We need public ownership to build a framework of social management and governance, then the remaining parts filled by private ownership, like bones and meat of humans, coordinate with each other and support each other.

Public ownership could realise the big distribution of society, could distribute the wealth and capital of God to everybody, and could meet people's lowest social security and fundamental equity and justice. Everybody could enjoy love and protection of God from birth to death. It is a great good to make the poor not alone, poor, and helpless.

c. Security assurance and equity and justice

For the rich, it is easy to protect their rights and interests, but for the poor, it is easy to be ignored, especially in the undeveloped areas and poverty-stricken areas. To provide security assurance and equity and justice to all humans is a great good, which needs capital and social balanced

management.

This problem also exists in the developed countries. Mexico is the most typical case. They are a developed country, but their public security is quite terrible, which is caused by the lack of social balanced management. This kind of problem also exists in America and Europe. The management of guns failed, and the public security problem is serious; this is an evil.

Aside from the failed social balanced management, insufficient investment is also the reason people in undeveloped countries could not get security assurance and equity and justice. Because of poverty and the problem of the social system, countries could not get an infinite amount of capital to improve public security and ensure equity and justice.

Public ownership with a certain capital could solve this problem. It is a great good to use the wealth created by God to solve the problem of security assurance and equity and justice.

d. Improving life quality of people is a great good.

Marx says no matter how evil capitalism is, the developed countries improve life quality of people. That is a great good.

No matter how many times America does make Islamic countries and Iran unsatisfactory, America creates wealth and improves life quality of people, and it ranks top. This is a great good.

All in all, no matter how impartial and innocent the Islamic countries are, they also could not improve life quality of their people. This is a great evil, and there is no use to say anything.

There is no use to defend yourselves with the Koran and any code. Dirty is dirty, evil is evil, and ignorance is ignorance. Using money and life quality of people to judge this problem is doing an evil. No use to say anything, God and Allah will punish you.

e. Charity

There are many philanthropists in our society and they are doing good, but the good is called a small good. But they are much, much better than the people who do not do good. However, they only can solve a certain thing at a time but cannot solve the fundamental problems. The real wise man should do great good.

This world is created by God, and he hopes the world he creates could make people have great wealth, live a high-quality life, be in order, be harmonious with no wars and conflicts in their life, be kind, improve their souls gradually, develop their world to an advanced level, respect deities, and feel grateful for deities.

45. Islam is a kind of culture of order, totally colliding with Western liberal cultures

3 June 2015

Belonging to nomadic tribes, Arabs live in a poor environment where they lack living resources. The Koran was given by Allah to adjust people's behaviour and help to establish the social order for Muslims.

The Koran involves the knowledge of how people should behave from the start to the end. It teaches people how to eat and dress as well as the rules of weddings and funerals. Those rules are terribly strict, stipulating that the hands of thieves will be cut off and people committing adultery will be stoned to death.

In those areas terribly lacking resources, robbers will become rampant and people will not be able to survive without strict rules. In the Arab region, which is short of water, people can wage large-scale war against each other for water.

The rules should be emphasised in these areas, or the world will be thrown into a mess.

The democratic culture that America presses ahead with is a kind of culture ignoring rules. Although Western countries are as developed as possible, their social management is still very bad. Social riots are intensified by the fact that 2.6 adults are killed by policemen with guns on average every day in America. Therefore, Western cultures are free and totally different from that of Islam.

Basic things like how to eat, dress, go to the bathroom, treat ants, and so on are stipulated in Islam. Therefore, Islamic culture is a kind of culture valuing orders the most.

The Pahlavi dynasty in Iran introduced Western cultures into the country, resulting in the fierce cultural conflict and wholesale Westernisation. Therefore, revolution took place to fight against America and Israel, and advocated unification of the state and the church.

The culture the Islamic region can accept should be a kind of culture that emphasises orders.

Communism is one such culture. Therefore, as the Arab Socialist Rebirth Party advocated communism, they succeeded. Without the interference of Americans in the Middle East, Arab countries would have been unified by communists in this region.

However, the problem is that the Arab Socialist Rebirth Party might not be pure communism; they are closely associated with religions. Communism will no doubt be influenced greatly in the soil of Islam. Pure communism is materialistic while Islam is totally idealistic.

Besides, the communism by Marx is not complete and is not compatible with Islam. Therefore, we have no idea what the Middle East communism wants to stick to and fight against, nor do others. All we know is that they are violent.

Both Marxist theory and Islamic traditions are violent; if they are combined, they are more violent. Therefore, it is the right choice for America to overturn them.

However, from another point, Islam accepted Marxist theory in some degree because they had the same logic and cultural foundation; both of them wish to build a society of order.

While those countries in the Islamic region all fight against America, Taliban, IS, and Iran all hate America. No matter what America has done to them and what help and training that America offered them, the belief in Allah is always so strong that it supports them to fight against America.

It is wrong to think that as people in the Middle East belong to nomadic tribes, they do not know commerce. The Koran has clear rules about how to trade and stipulates that commercial fraud is prohibited. According to the Koran, Americans are good at plunder and bullying. They leave mountains to Kurdish people, deserts to Arabs, and oil to themselves.

Those little treats that Americans give can definitely not change the Middle East and Islam.

From daily-life things to funerals and wedding things, what Americans do is totally objectionable to the Koran and Hadith. Islam totally hates them. This is cultural conflict from deep inside.

Americans not only advocate sexual freedom, breaking up people's families, but also advocate homosexuality and animal sex. They are bad and should be cursed. Nobody will pay attention to them as they want to interfere with Middle East issues. Maybe some kings and chiefs of a tribe will obey them for money, but ordinary people hate them from deep in their hearts. This is cultural conflict.

What the Middle East needs is a kind of more advanced and more inclusive culture, only with which can the peace remain in this region. The state capitalism in China may solve this problem, but democratic and free culture does not fit the Middle East.

46. Mohammed said Muslims should attack each other

7 June 2015

In Hadith, Mohammed said, 'I prayed for three things from my God and Allah promised two of them and refuses the other. I prayed for no ruin in famine and Allah agreed. I prayed for no ruin in flood and Allah agreed. I prayed from no wars among Muslims and Allah did not respond to me.'

In Hadith, Allah said to Mohammed, 'No one can prevent my judgement. I won't let them suffer from famine and ruling of foreign enemies unless they attack each other.'

Muslims are a crowd of people with low quality. They know nothing but fighting. They are born to fight and form a habit of fighting. They are convinced neither through fights nor through killing. No one can cope with them easily, so making Muslims attack each other is the only solution, which dates back to early references in Hadith. It is the idea of Allah, and nobody can change it.

Afghanistan, for example, has fought with the two biggest countries in the world, which failed to settle the problems. Letting them solve their own problems is the only solution. This has been settled by Allah thousands of years ago, and nobody can change it.

So is the Middle East. Baghdadi said, 'Islam is never a peaceful religion.' Although this sentence is against the Koran and Hadith, it tells the truth.

The reasons are that Islam is characterised by strict canon laws and countless rules, including rules on excretion and how to sleep with wives. Those laws and rules completely confine rationality and wisdom of human beings. In general, Islam is an ignorant, savage religion. Stalin once made a similar statement, 'Great minds think alike.'

Allah endows diverse rules and canon laws to diverse nationalities. Islam for Arabs is a set of laws specific for nomadic nationalities with lack of natural resources. For lack of resources, strict laws were made to prevent people from fighting for living resources and to regulate relationships between people.

The reason for the constantly non-peaceful feature of Islam is serious lack of resources. To survive, people have to fight for living materials. It has been a cultural tradition for years. Although productivity was improved and the society became more civilised, people still failed to get rid of this cultural refinement. As I saw, many places in the Middle East are still poor and backward. They fight either in deserts or in slums. Few buildings were seen. Therefore, they still have a long way to go, to achieve modern civilisation.

To ideologically get rid of ignorance, Islam must launch religious reform and spend time and efforts on economic construction.

About sectarian conflicts of Islam, none of the sectarian conflicts is really for protecting certain canon laws. There are only power struggles and interest disputes.

According to Hadith of Mohammed, 'Muslims attack each other. Both the one who killed others and the one killed will go to Jahannam. Why will the one killed go to Jahannam as well? Because he also tried to kill his opponent. Two crowds of people will fight with each other and serious bloodshed will occur, but what two crowds promote tells another story.'

About religions, social scholars once argued that only a few of the wise can establish religions, while most people play the role of spreading these.

Even generations of abbots and elders in temples can only spread religions and can't understand essences of religions, let alone develop religions. After long-time practice, they even go astray and lose themselves.

Buddhism emphasises equality of every person and cherishing lives, which is not false. Some people prefer dogs to humans, under the guise of cherishing animals. It is an instance of losing oneself in religion. It is understandable to fight for the rights of dogs, but before loving dogs, I want to ask, what you have done for poor African people? Thousands of people die in the Middle East every day. What have you done for people in the Middle East? What have you done for the disabled?

They have done nothing to cherish human beings but pretend to talk about rights of dogs. If loving dogs and not loving human beings is not losing oneself, what is losing oneself in religion? Millions of people signed for banning a festival of dog meat. Those people should first attend the wars in Middle East and wipe out IS before talking about a festival of dog meat. Otherwise, one has some problems in one's brain or suffers from mental disorders. In medicine, this kind of people is called paranoia.

The same problem exists in Islam. In the Koran, Allah requires Muslims to do good in more than two hundred places, but you do bad things and only do bad things.

Mohammed said Muslims attack each other and go to Jahannam together. However, Muslims have never ended the slaughters. Evidence was found by Baghdadi—Muslims have done bad things for a long time.

You preachers can only pass on the Koran and Hadith to offspring instead of their essences and original meanings. You do not do what Allah and Mohammed really want you to do. On the contrary, you do what Allah and Mohammed do not want you to do.

Religious people fight each other for power and make disputes instead of guiding people to construct their nations and do good things for a society in order.

Mohammed did not intend to teach you to excrete and dress yourselves, but to build a society in

order, a rich society, and a society approaching paradise, but you are walking towards Jahannam.

When learning classic works, readers need to understand the original intention of authors and develop it, instead of confining themselves to words and forms, since the environment changes and problems we need to solve change. Forms change, but essences, original meanings of authors and goals that the authors want to achieve do not change.

Thousands of years ago, Mohammed said, 'You Shia and Sunni are arguing over and fighting for the same thing, meaningless thing, only to satisfy some people's greed for power.'

47. Personal practice and religion

13 June 2015

Many people practice qigong in China. As qigong does not involve religion and belief, anyone can practice.

When I was in primary school, there were qigong classes. I participated in it for a few days but with little results. However, some students said it was very effective.

All of qigong, the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, the Tao Te Ching, Taoism, traditional Chinese medicine and pharmacy belong to the Chinese prehistoric civilisations granted by God, and personal practice is included too.

I think Buddhism, Hinduism, and yoga should also include personal practice.

Personal practice refers to the physical person developing extraordinary abilities via some awareness activities and sports.

In terms of the function of personal practice, human medicine is still under the primary stage of the functional understanding of the human body, because both modern medicine and anatomy cannot explain qigong and the body's special ability.

To be honest, I have achieved nothing in personal practice and have no special ability either. But many people around me have succeeded and got special abilities. They are the old men doing physical exercises in the park in the morning, one of whom is my relative. A few of them said they practiced qigong and got special abilities—that they had celestial eyes to see invisible things. At first, I did not believe them and had them tested. I asked them to answer some things they were unable to know or let them offer me some help in health. They could answer them correctly, as if they had seen them. Hence, I have to believe that they really have such amazing abilities.

I envy them, but they said as long as people practiced meditation quietly, they could reach this realm. And celestial eyes only belonged to the primary ability, and there were more advanced ones.

My friend recommended to me the Indian short film *Spiritual Reality*, which is an animated movie made by Indians to provide guidance for people to practice.

I want to try it, but maybe I care about too many things, so I cannot make my mind clear. Hence, I cannot do practice and fail to reach the realm they told. I believe many people practicing qigong but failing may meet the same problem.

I consider religion as a very close connection with humans' special abilities.

Many religious leaders process these abilities, or even all of them have some. The average person will convince them as such abilities are so amazing.

Almost all countries have witch doctors in their primitive society and modern society. The witch doctor has special abilities, providing treatment, divination and prediction, and telling fortunes. The witch was the religious leader in the primitive society. They had special abilities to help people solve some difficult problems. So people were convinced by them.

The most obvious example would be China's Falun Gong.

It was only a group practicing qigong at first but then developed into a bizarre mix of religion and politics, which was banned by the Chinese government at last.

Li Hongzhi was a qigong master and got special abilities through practice. Then he passed them on to his disciples to confuse the masses.

Special abilities could have solved problems and relieved pains for others, which should have been a good thing. And these people with special abilities can be very consequential for the average person, very deceptive. If they could do good deeds and benefit society, it would be good. However, if not, there would be catastrophic consequences.

Like Falun Gong, Li Hongzhi harboured evil intentions, with inflated rights consciousness. He was not satisfied with problem solving and physical fitness but intended to launch a religion and be popular. He encouraged the congregation to confront the government, party, socialism, and public order, plotting a rebellion. It caused severe harm to society and was banned by the government finally.

So religion can only do good deeds and ascend souls in the spiritual domain but should never establish political parties and interfere in politics. The religious authority should by no means offend human rights, because the world for religious people is different from that of ordinary people. They are two types of people and have no common language. Their interference in domestic affairs will greatly undermine the social order of ordinary humans.

Islam is very similar with Falun Gong in some ways. So Islam must separate politics from its religion. Or it would be a cult, would do harm to other countries and nations, and must be exterminated. This applies to any religious sect.

Iran and Saudi Arabia are advocating the unification of politics and religion, and they are the axis of evil and the cradle of the devil of Islam, bringing disasters and chaos to the world. All the wars in the Middle East were caused by the ideology of the two countries. Because they are the cradle of the devil, with the strongest power, their countries unite in thought and maintain relatively stable, resulting in melee in other Islamic countries, with civilised nations, or between themselves.

IS and al-Qaeda are the results of Wahhabi's policy-religion unified ideology originating in Saudi Arabia. And the policy-religion unified ideology that's anti-American and anti-Semitic is generated in Iran. They, meanwhile, have their own sectarian conflicts.

Civilised countries of the world should try to separate their politics from their religion so that Islamic issues can be addressed completely. Otherwise, Islam would always be the bane of the world, taking away the peace.

In fact, we can obtain the special skills or abilities through cultivation, which has been designed since God made man. No matter which religion you believe in or if you don't believe in any religion, you can achieve it. It's just about whether you are willing to practice it or not. Please do not blindly believe in religion, as that is just a function of the human body.

Humans have two reactions to special abilities:

1. Convinced, and deeply believe in the master.

2. Never believe in and never admit it. Only believe scalpel and microscope.

This is the dirtiness, ignorance, evil, sordidness, and absurdity of human beings. They may surrender fully, or disregard the greatness of the universe and underestimate the power of God completely.

Knowledge is infinite, and humans' knowledge is only a small part of the universe, while the creator can grasp all the knowledge, so God is science, knowledge, and everything. And man is only one species created by God but is always self-righteous and arrogant.

God loves everyone, but humans need to know their limitations. They have to keep practicing, improving the soul, exploring the universe, and accumulating knowledge, and need to stop being inferior, worshipful, and arrogantly blind.

48. Splitting Middle East countries is a way to solve Islamic problem

15 June 2015

Islamic problem is an ideological problem. Putting ideology before all materials and benefits leads to worldwide Islamic problem.

Even though there are differences between China and the Western world, now China's goal is not to export ideology to other countries but to make profits and money for citizens. This is why Western countries and the world accept China and not act against it. We Chinese just want to earn more money. Everybody loves money, and it will never be wrong to make money.

Islamic problem lies in that Islamic people are totally different from Chinese. Their ideologies have serious conflicts with the world and severe problems. Instead of being ashamed, they even are proud of it. Besides, they put ideology before materials and benefits and promote evil Islamic culture. This is the Islamic problem. They have no common language with civilised countries.

To solve this problem, it is required to separate nations of the Middle East paying more attention to benefits from those paying more attention to ideology, to free people in the Middle East paying more attention to benefits from the devil's control and to distinguish humans from devils by different countries and slowly destroy the devil.

Why do many nations seek independence? It is because they can't get more benefits. After split and independence, they can protect their nation's benefits. This is the root cause of most nations and regions fighting for independence.

We hope that all people in the Middle East focus on benefits, weaken religions, and put benefits before religions. Thus, the Middle East issue can be solved immediately.

In my opinion, the Middle East is now out of order. If those nations that want to seek independence and are capable of doing so should be split up from current countries and build their own countries where everyone protects their own nation's benefits and everyone wants to earn money, people won't go to war for heresy anymore. Then the heresy's power can be controlled and the Middle East issue also can be solved step by step.

God makes human beings speak different languages and divides them into different races and different nations so as to let human beings build different countries.

All nations are allowed to protect their own benefits and establish civilisation in their own territories and countries.

Several nations would not build a unified country unless they can get greater benefits together.

It is normal human thinking for each nation to go to war and fight for national benefits, but it is heretical thinking if the same thing is done for sectarian conflicts and ideology.

Nations believing in Islam, from ancient times till today, have been fighting battles. Therefore, their countries are divided and built on the basis of fighting battles and plundering land resources.

Mighty and ferocious nations bully, plunder, and oppress peaceful nations, making evil forces become stronger and more capable to plunder weak, small, but peaceful nations.

In the chaos of the Middle East, we need to help nations relatively capable and peaceful obtain independence and build their countries, isolate and weaken evil strength, divide and encircle evil forces, and gradually compress the living space and presence of evil forces. By doing so, the Middle East issue can be resolved step by step, and things will go on in a better way there.

Bolivia in South America is a country built mainly by Indian aborigines. It never wins a war, always plundered and bullied by others. Aborigines there even have no port, but they still train their navy in small brooks of their own country and announce to solve problems in a peaceful way until now. If they were in the Middle East, perhaps their bones would be chewed by Islamic hooligans.

49. Western countries should reform Muslim refugees in the ideological aspect

17 June 2015

Recently there are a large number of Muslim refugees in Europe and Asia. They are considered as toxic and hazardous substances, being pushed around. People evade them, afraid of having connections with them and then not being able to push them around again.

But in a sense, they do belong to toxic and hazardous substances. Whoever has connections with them won't receive any good. Instead, they will attract a heap of trouble.

I believe that the Christian church should play a role, reflecting God's great love and mercy and teaching them that they should make clear their wrong ways and return to right roads, thus believing in God and abandoning Islam.

For those refugees who mend their ways and change to believe in God, we can help them to find some way out and some accommodations as well as jobs that can accept them.

For those bigots and stubborn people, they should be repatriated along the same way immediately. We should return them to Libya and Syria to join in the army to fight.

The way that Myanmar handles the Rohingya is correct. God has given the native land, and he will also protect the interests of local people. Migrant groups should respect the interests of local people and shall not win the primary and infringe upon the interests of local people. Especially the Islamic cult—they spread evil thoughts, advocating a large number of children, grabbing land, fighting against the government, and seizing the local life resources, which are all not allowed. It is right for the government to decisively deal with it.

Those who have sympathy for them are obliged to receive them. They should receive these refugees to settle in their countries. It is negotiable for all countries to take out some money. What's key is that too many people talk too much and do few things. There are too many people advertising themselves and no people taking responsibility, and too many people blaming others and no people solving problems.

All people have the ability to accuse others by mouth, pretend to be good men, and pose as saints. What's key is how to deal with the issue and who should bear the responsibility and pay the cost. It is the best approach to make ideological transformation of those Muslim refugees.

We can save a group of people, solving their problems of survival and existence. At the same time, we can have a mind processing with Islam and reinvent them.

Western countries have been helpless against the Islamic ideology. They can only make passive defence and cannot take the initiative to attack.

The refugee problem is a good focus, which is also the thing touching human soul most profoundly, regardless of refugees or non-refugees.

We should make people deeply realise that the Islamic, he who believes in Islam, can only become a refugee and toxic and hazardous substance. Only believing in Christ can he receive salvation. In the key moment, it is Christ who saves them, rather than Allah.

This is business and we have fair choices. There is no coercion. There are no issues related to human rights.

It is one's own choice to choose life or death, choose God or Allah, choose Europe or the Middle East, and choose being refugees or a happy life. We shouldn't blame anyone about our own human rights.

Europe is a place belonging to Europeans. In Europe, the Europeans are the masters and the owner needs to make rules for guests; otherwise, Europeans will ask them to return to their country. This is the truth and also justice.

And there is no overpopulation on earth. On the contrary, it lacks manpower in many places. Old men are building houses in China, and the young are reluctant to do such things. There are also large tracts of land farmed by no one in Russia.

It is wrong that the world doesn't need labour forces anymore. To be detailed, it will never need toxic and hazardous substances. And Islam is such a substance, boycotted by all civilised countries. Islam will be harmlessly disposed.

50. Islamic action and Rwandan genocide

22 June 2015

Rwandan genocide is a very exemplary case in modern history. Islamic action is similar to the Rwandan incident or even worse.

Past years have witnessed several massive killings. The number of deaths in the Khmer Rouge and Congo War overtook Rwandan genocide, but the forms and reasons of these slaughters are different. Only Rwandan genocide is illustrative and demonstrates the relation between civilised society and barbaric society. It is also a failed case where civilised society tried to modify barbaric society. America's human rights theory turned out to be helpless and unsuccessful to a barbaric world. It is a complete failure for them, or we can even say the civilised world was brought down by the barbaric world. It also proved that America's democracy couldn't be applied to savage world, whether to Africa or the Islamic world.

America was very ambitious and cared very much about Africa at the beginning. America is in a vain attempt to influence the world with its democracy, but it met its Waterloo. That Waterloo is not Rwanda but Somalia.

Then American president said, 'America sent thousands of tons of food and drugs, but Somali sent us coffins of dozens of dead soldiers.'

America's suffering in Somali was 'no good deed goes unpunished'. There is no point sticking with this country. It cost millions of taxpayers' money and many lives of innocent American soldiers but ended up with sarcasm from the international community. The situation there didn't get any better. Somali was still in a mess as before. Later, pirates in Somali have been rampant.

With Somali's experience, the international community was reluctant to help, or even no one wanted to talk about it when the Rwanda genocide happened. Actually no one was able to help. A million people were dead within three months in Rwanda.

These things happening in barbaric countries like Somali tell us that America's theory of democracy and human rights is not supplied to barbaric areas. More savage theory and brutal actions should be taken to deal with situations in these places.

Africans are far away from Western civilised society, and they are not close. Shock treatment should be taken to handle this matter. We can totally ignore what is going on out there and turn a blind eye to that. We can pretend nothing happened as long as they don't find trouble in our territory.

However, Islam in the Middle East has something to do with the Western world. For oil and national energy safety, we can't ignore the problem. Instead, we should face up to the problem.

The Islam issue and Africa issue are the same in nature. The Middle East issue and the Somalia and Rwanda issue is also the same in nature, which is an issue of savage and ignorant groups. America's ideology doesn't work for these people.

Compared with Africa, Islam is not only barbaric and foolish, but also evil.

Those who were involved in the Rwanda genocide only considered the interests of their own ethnic groups. As a result, they did a horrible thing. Tutsi is a foreign minority ethnic group but ruled Hutus for a long time. Besides, temptation of the theory of human rights prompted Hutus' hatred and dissatisfaction for Tutsi. The majority provoked large-scale genocide in order to claw back their position and power as masters.

When a minority ethnic group conquers and rules another group forever, it must marry locals to erase racial difference. Purposeful elimination of ethnic diversity will inevitably cause revenge and ethnic cleansing sooner or later because it is against God's will and harms the locals' interest. God protects the interests of local people, and foreign ethnic groups should respect the interests of locals.

Large-scale clashes between ethnic groups are interest-driven. It is not related to any ideology or cult thoughts. It is just like mechanical injury. The injury is very serious in the trauma area, but other people will not be affected. The damage is partial and interests-driven. It is an entry-level fight.

Compared with Africa's conflict, Islam's conflict is evil and monstrous besides barbarism and ignorance. Islam is as foolish and savage as Africa, but it's more evil and brutal. Its problem is more complicated and devastating. What's more, its problem is like virus spreading. It's harmful and poisonous. Plus, its virus is replicating and forced spreading. Believing in Islam will make a follower become a refugee or even poisonous substance. In the end, he will be discarded and punished by God.

It has been twenty years since the outbreak of Rwandan genocide. The population of Rwanda didn't become any smaller. Tutsi and Hutus live their lives normally, which is not bad. Actually human has powerful reproductive capacity. Although millions of people were dead, prosperity was regained after years.

Barbaric and ignorant people only know two things—fist and blood. Truths only lie within the range of artillery.

Democracy and human rights don't make any sense to those barbaric and ignorant ethnic groups. It's like beating a dead horse when you peddle democracy and human rights to them.

You can only communicate with them with the sound made by fist and blood. There is no third language.

Somalia and Rwanda prove that iron and blood are the only way for the civilised world to talk to the barbaric and evil world.

Demons can only understand nonsense when you try to communicate with them. Nonsense is the language spoken by demons. Nonsense is intimidation and threat, which is the only language that demons can understand.

IS and Taliban talk to the civilised world in ways like blasts, killing, and making video of beheading innocent men. They show the world what they did after they claimed responsibility for terrorist attacks because they want to let the world know what they are capable of. This way of communication is very brutal and evil. Demons like them cannot understand human language.

Therefore, when talking to Islamic monsters, Western societies should use monster language; otherwise, they can't understand. It's a waste of time and energy.

As a Chinese saying goes, 'Sometimes it is necessary for a crisis to reach an acute, mortal stage before effective action is taken', or 'Spare the rod and spoil the child'; one can be enlightened and make progress when one has no choice. Only under this situation can one's creation and ambition be motivated. In this way, the Western world is communicating with barbaric, ignorant, and evil people in demons' language. These savage, foolish, and monstrous people can't understand anything and keep their evil qualities.

The Western world has a famous saying that humiliating laggards is helping them regain respect. This is some harsh position because they don't understand human language.

Giving humiliation to laggards, giving threats to savages, and giving lessons to the evil will keep monsters at bay.

Demons and the evil are not stupid. They will consider their interests when facing death threats. Once they understand they will be punished for doing evil things or they will not get any returns by doing monstrous things, they will give up doing evil things.

They want benefits and they don't like punishment. They just can't understand human language, and no one talks to them in demons' language. It is necessary to use military forces to communicate with them. They will quit evil ideas when they face artillery and blood. They will have true redemption and mercy.

The Western world is hypocrisy.

Recently Israel said the Western world and the United Nations are hypocrites, which is completely true. One can only be enlightened and see the truth after one is deeply hurt.

'The Western world and the United Nations are hypocrites' means that America's system of democracy and human rights is also insincere. It also signals the imperfection and flaws of the

system of democracy and human rights. The ideology of democracy and human rights is also defective and imperfect. It can solve some certain problems, but it can't solve all the problems. It is helpless, groundless, or even evil in handling some certain issues.

The 'democracy and human rights' philosophy is a big step forward compared with feudal ideology. It is a very important part of humans' soul, but a whole soul needs to add more parts.

They are helpless, powerless, indifferent, making no efforts, and incapable when faced with Islam issue, Palestine issue, immigration issue, social management, fairness and justice issue, as well as social harmony issue. This is hypocrisy and another evil thing. It is the source of ideology and incompleteness of soul.

Actually, Westerners know that Islam is a cult, an ugly thing that needs to be wiped out, but nobody dares to say so in public. They just can take some secret actions. It should have been a just thing, but they did it like they were stealing. They pretend they are protecting human rights, democracy, and religious freedom when they hate Islam at heart. They can only be big hat, no cattle.

They give room and opportunities to demons; as a result, it seems that demons are righteous. You Westerners are just evil as them. This is actually hypocrisy and another evil.

Westerners' hypocrisy is like shooting a bullet into one's body. They don't operate to take out the bullet but directly stitch up the wound. In the end, the wounded will die or will be left with a wound that can never be cured. It is an eternal pain that is hurt at fixed time.

As for Islam, first of all IS should be destroyed to wipe out those actual demons.

The whole world should work together to ask Islamic countries to make religious reforms and harmless treatment. First, propaganda should be in place. We can wipe them out from ideology and then impose economic sanctions and military threats. Tactics of splitting up and encirclement should be taken to destroy them. We can only communicate with them in a language that they can understand. We should figure out ways to keep them at bay and reform Islam and make harmless treatment.

Splitting up and encirclement is very effective. This way can let the ethnic groups found their own country. People will focus on life quality after their country is founded. They will shift their attention to economic development instead of evil ideology.

We say to Islam, 'You are demons. We keep you at bay.'

We shouldn't say, 'We protect religious freedom. We protect your human rights, and on the other hand, we bribe the snakes to ask them to send the demons away.' It's self-contradictory.

The main problem is the Westerners talk to demons in a very girly way, but demons can't

understand. Talking to them should use tough language.

We can do it if we want to. They key point is we should talk to them in a way they can understand.

51. IS are formed because of the incompleteness of revolution to cult devil

24 June 2015

IS are formed because of the incompleteness of revolution to cult devil by the United States and the capitalist regime.

The backbones of the IS and al-Qaeda groups are people released from the prisons of the United States and pro-American regimes.

It is quite simple. The reason why these people were put into prison is that the Americans know they are terrorists.

Then why were they released? The reason is the incompleteness of capitalist revolution. This is the result you get when you treat the devil with human rights, democracy, and freedom.

The right way to handle the devil is to never let one devil go even though you need to kill a thousand. For the cult leader, you must capture and execute without mercy. These people should never be released and must die in prison.

That's why we say the devil is cultured and created by the United States.

The devil is the product of democracy. The problem can only be solved when these people are imprisoned for life or executed in secret. However, what the United States does is put them in jail, beat them up, and then release them. This is where the democracy shows its foolishness and evilness.

Execution is the only way to handle the cult evil. Let them reunite with others in the other world.

The cult devil will never give up their belief only because you beat them up. Violent beating and custody will only increase their evilness and revenge.

For the prisoners, you must make sure that they have no revenge desire or any harm to the society before you release them. Obviously, the released prisoners in the Middle East could only be more harmful to the society. They have not been educated. On the contrary, some Islamic devils learn more extreme thoughts and terrorist means in prison. For them, the prison has become devil training class, devil training camp, and devil university. The released prisoners are those who graduated from this devil university.

Holding these cult devils requires a lot of manpower, material resources, and financial resources. However, execution is the simplest thing to do.

Years ago, the Western countries blamed others to blow up the cult. Do you see the nature of the cult now? They cannot be talked to, held, or beaten to be good. There is no other way except death. They are pure poisonous and harmful substances. There is no other way except cleaning up.

Therefore, almost all successful revolution involves cleaning up, which is necessary. The problem will never be solved if some people are still alive. They will only make it worse. An old saying in China goes, 'One must be thorough in exterminating an evil.'

For civilised people, we can talk and act with civilisation. But for the devil, we must talk and act in the devil way. This is necessary to maintain the justice.

From a certain perspective, capitalism means progress and civilisation. However, when it shows helplessness and weakness in the face of the devil, it means foolishness, ignorance, and filth. It is another kind of evil, without any justice.

As the once most powerful force in the Middle East, Iraq had many battle-hardened soldiers. The regime was overthrown after being beaten by the high-tech war with the United States. However, the effective strength was not damaged by the high-tech war. Those trained soldiers were still in Iraq. At the time, the new Iraqi government was aware of the serious threat from these soldiers. They knew these soldiers were troublemakers with serious threat. But what they could do was put them into prison, which led to the situation today. If they handled it with Stalinist cleaning, we would not see the situation today. Sometimes, cleaning is for the greater good. It is necessary.

Terrorists in Iraq are all remnants of Saddam Hussein. Unlike the private arm of Taliban, they are well-trained professional fighters. The fighting capacity and threatening are not quite the same.

The US troops in Iraq are facing more risks than those in Afghanistan. This may be the reason why the Western countries would rather implement air attack instead of garrison. They would face a large risk, not to mention it is an irregular war, without knowing where the enemy is.

Anyway, IS are terrorists, so they can only obtain some primary and conventional weapons. Iraq and Syria wars both belong to primary consumption wars. Terrorists have no access to advanced and sophisticated weapons. On the contrary, the Iraqi government is a legitimate government, which is supported by many large countries. With all the advanced weapons, it is a matter of time for them to win the war.

The efforts and struggle of the terrorists will surely be in vain. More efforts only lead to more risks. The harder you fight, the more advanced weapons the Iraqi government will get. Greater lethality of the government will make your living space less and less. Therefore, you are destined to be the cannon fodder. Nobody can save you if God wants you to die. The only way for you is to surrender.

Problems of Democracy

1. Democracy lacks organisation and effectiveness. The cult devil can only be handled with fighting and killing, but not compromise.

2. The revolution is not complete. There is something wrong with the theoretical logic. The devil cannot be handled in this way.

The Way to Define the Devil

1. The behaviour with interests as the main appealing point belongs to human behaviour. Therefore, behaviour including theft, sex crime, corruption, territorial disputes, class struggle, and racial conflict needs appropriate treatment like negotiation, compromise, and appropriate punishment.

2. The behaviour with ideology as the main appealing point belongs to devil behaviour. For them, the ideology is higher than interest. Therefore, the cult behaviour, including religious terrorism, drug trafficking, drug using, and other abnormal behaviour, must be handled decisively. They must be resolutely beaten, suppressed, eliminated using all means, without any compromise.

52. Iran condemns terrorist attack that's not meaningful

28 June 2015

Iran condemned the terrorist attack of IS several times.

Iran said the terrorist attack doesn't meet Islamism and the Koran and the IS is an apostate.

To be frank, there is no actual meaning if it's said by Iran.

Communal conflicts originally existed between the Shia and Sunni. Your opposite two parties accuse each other, which is very common and it's the habitual trick and means of communal conflict. It can't explain that Shia represents the just and Sunni represents the evil.

Both of you read the same Koran, you are children who were borne by the same mother. You are people who are in the same boat; we can't say that you are just and they are evil.

The only difference between Shia and Sunni is that you read the first paragraph of Koran and they read the second paragraph of the Koran.

They hold the knife by the left hand while you hold it by the right hand. The nature is the same and there is not any difference. One Koran and the same knife.

You think that you are clean by catching the disadvantages of Sunni.

Women were forbidden to watch a volleyball match in the previous two days because one of you said that the blooding conflict may occur. Blooding exists in watching of the volleyball match, and it also occurs in sunbathing. Is there any difference? There is no difference at the instinct; both of them are the extremism of Islam and evil.

Chinese people call it the pot calling the kettle black.

The person who runs away for 50 metres in the battlefield calls the one who runs away for 100 metres a deserter.

Actually, he doesn't understand that the one who runs away for 100 metres is called deserter and will be laughed at; he who runs away for 50 metres will also be called a deserter and will be laughed at. The one who runs away for 50 metres is not qualified to laugh at the one who runs away for 100 metres. Both of them are fellow sufferers.

To condemn others means to condemn themselves. The Sunnite must come out for declaration and let Wahhabi declare. The whole world knows that Wahhabi and Sunnite wear the same trousers as the IS. Wahhabi and Sunnite support the IS at the back and provide funds and

weapons for them. They endanger the world's safety, and they are the enemies of the whole world.

Wahhabi and Sunnite come out for declaration and apologise to the world. Draw a clear distinction with the IS and dispatch soldiers to exterminate the IS. It's a little significant to clean the door.

Shia and Sunni are conflict religion; you condemn the IS, which only explains that you are in the communal conflict again. Your Hezbollah, the Shia dispatches militia to attack IS; the participation in the region conflict is also to attack the Sunni. It's also the communal conflict, which can't explain that Islamism is apologising for the world.

A basic problem of Islam is that issues exist in the Koran and Hadith; the old laws are not suitable for the modern civilisation. No absolute good or bad man exists in what religion of Islam. The comprehensive revolution and innocent treatment must be carried out, or it will cause constant threat for the world, which is called heresy.

For the revolution of Islam, only the concept of Tawhid must be kept; the rest of these shall be completely checked again, all of which can be overturned, and the laws will be remade according to the modern laws of other countries.

53. According to Hadith, the IS will be destroyed three months later

1 July 2015

According to the Hadith, 'We ask the messenger of Allah, how long Dajjal can live on the earth? Mohammed says, "Forty days, with one day represents a year, one day represents a month, and one day represents a week, the rest of the time will be as usual."'

Then according to such statement made by Mohammed, the IS will survive on the earth for one year and seventy-four days. The IS, a bandit gang, announced its establishment on June 29 of last year. Then the country should last for another seventy-four days before it is destroyed as per such statement. I estimate that there is less than three months before it is destroyed.

In my view, except for the bomb truck, which can be used to bluff some other people, the IS has nothing that can be used to show off. It can't be more shameful for a country with such little power but being so aggressive in the world.

The IS is a heresy, and nobody will really help them. Therefore, they can only resort to the way of committing suicide to boost their courage. It is just like one goes past the graveyard while whistling.

Israel said that by dispatching a modern army and with continuous attacking, soon the IS will be defeated, which is absolutely right, in my opinion.

How many heavy weapons and bomb trucks do you still have? Just all drive out and blow them up. Otherwise you are being so sissy and are wasting our time.

54. Germany surrendered to the Islamic

2 July 2015

I read the news today that a German school required students not to dress in cool clothing because there was an Islamic camp nearby. The cool clothing does not comply with the Islamic dressing standards and may be at risk of terrorist attack.

A few days ago, a German citizen was killed on a Tunisian beach, so the Germans turned pale at the mere mention of IS. Out of the fear of Islamic refugees, they had to change their clothing habits according to the requirements of Islam and succumb to the Islamic law of a heretical organisation.

This is the success of IS's terrorist attacks, and they culturally seized a German school.

Germany is no longer the Germany in World War II. Germanic people have to succumb in the face of Islam. To me, they even lost the basic sense of national pride and have little hope.

Germany should give each refugee a Bible, require them to eat pork, and make bio-safety disposal; otherwise, expel them rather than wear clothes they dislike to prevent terrorist attack.

This is to put the incidental before the fundamental.

55. Mohammed says that the scientific communism unifies the world

2 July 2015

Why are the Muslims so crazy? I think the reason is that Mohammed repeatedly emphasises in the Hadith that Allah wants Islam to destroy all the other religions to unify the world.

This sentence of Mohammed is correct, but it can't be comprehended literally, nor understood like the present understanding of Islam.

God created Islam not to instruct the Muslims how to shit or make love, but to build an orderly society in the mortal world.

The fundamental aim of Islam is to build an orderly society in the mortal world.

Among various religions, Christianity is not an orderly society, and God does not have it stress on discipline; neither is the social order mentioned in Buddhism.

Only Islam advocates how to standardise the dribs and drabs of life, whether in the Koran or Hadith, from worship to God to serving a family, food and clothing, war and penalty, as well as filial obedience to parents and so on, everything involved.

The Bible seems like a narration that records and narrates the behaviour of God, while the Koran and Hadith are more like an ancient code to standardise varieties of behaviour of people.

The Tao Te Ching tells people that the situation is changing ceaselessly and the operation order, laws, and principles of the society also need to be changed constantly, but only the target won't be changed.

The writing purpose of the Buddhist texts is to have mankind do good deeds and accumulate virtues as well as benefit people and the world.

The Bible demonstrates the ability of God and was written to have mankind reverence the divinity and not do whatever they want.

The Koran standardises the behaviour of mankind and was written to regulate the manners and behaviour of mankind and ask them to build an orderly society.

Meanwhile, it is also mentioned in the Bible and the Koran that people should do good deeds. Because of the limited comprehension ability of mankind, they can only understand one aspect of the oracle, but not all the intentions of the divinity.

Therefore, the belief of the Chinese people who believe in the Tao Te Ching is changing all the

time. They have the highest intelligence quotient, but never say the truth. However, their aim is unchanged, which is to earn money and build a reasonable social order.

The Western people who believe in the Bible have no code of conduct, nor do they stress on morals but only pursue their maximum benefit and therefore infringe others' benefit, which is very disgusting to Muslims, who pay the most attention to order.

The Muslims who believe in the Koran pay the most attention to order, but the ancient laws become more and more conflicted with the modern civilisation. They have been becoming more and more contradictory and imbalanced. Why should we get the least although we are most obedient to God and most observe the order? Therefore, they rebel, they hate the world civilisation, and they want to destroy the world order and the civilisation. With the most imbalanced mentality, they are most repressed and have the strongest revenge mind, hatred, and ambivalence.

The correct understanding of Mohammed's words that Islam unifies the world is that the orderly society unifies the world. What God left to Islam is the classic of the orderly world, so 'Islam unifies the world', said by Mohammed, means the orderly society unifies the world but definitely not like the present understanding of Muslims that the heretical Islam unifies the world.

Now, the Islamic world is a kind of orderly society, but not that expected by God.

The kingdom of God is a kind of orderly society but definitely not that as understood by Islam presently, and it is similar to scientific socialism and state capitalism like in China. Though China still has many drawbacks, the basic framework is like that, where the elite class of the society constitutes the political party who controls the army, controls the resources of God, leads the public, establishes the harmonious society, and builds the orderly society as expected by God.

The orderly society God hopes for is with wealthy and high-level life, orderliness, harmony, wisdom, kindness, satisfaction, fairness and justice, proper human rights, equality, and freedom.

Just look at the present Islamic world; none of the above standards are conformed to. As you are forced to wear the shoes you wore when you were children, I can only say that it is a heresy. Judging from the standard of the kingdom of God, it is exactly a heresy. The orderly society is not built as what you do and you are just building an evil society.

You are not esteeming or adding splendour to Allah but are trying every means to bring shame on and desecrate Allah. Even if Allah is here today, he would declare that you are a heretic when he sees what you do. You are just doing evil things in the name of Allah, and you are displeasing Allah.

Each book has its writing purpose, but most of people don't understand what the writers really want to express or what purpose they want to achieve, and they can only rigidly adhere to the literal meaning while definitely not understanding the writing purpose of the writers.

You, Islam, are exactly the case. You should try to understand Allah and the writing purpose of the Koran but not the superficial form. If Islam can really step on the right track, it will develop very fast like China, because this is the greatest characteristic of the orderly society.

You Muslims should change to believe in the state capitalism or scientific socialism of China, because this is the will of Allah. An example is made for you, and you only need to refer to it to implement. Only in this way can Islam unify the world and the prediction of Mohammed come true.

56. The problem of Europe: democracy has encouraged Islamic heresy

9 July 2015

Many current problems in Europe are related to Islam.

Immigrants in Europe today are mainly those Islamic immigrants from Albania and Africa; the disasters they have brought to Europe include the following:

1. Immigrants grab the job opportunities, and it increases the unemployment rate.

2. Immigrants have taken much social welfare, which has decreased the living quality of the indigenous people.

3. Immigrants have damaged the European culture, and consequently, the latter will be replaced by Islamic heresy.

4. Immigrants have brought a number of social security problems which are related to low-quality people, including murder, violence, whoring, drug trafficking, etc.

The Western countries waged the Yugoslavian war, thus giving a blow to Russia's impact on the Balkan region. Apart from all the happiness this has brought to those European people, what they have in hand now is a Pandora's box.

That devil is the Islamic heresy in Yugoslavia. Albanians in Kosovo are the Islamic devil. Originally, those devils were problems of Soviet Union, Russia, Yugoslavia, and Serbia respectively. Now they have become the problems of Europe.

Socialism can control those devils. Islam had been totally defeated when they encountered Soviet Union, Russia, or Yugoslavia. Socialism can demand that they eat pork and can announce that they are heresy. Through wars, Westerners have brought this devil home. In democratic countries, this devil is acting like a malignant tumour eroding body cells. In European Union's malignant expansion, Westerners felt the bitterness but had to suffer in silence. It was like swallowing a tooth that has been knocked off, which is just called retribution.

The values and democracy being advocated by the US has fatal flaws and loopholes. They will fail completely, and there is no way to save it when they meet the heresy.

The values and democracy being advocated by the US protect the heresy and are the best culture medium for heresy as they help the mass propagation of bacteria, viruses and cancer cells with the large amount of funds, perfect social environment, and considerable social resources they have provided. As a result, the original value system and social order are damaged by those bacteria, viruses, and cancer cells without being punished at all.

Islamic heresy shares no values with the values of the Western world. Despite of this, they still want to propagate a large population, thereby plundering and encroaching considerable social resources. The propagated large population is also the best tool that can be used to kidnap democracy, politics, and social management and to spread cancer cells.

Human beings are always walking away from a war but soon stepping into another one, from a dilemma to another dilemma, the cause of which originates from incomplete ideology and soul.

The capacity of the brains of human beings appears to be too low; as a result, once one ideology is installed, the other one must be removed.

If multiple ideologies are installed together, they will conflict with each other and then crash. It is just like we ask Muslims to eat pork, they will crash immediately. Soon enough, this 'computer' works abnormally and shows weird behaviour. If we discuss communism with the Westerners, they will also act strangely and crash immediately.

I think those ideologies are merely some tools. Just like different tools may be used to deal with different matters. There is nothing conflicting between them.

Regardless of what ideology we have, all of them are tools used to serve for the people's interests, bringing benefits to the people so that they can live better and get rich. Whatever satisfies this purpose is a good and useful ideology. Otherwise, it is rubbish. We need to change an ideology and theory to deal with it. Also, different ideology and logical thinking may be used to deal with different matters. Different principles may be used in view of different people or different matters. Use whatever ideology that works; the one who does so can be called a master. Otherwise, human beings are kidnapped slaves from an ideological perspective.

Ideology shall serve for human beings. It is not important what method is being used; what matters is the purpose, what kind of purpose we need to achieve.

Our purpose is to maximise the interests of people. People, whether black or white, poor or rich, need benefits, maximum protection, fairness and justice, and bills.

Seeking benefits is the most fundamental logic of human beings, who know to fight for it even from breastfeeding at birth. This is one of the acts of mankind.

In this sense, all ideology and cultural thoughts are created so that people can be 'breastfed' better and can seek more benefits in a better way. One is the purpose, while the other is the method or tool. We cannot reverse them; otherwise, it is heresy.

Ideology is a tool that is used to serve for the people, rather than letting people serve for ideology. People are by no means the tools used for ideological struggle. This is a question that can boil down to who is the master of whom and who serves for whom.

Mankind thinks they are the wisest of all creatures. However, it turns out they are nothing but some monkeys or toys that are being played with. Quite ignorant and quite evil.

Various ideologies are simply logic or sets of excuses. These sets of excuses can be truth in some places at some times and lies or mistakes in other places at other times. They are not something sacred and unchangeable. Today you can believe this, tomorrow you can believe that. Today you can believe communism, tomorrow you can believe capitalism. Today you can believe Islam, tomorrow you can believe Christianity, and then the day after tomorrow, you can change to believe Buddhism. These are quite normal.

We are coping with the logic when we are handling an issue. The opposing party maintains a kind of logic. The reason we want to handle it is that the other party's logic affects our work and does harm to us. Thus we need to conquer them. The theory of five elements that are mutually promoting and restricting each other even dates back to ancient China. The five elements are also about logic. Some logic may help the opposing party, while some logic may restrain the opposing party. Our logic must conquer the logic of the opposing party when handling an issue; only in this way can we be, or at least have the chance to be, successful. If it is bound to be a failure in terms of the logic, we will be restrained by the opposing party. As a result, it is bound to be a failure regardless of doing or not doing so. Because our opponents are different, the problems to be handled by us vary, and the logic of opposing party is different. We then need to take different logic to cope with the diversified logic we may face so as to ensure that we can handle the matter well, achieve success, or achieve the expected results.

Well, this logic is called ideology.

The logic of the US works in some places at some times, but becomes ineffective if it is used to fight against the heresy or applied in poverty area. Stalin's logic has good effect in fighting against heresy but becomes ineffective if it is applied in some other issues. Buddhism has good effect in the eyes of those dog lovers but becomes quite ineffective as far as the economic construction of Nepal is concerned. Marxism is effective in the aspect of social management but is ineffective in terms of the economic construction.

The same applies to the crackdown on drug dealers by Mexico: 2 billion in military expenditure vs. 20 billion in revenue received from selling drugs. It is a failure even in logic; therefore, it cannot be successful. Then why has the logic of 2 billion vs. 20 billion come into being? The answer is that it is rooted in the logic contradiction found in the democratic political system under Mexican capitalism.

America and the West fail to suppress Islam because the democratic political system, by its logic, is aiding and abetting the spread and development of Islamic heresy. Human rights system, by its logic, will fail to suppress the barbaric propagation, malicious and widespread dissemination, and malicious encroachment of social resources around by low-quality population. The freedom of religious belief under human rights system, by its logic, has abetted and protected the dissemination and development of Islamic heresy. Moreover, the logic of Islam shares nothing in

common with the logic of the West. They are completely conflicting with each other.

If mankind themselves cannot control logic and ideology, then it is inevitable to have conflicts, because no logic can restrain all the other logic or completely conquer all the other logic. All things on earth are mutually promoting and restricting each other; so is the ideology. In this sense, only by regarding ideology as a tool and using it flexibly can we remain invincible; otherwise, we are doomed to fail.

Ideology works for people, not the other way around. If you think that is incredible or can't figure it out, well, that only indicates that you are ignorant, dirty, evil, and should be eliminated, since you cannot see through the essence of all things and the origin of the world.

What does mankind want and what should they insist on? These remain the questions even they themselves cannot figure out. Therefore they are always being manipulated and being fooled.

As a matter of fact, those who can invent ideologies are some elites who are more advanced than human beings and keep manipulating the development of human society. All human beings have lost their identities and have become chess pieces and gladiators, providing nothing but entertainment for other people.

Only by using all ideologies as tools can we achieve our own purpose—people can become the real masters of human society and can have self-awareness and targets of their own.

Because in the past, people were ignorant, higher-level elites were controlling their ideologies and acts. Now the productivity has been developed. It is the time for people to control their ideology by themselves instead of being controlled. This is a sublimation of spirit, from incomplete one to a complete one, and from ideology being controlled by other people to the control of one's own ideology. People must be woken up and stopped from being fooled. People are God's offspring. God will be angry seeing you always being fooled by other people. You need to make progress.

Based on needs of their own and through scientific planning, people can get rid of such control by using various ideologies as tools, thereby becoming the real masters of human society.

If you think there are conflicts and contradictions, it only indicates that your memory is too small and can't run any complicated program. You should be eliminated.

To fight against Islam, we must adopt communism, management of social science, and Stalinism. Just let them eat pork, and we have plenty of methods that can be used to make it hard for them. In fact, when Stalin forced Muslims to eat pork in those years, they all ate. Let them raise pigs; they all did so. Let them produce pork products; they all produced. It is not a big deal at all. We should take these practices to deal with those rogues, since they all obey those practices of Stalin. Islam rogues only become obedient at the sight of Stalin. Only Stalinism is the great saviour of people and a strong soldier who protects people and fights against the devils.

So the current Islam issue is completely a by-product produced by the Americans' promotion of democracy. It is a toxic and harmful substance fostered by the democratic system. In light of the scourge made to this world by Islam in today's society, they are all devils appeased by democracy.

Because they chose to be ignorant and evil and represent a heresy, we ought to fight heresy in this way so as to manifest the justice. Otherwise, we cannot protect our civilisation and those things that are true, good, and beautiful.

This is also the will of God.

57. Iran should send the ground forces to exterminate the IS in Iraq and Syria

14 July 2015

It's better to solve the Islamic issues within Islam.

In my view, Iran is the most suitable nation to immediately exterminate the IS.

1. Iran is their neighbour with a wide bordering land and has convenient manpower and resources transportation, so it can send a large number of ground forces to suppress the bandits. Moreover, Iran is a major military power in the Middle East, and bandit suppression is just a trifle. Even Africa has troops of neighbouring countries to help suppress bandits. Likewise, the Middle East also needs mutual help.

2. The neighbouring countries of Syria and Iraq include Turkey and Saudi Arabia, who are Wahhabi, the same as the IS. A lot of people in these countries overtly and covertly supported the IS by providing troops, weapons, and funds. Although they go against the IS on the surface, they are actually tangled and contradictory at heart.

3. IS is the enemy of the world, so your Persian nation should bear the responsibility to remove the evil and save the world. More importantly, you need to show the Westerners that Iranians can easily solve the problem they cannot handle. To cooperate with the West to exterminate the IS can increase the mutual trust with the West.

4. Iran has criticised Wahhabi as the apostate, but words are useless; there must be action. Iran should punish the traitor for Allah, which is jihad and related to the honour of Islam.

5. Wahhabi is heresy beyond doubt, but Persians are too impulsive and always made strategic mistakes, such as anti-Semitism, anti-Americanism, which brought grave danger and disaster to the people without any real benefit. Iran should learn from the shrewd Saudi Arabia to rope in the United States and the West. In fact, Wahhabi is the biggest devil. The worst in the world is Wahhabi heresy created by Saudi Arabia which should be eradicated. Iran just made strategic mistakes and required correction.

58. Taliban's Omar is also one Mohammed calls Dajjal

3 August 2015

Omar was certified by Taliban as having died two years ago.

What concerns me is that, same as Baghdadi, Omar was also left with one good eye only. Better than the former, who also had a lame leg, Omar's legs remained intact. Their blind eyes and lame legs were all due to the wounds left by the wars.

Mohammed had made it clear in the Hadith that the agents of Allah would be protected by Allah and would never be wounded.

As the leaders of Islamic organisations, they had blind eyes and lame legs, which clearly showed that they were not the agents of Allah. They were not protected by Allah and should never represent Allah to preach Islamism in the world. Allah hated them. Therefore, Taliban and the IS are both heresy and are not recognised and protected by Allah. And they shall dissolve immediately.

Omar and Baghdadi were both Dajjal recorded in Hadith by Mohammed. They were the biggest concern of Mohammed. Their rising represents the termination of Islamism. Their appearance means the force of the Koran is terminated, and the Koran could no longer guide Muslims and give Muslims prosperity. What is left includes only shames and disasters.

All the religions have gone through thousands of years till now and have instructed on people's living over the years, which have all come to the ending period.

I believe that all the religious culture and prehistoric civilisation were the implication and truth that God left for people. However, as thousands of years have passed, the ways to practice the implication and truth at that time have been no longer adapted to the modern society and modern civilisation.

What we need to do is to retain the implication and truth from God but amend the specific approaches to reaching the truth.

To make it simple, it means that we should completely change course and modify the specific method while not changing the goals.

The fundamentalism of religion intended to forcibly restrict modern people with ancient practice and doctrine, which was the typical behaviour of Procrustes.

What Mohammed was worried about most was the occurrence of behaviour of Procrustes. It is heresy which uses ancient practice and doctrine to forcibly restrict modern people. It is a must to

wipe out the heresy.

However, the religious people of Islam have not realised the problem by now.

Iran and Hezbollah claimed that IS is renegade. That is incorrect. All the practices conducted by IS could be traced back to the Koran and the Hadith. Therefore, it is untenable to criticise IS and the fundamentalism.

What actually should be done is to reverse the whole Islamic method and doctrine, i.e. the whole Islamic law and doctrine, the practice and the course.

God hopes that people could reserve the goals, but to re-enact the course and the specific practice.

The Islam should only reserve the doctrine of Tawhid and orderly society. Other doctrines as a whole should be reversed.

Buddhism only needs to preserve the concept of redeeming and helping people, and the rest of the doctrine should all be reversed, such as non-killing, loving the dogs. These are nonsense and need to be reversed. It is heresy if not reversed.

The Tao Te Ching, the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, and other Chinese ancient culture are also the implication and truth of God, which are regarded as system theory and holistic view.

All types of truth from God are not contradictory. People should digest the truths and use them flexibly in accordance with the actual situation.

As people are benighted and have limitations in developing intelligence, thinking ability, and operational capability, people cannot receive all the implications and truths from God. Just like blind men touching an elephant, everyone focuses on one aspect but denies the others and fights with others uselessly.

59. Islam has now developed into an evil religion and needs to be banned immediately on a global scale

18 August 2015

Bombing targeting at Chinese tourists occurred in Thailand today.

It is obvious that it was conducted by Islamic heresy. They used to target Westerners, but this time at the Chinese. In my opinion, China should dispatch troops to Middle East and join the battle.

Chinese people always stay domestically, hide their capacities, and bide their time, with a belief that it will help pursue good fortune, avoid disaster, and drift along. There are strict domestic managements in China. It is impossible for foreign terrorists to start an attack in the territory of China. However, it is easy to kill Chinese people abroad.

A showdown between Chinese people and Islam is unavoidable. I think that China should act proactively and declare war on Islamic heresy, to join the multinational forces to exterminate IS in Middle East, to participate actively in the global war on terror. The global war on terror is to fight against the Islamic heresy. The terrorists around the world are all the ones who believe in Islamic heresy, with the ones in Thailand bombing as no exception.

Islam is the axis of heresy and has the nature of a rogue.

Islam without killing is like a tumour in the latency period, and starting to kill is like the tumour spreading all over the world. It is not easy to find a kind Islam.

Islam should be declared as heresy immediately and all the masjids and all copies of the Koran should be destroyed. Islam has developed into heresy and needs to be exterminated.

Here's why:

1. Islam has never made any contribution to the modern civilisation, made any invention and innovation, or created any universally recognised culture, art, and literary work.

2. Muslims give birth uncontrollably and expand their territory in all directions to invade and occupy other nations' land and plunder living resources all around the world. They are parasites on the modern civilisation.

3. All the terror attacks and terrorisms in the whole world have something to do with Islam. So Islam is the axis of evil and the cradle of devils in the contemporary era.

4. Omar, the leader of Taliban, is one-eyed, and Baghdadi, the leader of the IS, is crippled. They represent a religion that is already not recognised and sheltered by Allah. According to the record in prophetic Hadith by Mohammed, they are Dajjal. They are the evilest demons and need to be eradicated.

5. All the religions entered the dharma ending age in 2012. The end of the world would not come in 2012, but all the religions did lose their supernatural power in that year. The power that originally could prosper, bless, and protect the believers and humans disappeared completely. This power faded away with time going by and disappeared completely in 2012. The previous religious laws can only bring disasters, terrors, and disgraces to mankind if still used today. Islam is the most obvious example and is already an out-and-out heretic sect.

6. Islam wasn't a peaceful religion at all from the ancient times. It maintained its evil rule based on plunder, slaughter, tyranny, and ignorance. Plunder, slaughter, tyranny, and ignorance could play a role in unifying thoughts and adjusting interpersonal relationships in the Jahiliyyah. But modern humans have ushered in the era of civilisation, so if plunder, slaughter, tyranny, and ignorance are still used to intimidate and dupe the people, the civilised society will never accept it, and God will never allow it. So Islam, a cult, must be banned resolutely.

7. The contemporary Islamic world mainly refers to the oil-producing countries in the Middle East, such as Saudi Arabia, Iran, and some other countries, which maintain plunder, slaughter, tyranny, and ignorance, dependent on the petroleum resources created by God. Moreover, they support the dissemination of the heretic Islam with money and weapons. The Islamic gangsters would not be so rampant if there weren't petroleum resources and the oil-producing countries didn't instigate or support them secretly. They would be nothing but filthy mice and cockroaches without financial support or weapon support. What's more, these oil resources and wealth were created by God, absolutely not by the evil religion Islam. They can do nothing but sell oil. They are parasites on the modern civilisation.

8. Seventy per cent of the global narcotic drugs are grown and produced in the Islamic countries (Afghanistan). They pretend to be devout, and the women wear veils to make themselves look innocent, but in fact, they are more malicious than narcotic drugs inwardly. They want to poison all humanity with drugs. All of them are Dajjal.

9. The Bible says that today's Islam is a heretic sect seriously misled by some false prophets. They have been possessed by the devil and thus need to be exterminated.

10. Islam was born with a purpose to wrest political power and implement theocracy. This is the main ideology and theoretical basis of modern Islamic terrorism.

11. Islam's rules and laws, which are inhuman, severely violate human rights, seriously damage personal freedom, and greatly distort thoughts. Even worse, far from being ashamed of evil, distortion, and abnormality, they glory in them and want to popularise their evil thoughts worldwide. They are the evilest demon in the present world and ought to be eradicated, to avoid

trouble later on.

All the reasons above are real, convincing, and irrefutable.

The year 2012 is not the end of the world. But from religious senses, it is the end of the world as the power of religion has all vanished and religions could no longer lead and protect their believers. If humans could not exalt the soul and raise their conscience at this stage, the end of the world as well as the self-destruction of humans will come soon.

Humans should perfect their soul and abandon the ignorance, dirtiness, and heresy of religion. According to God, humans should extract the true, the good, and the beautiful out of the civilisation of thousands of years. To perfect their own souls, humans will not be destroyed but can be promoted and enter a higher level of consciousness and higher civilised world.

60. That kid who died on the beach is not worth to be sympathised with, even if he came to life, he would still be a suicide bomber

5 September 2015

The kid who died on the beach and his father seemed to attract many people's eyes and sympathy. That would only show the humans' ignorance, dirtiness, and evil.

Because they are Muslim, they read the same book, the Koran.

If the kid woke up, he might shoot the heads of these leaders, head shot, just like the situation in the video. He might get a bomb strapped to himself to make a big bang downtown. He might take the automatic rifle to shoot the people who were basking themselves on the sunny beach.

When he grew up, he would cut the heads of the Western people with a knife and warn them and ask them to surrender to Islam with the native English in front of the camera.

The Muslims who took the guns are just the cancers that spread to the society; the Muslims who did not take the guns are the cancers that have not spread to the society. They are all cancers in essence. It was not only including the adult but also the kid.

The fact has occurred, but the ignorant, evil, and dirty people don't want and refuse to admit; they can't realise it. And this kid's father showed his sorrow in front of the camera.

Do you know his condition in a few years? According to the rules of Islam, he could marry a lot of wives and have a lot of kids.

It is very common for people who underwent the loss of their families and money to feel sad. But according to the logic, that man could have new lovers, marry a lot of beautiful wives, and have a lot of kids. He was just for show in front of the camera for the collection of money from the rich men to let him find new lovers, marry, and have children.

The women and kids were just like a kind of symbol of fortune and sex partners, that's all.

'Have new lovers, marry, and have children' is not an immoral thing; we are human after all.

The Western people were ignorant and imposed their own views on others. But it's their own wishful thinking. They thought everyone should always love his love, forever.

This was a kind of sick and unreasonable performance. People should face the fact. The fact was that the Islam was the devil, the evil, the cancer, the enemy, the suicide bombing, the demolition truck, the automatic rifle shooting, the head cutting.

Islam is divided into Wahhabism and the Shia. Which one of these doesn't want the Western people to die? Which religious sect is good? Which people in the religious sect are nice?

The only difference between them is that some guys pretend to be good men, some guys pretend to be bad men. They are the two sides of the coin, and both believe the Koran and don't have the essential differences; they are the jackals of the same lair.

After 2012, the power of all religions had totally disappeared. The harm to the people brought by the religions was much more than the well-being and protection brought by the religions.

So after 2012, the humans needed to take a new look at all religions. All the unreasonable areas of religions needed to be criticised and cleared.

Islam needs to be cleared firstly. This is God's will, this is Allah's will.

They have not achieved the protection from the deity. The rights and wrongs of Islam should be put on the front and accept the judgment of fairness and justice.

The veil, the black robe, the Koran, Hadith should be judged by the modern moral standards, the modern laws and values.

The religious laws which are not according to the modern moral standards, the modern laws and values need to be abolished.

Otherwise it will be wiped out as heresy.

When the deity came to imply that 2012 was the end of the world a few years ago, the deity showed this point. Before 2012, the deity had showed the disappearance of the power of all religions. According to the principle, the justice, humans should judge the ideologies and the values one more time.

But the ignorant people were afraid of the power and the inveteracy of the forces of evil and compromised on the evil. The terrorism became rampant, the devil in the IS wanted to build a country. It further proved the disappearance of religion power, which caused the devil to become out of control and rampant.

All the religions and ideologies need to accept the judgment of the principle, the justice. The deity and humans need brand-new legislation.

61. Muslims are inherently traitors

11 September 2015

Muslims are inherently traitors, which is said by Stalin and is also a truth. Muslims are loyal to Islamic cults instead of their nations, which is common sense. Till now, Stalin is still attacked and slandered by some people, and this is the fate of telling the truth.

But the 'hypocritical Occidentals', as Israel called them, are completely opposite to this. They all speak nonsense and make some lies and frauds only to seek more interests and votes for themselves without taking the harms to others into consideration.

All those are necessary survivor techniques for these citizens, civil servants, small potatoes, and profiteers.

Why don't the Muslims have faithfulness to their nations?

1. Islamic canons are extremely strict. The severe canons constrain humans' imagination and creativity entirely, which lowers the Muslims' IQ and slows their thinking and reaction abilities. They have poor competitive and survival abilities in society.

2. Sharia strongly advocates having babies, so each family has more than five children averagely, with the features of low level and high covering rate. They ignore the education and living standards of the next generation. The low living quality makes them have inherent mental imbalance and violent tendency, produces dissatisfaction to the society and country, having no faithfulness to the country, and being ungrateful to the society.

3. Islamism advocates violence and treating others brutally, which are clearly recorded in the Koran and Hadith. They don't require legislation at all and any discussion and references. Violence and cruelty are Muslims' law. The dissatisfaction to society, the disloyalty to country, and the all-the-time violent laws make them become inherently traitors.

4. Muslims' dissatisfaction is also embodied in the harsh sharia. They are incompatible with the modern civilisation. Any words and deeds of the civilisation are opposed to their sharia. They are born to hate the civilisation. They are inherently anti-society, anti-civilisation, and anti-country. They are inherently traitors.

This is the reason why the Wahhabi of Islam and the Shia of Iran are seriously against the United States. Only the king of Saudi, the king of Jordan, and the chief of the UAE, and their nobility of Islam like Western countries. They have to use the strict doctrine of Islam to fulfil their vile government. But compared with the doctrine of Islam, they prefer the Western corrupt life and US dollars. The reason why Khamenei is against the United States is that he is not the king and cannot go through the corrupt life and obtain relative benefits as a king. So he chose to be

against the United States.

5. Islamic canons and laws request them to worship five times per day, which belongs to psychological hint. Each day they imply themselves psychologically five times: anti-society, anti-civilisation, anti-country. This kind of psychological hints can resist any influences of civilisation and rationality. They lose all minds, rationalities, and civilisations, and at last they become mobs and traitors.

6. Islamism definitely rules that they can build Islamic country through violence and armed behaviour. This is called theocracy. All the current authorities who don't conform to their canons and denomination will be overthrown by arms.

The important reason why a Muslim is called a natural traitor is that any act performed by the emperors in countries led by Islam is not oriented by the goals of achieving interests for its people, its country, and its nation. The behaviour conducted by the emperors in Islamic countries is all motivated by their purposes of safeguarding the vile government and protecting the interests of the vicious religion.

They put safeguarding their vile government and protecting the interests of their vicious religion in the first place and they tread on and ignore the interest of people, of states, and of nations.

Emperors in Islamic countries often start epic warfare in order to safeguard their vile government and to protect the interests of their vicious religion. Such warfare was also claimed as jihad. These emperors also require dying with seventy-two virgins.

People can be shameless, but they cannot be so shameless to that extent.

European countries should have brainwashing propaganda and compulsory treatments to the Muslims after introducing them into Europe. Guide them to change their religious belief and expel the diehards to their original countries. Remould the good Muslims to humans with normal thinking and distinguished ability and then reintegrate them. Transforming their thinking beliefs is the real resettlement policy.

If the Europeans are remoulded by the Islamic refugees instead of remoulding them, they are taking poisons to suicide.

The world-famous cases of the English executioner John, the American Boston explosion case Dzhokhar Tsarnaev, and Xinjiang undergraduate in Chinese made the Thailand Erawan Shrine explosion—all those are typical acts of treason, which illustrates that Muslims are inherently traitors.

62. Mecca Masjid's being struck by thunderbolt and collapse is Allah's revelation to Muslims

12 September 2015

The Mecca Masjid is the largest mosque in the world, and lightning strike is Allah's common punishment and revelation to evil person.

What Allah approves and loves shall receive asylum and blessing from Allah. What Allah is extremely angry about and disapproves of will be punished.

Allah struck Mecca Masjid by lightning, which led to the death of more than one hundred people; this is the biggest warning on Islam.

Allah is extremely dissatisfied and angry at all the actions of Muslims and Islam. Allah is to ruin Mecca Masjid, ruin the Koran, and ruin Islam.

A mosque is a place where Muslims worship Allah, and mosques of whatever denominations are places for communicating with God. And you Muslims often blow up mosques by yourselves because of sectarian conflicts.

This shows that Islam is hopeless and has much disrespect for Allah.

You did not have to take actions by yourselves this time, and Allah did it by himself and used thunderbolt and death to give you revelation, to express disappointment and anger towards Muslims.

Islam is the most evil, dirty, ignorant, and barbaric religion in the world. It is virtually hated by both man and God and needs to be resolutely wiped out.

You Muslims have been abandoned by Allah.

I think that if Muslims all convert to Christianity, then they may get divine pardon.

63. US-Syria draft failure shows that all Muslims are the same and none of them is good

17 September 2015

Americans were ready to draft in Syria against the IS, but in the end, only a few people were at war.

It's not that the United States failed, but it indicated that all Muslims are extremists, none a good man. The Middle East war needs not to stop. The dead are damned no matter which faction they belong to. It's a just behaviour to let the bad guys attack each other, dying in the war.

The world can't be peaceful until all the bad guys are dead.

The United States tried to recruit moderate opposition in Syria, but there was no participant. And all rushed to Europe to poison the people of Europe and spread the cult of Islam there.

They raped German women, threw away the food the French gave them, tried to establish Muslim communities in occupied German areas, threw the Christians into the sea to be drowned, and transported a large number of guns and ammunition to Europe, which fortunately were intercepted by the Greek customs. Terrorists come to Europe posing as refugees, and they want to reinvent Europe through jihad.

Muslim has a downright rogue nature and is an axis of evil.

Why didn't the father of the drowned child participate in the US moderate opposition against the so-called enemies who caused their suffering? They are not refugees at all, and they fled to Europe just to make more money, live a better life, transform Europe, and bring Islam and terrorism to Europe.

Opinion polls show that 80 per cent of Muslims in the Middle East all support IS, because they are the same with a common ideology and they do not oppose the IS at all.

Europe shelters those moderate opposition forces participating in the US organisations against the IS, hoping to combat evil people to form their own country. They are the very people who need help from civilised nations. Otherwise, they are terrorists, pro-terrorist families, or families that support terrorists. They are the devil and should receive a punishment from God. They should die on the battlefield instead of being sheltered.

Some people said that the failure of US Middle East policy has led to terrorism, which is wrong. The United States did not cause terrorism and Muslims' born terrorists, which is written clearly in the Koran. The terrorist is whoever acts according to the Koran.

The United States is here to save the world, not to bring disaster in the Middle East. If Iraq, Iran, or other Islamic extremist countries had nuclear weapons, that would be the end of the world. America saved the world by avoiding national terrorism, and terrorism is limited to the range of non-governmental militias.

I think North Korea has nuclear weapons, but it was used to frighten people, as small loach can't afford to make big waves. Do you have the ability to do something big to let God see?

This can be seen from the fact that moderate opposition does not exist in the Middle East.

After 2012, the destruction of Islam is permitted by God and Allah, which is the will of God and Allah.

64. The rogues have their own scampish logic

24 September 2015

The logic of the Europeans to accept the refugees is their kindness to help the poor and disadvantaged, and it shows their sympathy on the sufferers; they call this kind of behaviour as humanism.

Just as those dog lovers love their dogs, so they require the rest of the world to love dogs as well. It is very normal that one loves one's pet, but different people have different preferences; some people like cats, some people like dogs, some people like pigs, some people like rats, while some people even like snakes.

However, if you require the rest to have the same emotion to pets as you do, ask everyone else to do the same thing, and even wish they could change their preferences because of you, then it is the thought of heresy and violates the thought of other people's human right, just as if you want to force them to believe in the same religion as you do.

The Muslims force others to believe in Islam, and it is heresy.

So some Europeans have sympathy on the migrants and accept them, but they require everyone to love and accept the refugees, then it forces others to believe in their faith. This belongs to the behaviour of heresy that violates human rights.

1. Some Europeans think accepting the refugees is kind behaviour.

2. Some Germans think accepting the refugees is behaviour to atone for their crime in the Second World War.

In the Second World War, the slaughter of the Jews is not a crime, and it is believed to be the will of God. The Jews didn't follow the doctrine in the Bible and found a nation in Palestine. They indulged in pleasure, plundered the wealth of other nations, and showed no mercy on them. God wanted to punish them, so the Germans were assigned by God to execute the punishment.

Because the Jews are smart, and they started to exploit the other nations when they arrived at the place of other nations, which arouses social contradictions and unfairness, they began to exploit their citizens after founding their own nation in Palestine and allowed the existence of no other nations for peace.

Most social orders in the world are established by the Jews. Although the social economy has developed, social unfairness still exists, and God is not satisfied with it.

3. Some people in Europe think the acceptance of the immigrants can solve the problem of

population shortage and the shortage of labour.

Whatever the Europeans think, the opinions between the Muslim and the European are different.

1. The Muslims don't think the Europeans do things for mercy, but for expiation. The Europeans caused Middle East wars, so they need to atone for their crimes. That's why the Europeans should solve the problem of the refugees, because they owe them and must compensate them.

2. The Muslims think they are not solving the shortage of population in Europe, but because the Europeans have problems in breeding, and their breeding capability is not as strong than the Muslim. The Muslims aim to save the Europeans.

3. Those so-called immigrants are not war refugees but economic immigrants. They went to Europe for gold, not to avoid wars. Thus, they are not escaping from war but looking for jobs, to make money in the area that is most beneficial to them economically. They won't have any more interest in those unhealthy countries. You are worthless in the eyes of the Muslims.

4. The Muslims have the same thoughts as the IS. Except for making money in Europe, another more important mission is jihad. They indicate to occupy Europe by immigrating to Europe, and they take this as the first step to conquer Europe, which could be regarded as another form of jihad. The Muslims occupy, reconstruct, and conquer Europe through the Koran. This is a demon's idea.

The problem of the Westerners is they have lived a comfortable life for such a long time that they cannot understand the thought of the demon, the heresy, and Islam, and they want to control others with their minds wishfully.

Some people even want to impose their visions and impractical thoughts on others. This is a very pathetic, silly, innocent, and evil thought.

If people cannot understand the thought of the demons and don't know where the demons are, it would be impossible for them to conquer the demons.

65. Shia is returning to rationality, while Sunni is pure neuropathy, devil, and heresy

1 October 2015

Judging from recent performance, Iran seems to be returning to rationality. The incumbent president of Iran is engaged in rational works for the interest of Iran and Shia, dealing with problems rationally and practically.

The election of the Iranian president is the result of democracy, that people determine their leader by election. And this is a democratic success.

Democracy is not the best direction and not the worst; this is greatly reflected in Iran.

Of course, it is America's economic sanction that leads Iranians to return to rational thinking, and that makes them start to think over how to choose between the heresy doctrine and the material interests.

To humiliate the cowards is actually helping them regain their self-esteem.

The main problem in Iran is anti-Semitism, anti-Americanism, and theocracy.

Those with habitual thinking would oppose Israel from invading Palestine, while those with logical thinking would habitually be opposed to the Jew.

Because in order to expel Arabs from where they have been living for a long time and to establish a state there, the Jews would definitely do something horrible and inhuman, which would arouse people's habitual opposition.

Therefore, the anti-Semitism is just a kind of habitual thinking and ordinary thinking for Iran, though it made some strategic and directional mistakes, which brought them a disaster.

It is God's will to allow Jews to establish a state in Palestine, and against Israel is actually against God, which would bring about punishments from God.

The United Nations is still raising the Palestinian flag these days. You are not helping the Palestinians but driving them to the wall, making them live under muzzle and gunfire forever.

If you really want to help Palestinians, you should require them to surrender to Israel and help them migrate to other places, as refugees or as immigrants.

Because the land didn't belong to the Palestinians but to Israel, which is so clearly written in the

Bible that no one can change it.

God was going to forgive the Jews and let them return to Palestine to rebuild their state.

Anyone who was opposed to Israel was trying to alter God's will, and the blasphemy would definitely incur punishments from God, including Iran and Shia.

The Israeli-Palestinian conflict is actually the conflict between the Jews and Arabs, while Iran is Persian and has nothing to do with this. You'd better not get yourself in trouble for something totally not related to you, and even offend God.

What you need is just a peaceful conversation between the Israeli and Palestinian. But the problem now is that many totally irrelevant people are pretending to be saviours to fight against God and save the Palestinians in their own way, which would only deepen the contradictions and get them in trouble. You pushed Palestinians to the battlefield, to the volcanic crater, to the muzzle and gunfire, while you are just onlookers making sarcastic comments, which were definitely unable to solve the problem. This is the so-called Western hypocrisy.

This is not only for the Westerner, but also for the world, who are flaunting to be charitable but can never solve the problem.

The Jews had to establish a state in Palestine; otherwise, God would punish them more fiercely than ever before. This is God's will.

Iran should not be blamed in anti-Americanism, because both Shia and Sunni are required to go against America according to the Islamic doctrine.

Those Sunni countries do not go against America because they are all monarchy in which though the people are against America, the kings and chieftains would carry out a pro-American diplomacy for their own benefits and for extravagant and corrupt lives.

The reason why they become pro-American is not the doctrines of Islam but for their luxurious lives. In order to assert dominance, kings and chieftains of these countries take advantage of strict doctrines of Islam to rule their people by trick and intimidation.

They are against democracy, freedom, and humanity such that they have persecuted, oppressed, fooled, and intimidated their people cruelly.

And these kings and chieftains of Islam are clearly who utilised and colluded with America and other Western countries flaunting 'democracy, freedom, and humanity' for petroleum profits. They are the people who were considered as unprincipled and immoral jezebels in the Bible.

Taliban, IS, and other terrorist organisations were supported and cultivated by America to reject the Shia Islam; however, all of these became the firmest and the most stubborn, powerful, and

destructive anti-Americanism organisations force eventually.

There is no any solution to this worldwide disordered situation, because no man is real good all the time. People all do evils for their private interests, ignoring justice and fairness.

It's necessary to go against America in the view of Islamism. Nevertheless, from the perspective of benefits, America did the right things for the best interests of its nation and people, for it has created wealth for American people, which is the grandest beneficence.

Islamism, which has been out of date, should be thoroughly abolished after 2012. This is also God's will.

Muslims have followed Islamism according to the Koran for a thousand years, and they have completed the mission and have shown loyalty to God.

Now that the mission has been completed, it is time to abolish the doctrine. We need a totally new thinking mode and lifestyle. This is also God's will.

So Iran shouldn't be anti-American for Islamism anymore, but for the interest of the nation.

Theocracy, which has been out of date as well, should be abolished.

The Iran Shia have entered a positive direction, while the Sunni is still an out-and-out neuropathy, devil, and heresy.

And for devil and heresy, there is no other way but slaughter, assault, and bombardment.

Thus, we are supposed to ignore the slaughter, assault, and bombardment occurring in the Islam district.

It is eliminating the devils, instead of killing people.

The word 'people' should not be used for Islamites anymore. They are not people but devils.

They have no idea what people's interests, reason, and rationality are, but only heresy doctrine and the devil doctrine, while the only communication way to them is slaughter, assault, and bombardment. They would bow to nothing but blood, skull, and death.

Thus, what Americans and Westerners said about how many people Syria had slaughtered is totally nonsense and irresponsible. There are only terrorists in Syria, but not people, and only the devil in the Middle East.

Syria has never slaughtered people but eliminated devils. All the Muslims cannot be called people but devils, for both adults and children, and there is not any difference between them. For devils,

it has nothing to do with the age. There is no any difference between those with guns and without guns, who are simply different in fighting capacity but totally the same in essence as devils.

Therefore, the war in Middle East couldn't be stopped until all those who should die would die so that the world can be restored peaceful.

Otherwise, as the devils' abilities increase, the science and technology develop, and humans' destructive power grows, our civilisation is bound to be destroyed. Humans will certainly die out if the devils are not eliminated thoroughly, which is only a matter of time.

Do not think that every time you encounter a crisis, there would be a chance for negotiation, as Iran did. It would never occur anymore, and for humans, there is no second chance.

The right and wrong, the gratitude and grudge, all of them should be ended today.

To be devil or human, the choice has to be made now.

66. Syria only has the devil, with no people

24 October 2015

The only way to be defined as a cult is the merciless conflict, brutal struggle, violent bombing, and brutal killing.

The war in Syria is like Assad said: it is a war that does not belong to Syria. Why does it not belong to Syria? Because it is the devil's war. They call it the holy war. In fact, it's a vicious and evil war. It is a war between the devil and the human.

People with human consciousness should support Assad to fight with the devil. They should help Assad give the Islamic devil a clean and spare none, then sit down and talk about the thing of humans.

If the people who fight with Assad are successful, they will wage a bigger war against civilisation and humanity.

The American 9/11 attacks, France Charlie Hebdo event, Thailand's Erawan Shrine, violence case in Kunming railway station, terrorist attack on Tunisia beach, beheading of Western hostages, and wire rods covered with heads.

Muslims do all the above things; Muslims are the devil. They are some of the devils in human skin.

For Muslims, they must not be called people. They are just the devil; they are not human. The devil has no human rights, and the devil is more unable to grasp the political power. So the Islamic regime needs to be overthrown. Let them have secularisation; Islam is the illegal cult.

Earth can be peaceful. The devil can be put into the bottle. Otherwise the earth will be ruled by the devil. The devil is not the people, it cannot speak of democracy. To the devil, except for suppression, slaughter, and the clean-up, there is no other way.

The Assad regime is only the awakened of the evil cult; they want to get rid of the devil's control, which leads to the devil's revenge and kill. The devil wants Syria to return to the devil's control. So the devil gathers the whole world's devils to fight in Syria.

Your children and relatives at home, once they are deluded by the devil, will not listen to your words. They immediately become the devil, to go to Syria to fight and be human bombs.

So many governments have to cancel the passports of the underage. It tells all about it. Normal human beings will not be funded to go to Syria as human bombs. Only the devil has the power to make people instantly become the devil and do something incredible.

If you don’t want your child to become a devil, please support Assad’s army to destroy the devil. Assad did not oppress any of the people; he just eliminates the devil.

Assad is helping God to destroy the devil. Assad and Russia to destroy the devil is God’s will; it is the act of justice. They are serving God. They didn’t kill anyone. They just send the devil to the place where they should go.

67. We should reason with the Islamic heresy before cracking down on it

26 October 2015

Recently some families in Srebrenica are preparing to go to court in Europe.

This is typically ridiculous.

1. The slaughter to Muslims in Bosnia and Herzegovina at that time was against the people but the devil. It was a defence of culture, which is not guilty but meritorious. It was permitted by God.

2. It is unreasonable and illegal for the Western countries and Srebrenica families to judge and charge former leaders of Bosnia and Herzegovina. What they did is ganging up with the devil and helping it to persecute human beings.

3. We should try peaceful means before resorting to force to the Muslim heresy. We should promote theoretical propaganda and criticising first. If we fail, then we can resort to military force to eliminate them. This is a comparatively reasonable method.

Some of them may repent and regret all of a sudden under the calling of justice and truth to abandon the evil heresy and regain their human nature. This is the best. Somehow good things do not happen very frequently. It is indispensable to slaughter the devil.

There is a Chinese idiom that goes like 'repeated words' and 'try the peaceful means before resorting to force'. We should finish reasoning before resorting to force.

If we resort to force directly without reasoning, we'll be on suspicion of murder. After all, it is not good to open fire directly without offering any chance to the enemy.

Civilised men are educated and reasonable. We should reason first as long as there are some reasons. This is the manifestation of culture, of knowledge, and of civilisation.

We can only open fire after we reason with the enemy. This is the truth, the right way, and mercy as well—Buddhism.

It is nonsense reasoning with the devil in most cases, which ends in vain. Yet Hitler made a good point by saying that the repetition of a lie over ten thousand times makes a truth.

Since a lie can become a truth over the ten thousandth repetition, a truth can better make a truth with less than ten thousand times' repetition.

The speaker does not mean anything while the listener is interested. If something is repeated often enough, it will catch someone's attention and their belief. It will become a truth when it has enough people believing it.

Therefore, gossip is a fearful thing. A lie repeated often enough will be accepted as truth. We should make good use of it.

The fight against the devil mainly exists in the realm of spirit, and it is an ideological fight.

To change one's ideology and spirit is to spread the idea, the theory, and the language, and to reason. Thus it is better to resort to words to fight the devil than weapons.

The devils are suicidal bombers, who used seventy more virgins that are not afraid of death. But people from Western countries are afraid of death mostly.

What scares the Islamic heretics most is the spiritual attack. Just like the devil perishes when seeing the sunlight, so the best way is to avoid the enemy's strengths and attack their weaknesses.

We need to forbid the Islamic heresy in law, attack them in the media, expel them from the country, and enforce economic sanction on them.

Western countries have so many propaganda machines, which can be started to report the evildoings of the Muslim day after day. The heretics cannot defeat or outspeak us, so they can do nothing but surrender and vanish into smoke. The Islamic heresy will be gone completely.

If we report the scandals of the Muslims, we should see through the phenomenon to perceive the essence. We should give a deep analysis and careful study on the ugly performance of the Muslims. Then we should forbid Islam in law and provide military support to the opponents against the heresy to secularise and illegalise the heresy.

The Islamists look powerful, but they are heretics and cannot stand any strike or a beam of sunlight. They cannot withstand any consideration, discussion, or study.

If human beings would like to make them disappear, they will disappear once and for all within a short time.

1. As for Israel, we should also reason first and then open fire.

You deny reasoning by asking for the world to direct recognition of your foundation on corpses. It is unreasonable.

Israel wants to reason with those opponents worldwide by propagandising the Bible and the will of God. Then they will open fire and start the war.

2. The fierce bombing onto the Middle East areas is necessary. It is written by Mohammed in Hadith. Mohammed said, 'The fire will drop down from the sky.' It is written in the Bible, Revelation 8:7, that 'the first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth', which refers to the fierce bombing upon the Middle East Muslims.

Therefore, it is God's will and the will of Allah to bomb the Muslims. It is an action of justice.

3. The whole world should oppose Muslims on a clear-cut stand in the realm of spirit and propaganda. We should make firm decisions to completely destroy Muslims from the earth. This has to be done, and this is the best way to reduce casualties. If we cannot destroy Islam in the realm of spirit, we will have to face Islam in the battlefield.

We don't need weapons to destroy what we can destroy with words. And Islam can only be destroyed by words. Weapons can only suppress the devil for the moment rather than forever.

68. Mid-air bombing of the Russian aircraft

7 November 2015

The mid-air bombing of the Russian aircraft recently was another accident directed by heretics of Islam.

Islam is a heresy. All Muslims are devils. They make anti-humanity and anti-civilisation terrorist attacks all over to realise the rule of Islam in the whole world.

It has been repeatedly proved.

However, some countries are still captivated by democracy, human rights, freedom, and other foolish theories. They help the heretics invade Europe, migrate to Europe, and search for jobs for them.

You are crazy! You are mentally disordered, unable to see through the nature and truth of matters. You are assisting devils, poisoning your motherlands, residents, and offspring.

A heresy is as it is, so are the devils. Though they wear human skins and clothes, they are devils in the innermost being.

No one of Islam is a good man. They shall be eliminated and rooted out. Islam shall be immediately announced as a heresy. The Muslims shall all be driven out of Europe and the civilised society. Those who resist shall be killed with lawful authority.

Without decisive actions, you will be the next victim.

69. Houthis' armed forces should attack Saudi Arabia and overthrow the Saudi Wahhabi evil regime

9 November 2015

Recently, Houthis' armed forces have won the victory in the war against the Saudi-led coalition forces.

Saudi-led coalition forces equipped with the world's most advanced weaponry attacked the Houthis' militia organisation but were defeated, indicating that God stood on the side of Houthis' armed forces and Saudi-led coalition forces were doomed to fail however they carried out the attack.

The main reasons are listed as follows:

1. Saudi Arabia is the axis of evil, the birthplace of Wahhabi, the birthplace of the devil, the supreme headquarters against God, and the rogue distribution centre around the world.

2. The 9/11 incident in the United States was proved to be funded by the Saudis.

3. In the Syrian War, the funds and weapons of most opposition rogues and devils were provided by Saudi Arabia.

4. The terrorist organisations around the world all belong to the Wahhabi cult invented by Saudi Arabia, and they are dominated and instructed by Saudi Arabia, which is the axis of evil.

5. The IS is the world's largest Wahhabi organisation. The participation of the coalition forces of US organisations as well as the Gulf countries such as Saudi Arabia and Qatar aims to tip off terrorist organisations and perform double-dealing tactics instead of fighting against any terrorist organisation. And now, they have all slipped away quietly.

6. That Saudi Arabia organised the Gulf countries to invade Yemen is a sectarian conflict launched by the Wahhabi cult, which aims to eliminate mankind against the devil and achieve the delusion that the devil rules the world.

7. Russian aircraft explosion also done by Wahhabi is the largest terrorist attack after the 9/11 incident.

Therefore, Saudi Arabia is the axis of evil as well as the birthplace of the devil around the world and should be eradicated and exterminated immediately.

As it turned out, Saudi Arabia did not have the fighting capacity at all but only spent money in

buying thugs, mercenaries, rogues, and punks. For its evil purpose, Saudi Arabia told those people to work themselves to death, serve as cannon fodder, and go to hell to find seventy-two virgins. Obviously, Saudi Arabia did not know how to fight at all. Consequently, Houthis' armed forces are fully capable of overthrowing the Saudi evil regime to eradicate the devil for the world.

70. It seems the French can only quell the anger of the Islamic jihad if they worship Allah six times a day and start to eat mutton sausage instead of pork

14 November 2015

An old Arabic fable story told so:

One day, a frog and a scorpion met at the side of the Nile; they both wanted to cross the river. The frog showed it was willing to help the scorpion to cross the river under the condition that the scorpion shall not bite it. The scorpion agreed, and also proposed that the frog shall not drown it. They both agreed with each other's condition and crossed the river. However, the scorpion bit the frog eventually.

'Why do you do this?' the frog asked while it was dying.

'Because we're both Arab, aren't we?' the scorpion answered.

There is also another version of the same story published in *Al Ahram*.

The scorpion wants to cross the river, so it asks help from the frog. The frog asked, 'What if you bite me?'

'If I bite you, we both will be drowning,' the scorpion answered.

The frog thought that it made sense, so it carried the scorpion and got into the river. At the middle of the river, the scorpion bit the frog. At the moment they both sank, the frog asked the scorpion, 'Why did you still bite me with the consciousness that we both will be drowning?' The scorpion answered reluctantly, 'Because we are in Middle East.'

Chinese always believe in returning good for evil in accordance with Buddhist thought.

It is a similar story as 'the farmer and the snake' in China.

When the farmer met the snake, it was already frozen. So the farmer helped the snake out of compassion, just as the awareness of human rights in modern Western society. We all know the end of the story, that is, the snake poisoned the farmer. The lesson should be that we shall kill the evil thoroughly.

A bad guy in China is one who seduces the good ones who take the initiative to take the bait, while Islam is the evil that tricks the good ones by swelling and cheating.

The ancient Islam evil is cheating, taking advantage, then killing.

Modern Islam evil is cheating, pretending to be poor and getting the compassion and help, then killing both the good one and itself. Die together and then go to another world together. Barbarian gets kindness from civilised people and then kills both of them.

Here we are coming to a conclusion that the scorpion is Middle Eastern ethnicity, showing the essence of Islam, that it is heresy with jihad purpose.

Islam, Middle Eastern ethnicity, scorpion, worse than viper and devil.

Now you can see why those Middle East countries refuse to take refugees from Middle East, because both Arab and Middle East ethnicity know refugees are the scorpion. Showing mercy to them will end with death.

All you American and European sissies still cannot see the truth of it, while showing your democracy.

Today it comes to you, it proves for you.

Today, when France was having a soccer game with Germany, they killed many of you. It is called the most horrible attack in history, but it is not the end; it is just a beginning.

So we can see that it can kill you if you have not been educated with knowledge.

Europe should print the story of the frog and scorpion, and let everyone have a copy of it, while remarking the scorpion is refugees and Islam.

My opinion is that the French can only quell the anger of the Islamic jihad if they worship Allah six times a day and start to eat mutton sausage instead of pork. Because Islam worships Allah five times a day, so the French should worship one more time than this.

In addition, it is bad that the French like to eat pork sausage.

It seems you French eat too much pork sausage and it’s time to change it into mutton sausage.

And of course black robe and veil. Don’t forget a full beard; it is the most basic one.

71. Islam shall be defined an illegal cult worldwide

15 November 2015

A series of bloodshed in France yesterday led to heavy casualties, but I think the French people still fail to understand the essence of matters.

The French president announced that this was an IS war on France.

It's incorrect. It's not a war launched by the IS; it's an invasion and war on civilised nations by the Islamic world and the Islamic heresy.

They read the same scripture, the Koran.

They pay respects to the same idol, Allah.

They wear the same style clothes.

They don't eat pork.

Islam is no different from the IS.

Islam without guns is in the incubation period of cancer.

However, the gunned Islam is the spreading cancer cell and a devil.

Superficiality cannot be used to judge things. It is just the external reflection of things, and we shall see the essence from the phenomenon.

The essence of the terrorist attacks is that Islam is a cult, a devil which needs to be banned immediately and resolutely eradicated. All mosques shall be blown up. We shall burn all editions of the Koran and Hadith.

The Koran makes clear that if Allah desires, he will destroy the Koran.

Now it's time to do it. Islam has turned into a real heresy. This is the will of Allah, as well as the will of God, which must be done.

1. France shall announce Islam as illegal right away.

2. Close all mosques.

3. The Koran is an evil banned book. We shall take all of them and destroy them in a concentrated

way.

4. All native Muslims from the illegal states shall be all expelled.

5. All French Muslims shall be jailed, with indoctrination through labour until they convert their faith and eat pork every day.

6. So Muslims are not allowed to hold weapons and must turn them over at once. Otherwise, they will be terrorists and immediately executed on the spot.

7. All Islam sympathisers shall undergo education through labour till they mend their ways.

8. Overthrow all Islamic countries to make them secular. Finally eradicate Islam.

9. It's a must to exterminate all IS.

10. The transformable Muslims shall be given a chance to live, while the stubborn ones shall be put to death.

Saudi Arabia condemned the terrorist attacks in Paris. This is bullshit. Generally, after the murderers commit a crime, they will go to the scene of the crime to check their results. The Wahhabi cults in the world are instigated, controlled, and supported with funds and weapons by Saudi Arabia. Saudi Arabia is the evil backstage manipulator and the general director of the world terrorist attacks.

IS just performs in front onstage, while the evil backstage manipulator is the entire Islam cult. They are general directors, producers, planners, screenwriters, as well as extras of the world terrorist attacks.

It's useless for you to destroy one or two actors. The Islamic cult will unceasingly recruit more actors for more performances and more horror dramas. It's endless. Westerners, enjoy it slowly.

When we express sympathy for the victims you hurt, we give the producer and director an Oscar prize encouraging them to continue with better plays.

72. We should criticise and crack down on Islam fiercely in an ideological sense

16 November 2015

After France was attacked by terrorists, French fighters bombarded the IS.

Bombing and extermination is crucial, yet the problem of Islam is an ideological problem rather than a material issue. Hence, combating from the material level can only incur petty harm without destroying its core. That will definitely not assault the devil itself.

The war waged against Islam shall be an ideological war.

If someday the Western world criticises and attacks Islamic ideology in full swing, that will signify the possible settlement of the problem.

If the blow of Islamic heresy is only launched against several extremist organisations, it still needs a long way to address the problem of terrorism. There will be other 'masterpieces' and 'action films' to be played. And the Westerners will bleed. What a reality show!

Public opinion exposes the devil to public evaluation and the judge of justice.

You Westerners blinded by the US worship human rights, freedom of religious belief, and freedom of devil belief. You give legal outerwear to the devil and hide it in your house.

What is right is right, and what is wrong is wrong. The devil is the devil. The truth shall be revealed no matter what is hidden and concealed.

Islam is wicked, absurd, dirty, ignorant, uncultivated, anti-scientific, and anti-human. Why can't we discuss this? Our silence will hide the devil in our house.

The hacker union Anonymous could have done a lot of efficient stuff. Yet they only delete a few Twitter accounts. That is nothing to do with combating terrorist organisations, just adding a little inconvenience to them.

Their act has not caused serious injury and has not shattered Islamic essence and soul.

Ideology is the issue of thoughts and the issue of information. Anonymous's biggest resource is information, but they cannot make full use of it or do not dare to use or know how to use this resource.

Eradicating terrorist groups is to eradicate Islam. Eradicating Islam is a battle of public opinion,

information, culture, and ideology.

The hacker group Anonymous shall, for the purpose of wiping out Islamic ideology, start a public opinion, Internet, cultural, information, and spiritual attack, which is the justice the Internet hackers should uphold and the act to save the earth. Deleting some Twitter accounts is meaningless.

You should modify my articles about Islamic heresy, render into various languages, and send them to all countries and all emails.

Over time, the Islamic heresy will collapse. Their organisation and terrorist groups will disappear for good. This is the real deed to help God, to uphold justice, to save your nation, to save the world, and to save the earth.

What you previously did is pedantry and a joke.

The Islamic terrorists are poor men without knowledge and culture. Not more than 10 per cent of them can use the Internet. They do not have Internet, and there is no use to wage Internet attack.

Sending the information and email to all the people in the world and disclosing the Islamic evil and wicked nature—this is the meaningful act which can crack down on the devil, save the misled, motivate more integrated persons to attack the demon.

If this thing is to be handled by the government, it will shoulder a lot of pressure. Internet hackers are the most suitable group for doing this stuff. They will not face political pressure and can spread the news very fast with lower cost.

Combating Islam is not a treat but rather a war. If you do not act today, you and your family may be beaten to death tomorrow.

It's a war between God and Satan, a war between justice and evil.

And the point is what your role is in the war, which side you stand by, and who you support.

Only in this way these hundreds of the French can die valuably; otherwise, their deaths are worthless. After a while, people will totally forget them like nothing happened.

Their death should bring the collapse of Islam in return. This will be valuable to all the people and the whole world.

73. From the views on politics of bombers' mother, Muslims are all the bad guys

17 November 2015

For the Paris attacks, people around the world are shocked and concerned about it, and they are all clear it is an evil event.

In spite of the world being so concerned, the facts so clear, and the case so serious, the gunman's mother still defended her son. She said that her son is a good child; because of the pressure of life, her son only found a way to vent some of the dissatisfaction with the community.

This is the true idea of Muslims to terrorism. Because the old lady is a no-culture, no-scheming ordinary Muslim.

The gunman's mother has not the slightest hint of remorse and repentance. Instead of it, she put the blame on the community. Defend the devil.

From this, it can be seen the Muslim world is all in with thieves; all are terrorists, all are the devil.

The Muslim doesn't have any common language with the civilised society. The devil has the devil's way of thinking, the behaviour logic. The terrorist attacks in the eyes of Muslims are different from ordinary people. So the human and the devil look like they're living in the same time and space, but in fact these are totally two different worlds.

Because of this, human beings completely need to get rid of the devil. Human beings do not coexist with the devil. All the Muslims are the devil. They are all the sympathy and support of the terrorist attacks in Paris.

A few months ago, when you saw a child drowning in the sea, you had a wide range of sympathy for the devil. Eventually piles of bloody French bodies were shown to the eyes of the entire world. In case of the French president who has no run fast, and his life has lost at the hands of the Muslim 'good boy'. Others are not so lucky; they die in the streets.

I want you to think about the views and attitudes of the mother of the Muslim gunman seriously, realise the Muslim again.

Don't be fooled ignorantly and ridiculously by children lying on the sand. Those who supported Muslims just because of that drowned boy, your candle and wreath are useless. You should find a place alone and slap your own face hard. Shame and regret for your folly and absurdity, angry at the evil of Muslims.

This is the result of not listening to me. If you don't take my advice, more penalties will come.

I said before, your twelve French dead were too few in the Charlie Hebdo shootings in Paris, not enough to enable you to repent, not enough to enable you to see the Islamic nature of the cult.

Now there are hundreds of people, I see if you can repent and can see the essence of Islam.

Now you say that is a problem of terrorism, so I think you still cannot recognise that this is entirely the sins of the Islamic cult. Maybe also more large-scale terrorist attacks, more lethal death events will make it clear to you.

It is a war against Islamic cult; this is not a joke.

The cult of Islam is the devil, and they do not belong to humans; you can clearly see this from the murderer's mother.

Today, Turkey football fans boo and chant 'Allahu Akbar' during silence for Paris victims. This is not a few individual fans' behaviour, but the majority of the Turkish fans' behaviour, and then foreign leaders were also present.

It can be proved that Islamic cultists are all in with thieves; no one is a good man. The dominant Islamic regimes all need to be overthrown; they are the axis of evil, rogue essence. They are all the devil.

They are the common enemy of mankind.

74. The IS can be called a great hero as it seeks a swift death rather than cravenly cling to life

19 November 2015

I've learned the news that the IS has bombed a Russian airliner, launched a raid in France, and killed Chinese hostages these days.

They especially offended the countries that are difficult to deal with and jumped into the pit of fire.

Baghdadi, who has been driven to the wall, knows that his day has gone and his last hour has come. He hopes to die a hero's death soon, but he wants to perish together with some scapegoats before his death, just as a rabid dog bites the wrong person before its death. Anyone who is bitten will surely die.

He has the true colour of a hero, and his name will remain immortal.

In my opinion, people around Baghdadi and people in the areas controlled by the IS should hurry up to escape before the bombs start falling if they do not want to die. Otherwise, Mohammed said, 'The fire will come down from heaven and burn you all to death.' The trumpets of seven angels in the Bible's Revelation also convey that God will put the fire down to burn you all to death.

I've heard that there is a quota limit for seventy-two virgins and the places have been fully booked. All the people who have been bombed to death will go to hell, so you'd better hurry up to flee for your lives.

The IS is almost finished, followed by Islam.

These old rogues will be killed one by one.

This is the will of God.

75. They are just playing around in the Middle East war

25 November 2015

These days, Russia blew up 1,000 fuel tankers and said that the American coalition forces were not really attacking IS.

America leads the union of sixty countries. The superpowers have been attacking those mobs for over a year and fostered the development of IS.

Of course, it cannot be said that there has been almost no progress. In my opinion, action of fighting against YPG has reached a great achievement made under the American coalition forces' support, which helped to recapture many strategic areas.

There are many Kurdish people who fight for their own country. In fact, this absolutely differs from fighting for other people and countries.

No matter whether America fights for their own benefits or aims at eliminating IS, it is worthy of praise that Americans lead other countries to fight against the Islamic cult.

Furthermore, it is better that someone fights against devils than there is none, regardless of the result. First, America adopts a good stance and is more responsible than those countries that waved aside. They show their love for the world, which needs to be spirited up.

The war between Iraq and Syria, which has been enduring for over a year, seems to be a war of attrition with a low level. It consumes soldiers and time. Every country and every power has their own plan. They push forward the war based on their purpose.

I think the most important lesson I received over the past year is that I get more knowledge on the nature of the Islamic cult and hate them more.

In fact, it does not matter who wins. The most important is that we see clearly the nature of Islam. If the world can reach an agreement on the evil nature of Islam, Middle East wars will soon end.

If people, especially in the civilised countries, still think that Islam is one of the three religions in the world and has the freedom of religious belief as Christianity, there will be no point in the sudden end of the war.

As the root of Islam riots has not been eliminated, the war will never end but become worse, influencing future generations and making people live without peace.

However, the root is people's awareness of the evil nature of Islam.

The war will end soon if we want to eliminate IS, while the problem is that you do not want it to end.

This requires a unification of acknowledge and mind.

If America and Western countries still want to be devils and form alliance with Islam devils, I think it is better for this war to continue and let those people who deserve to die go to hell.

If countries manage their own security issues, travel less, as well as provide more weapons for both sides at war, that would be better.

So how many people will be killed in the terrorist attack initiated by IS?

Actually, the number of the killed is less than those killed by car accidents and much less than those killed by murders. It is much less than those killed by policemen with gun.

Terrorist attack sounds terrifying while actually it is not so bad.

'Thirty-Six Stratagems in Military Science' of Sun Zi advocates fighting with water shortage, food shortage, fire, and flood in wars.

However, none of these strategies were seen in the war of America with the union of sixty countries against IS. I don't know if this could be called a war; they just played around. However, it is better than that there is nobody playing around.

If civilised countries really want to eliminate Islam, they should employ the most advanced weapons to fight against IS.

It seems that there are electromagnetic pulse bombs, with which people will not be hurt while electronic devices and antitank guided missiles will be destroyed.

If every country in IS region is blown up by these bombs, the war will soon end.

People just hear about this kind of bomb but never see it. We should try it on IS and it will work without doubt. This kind of bomb is better than cluster bombs; it can also decrease death.

Electromagnetic pulse bombs only bring economic costs and paralyze weapons but do not cause death.

If we want to end wars, we should apply this kind of weapon on a large scale, paralysing the fighting ability, making both sides of the war calm down, and coming back to reality.

76. Analysis of Russian warplane downed by Turkey

26 November 2015

About the Russian warplane downed by Turkey, we can analyse it on the following several aspects:

1. Self-abandonment

The whole international situation is unfavourable to the Islam cult, and people have gradually realised that Islam is a cult, which is a calamity that must be eliminated. Russia starting to bomb the terrorist organisation is a symbol, and people around the world are gradually awakened. The true monstrous face of Islam is gradually exposed in front of people, and Islam's conspiracy to destroy the human being is going bankrupt.

The IS attacking France shows that the IS are in a desperate and self-abandoning state. They are looking at their end, and they wish to struggle before death.

A few days later, as one of the backstage bosses of IS, Turkey also sees the end of Islam and gets desperate, and it is self-abandoning. Losing its mind, it shot down a Russian warplane.

2. Conclusion

All Muslims are concluding with each other, and none of them is good. The IS perform on the stage, while Turkey, Saudi Arabia, and Qatar are the backstage chief director, producer, investor, writer, and extra. All the bad things done by the IS were planned by the old rascals Turkey, Saudi Arabia, and Qatar.

We can say that Turkey and Saudi Arabia helped planning each case done by the IS, including decapitating the American hostage, killings at Charlie Hebdo, massacre at Bataclan Theatre, and Tunisia beach case. They are the chief plotters, while the IS are only the hatchet men. They are on the stage and behind the stage, respectively. One of them shoots, bombs, and kills, while the other provides weapon, capital, and logistics guarantee; one of them robs the oilfield, while the other helps him dispose of the stolen goods and turn them into cash. One is doing bad things, while the other is pretending to be the good guy, providing political asylum to the bad people.

After shooting down the Russian warplane, Turkey said that they were family with the terrorists, which more indicates that they are concluded.

3. Murderous behaviour

a. The saved pilot said that there was not any warning.

b. In accordance with the flight trajectory provided by Turkey, the plane only crossed the border for seventeen seconds, which was short, unconscious, and non-threatening cross.

c. The plane was shot down within the territory of Syria.

d. The plane was shot down during its return.

e. The plane was suddenly attacked.

f. Turkey admitted that Russia was bombing its 'family', and Turkey shot down the Russian warplane for revenge of its 'family'.

g. Russia bombed the fuel tanker from the IS, which cut off the route for the son of the Turkish president to gain money.

In accordance with the above analysis, we can see that Turkey's attack against the Russian warplane was a murder action, rather than self-defence.

4. Turkey is the enemy of civilised countries

In a crime, the chief plotter should assume higher responsibility than the shooter. Turkey manipulated the IS to attack civilised countries, so Turkey is the enemy of civilised countries.

The influence of attack in France still runs, while you argue favour of our enemy, it's a kind of betrayal as well as a crime against our people.

Ball game fans in Turkey cheer for the death and disaster of victims attacked by terrorists in France instead of being sad. This means evil Islam in Turkey and Europe are enemies instead of allies. Although Turkey president and premiere spoke some sweet words about Islam, Islam is still the enemy of our civilised society as a whole.

5. The Western countries are the whore on the beast, described by God in the Book of Revelation (the Holy Bible)

All Western countries only pursue material, profits, and enjoyment while completely neglecting justice and fairness, with no consideration of spiritual civilisation. They have no principle, and they collude with the Wahhabi cult and ally with the devil. After their people were hurt by the devil, they still won't wake up, and this will anger God.

6. Intensify the contradiction between the NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organisation) and Russia

Turkey's true purpose is to intensify the contradiction between the Western countries and Russia so that Turkey, the devil, could benefit from the tussle.

The Western countries should kick Turkey from NATO. Turkey is an Islamic enemy and devil, which is not an ally. It is an object that should be destroyed.

On the one hand, it puts the IS and jihad to brutally kill the French and European people; on the other hand, it instigates the NATO to go to battle with Russia.

It does not defend the interests of NATO but is a complete troublemaker, conspirator, and destroyer, a wolf in sheep's clothing.

77. EU financed Turkey $3B for arms to back terrorists

1 December 2015

The EU has made a deal with Turkey, requiring it to block migrants out of Europe by offering $3B to it.

It is ridiculous. Turkey is the real boss who has been supporting terrorists by providing them with arms, money, medical service, and logistic service.

It should have cut off terrorists' capital chain like Russia instead of financing their real boss.

On the one hand, Russia is cutting off terrorists' capital chain by bombing their oil tankers. On the other hand, EU is offering Turkey a huge amount of money to support terrorists.

What the EU has done is self-contradictory with confusion. Wire fences and machine guns on the border are enough to keep migrants out. It is insane for it to hand out $3B which is actually for terrorists.

On the one hand, France, Germany, Britain, and other countries are sending military personnel to fight terrorists on the battlefield; on the other, EU is providing terrorists with money to buy bombs, guns, and military supplies that are to kill NATO soldiers.

Westerners are so beyond cure that only large quantities of bloodshed can teach them what the Islamic devil is like and who the birds of a feather are.

78. Analysis of Muslim abstinence from pork

4 December 2015

The Koran raises clearly that Muslims are forbidden to eat pork, a prohibition as serious as mushrikeen.

Why did Allah forbid Muslims from eating pork at that time? In my view, it had something to do with reproduction.

At that time, Muslims were nomads who lived in a much harsher environment compared with the land of fish and rice. Given the harsh living environment and lack of living materials, the nation had to develop stronger fertility, better physical quality, and disease resistance so as to reproduce.

According to TCM theory, a lot of animal meat, such as beef and lamb, nourishes human body and improves potency.

Beef and lamb are aphrodisiacs. However, pork is relatively mild. But delicious pork is easily accepted for its good taste. Besides, pigs multiply and grow so fast that their breeding cost is much lower than cattle and sheep. If people are to choose freely under equal conditions, they will have pork as staple and beef and lamb as non-staple for a change.

With abundant living resources, the influence exerted on fertility and reproduction by eating pork does not differ a lot from eating beef and lamb. But for nomadic people who are in shortage of living materials, eating pork may cause a drop in population and in the number of Muslims.

Many lower ethnic groups regard beard as beauty. TCM also takes beard as a symbol of fertility, which represents ample qi (energy of the human body) of kidney and outstanding fertility.

Meanwhile, women's veil and burqa also has something to do with reproduction. Veil and burqa obstructs other men from seeing a woman's face so as to curb their desire for the opposite sex who are not their own wives. Then they will quench their desire on their own spouses for more babies.

Many Islamic countries encourage polygamy, a policy that promotes reproduction. Because a man being able to marry several women must be one who is better off, aphrodisiac, and has more children. However, those who cannot get married must be men who have weak points in terms of economic ability, appearance, and potency. By doing so, some unqualified people are eliminated naturally, and more babies will be born.

We can see the simple Muslim idea—give birth to more children wholeheartedly and train them into cannon fodder and suicide bombers.

They have produced too many unneeded products—surplus people and pariahs of the society, so they have to reduce their population through bloodshed and death. At the same time, the dead will contribute to the course of Muslim conquest of the world and the Westerners.

These Islamic doctrines for enlarging population through reproduction were set at the beginning of the religion on the basis of the then actual social situation. Now, those ill-timed stuff and troublemakers need to be abolished. The Koran says that Allah wants to destroy the Koran right now.

In the cold weapon age that was economically underdeveloped, the size of population decided a country's fighting power and national power.

But we have been in the nuclear weapon age and quantum age, and it is the quality of the population, not the size of population, that matters.

At the moment, a large population doesn't mean anything. Sometimes it only means nothing but more future refugees, more people who need aid, and a large population of low quality.

We have entered the Industry 4.0 times. Factories no longer need so many workers. It is robots that are working.

If those people of low quality try to cause trouble, they will become pariahs who need to be dealt with.

Times have changed into one in which the size of population isn't decisive any longer. Sometimes it even becomes unstable social factors and needs to be suppressed.

In my opinion, Islam should carry out a large-scale religious reform and stop the large-scale reproduction of pariahs of low quality. Muslims should eat pork and turn themselves into cultivated and literate persons.

Muslims should change to pork-eating for fewer babies. On the contrary, Westerners should eat more beef and lamb for more babies. Or both sides will be in big trouble.

79. It is necessary to clear away Islam gradually and systematically

22 November 2015

Now Islam has developed into a heresy, so it must be eliminated.

Today's development of Islam is mainly attributed to the following reasons:

1. Ancient laws are not applicable for modern civilisation.

During the period of ancient nomadic nationality, Islam promoted social development and maintained public order, but modern civilisation is completely incompatible with laws of Islam.

If we use ancient laws to restrain modern people and modern civilisation, it definitely is a devil or heresy.

There were old ladies with bound feet in the early liberation of China. Bound feet were abnormal products in Chinese feudal society. They used a strip of cloth to cover up women's feet tightly and make feet develop with deformity since these women were children. Thus, feet of adult women can fit into shoes of four-year-old children. It is said that such a method can tighten women's vagina and increase pleasant sensation of sexual intercourse for men. Such culture has been continued for hundreds of thousands of years until the Communist Party liberated Chinese women.

Islam is behaviour of bound feet in spirit. Islam is even eviler than bound feet.

They force modern people to apply ancient nomadic laws.

Those people who disobey it will be decapitated, with cut-off hands and feet. They even launch terrorism and wars, bomb planes, and attack with dirty bomb and nuclear weapon.

Muslims are completely psychopaths.

Nothing is suitable for modern civilisation in the Koran from the beginning to the end. The most typical one is shitting.

There is a definite method of shitting for Muslims, mentioned in the Koran. They must use the left hand to clean anus, instead of using toilet paper.

Muslims now still use the left hand to clean anus, and I feel sick when I think of it.

If you dare to use toilet paper, you violate the Koran, and you rebel against the orthodoxy, betray Allah, and will go to hell.

It makes people sick and anti-human to use the hand to clean anus, while the one that uses toilet paper betrays Allah.

In a word, no one is a good man among Muslims, so it undoubtedly needs to clean comprehensively.

2. Petroleum in the Middle East makes Islam become a devil from ignorance.

The Middle East has very bad natural environment. Inhabitants here should have become impoverished, just like Africa, but petroleum makes the low-quality nomadic people get rich quickly and forget themselves.

Their sudden wealth isn't attributed to labour incomes, but girds of God.

The Middle East countries spread the heresy named Islam and vicious ideology to the whole world by utilising wealth of petroleum. In order to promote Wahhabi heresy, Saudi Arabia has donated and constructed numerous mosques almost in all countries and pushed the ignorance and evilness to the whole world. All terrorism in the whole world is completely guided by the leader of Wahhabi, and all Wahhabi is spread by mosques contributed by Saudi Arabia.

Thus, it can be said that Saudi Arabia, Qatar, and Middle East countries are the cause of all kinds of wickedness and the axis of evil.

All mosques in the whole world must be dismantled and all the Korans destroyed.

3. Western ideology has no justice, is totally lack in principles, covers up the devil, fears the devil, and gangs up with the devil.

Western countries are called a whore sitting upon a scarlet-coloured beast by God in the Book of Revelation.

Western countries have no justice and principles, which can be observed from their latent rules.

There is one sentence on Western countries: 'There are three things I have learned, never to discuss with people—religion, politics, and the Great Pumpkin.'

They never talk about politics and religion with others. They call it respect for human rights. As a matter of fact, this is a typical bourgeois idea and an idea of urban petty bourgeois, civil servants, and little people. Because talking about politics and religion only will do harm to the pride of someone and only can bring troubles and damage to them, instead of benefits.

It is exactly because of such an evasive and self-held idea of urban petty bourgeois that people ignore justice. They can turn a blind eye on bad things, as long as it can bring benefits to themselves and won't hurt them. Moreover, they can do nothing but run away, scattering in all

directions, when they encounter evil. Moreover, they even accuse those people who fight the devil.

The most typical case refers to the event that someone recently accused Trump of helping IS to recruit employees, because IS used conversations of Trump when IS recruited employees.

Trump fights with the devil, protects justice, protects people, and tells the truth.

On the other hand, people lie, cheat people's ballot, become afraid of the devil and dare not to fight the devil, fear facing up to the devil, ignore piles of corpses in French theatres, defy anti-human Islam and anti-civilisation, lose sight of ridiculousness, wickedness, ignorance, and brutality of Islam, but conversely accuse people who fight the devil.

People who accuse of Trump completely have no justice and principle, cover up the devil, become afraid of the devil, and collaborate with the devil.

Islam is not terrible and it will be wiped out rapidly, as long as we use a correct method.

They are evil and devils.

Justice certainly will defeat the evil. American blockbusters are shown every day. However, they actually do not trust in justice and defeat of the devil.

I think that we must grasp rhythm to wipe out Islam, handle it appropriately, eliminate them with plans and objectives, and use justice power to wipe out the devil.

They will disappear without a trace quickly, as long as we have a correct method, because they are the devil.

First of all, the devil that has been exposed to sunshine must be wiped out, so we can use force to eliminate IS. They are the devil recognised by the world, but many scarlet women and the devil support them and provide capital, weapons, and political protection for them. Thus, it is necessary to defeat them by using any weapon and any means.

Secondly, attack on Islamic ideology should use justice to attack the evil.

Islam is a kind of ideology which is an ideology of the devil. We shouldn't let the devil get the goods on us.

So we should speak proper words instead of extreme words, and we should not conduct personal attacks against others without any reason. Justice is the true words. For the problem of their defecating, everyone should and must talk about that to Muslims. 'It's sick and anti-human to clean anus using hands, and it is against Allah not to use toilet paper.'

We need to destroy Muslims through making conflicts among them.

Every one speaks these true and just words every day. The devil will naturally vanish without space for living.

Some evils become radical because of their mental collapse. This is common; however, most people will have self-examination and wake from the sin, because the evil are incapable of combat against justice and truth.

What we need to do is to destroy the evil with mental collapse. We need to act brashly and alert the enemy and draw the enemy. The key lies in good mastery of the dimension and method.

You are so talkative when initiating the peaceful revolution, but why do you become a coward when facing Islam?

If you can take 1 per cent of your enthusiasm about peaceful revolution, Islam will vanish.

There are so many Muslims, most of whom can become benign in certain environments. What we need to do is to kill those who deserve death.

It depends on our technology and method as for who should be dead and who should be alive.

The best way is collecting those who deserve death in our battlefield and killing them with an explosion. After those who deserve death died, those left are good guys.

However, some bad guys pretend to be good guys. How can we identify them? We need to draw the snake out of its hole.

IS and terrorists in the battlefield are the devils and snakes out of the hole, while those who pretend to be the civilians and not to be radical are the snakes in the hole.

I think the battle between Iraq and Syria is going to end. Those who appear in the battlefield are some snakes out of the hole. Eliminating the snakes is not the end of the war. The end of the war lies in the elimination of Islam ideology.

The war ends if all of the mosques in the world are dismantled. If we directly dismantle the mosques, it seems like if we throw frogs into boiling water, they will fight like hell. We need to gradually increase the temperature step by step and boil the frogs to die in the end.

Firstly, we need make the defecating of Muslims a universal topic. When they adjust to the topic of defecating, we need to find a deeper topic so that the Muslims could gradually adjust to the criticism, the sickness, and gradually get to the point. In the end, we need to destroy all of the mosques and make all of them vanish.

In such a process, those who dare combat and those who are radical are devils and will be destroyed. We will never give mercy to them.

So it is better for us not to stop radicals from participating in the IS, but to throw various kinds of bombs in the battlefield of the Middle East. This is the solution to this problem. Preventing Muslims from going to war in Middle East means making the devils stay at their own home. But if we give them freedom, they will do harm to our society; meanwhile it is a waste of food and resources.

We need to try to make devils voluntarily go to battlefield, then throw bombs on them and make them die. This is the effective solution to this problem.

Iraq recently held a beauty contest, which serves as an attack culturally. We need to praise it.

80. Death penalty executed by Saudi Arabia is legal

4 January 2016

Forty-seven terrorists were killed in Saudi Arabia recently, which annoyed Iran. This event even annoyed those ordinary people of Shia Islam.

It is reported that most of those people were executed because they participated in an attack organised by al-Qaeda from 2003 to 2006. Except for an Egyptian and a Chadian, all of them were Saudis. Most of them were Sunnis, and only four of them were Shias, including famous Shia Nimer.

1. If all people killed this time were Shias, this event would have been a communal conflict with the political power.

However, most of these people killed are Sunnis, which means that it is a kind of anti-terrorist event.

Saudi Arabia is the kind of country believing in Sunnis and especially Wahhabi. They are closely connected with terrorist organisations and face the risk of terrorist organisations' attacks. This event deserves courage and praise.

Many countries just sentence the terrorists the death penalty as a way to frighten others but do not carry it out. However, Saudi Arabia executed this penalty this time, which is worth the praise.

Great efforts should be spent on searching for terrorists, especially those of Wahhabi. People who have some relationships with those terrorists or feel sympathy for those terrorists should be killed as soon as they are caught. Only in this way will those people who are willing to carry out terrorism realise that it is wrong. More innocent people will be killed if we are weak.

2. The conflict between Iran and Shia is just a Nimer priest. It is admitted that the other forty-six people should be killed.

The priest was a Saudi man. The death penalty carried out by Saudi Arabia is the internal affair of this country. Besides, from the perspective of royalty, there is nothing wrong with it.

It is worth serious consideration that Iran criticises the government of Saudi Arabia for the sake of this Saudi man who was a Shia. We should know what the priest actually did. It is said that he instigated Shia in Saudi Arabia to invade Bahrain.

From the perspective of the regime, the action of dividing the country means betraying the country; death penalty is reasonable and legal.

If Saudi Arabia continues to support Wahhabi and terrorism, it should be overturned. However, it would be better if they change their mind. We should give them a chance.

3. It is wrong for Iran to initiate a conflict for a foreign priest. Although Saudi Arabia has done a lot of evil things, they are doing the right things this time, and we should support them.

4. Islam laws, which are very strict, even stipulate how people should go to the bathroom. Therefore, people committing serious crimes like betraying a country will no doubt be put to death.

From the perspective of Islamism, it conforms to the Islamic laws for Saudi Arabia to put people betraying the country to death. The aim of Islamism is to establish a society of order, so we cannot admit the action of betraying the country.

5. Muslim sectarian violence is very disgraceful, and only a small part of the people are contending for power and profit while not defending the doctrine and truth.

Therefore, Mohammed said, 'Muslims kill Muslims, both of them are going to hell.'

6. Every country should manage their internal affairs well.

Only evil things such as Wahhabi countries supporting terrorism and heresy should be interfered with. Therefore, the anti-terrorism actions taken by many countries are right, especially with Hezbollah and Iran sending a large number of soldiers and weapons to Syria and Iraq.

It is not right for Wahhabi countries to overturn the regime of Syria and invade Yemen. However, it is not related to the death penalty this time. They are fighting against terrorism inside their own countries and not doing evil things, so we should not interfere with it.

The communal conflict that Shia put the priest to death is unjust; it is just a battle for power.

All in all, there are no kind people in this world. Stalin once said that Muslims are inborn traitors. It can be clearly seen from the example of Nimer. Muslims always put sectarian interests ahead of the national interests. That is to say, only sectarian interests remain in their minds. Therefore, they are inborn traitors.

Germany introduced 100 million inborn traitors, so Germans are kind of busy now.

81. Saudi Arabia impenitence

20 January 2016

Today, Saudi Arabia issued a statement asking China not to link terrorism with any religion or denomination.

This is pure 'a guilty person gives himself away by consciously protesting his innocence, or doing bad things and wanting to get good reputation'.

The Islamic cult dominates all the terrorist organisations, basically all of which are Wahhabi, which originated from Saudi Arabia.

All of the terrorist organisations are Wahhabi. All of the Wahhabi are terrorist organisations. They are just the same like two sides of the same corn.

A few days ago, I read the news that they executed Sunni terrorists, thinking they may have some reflections. But today they refused to recognise that Wahhabi is a cult, a devil, and a terrorist organisation, which states that they do not repent.

They are still the axis of evil, rogue in essence, the devil's cradle, and need to be eradicated. Saudi Arabia had mustered so many Wahhabi countries to attack Yemen but did not win, which also states that they are just a mob with no fighting capacity.

Timing for revolution is very important; if a wall starts tottering, every gives it a shove would be the best timing.

Shias need to immediately launch the democratic revolution in Bahrain to overthrow the Wahhabi tyranny.

Iran should provide weapons for Bahrain's Shias to launch a revolution.

Monarchy, an inherently outdated rogue domination, plus the Wahhabis' democracy, is ruling the people of Bahrain, devoid of any merit, oppressing the people cruelly, and an immediate revolution is needed to overthrow the tyrannical rule.

A revolution needs to be launched to go to attack Riyadh if Saudi Arabia does not admit its mistakes and refuses to announce the Wahhabis as an evil cult.

Islam needs to expel their unqualified members; Iran should send troops to attack them. Iran and Hezbollah need to surrender to Israel; otherwise, they are also bad children.

All in all, there is no good man in Islam. Wahhabis are a devil that needs to be eradicated. Shia is

also a bad man to be criticised for against Israel, contending with God, and opposing the Bible.

Shia have certain rationality in their democracy and could communicate with civilised countries from the nuclear agreement made by Iran and civilised countries. The democracy in Shia is feasible that needs to be implemented in Bahrain.

There are problems of democracy in Sunni that without any successful cases, only failed cases.

Egypt's brotherhood is Sunni Wahhabis' democracy, pure terrorism, and a devil cult.

Wahhabi is a pure devil and needs to be eradicated.

82. It’s ineffective to have peace talks with Wahhabi heresy

27 January 2016

Now the Western countries are all promoting peace talks, while Afghanistan, Libya, and Syria want to facilitate peace talks. In my view, no result could be yielded from the talks.

Peace talks about the conflicts in these regions are different from Iran nuclear talks. Iran nuclear talks centre on interests. Talks on interests are held between humans, and a consensus can be reached by the allotment of interests.

Yet the conflicts in Afghanistan, Libya, and Syria are not conflicts of interests, but conflicts of ideology. The talks would yield no result. And there are only victory and defeat on the battlefield.

Talks with Wahhabi Islam are talks with the demon. It’s impossible for humans to have any consensus with the demon. In Afghanistan, Libya, and Syria, the war can only be ended by supporting the secular parties to eliminate Wahhabi Islam.

First, let the secular parties come to power through wars. Then bombard all the mosques and destroy all the Korans. True victory can only be won by eliminating Islam ideologically; otherwise, there would only be temporary truce but no armistice, no eternal ending.

Saudi Arabia is the cradle of Wahhabi, which is a demon nourished by Western countries. You are daydreaming if you want to put the demon into the bottle by simple talks.

83. Syrian Kurds should consolidate so as to end the war

21 February 2016

The situation of Syrian war is very explicit now.

Saudi Arabia funds the various jihadists of Wahhabis, extremists, terrorists, and liberation forces.

Turkey recruits various jihadists, extremists, terrorists, and liberation forces within its boundary; trains the jihadists; and provides backup services, material and weapon supplies, petroleum sales channels, and political shelter.

I think in this war, Turkey plays the worst role.

To end the war factually, the ties between Turkey and Syria should be severed.

Yet the only ones who can do this are the Kurds. The Kurdish habitat is completely between Turkey and Syria, and it can segregate Syria and Turkey completely. Moreover, Kurdish people have a large population. They are good at fighting, but they love peace and they are a peace-loving ethnic group. They deserve praises and rewards.

Just because of this, Turkey firmly takes hold of its last section of ties with Syria—a passage at northern Aleppo. It used to be the habitat of the Kurds, and it should be returned to them. Let the Kurds go and seize it so that all the supports from the demon can be cut off and the war can be ended factually.

Only if the ties between Turkey and Syria are cut off by the Kurds can the Syrian war be a real civil war. Otherwise, the Syrian war is a proxy war, a war of the world.

Turkey has done so many bad things, and it is the real demon. Western countries should support the Kurds and teach Turkey a good lesson.

Europeans are greatly annoyed by refugee crisis; however, it is the Kurds who can solve the refugee crisis fundamentally, not Turkey. Turkey is actually the troublemaker. It is Turkey that brings the refugees to Europe. It's a conspiracy of the Muslim Brotherhood Emblem. The Muslim Brotherhood Emblem wants to occupy Europe, that's all.

You help the Kurds, and refugees will go home; otherwise, the trouble would be endless. You need to give the Kurds the weapons lying in your warehouses and then make your stance verbally supporting the Kurds to safeguard democracy and freedom. That will be fine. You even don't need to spend money, and things are solved. This is the most cost-effective method.

84. Anti-foreignism advocated by Ku Klux Klan is the rejection of civilisation to ignorance; terrorist activities of Islam are the hostility of ignorance to civilisation

1 March 2016

A reporter asked a question recently, 'As to the connection made by some people of IS with terrorist organisations, what does Saudi Arabia think of it?'

Saudi Arabia answered that there are also radicals in Christianity, but they are not on behalf of Christianity. So the radicals in Islam cannot represent Islam either.

1. There is a matter of probability. It is all right that a countable number of radicals cannot represent a religion or an organisation. However, once the number is beyond a normal range, and if radicals in a religion are over a certain number with its region spread excessively, it is not a problem of a few radicals but the whole religion.

The number of radicals in Islam is not small, and all the terrorist incidents in the world are linked with Islam. Specifically, all the terrorist incidents in the world are associated with Wahhabi of Islam. This religion, the Wahhabi, is defective, and it should bear the consequences of all the terrorist incidents.

What's more, 80 per cent of the Islamic people in the Middle East countries approve of IS. The 80 per cent rating of approval and support is the invincible real reason for the beginning of IS.

With the interference of Russia and the overwhelming situation of Syria, the day of the terrorists has gone, which makes the people turn to support the government forces but not the IS. Under the bombardment, the people are forced by the situation and come to realise that.

So there is inherent connection between Islam and terrorists, which is scientific and is the conclusion from probability and statistics.

2. It is a logical error for Saudi diplomat to mention Ku Klux Klan and IS in the same breath.

Civilisation regarding ignorance and underdevelopment as enemies is reasonable and accords with human nature as well as logic. It is justifiable human behaviour which is supported by God.

Ignorance and underdevelopment keeping hostile to civilised countries and groups is not in conformity with human nature and logic. It is behaviour comparable to the devil's. Ignorance and underdevelopment are devils and heresies and need to be resolutely defeated and cracked down on, which is also the will of God.

The Al-Nusra Front makes it clear: 'They do not want democracy but only Islam law.'

So what the Syrian opposition really wants is not democracy, but Islam law.

They do not fight for democracy at all. They fight just because the government led by the president doesn't practice Islam law which impedes the implementation of the law. So they only fight for the Islam law but not for civilisation. They strive to recover the evil devil law and doctrine. They fight for the devil.

So it is not my idea to link terrorist organisations with Islam. It comes from the mouths of terrorists and terrorist organisations. The terrorist organisation commits itself to jihad to recover Islam law. Why are there so many terrorist organisations, terrorist activities, and wars all over the world? It is just because they want to recover the Islam law by undertaking the jihad. According to Hadith, Mohammed says that they will possess seventy-two virgins after they die.

Ku Klux Klan is to protect civilisation from being encroached on, but Islam is to recover the evil devil law by destroying civilisation. Though both of them can be regarded as religious extremism, they are fundamentally different.

Justified extremism and evil extremism.

Ku Klux Klan belongs to justified extremism. They want to protect civilisation and they think that civilisation is mishandled, so they are extreme. As civilisation in most places of the world is protected and honoured, there is no large-scale infringement of civilisation. So the extreme behaviour of Ku Klux Klan is only shown in a few places where civilisation is encroached upon but not in most areas where there is no mass basis or people's support. Having no mass basis all around the world and only representing the behaviour of a few people, Ku Klux Klan is treated as individual impulsive behaviour and aggressive behaviour in individual regions without universality and transmissibility. It cannot be raised to the high level of theory and ideology, so Ku Klux Klan is not a representative of Christianity.

However, 'practicing Islam law all over the world' is a slogan used by Islam to revile civilisation with the devil, and it is an evil ultimatism. What is more, it is supported by worldwide Muslims with a broad mass foundation. The devil can be supported on a worldwide scale, and it has been raised to the ideology level with universality, transmissibility, and specific theory. That is the religion issue. So the Islamic extremism is the problem of Islam.

In fact, it is very easy and you can ask any Muslim if he supports the Islam law implemented by his country. No one dares to answer that he doesn't want that. Because if he says no, he will not be treated as a Muslim and he has to be punished harshly.

But what is 'Islam law'? It is what the extremism advocates, like beheading, throwing people from a high building, suicide bomb and terrorist attack to get seventy-two virgins, which is written in the Koran and Hadith.

Saudi Arabia says Islam is a peaceful religion and proved that by quoting the words of verse 32 in chapter 5 from the Koran: Any wronged killing is like killing numerous people; any kind of saving is like saving numerous people.

A lie needing to be drafted in advance is only functional to the Muslims. People who do not believe Islam should not be full of self-assertion and self-complacence, and feel good about yourselves because those words work not for you.

From verse 33 in chapter 5: 'People who are hostile to Allah and his Messenger cannot only get penalty of death, being crucified on the cross, cutting off his foot and hand on different sides of body or even deportation as reward. That is what humiliation they suffer in this lifetime and in the next, they will be punished more harshly.'

From verse 36 in chapter 5: 'If people are granted everything on the earth and their possession is doubled but they have no religion belief, they will suffer painful penalty and their ransom will not be accepted though they give all their possessions to atone their sin on the day of resurrection.'

From verse 37 in chapter 5: 'They want to go out from Jahannam but they can surely not for their penalty is everlasting.'

From verse 38 in chapter 5: 'Man and woman who steal things, you should cut their hands to punish them and show the disciplinary punishment of Allah. Allah is almighty and full of wisdom.'

The people who oppose Islam are the ones who regard Allah and his Messenger as enemies. Their feet and hands should be cut and they should be put to death.

People who do not believe in Islam should be thrown into the fire and burnt to death to suffer timeless punishment.

According to the Koran, the hands of the man or woman who steals things should be cut off, and that is what Saudi Arabia and IS are doing.

From Islam law, in Western countries, whose hands and feet can avoid being cut off? Who can run away from being burnt to death in the fire? In addition, they will suffer timeless punishment. It is too troublesome to burn with fire, so suicide bombing works better and it includes the function of fire. The suicide vest comes accordingly out.

The Saudi diplomats say it is very ridiculous. Is it a ridiculous thing? Islam wants to cut the hands and feet of all the Westerners and people with no religious belief and then throw them to burn to death in the fire with everlasting punishment. Can you laugh? If Islam is not a heresy, what is it? It wants to spread its incorrect religion culture. I think all of you are completely mad.

85. God reveals different sections of the truth to different nations

1 April 2016

The Koran (5:48)

And We have revealed to you the Book with the truth, verifying what is before it of the Book and a guardian over it, therefore judge between them by what Allah has revealed, and do not follow their low desires (to turn away) from the truth that has come to you; for every one of you did We appoint a law and a way, and if Allah had pleased He would have made you (all) a single people, but that He might try you in what He gave you, therefore strive with one another to hasten to virtuous deeds; to Allah is your return, of all (of you), so He will let you know that in which you differed

Since the human society evolved from a primitive society to a primary society at that time, the ability for mankind to think and accept the truth was extremely limited and they could only accept part of the truth. So God divided the truth into several sections and revealed them to different nations. God divided human beings into different nations in different colours, speaking different languages and living in different regions, so that they could accept different sections of the truth revealed by Allah. Then, God tested whether different human beings could obey the truth revealed by God.

And God requires that different human beings should strive with one another to hasten to virtuous deeds. Nowadays, all the human beings in the world are ugly and evil. Islam is controlled by the demon, and the collusion between Christians and the demon is 'the great prostitute'. Buddhists are prostituting themselves and selling their kidneys.

Having lost its power since 2012, the ancient law can no longer lead its followers to gain brightness. Human beings need cultivate themselves comprehensively to get salvation.

The doctrines convey the original intention of Allah and the standard and realm Allah hopes that human beings can achieve, but part of the doctrines are temporary practices proposed to mankind to adapt to the social environment at that time. Various truths are not contradictory to each other, but mankind understands them thoroughly and uses the appropriate method at the right time to achieve the goal of 'trying to be the first to be good' God sets for human beings.

All kinds of truths are just some tools and methods to be flexibly used to achieve the purpose. Only 'strive with one another to hasten to virtuous deeds' is the eternal truth.

The reason why different doctrines are contradictory, ignorant and evil is that they only pursue the inherent methods and the superficial phenomena but give up the eternal truth revealed by God, which is 'strive with one another to hasten to virtuous deeds'.

The Koran (5:45)

And We prescribed to them in it that life is for life, and eye for eye, and nose for nose, and ear for ear, and tooth for tooth, and (that there is) reprisal in wounds; but he who foregoes it, it shall be an expiation for him; and whoever did not judge by what Allah revealed, those are they that are the unjust.

Both the Koran and Bible emphasize 'life is for life, and eye for eye, and nose for nose, and ear for ear, and tooth for tooth'.

There has always been a heavenly principle in China ever since ancient times, 'a life for a life and a debt should be paid in full'.

God reveals the same truth to any nation.

God's judgment on the fairness and justice of human society is not contradictory to the benevolence between people.

There is supposed to be benevolence between people.

However, there is no benevolence but fairness and justice between God and mankind.

Among them, disputes like 'eye for eye, and nose for nose, and ear for ear, and tooth for tooth' are small disputes which can usually be solved within the scope of moral principles rather than be judged by God or in the court.

Nevertheless, cases involving human life and economic disputes should be judged in the court.

A judge represents fairness and justice, that is, the will of God. God's judgment cannot be replaced by human emotion. God and Allah cannot be denied by human emotion. This is an unrighteous deed.

Colluding with the demon and denying the law of God, the Western society is 'the great prostitute', who should be punished.

Moral cultivation and fairness are two concepts which are not contradictory to each other. As clearly stated in the Koran, God is impartial: 'and (that there is) reprisal in wounds'. This is how we look at wounds from the point of view of God. And God does not reject human feelings and morality. So God said, 'But he who foregoes it, it shall be an expiation for him.' This is how we look at wounds from the perspective of mankind.

If the person wounded can reconcile with the person causing the wounds, then there is no need for God to decide, which is also what God would be glad to see.

You can talk with the victim about virtue and morality, asking the victim not to sue you and you make reconciliation out of court.

If the victim sues you to the officials, then you must be judged and your penalty must be measured according to the law of God.

This is not contradictory. Different principles are used in different places.

The Koran (5:51)

O you who believe! do not take the Jews and the Christians for friends; they are friends of each other; and whoever amongst you takes them for a friend, then surely he is one of them; surely Allah does not guide the unjust people.

As clearly pointed out in the Koran, Muslims cannot take Christians for friends.

It is thus clear that the only reason why Muslims go to Europe is to occupy Europe and to rule Europe but not to befriend Europeans, which is clearly put down in the Koran.

A few days ago, I saw the Pope washing the feet of Muslims. He is completely crazy and has lost his mind.

He’s completely an unreasonable and absurd person without any knowledge.

It is exactly a conspiracy for refugees to rush to Europe, which is clearly written in the Koran.

86. Help to Muslims is Satan's temptation to believers

26 July 2016

The Koran:

[002: 268] Satan threatens you with poverty and enjoins you to be niggardly, and Allah promises you forgiveness from Himself and abundance; and Allah is Ample-giving, Knowing.

[004: 120] He gives them promises and excites vain desires in them; and the Satan does not promise them but to deceive.

[022: 004] Against him it is written down that whoever takes him for a friend, he shall lead him astray and conduct him to the chastisement of the burning fire.

[019: 083] Do you not see that We have sent the Satan against the unbelievers, inciting them by incitement?

The Koran mentioned repeatedly, Satan implements beneficial temptation on believers like terrifying them with poverty and ordering them with scandals. Satan will give property to believers for fame and give promise to believers for temptation. Believers will be misled by Satan and brought to hell.

Satan is the test of Allah on believers.

Satan's temptation to misbelievers aims to curse others and makes people go to hell with it.

In Muslims' eyes, misbelievers are Satan and will go to hell after death. This is a thing repeatedly stressed by the Koran and also deep rooted in the mind of Muslims.

Any influence of the civilised world on Muslims is Satan's test and temptation to believers and will bring Muslims to hell.

That is the reason why the German, French, and European people help refugees but are madly revenged by Muslims.

Since you are not helping Muslims but tempting them, you are Satan rather than goodness. You are not helping Muslims get through the difficulties. It is completely a mistake and an absurd movement of showing your concern in vain.

You need to stop giving any help to Muslims immediately and expel all of them from Europe and your country, and that is the thing you need to do.

Muslims are bombed and attacked because Allah wants to challenge them. Your help to Muslims is destroying the cultivation of them and will bring them to hell. You are hurting Muslims and weakening their faith in Allah. It is a Satan's act. Europeans will receive mad revenge, because this is Muslims expressing their loyalty to Allah.

87. The president of Syria favours the 'Muslim ban', because their country has been deeply afflicted

11 February 2017

Recently, many countries have showed their opposition to the 'Muslim ban'.

Most stringently, the 'Muslim ban' has stipulated that Syrian citizens are permanently banned from entering the United States.

However, the president of Syria didn't oppose this ban but conveyed his understanding and support in public.

Why? Because Syria has been deeply afflicted. Syria is a typical case.

The president of Syria has always said that the war of Syria has nothing to do with the country at all but is purely a war from the outside. The core members and diehards who fight in Syria are not Syrians at all, but terrorists from other countries, including Saudi Arabia, the state of Qatar, and Turkey. Of course, there are also supporting countries such as Hezbollah, Iran, and Russia.

The war wouldn't break out in Syria at all if its government was capable of banning the terrorists they didn't welcome from entering their country.

Today, Syria is in ruins, totally because its government was incapable of rejecting those evil persons' entry to their country and taking control of their borders. In other words, the present situation of Syria is a result of globalisation.

It will be the same as today's Syria if a country fails to take control of its borders, reject admittance of evil persons to it, or ban people from countries of origin of terrorism.

I have discovered that the president of Iraq has also conveyed his dissatisfaction with the 'Muslim ban', because Iraq is also included in this ban.

All other countries have reasons to express their discontent with the 'Muslim ban' except for Iraq, as Iraq is essentially the country of origin for IS. After the overturn of Saddam's regime, former Iraqi soldiers mostly joined IS. This was also the fundamental reason why the Islamic State was so powerful in the war. They were the most powerful regular Iraqi army in the Middle East rather than guerrilla forces on gullies or young soldiers.

Recently, tens of thousands of terrorists were transferred from the battlefield in Mosul of Iraq to the Syrian battlefield after Mosul was encircled. As a result, great harm and threat was posed to Syrian soldiers and people. This was like a part of former American government's work.

It is Iraq that has contributed to terrorists' acts of terrorism. Meanwhile, Iraq is still constantly doing harm to other countries and inflicting them with terrorism. You are impenitent. You neither apologise to the world nor to Syria but still file an objection against the 'Muslim ban'. Men can't be so impudent like you.

The fact that Trump is opposed to Islam and Mexican drug dealers doesn't mean he's a racist.

Recently, some bosses of American technological companies have been saying that Trump is a racist. I think it's ridiculous.

88. Being against Islam and Mexican drug dealers is not racism

18 February 2017

Racism is discrimination and persecution marked by race. For example, German persecution of Jews in the Second World War, riots of Indonesia, and Rwanda genocide are all racist examples. They have one thing in common, that is, inferior local people persecute external people who are economically developed with their population advantage because they think their interest is damaged.

Jews are richer and more excellent than Germans.

Overseas Chinese people are richer and more excellent than Indonesians.

Hutu people are richer and more excellent than the Tutsi.

Local sub-humans are incapable of making money. They are jealous of and bear a grudge against foreign races. They feel they are invaded. Therefore, they conduct persecution and slaughters. It's racism.

Moslems and Mexican drug dealers are not outstanding races. They are sheer inferior races. They are sinful races and people. To expel inferior races and sinful people and guilty races is not racial persecution. It's not racism. Instead, it's protection of the truth and the righteous.

Germans apologised for their offence, so they are civilised people.

Indonesians didn't offer an apology to overseas Chinese people; neither Hutu did to the Tutsi and Japanese people to Chinese people. Hence, so far they are still barbarians and sinful people.

People who are guilty should be punished. That's called fairness. That's called justice. It's fair and justice-seeking to let sinful people suffer.

Still less, Trump didn't punish them but to simply drove them away to protect his own country and people from being hurt. Therefore, Trump is completely fair and righteous. He is not wrong at all. The technological bosses' fingerpointing doesn't make sense at all. It's completely bullshit.

All Muslims are sinful because the Koran has been thoroughly outdated and cannot adapt to

modern civilisation and modern society. Plenty of scriptures in the Koran are anti-mankind and anti-civilisation. As a result, people who follow and safeguard the Koran are found guilty. All of them should be punished because Islam is against mankind and civilisation.

Islamists shall rectify the Koran immediately. Islam must immediately accept modern civilisation and laws, abandon and revise obsolete laws in the Koran. They can get rid of evilness only when they fit in modern society and modern civilisation. Otherwise, they need to be punished.

Mexico is the most notorious drug trafficking country in today's world. The entire country is permeated with drug dealers and controlled by them. Mexico must act like Philippines to execute drug dealers, eliminate them, and fight against them. Only in this way can the truth and justice be upheld. Otherwise, it is the centre of the evil and the origin of demons.

Expelling Mexicans and discriminating against them are not racial discrimination. Instead, it's hatred for the demon and it's an expiation of the demon. It's God's will. It is the truth and it is justice.

89. The United Nation insists that to control the expansion of animosity, it is imperative to revise the Koran

22 March 2017

The idea of stopping the spread of animosity advocated by the United Nations is correct.

We should stop the spread of animosity.

At present stage, the widely used tool for spreading animosity is the Koran. Billions of Moslems believe in the Koran.

To be honest, the Koran is the widely used tool for spreading animosity at all times and all over the world. Koran demands that all pagans and kafir should be killed, therefore making it the biggest origin for terrorism expansion.

The United Nations should urge all countries in the world to revise the Koran and delete all antihuman regulations in the Koran.

If this cannot be achieved, the idea of stopping the spread of animosity is totally hypocrisy, and the United Nations is totally a hypocrite.

90. The White Helmets is an Islamic fraud organisation spreading around the world; it specializes in cheating the stupid Westerners

8 April 2017

We have gotten some evidence from the Internet that the White Helmets pretend that civilians and children are bombed and hurt by poison gas. Actually, it is proven that those pictures chased by Westerners are forged by actors to cheat Westerners.

The evidence shows that IS and the White Helmets are spy organisations specially established under the instigation of Israel for overturning the regime of Syria.

They don't cure the sickness and save patients at all, but shoot a film or mythological TV play. They just make up stories to cheat Westerners.

There is a picture showing an actor is killed with an explosion, full of ash on his face. In the next picture, the ashy deceased embraces the White Helmets, and they take a group photo with smiles. They are a group of professional cheaters.

The Muslim Hadith mentions that Dajjal presenting in the times is IS and the White Helmets.

Dajjal means cheaters in Arabic. They are one-eyed people and really bad. They have the ability to cheat and get away with it under camouflage.

The Muslim Hadith describes as follows: A one-eyed person is really bad, with red hair and a lame. He is a big fat liar and saboteur. His right eye is hideous and projecting. He can't bear children and there is a 'denier' word on his head. After he was born, he talks nonsense to improve human society and guide a right way. He also claims himself as the lord of the world. He owns the miraculous ability to display the mirage heaven and hell. During the process of propaganda, many people follow up with him and are cheated by him. Most of them are Jews. His appearance is the greatest suffering for humans. From the ancestor (Adam) to the end of the world, there is no such a disaster, he has done countless anomalies in the form of degradation instead of promotion. He will destroy everything in the earth. In addition to Mecca and Medina, smog is filled between the East and the West for forty days. Just like a cold, the disbelievers are similar to drunken men. Smog emits from his nose, ears, and orifices. Finally, the prophet Jesus is dispatched to the world and to kill Dajjal.

I think the behaviour that Americans bombed Syria might be cheated by Dajjal. I notice that Israel cheers at it, just like the scene described in the Muslim Hadith.

If the words 'White Helmets' continues presenting in news, terrorist attack aiming at Westerners will be continuous.

Westerns will bleed continuously. They will be attacked by terrorists. This is the result that you believe in Dajjal.

91. Free Syrian Army supported by the West trapped and killed 68 children with chips

19 April 2017

When the Western countries made use of false news and uniformly denounced Syria's use of chemical weapon, the Free Army supported by the West made news again.

It is not false news, but breaking news with pictures and facts—'Free Syrian Army supported by the West trapped and killed 68 children and other refugees fleeing from the battleground with chips, and totally 126 people died in an explosion'.

These days, it is not huge news that hundreds of people were killed by terrorists; what makes me angry is that the Western media that maintains justice remains silent and ignores it collectively for this news with such hyping value.

The picture that a child with dust on his face is sitting in the chair is spread by the Western media; that child is still alive but made up and a little dirty. The Western people care about it in such a way.

Today, 68 children died, in a way of trapping a cat, dog, and chick. The Free Army supported by the West disguised the self-explosion vehicle as vehicle transporting relief goods, pretended to give out chips for free, collected the hungry children first, and then exploded the vehicle. 126 of them were killed, most of whom were children that got together and waited for chips. However, they were killed in the explosion before the chips came.

It was so dramatic that it was more attractive and shocking than a Hollywood blockbuster. But the Western media and al-Jazeera remain silent and ignore it collectively.

Because it was done by the Free Army supported by the West.

The Muslim Hadith said Dajjal is extraordinarily bad.

The Free Army supported by the West can be said to be extraordinarily bad.

There are so many bad men at all times and in all countries; they did a lot of bad things, but none of them is worse than this one—specially targeted at hungry children, trapped and killed with chips.

What are worse are the Western media and Western government even did not report such shocking news to their people. Such a bad behaviour it is.

The Pope, who washes feet of criminals, specially also ignores it, and I could not curb my anger.

Why not ask its global believers to pray for the dead children? Why not call up global believers to oppose Free Syrian Army? Why not call on global believers to blame the Free Syrian Army?

The Pope should give out a hanging rope to every drug dealer, ask them to hang themselves and confess to God face to face, instead of kissing their smelly feet.

It should hasten all the demons to hell, and only leave good people on the ground.

92. England and Egypt have been attacked by terrorism recently, which indicates Muslims are all terrorists

27 May 2017

England and Egypt have been attacked by terrorism of IS recently.

When journalist interviewed local Muslims, they expressed sympathy and support to the terrorism attack by Islamic terrorists, which indicates all the Muslims have the same ideas and behaviour. They are against humanity and civilisation. No one can make sure that Muslim is a terrorist or not.

'No one could tell whether a Muslim is a radical' is an article I wrote on 9 December 2015. Now I add it to my book *Century Sentence*. I hope you can buy one to read.

At least Islam's fundamentalism, Wahhabi, and Salafi are guilty. And it is one thing about how to deal with them. But to convict them is the other thing.

If we do not face the problem, we cannot solve the problem forever. Also, if we do not admit the problem, the problem will be there forever.

What we need to face is that all the Muslims are guilty, and they all are terrorists. The only difference is that some have acted in the public and some have not. Some are terrorists with weapons, and some are not. And there also are some terrorists providing political protection, weapon supply, medical aid, financial support, and training.

First, we should admit that they all have problems, and they all are terrorists and potential terrorists. And convict all Muslims, and then discuss how to deal with them.

As for the terrorists with weapons, we should exterminate them. As for the terrorists without weapons, we should reshape their ideology.

My articles and books aim at the transformation of their ideology. If it does not bring any effect, we need to exterminate them.

To promote and sell my books is also making transformation of their ideology.

I find that Syrian government and Iraqi government will win the war soon. And those terrorists with weapons will be exterminated soon.

After that, we should make transformation for those terrorists without weapons.

We need to burn their Koran. Someone revolting is a demon, and he or she needs to be put to death.

It is a symbol of winning the war of transformation of ideology to burn their Koran.

To burn the Koran does not mean betraying Allah, but the real ideology of Allah.

Allah predicted the Koran will destroy the world several thousand years ago, so there is a self-destruct program in the Koran. There is a clear expression in the Koran that we need to burn all the Koran now.

Koran [17:86]

And if We please, We should certainly take away that which We have revealed to you, then you would not find for it any protector against Us.

All the Muslims, upon the will of Allah, take the initiative to burn all the Koran and the Muslim Hadith. This is obedience to Allah. And do things according to the will of Allah.

93. We need to provide the terrorists with weapons so that they can be killed on the battlefields

30 May 2017

Recently, the United States has sold quite many weapons to the Middle Eastern nations, which aroused the grudging of some Europeans.

This is exactly where people's foolishness lies: should the terrorists be killed on the battlefields, or should they be killed while conducting terrorist attacks in Western nations?

We sell weapons to the terrorists, hoping that they would fight wars like soldiers in the battlefields in the Middle East and eventually they would all die on the battlefields.

If the terrorists have no weapons, they would disguise themselves as refugees and go to Europe for launching terrorist attacks, slaughtering the innocent Europeans with trucks and home-made bombs.

The demon and God are going to have a decisive battle rather than hide for the time being and continue to do evil when God turns his back.

My dear fellows in Europe, don't get caught in a catch-22! Trust the magic of money!

If you want to make money, try solving the unemployment problem. You can also sell huge amounts of weapons to the Middle Eastern nations. Nobody is opposed to this.

The Middle East needs weapons. The Middle East needs wars.

When those who deserve to die out have not died, those who do not deserve to die will be killed. You should let all those damned men die on the battlefields.

94. Terrorism Springs Up because of Overnutrition and over Enrichment in the Middle East.

7 June 2017

Chinese old people often suffer from cancers, heart disease, hypertension, and diabetes. Someone calls them as illness of affluence.

At the early new China era, Chinese people even couldn't be on short commons, let alone diabetes and cancers.

Nowadays, we have the excellent living conditions. People make a pig of themselves, resulting in overnutrition, so as to provide sufficient nutrition to cancer cells, toxic, and harmful substances. Therefore, these cancer cells form cancers through mass propagation.

I think terrorism also has the similar principle. After petroleum is found out in the Middle East, it accumulates too much treasure. People want to make trouble and have fun for too much money. Otherwise, they feel too vacuous and boring.

Moreover, the money isn't created by themselves. Instead, it is created by God. They occupy malignantly. If it is created by themselves through hardships, they definitely won't abuse it. Qatar and Saudi are such typical cases.

They supported Wahhabi and Salafi, created Arab Spring, carried out terrorist activities around the world, provoked a war in the Middle East, killed westerners in western countries by using trucks, bombs, automatic rifles, and axes.

According to Quran, it shows that "As digging out the golden hill in Euphrates, the disaster came with it."

Humans are just stupid. After they have a power, the only thing that they can image is terrorism. People never consider warning of the God, "We should do good works."

Quran emphasizes for many times, "Strive with one another to hasten to virtuous deeds."

If money is applied correctly, the earth can be transformed well. I suggest that the global powerful organization and foundation should be established to greatly transform the underdeveloped areas, turmoil areas, desolated areas and poverty-stricken areas and transform from ideology, military, politics, culture, economy, and natural environment comprehensively.

Your ignorance should be attributed to God. Otherwise, you have no need to exist in the world.

95. It Is a Good Thing for Saudi Culture to Embrace Kind and Forsake Darkness for Light.

26 October 2017

Saudi Arabia announced today that it will carry out cultural reforms, transforming the kingdom into an inclusive society. This should be a good thing.

Originally, I wanted to find them, and let them be honest before God. However, they should run away before they had been in court.

I scared away the devil and fooled the king. I have nothing to do but to go on with my video games. Since the king surrendered, then the Islamic extremism organizations around the world should be secular, collapsed, and disappeared soon.

I believed that the war between Syria and Iraq is about to finish. A culture war is coming soon. I did not expect their master should run away first before the war started. There must be some certain reasons that Saudi Arabia attributed the origins of Islamic extremism to Iran's 1979 Islamic Revolution.

Because after the Islamic Revolution in Iran, various Islamic forces in different countries just saw that they can obtain the political power and lead the Islamic world as long as they made their original religion fundamental and extremified.

Therefore, they are fundamentalist and extremified about their religion, getting more and more extreme, ambitious and greed, wanting to lead the Islamic world.

The purpose of the original religion and being extremified is to compete the speaking and leading right in Islamic world. And Turkey also wants to enjoy a piece of cake in Islamic world. There is no good person in such a chaotic world.

Although Iran is the birthplace of the Islamic Revolution, Iran's problems are:

1. Anti-Jewish

2. Anti-America

3. Union of church and state

Iran should not be to blame for the terrorist attack around the world. Sunnite has done most of the Islamic terrorist attacks. You may say that Hezbollah also uses rockets to attack Israel. But the problem of Hezbollah and Israel is a war act and cannot be completely considered as a terrorist

attack. And most countries in the world currently oppose Israel, even if God supports it.

The problem between Iran and Shiites lies in their routes and policies. There are not many problems about justice or evil. Therefore, Iran is not a bad one, but is obeying the law of God and the Koran.

The problem of Iran is that the current period is the end of religious era. You need to change the ideology and sublimate your spirit. You should accept all the laws that God has revealed, including but not limited to capitalism, communism, Buddhist scriptures, Bible as well as Tao Te Ching rather than just obeying the Koran.

Part 6

Century Sentence The Western countries true story

1. Respect the interests of all people in all nations

17 October 2013

Today's news shows that the Chinese government has good diplomacy with the neighbouring countries, putting forward that we should respect the interests of all nations.

Human nature is really ugly. When there is a certain privilege that wins power in some cases, people will always look down upon those poor countries and their people. They will always search for ways to maintain their privileges. It seems that they can be privileged forever and exploit others forever.

It is so in business, and it can be called protecting the commercial secrets. It is especially true in politics, and it is called privilege. The caste system of India is still continuing now, and this is typical of the privilege and inequality.

Another manifestation of this privilege is the so-called law of the jungle, 'preying on the weak' law, and the hegemony carried out by Americans.

It is because human nature is ugly and people are sticks in the mud. Everyone thinks that his or her behaviour is correct, not accepting other people's ideas and thoughts. Thus, they will not respect the interests of others at the same time.

It is a kind of progress of human civilisation for the Chinese government to show the attitude when it is strong, respecting and acknowledging the interests of other countries.

2. How long can harmony last?

23 October 2013

Today, I see three state leaders visit our country, and they also exchange the anti-corruption experiences, as well as the property publicity of officials.

The situation of China is quite good. It is certain to be welcomed by other countries when China puts forward to respect other countries' interests. It is a harmonious world to respect the interests of other countries. Respect other countries' interests, admit other countries' interests, and have common prosperity and common progress. We often hear this in the news before. It's just a slogan and a kind of temporary political skill. I don't care about that.

It is meaningful whether it can become a kind of Chinese culture and world culture going on forever.

After a few years, in changing a situation or changing a leader, will it be a different attitude to treat others? Chinese history and world history are full of these things. I don't want to see them at all. Hitler also said similar words that human nature is ugly and incurable.

I hope that through the system and the spread of cultural concepts, the ugliness of human nature can be restrained.

The state capitalism system and the harmonious culture can do it. I hope that the elites who are responsible for the development of human beings can see this point. You should not make fun of the ignorance of human beings to maintain your privilege.

Instead, I believe that the elites can get the deserving social status and wealth under the environment of the state capitalism system and the harmonious culture. Moreover, it is the permanent status and wealth.

On October 23, the previous leader of China has many regrets, and there are a lot of problems for the current government to solve. However, it is also a kind of harmony to complete the leadership transition and to have the smooth transition of social changes.

As for ordinary people, we need social changes, and of course, we need social stability more. The problems always existed, and the things should be done one by one. After all, ideals and theory are beautiful, but politics and reality are complex and cruel.

This is merit and this is wisdom.

3. North Korea Executes Artists

25 October 2013

The reason why North Korea executed artists is that 'they gathered together to produce pornographic movies and sell them abroad; in addition, they even preached religions underground'. If such things happened in the early 1980s in China, the related people would also be executed. However, nowadays when Chinese people see this news, they feel shocked and find it unimaginable.

China did the same thing for the same reason on a national scale thirty years ago, which is called Strike-hard Operation.

Recent news has reported that there was a man sentenced to eighteen years' imprisonment for stealing a hat during Strike-hard Operation, and the case was still not closed.

It has been over three decades, and Chinese people and the Chinese society are making progress, while North Korea still remains in ancient times.

I was going to describe North Korean people as shameless, but on second thought, I find Chinese people a few decades ago were barbaric too and even more barbaric than North Korean people.

From this perspective, the human rights, democracy, and freedom pursued and boasted by Western countries really sound reasonable. At least, they are more civilised than the above-mentioned behaviour and are indeed progressive.

Nevertheless, I think human civilisation should continuously move forward and not remain in the presentation of 'human rights, democracy, and freedom'. Substantial progress should be achieved in human civilisation.

4. We are too close to America while too far away from God

12 August 2014

It seems to have come from a Mexican president.

In recent years, many things in China are developing well. Despite a lot of setbacks, the overall situation of China is getting better and better. We could come to the conclusion that there is no major problem in China.

However, when opening our eyes to the whole world, we could find things in other countries seem to become more and more odd and outrageous.

The most odd and outrageous thing for me is what Mexican drug dealers have done and how the Mexican government acts evilly in collusion with vicious power.

Many confusing things in the world seem to have a reason, whether it is reasonable or not, except Mexico.

Many people were killed during the establishment of Israel and Israeli-Palestinian conflict for one high-sounding reason—the land originally belonged to the Jews.

Bin Laden implemented terrorism to fight against America also for one reason—America had deprived them of what they should have.

Some people engage in organ trading for a more reasonable reason—since the people in heresy organisations have already been sentenced to death, why should we not use their organs? I did not say this, of course. I just agree that people in heresy organisations should all be killed. One time when I chatted with some impoverished people, I asked them whether they think it is reasonable to trade organs, and that was exactly their answer, which made me feel very surprised. However, it could be told from one side that organ trading is reasonable to a certain degree, even though it is absurd.

The Irish Republican Army, Chechnya, and independent organisations in Kashmir feel they are being bullied by major powers and want to be independent. However, they do not possess strengths to fight against them, and they have no choice but to use brazen methods to implement terrorism and fight against civilians.

They all have a reason, whether it is valid and acceptable.

On contrary, Mexico does not have a reason. An independent nation that boasts itself as civilised, democratic, and developed is colluding with drug dealers and being manipulated by drug dealers.

The only explanation that I could think of is that democracy is garbage and poison, which could not save any person or any nation.

America has no reason to push democracy to any person, since it has meddled with its domestic affairs and should feel ashamed to advocate democracy.

Mexico should implement socialist, communism, or state capitalism. A drive like the Strike-hard Operation adopted by China in 1983 should be employed by Mexico now to kill all those drug dealers.

America has provided support for Mexican democracy and drug dealers for its own ideology.

America is indeed the chief culprit that makes Mexico far away from God.

5. Government officials in Mexico cruelly exploit the people, in collusion with gangs

13 August 2014

Whenever I think of Mexico, the same picture comes to my mind: government officials cruelly exploit the people, in collusion with gangs.

Years ago, I read a post on the Internet saying that public security is problematic in Sichuan. Gangsters would deliberately find fault with passengers and carry out blackmail, and no one would dare to interfere with such evil behaviour.

Then I commented with an explosion of feelings: 'Bad public security in poverty-stricken areas is a consequence of some evil poor people who were turned evil because of deep poverty, while in affluent areas, bad public security is caused by the exploitation of government officials in collusion with local gangs.'

Unfortunately, my comment was later verified in facts. A large group of gangsters composed of people from various walks of life were found in Sichuan, from secretary of the provincial party committee to street bullies such as Liu Han. Wen Qiang and Gu Kailai, whose power stands between that of the secretary and street bullies, are also among such gangsters. Even their backstage supporter, Zhou Yongkang, is also related to gangsters in Sichuan. With the governance of such evil individuals, do you still think good public security can be maintained?

Drug smuggling in the Golden Triangle is caused by the first reason—some poor people turned evil because of deep poverty.

The same problem in Mexico can be explained by the second reason—government officials cruelly exploit the people in collusion with gangs.

It is a fact that aside from this reason, there are still many other reasons for such a situation in Mexico. But we should find a way to change the status quo.

6. Territory dispute

19 August 2014

At present, the world has many territory disputes, including in China, and the large scale of conflicts over the world are connected with territory disputes.

This is a very sensitive topic, also a very practical one.

I think we need to face ethnic conflicts and territory disputes since they happen and deal with them in a positive way; the past way we addressed them is just 'east wind is against west wind', or 'whose arm is stronger?' determines them.

In my opinion, wars are for elite class to consolidate their status and expand their power at the price of sacrificing many lives, which are shameful behaviour and movements.

As for wars, my view is that like the Taiwan issue, people need to be allocated money and benefit from it, rather than wars.

Another reason for waging wars and forcing to wars is ethnic slaughter and ethnic hatred.

We at least are consistent with Taiwan's culture, language, and words; without ethnic hatred, we even have blood in blood relationship. So some neutral opinions put forward by both of us are easy to accept for us.

But two ethnics with hatred are more reluctant to talk about territory disputes.

The mainland and Taiwan with such family affection has great connection with consanguinity between Taiwan and us; most Taiwan people migrate from the mainland, they have relatives in the mainland, so both people do not have century hatred, and hope for peace and co-prosperity.

But for the blue camp, it is obviously seen that they have no trust in our mainland, because they do not have relatives in the mainland and are strange and not confident in the mainland.

In a perspective of the subconscious in the deepest inner heart, someone who has relatives in the mainland does not believe the occupation of Taiwan by the mainland is an ethnic clearance to them. But other local people in Taiwan who do not have relatives in the mainland are not very sure about it.

Although we know the government in the mainland will not do this and the current government will not even do this, inner fear and distrust make them instinctively be against to the mainland.

Thereby, my point of view is ethnic integration. Consanguinity is mutual trust and safety in the

deepest consciousness between ethnics.

Wars are nonsense, but one kind of war is meaningful; that is a war waged for ethnic integration.

In the past, there was a victorious country requiring people in occupied region to sacrifice their first night right for making hybrid artificially. That was regarded as enslavement of occupied regions. But I think it is ethnic integration; of course, my suggestion is not first night right, but the legal marriage advocated by government massively, compulsively, perpetually. In this way, we will let hybrids be chief administrators and deal with affairs in occupied regions for the purpose of gradually eliminating ethnic difference and finally eliminating ethnics.

If we occupy a region in order to plunder resources and enslave other ethnics and even kill each other, all of these are evil. But if we occupy a region for ethnic integration and elimination of difference between ethnics and long-term peaceful co-prosperity, such wars are meaningful.

This is the unique and perpetual and effective method for solving trivial things in the world.

Without other better ways, the way of 'whose arm stronger?' having the determination will make things worse and worse.

As for the issues of China and other surrounding countries, our leaders also have put forward some mediated methods, which are cooperative developing and sharing benefit. Why these have no effect—the simple reason is the problem of trust.

Ethnic integration is the unique method for solving problem of trust. Without trust, most suggestions are a waste; so is the signed contract, because it has no meaning.

7. Japan and World War II

19 August 2014

Japan and Germany launched World War II, which caused harms to China.

We grew saying this thing in those days.

World War II is the doom that must be experienced by humans from barbarism to civilisation. The establishment of the United Nations and other fairs after World War II indicate the progress of human civilisation.

Over the decades since I was born, I've felt the progress of human civilisation. In other words, people at that time were barbaric human beings, rather than savage humans.

There will be fights in case of any disputes and conflicts between savage humans. However, the technological progress of humans has exceeded the progress of human civilisation so that size of the human slaughter has been increased continuously, together with the increasing costs of conflicts, and the means has also become more advanced and efficient.

So World War II is an inevitable phase of human progress.

Every time there are words heard about the Japanese massacre of Chinese people, have you never had any massacre? Haven't you ever disregarded human life? By recall, it seems the massacre scale is not small. But nobody has ever made the statistics and is reluctant to mention about this.

Of course, the words go in this way: the whole world must seriously sum up the experience and lessons of World War II and seriously face their own behaviour. It's not an essential step to deny fault in history, but it should be called naturally shameless and essentially evil. This is not only for Japan, but also the same for everyone.

8. Countries suffering from wars should draw lessons from the China model

21 August 2014

The Western civilisation adhering to the theory of human rights, democracy, and freedom is only a kind of relative civilisation. It should be said that the American democracy launched after the Second World War is a kind of improvement of the genocide, feudal war, and feudal hierarchy. Although it is indeed a relative civilisation progress, it still is not the ultimate civilisation. Even the Westerners themselves also admit that their democracy system is not the best system.

The China model two years before was not complete enough, and there were many parts remaining to be improved. Now I think the Chinese are quite wise. They can do things quickly and well, which is beyond my expectation. However, Marxism with Chinese characteristics or state capitalism can provide powerful material guarantee and power for the Chinese people who want to construct a powerful nation and build a greater nation.

I believe that lots of people in other countries want to build a strong country of their own and would not allow their countries to be laughed at. But they only have the strong will to serve their country and have no opportunity to show their talents. As for a country, it needs to guide the people with money and unify the thoughts with great power in order to complete anything. None of them can be dispensed with. Otherwise, everything will be empty talk and nonsense. This is determined by the subconscious of people from any country. To do the things of people well, we must have these two things.

State capitalism can provide both of them for the national leaders, and the leaders can make use of them freely. With the assistance of them, the leaders can achieve political ideal and ambition and construct the country well according to the original plan and the grand blueprint.

Democracy, freedom, and human rights are also a kind of tool and slogan used to oppose feudalism, oppression, and genocide, rather than statecraft. These things are inconsistent with the governance of a country and can only lead to turmoil and destruction, let alone any achievements. They only are a kind of welfare brought to the people by good governance in the future. We may entertain and relax ourselves after hard work; however, we cannot earn money through entertainment and enjoyment. Entertainment is incompatible with earning money, and democracy, freedom, human rights are incompatible with good governance of the country.

After the policymakers of one country make a decision, the people must be united to carry out the decision without any objection and opposition to the implementation. If we adhere to democracy, freedom, and human rights, when can we get things done? Only by getting things done can the people have a better life and enjoy human rights and freedom. This is democracy. In the terrorist incident occurring in Xinjiang province, thousands of the local residents tried to

pursue and surround the terrorists who might be their clansmen, which suggests a deep love and cherish for human rights and freedom. And this can be called democracy.

I suggest that those war-torn countries should pay a visit to China to learn Marxism with Chinese characteristics, or state capitalism, and draw lessons from Chinese culture and national policies. You'd better follow China to walk the right way. The American pattern is outdated and is not worthy of learning.

9. The root of the chaos in the Middle East is the privatisation of public resources

22 August 2014

The Middle East is in continuous chaos, practically the focus of conflicts.

I know them by reading some news and related reports. In terms of political system, Middle East countries, Arab countries seem to be feudal monarchy, at least in essence.

Saddam, Gadhafi, even the president of Syria are all autocratic rulers of monarchy or similar monarchy, no matter what its form is, what it's called, and whether they are kings or presidents. In essence, it is absolute monarchy.

That's why the West detests them and practices the so-called democratic revolution. It does belong to autocracy in the perspective of Western civilisation, with some sense of genocide in it.

In my opinion, the chaotic Middle East is rooted in feudal private ownership or capitalist private ownership. It is simple that I have always been criticising those Islamic countries' inability of doing anything else except for relying on oil.

Most chaotic counties are dependent on oil sale. The decrease of oil production rate in Syria and its drained resources led to conflicts and even wars.

The core question is whom the oil belongs to. I won't even say the oil belongs to the whole world; at least it belongs to the inhabitants living on this land.

It's said in the Bible that oil is a gift for some people from God, who bestowed the resources of this land to the inhabitants here, instead of somebody, some king, or some warlord.

Everyone on this land has the same interest right to these resources. And everyone on this land should equally enjoy the interest and benefits brought by these resources.

It's bullshit in capitalism that it belongs to the developers. The developers should gain some interest, but only a reasonable part.

It can be calculated how much you've spent in tapping these resources and how much profit you want. You can leave after we've paid you.

The exploitation and ownership of these resources are two different concepts. The repayment gained from the exploitation of resources is limited, which can't change the fact that the oil belongs to God and all people on this land. So the capitalist way is unjustifiable. And the feudal

monarchy way is even shameless.

All lands under the heaven belong to the king; all people with land are the king's servants. It's even bullshit to follow the feudal monarchy way that oil only belongs to the king and it is the king who divides it to his servants.

Louis XVI has been beheaded for a long time. Anyone who says this should also be beheaded. So the only way to solve the problem is Marxism, communism, or state capitalism. The idea of Marxist communism will definitely be suitable in resource-dependent countries in the Middle East.

All oil and land resources belong to the country, with the Three Represents party controlling and managing these resources on behalf of the whole nation.

The root of the Middle East affairs is that the oil resource belonging to God is taken up by a few people, with the others disputing and fighting against it. And with racial problems involved, even some minorities holding a lot of resources, riot escalated into genocide.

I think they should establish the Communist Party, accepting guidance and help from China, with only the Communist Party in power, and representing like China the interest of the whole nation instead of a few people or only the communists.

In addition, China's minority policies are also successful. There have been many campaigns and conflicts since the establishment of China, but there are no ethnic conflicts but divergence and conflict in ideology. So genocide is unfamiliar and unbelievable to us.

It's well connected with the ethnic policies implemented since the establishment of China by Chairman Mao and Chinese traditional culture.

I think to change the chaotic Middle East, we should help them support the Communist Party in power to realise communism, Marxism, and state capitalism with the acceptance of China's guidance in guiding principles government. Western countries, Russia, and China all should help them in this way. Anything other than help is invalid, only leading a worse situation and more trouble.

Social elites in war-torn countries should learn Marxism if they want to gain long-term interest. Stability and peace can lead to the realisation of great expectations by sharing interest with the whole nation.

10. Death penalty

31 August 2014

The death penalty is a penalty that lasted since ancient times.

Why should some people be killed?

It doesn't mean I do not respect life. Because people's ideology and soul can be replaced like a machine in order to solve the problem. Some souls and consciousness simply can't be changed; it's better to let them be born again than leave them in the world. Or they should never be a man. This is a relief for all.

I have even experienced the religious extremist ideology, or religious fanaticism people. Their ideology is simply different from ordinary people. They are really like the evil spirit and completely different from logical thinking of normal persons. It's simply impossible to have words with them. Only death can terminate all.

Although those people appropriate for the death penalty may not necessarily be religious extremists, they must have done something that is a great harm to the society to reach the standards of the death penalty.

The logical thinking and souls of those people that have caused great harm to society are very different from the normal persons and undone. Only death can let them be relieved, making us all free.

The capitalist countries are advocating and proud of the abolition of the death penalty, and they're also self-complacent about abolition of death penalty as human rights and civilisation. It is simply self-deception.

The most fundamental reason for the capitalist countries to abolish the death penalty is that they want to leave an excuse for their own sins, leaving a way out, because the primitive accumulation of the capitalist countries was obtained in blood, full of sin. We can't say that they do the bad things absolutely, but at least all of them have done illegal things.

They are afraid of being punished, tried, or sentenced to death once their illegal acts are discovered. So when they are in their reign, they use their legislative power to abolish the death penalty. All the laws enacted by them are to make money for the capitalists or set in order to get rid of sins. Of course there are a number of mainland laws.

They preach democracy, human rights, freedom, which all is to destroy the fairness, justice in spirit, destroying the law of God, destroying the revolt consciousness of the poor. Letting the poor have low self-esteem, letting the poor be in self-abandonment, letting the poor feel

incompetent, letting the poor think that the rich are supreme, letting the poor forget original sin they committed, the sin of the primitive accumulation committed by the poor makes them feel that the death penalty should be abolished. Original sin should be forgiven and neglected. Furthermore, this idea is considered a culture, making the poor feel it's the civilisation.

In fact, this is a trap; the more the poor feel incompetent and have low self-esteem, the more they think the rich are supreme. The more they feel the rich are justified and they are incompetent, the more they feel the nonsense of the rich is civilisation and culture. The poor forget the original sin of the rich, forgetting there's justice. 'A murderer must repay with his life just like a borrower with money.'

Because of the conflict of interest involved in the market, conflicts of interest with other business groups often leads to gangland-style killings and criminal acts.

There are a lot of people who are both gangsters and businessmen like Liu Han. There are so many people in the capitalist countries like Liu Han, and they will try their best to make ways for themselves after mastering legislative power, abolishing the death penalty. On the cultural publicity, the abolition of death penalty is civilisation, which is to destroy the revolting consciousness from the spiritual perspective.

So the abolition of the death penalty advocated by the capitalist countries is an evil conspiracy. It is a travesty of justice. It is the disciple and accomplice of Satan.

11. Save Africa, save the world

9 September 2014

I think the only way to save those silly children in Africa is what I said, a national integration policy.

We should form a multinational voluntary army and take Africa forever. And then soldiers should intermarry with powerful local people, such as chief of a tribe, warlords, rich people, scientists, and the people who belong to the top 20 per cent.

When considering political system and culture, don't use the individual capitalism that is being used in Western countries; it's out of date.

We need to learn from the Chinese model and use state capitalism public ownership.

Copy what China is using, including labour education system, national policy, public ownership as the main body, the combination of private ownership of economic system.

Form a country and a regime by multiple nations.

Do not believe in any religion; it's better to have no religion just like what people do in China. I cannot see any promotion created by religion.

There are wars in the world every day, but none is truly meaningful. The end of one war is the beginning of another.

I find out that America is tired of this and has no motivation; other countries are just in the same condition.

Remember what the Union did to the Confederate South? Why don't you be as motivated as you were? Come on.

I think all the civilised nations should think about it and do something meaningful, just solve all problems at one time.

Do not start again and again while doing nothing; it would go back to the starting point.

People who don't want to send an army can devote their money; we can also find some mercenary army or send our own army to take place Somalia permanently.

Keeping on supporting others is useless; nobody really works.

We should form united-nation regime and promulgate a decree that local people can get a prize if they are exogamous; otherwise, they would be fined.

People of that race usually have low IQ; we need exogamy to help those silly children in Africa, optimise their race, and raise their IQ.

Those Western theories such as democracy, human rights, and freedom are rubbish and poison.

Only the Chinese model can save the world.

12. Japan Should Immediately Destroy Yasukuni Shrine

10 September 2014

Although we have been saying Japan isn't good at invasion or massacre, I still have a good impression on Japan.

World War II indeed caused harm to human beings, but it was the necessary stage in history. Human beings have to endure sufferings. I don't think Japan should shoulder all the responsibilities.

However, Japan indeed has a problem from the perspective of Yasukuni Shrine. The conflict between Chinese government and Japanese government resulted from Yasukuni Shrine.

It is not necessary to rake up the past all the time since World War II is in the past. However, this problem has to be solved because of the existence of Yasukuni Shrine, or it will become an endless issue.

The existence of Yasukuni Shrine indicates the evil essence and inferior race of Japan, which is a serious problem. Yasukuni Shrine is not just a matter of worship, and it has to be destroyed, demolished, and removed immediately.

If the Yasukuni Shrine is demolished and removed, the responsibility of World War II will be borne by the arrangement of God. It has nothing to do with anyone, and everyone will still be good friends.

If the Yasukuni Shrine still remains, Japanese people should hold all responsibilities in World War II, and every Japanese person has problem and is deemed as a demon.

A lot of Chinese people who have been to Japan think that Japanese people are people with quality, discipline, social morality, and civilisation. One example is that there will be no scrape of people on the ground after the holding of an outdoor meeting with a hundred thousand Japanese people. They think it is a civilised country and a paradise with high-quality people. On the contrary, Chinese people often drop litter carelessly and do not have quality or morality.

At the beginning, I think it may be true, but viewing from the existence of Yasukuni Shrine, Japan has its problem. It is not civilisation, discipline, or quality at all. Japanese people are controlled by demons and have no humanity.

People with quality won't avoid their mistakes on purpose. What is right is right, and what is wrong is wrong. Does it matter if you face it honestly? We have been taught to be honest since we were kids, which is also the root of life. Everyone commits error. Facing it honestly is quality. If someone covers it up on purpose and doesn't admit it, he is doing something not a man but a

ghost should do. He is like a demon and has the nature of evil.

They pretend to be what they are not. In fact, they are concealing the darkness and evilness in their hearts from people and concealing the demon inside their body from people. Those demons are in the Yasukuni Shrine.

Those demons in the Yasukuni Shrine are controlling Japanese people all the time. The sense of discipline showed by them is exactly controlled demons and is also the expression of losing the nature of human beings.

Chinese people have no faith but worship money. Therefore, the characteristics they showed are exactly the nature of human beings and are the natural expression of it. They don't queue up for bus and often run across the street and like striving to be the first and like scratching everything.

It is the nature of human beings. Human beings are greedy and selfish. Just like a bunch of kids in front of parents make a fuss and run back and forth in the park, with no constraint, no repression, and no punishment. It is called paradise and real life.

However, Japanese people are basically living in the country of demons and evils. They are timid and overcautious and are always enslaved by others though it seems no one is restraining them. Nevertheless, they behave meticulously and are afraid to transgress the bounds. They won't even make a little mistake. That is neither life nor civilisation. It is occupied by demon and a world controlled by demon. Those demons are ghosts, souls of the dead and demons in Yasukuni Shrine.

Therefore, we need to blow up Yasukuni Shrine immediately. Only by destroying Yasukuni Shrine can Japanese truly return to real nature of human beings, or they are slaves controlled by demons. They need help if they fail to save themselves.

I think American people have occupied Japan, but they seem to fail to learn lessons from Pearl Harbor. It might need multiple attacks on Pearl Harbor.

Since Pearl Harbor and World War II of Japan were led by demons in Yasukuni Shrine, Japan seemed to be occupied by the United States, but demons entered Yasukuni Shrine, showing the fact that what controls Japan isn't America but those demons. Japan is not occupied at all but conquered. It is just a half-time interval to adjust status and continue the game. Hence, several attacks on Pearl Harbor are required or a serious one is required.

Perhaps American people are too pragmatic, only lay emphasis on material, and don't know about spirit. They hardly know the body is controlled by thought, thought is controlled by soul, and Japan is controlled by demons.

It doesn't uphold justice in the real sense to control Japan in material and form. Justice is truly realised if they make demons disappear and make them go to hell.

13. Japanese culture

11 September 2014

We started to contact Japanese culture by cultural exchange at an early age.

I have watched many animations and spent almost all my childhood with Japanese animation and drama: *Adou Ki*, *Ikkyu*, *The Flower Angel*, *Saint Seiya*, *Altman*, Akira Kurosawa, *Akai Giwaku*, *Doraemon*, *Ningen no shômei*, *Volleyball Heroic Woman*, and so on.

I have a good impression of Japan. From the human nature that reflected from this culture, I can see positivity and justice.

Maybe it is the end of World War II that inspired artists to create, and 'maintaining justice and defeating evil' is the theme of that age; it's easy to arise an echo.

But I have not watched TV for a long time. There is nothing that can touch me. Maybe it's because Chinese people are living happy lives nowadays; they just don't want to remember those miserable memories again. People forget about it, and only think about happy things.

But the Yasukuni Shrine affair makes me hate Japan again and again. There is something wrong with Japan, and this problem is getting worse.

I heard that the Japanese built Yasukuni Shrine in order to remember people who died for their country and hope to inspire people's patriotism.

I know that Seiya, Altman, Kurosawa, and Adou Ki are all fighting for justice.

There is a difference between fighting for justice and fighting for country. Maybe it's hard for normal people to tell the difference between these two, but after such a long time, it's not hard anymore to tell justice from evil.

We approve of Japan because we see them fighting for justice in their cultural works.

Just like no matter how many times he died, Seiya would never give up fighting for Athena and maintaining justice and peace.

But the truth is, the Seiya of the World War II is not fighting for Athena, but is fighting for Hades, and becoming the dog and hawk of Hades. Can't you see?

It has passed for such a long time, can't you see?

The only explanation for this is that Japan has been controlled by evil, and there is no one who

can think like normal people and tell justice from evil.

Why can't they separate justice from evil? Why can't they separate Athena from Hades?

I think we should launch a holy war to Japan, to save the Japanese who were controlled by evil. The only way to tell evil from normal Japanese is occupying Japan firstly and letting everyone vote.

People who agree 'Hideki Tojo and his party are evil, we should blow up Yasukuni Shrine immediately' are normal Japanese, and they are our brothers and sisters; we should take care of them.

People who disagree 'Hideki Tojo and his party are evil, we should blow up Yasukuni Shrine immediately' are not human anymore; they have been controlled by evil, and we should kill them immediately and clean the earth.

The Japanese have been controlled by evil for a long time. The rest of the Japanese should intermarry with other races to clean up the residual evil.

So Japanese are not allowed to marry with people from the same race; they need to intermarry with other people and use this to help them purify the human race.

The whole world should go and help them.

This is my wish.

14. National secession and independence

13 September 2014

The current world is in a mess with chaos happening incessantly, which is mainly attributed to national secession and independence as well as barbaric ignorance of religions. Now, let's analyse national secession and independence first.

Britain is absurd. It instigated rebellion and independence in Hong Kong, China, but failed. Instead, rebellion and independence happened in its own country first. Scotland became independent quickly. The course of nature goes round and what goes round comes round. One cannot do too many wrong things; otherwise, one would be the first one to suffer.

National independence became the liveliest thing in modern times and the contemporary era. Why? It is because of individual culture advocated by capitalism. Because individual culture of democratic civil liberty advocates individual benefits first, and individual benefits are protected first and primarily, and then comes national interest.

Therefore, all territories are also pursuing territory benefits and national benefit maximisation. Since only if it is independent can a territory, country, and nation do things according to its own benefit maximum, and it can protect its own benefit maximisation.

Therefore, the Soviet Union disintegrated the moment it wanted democracy. Everyone advocated individual benefit maximisation, and no one would sacrifice his own individual benefit, territory benefit, and national benefit.

Individual culture of capitalism is the most fundamental reason for national disintegration and independence one after another.

Individual culture cannot guarantee every nation's benefits are protected sufficiently. Individual culture cannot plan and coordinate benefit gains, losses, and disputes of all nations, since individual culture was not born to coordinate and unify. Besides, individual culture is born to fight against coordinating and unifying, common benefit and shared benefit. It is against communist goals proposed by Marx and the Communist Party.

When there are common interests economically, the problems would be covered up; everyone can live in peace with each other temporarily in order to divide the spoils. Once crisis happens, economy declines, the spoils are not divided evenly or are not enough to divide, contradictions would break out immediately. Everyone breaks up and shares the booty.

No morning sun lasts a day. There are always ups and downs in life, and this is the rule of the universe. However, the group disintegrates the moment when problems and crisis happen; it is not beneficial to solving the problems and living through the crisis. Everyone has fortunate and

unfortunate times in his life. When one is fortunate, one should help others out. When one is unfortunate, one receives others' help. This is called casting one's bread upon the waters and accumulating virtue, which is blessed.

This most impudent and absurd thing of democracy is to let some street hooligans and local ruffians decide the country's fate, nation's destiny, and national secession and independence.

Is this something they should consider? Are they entitled to consider these things? They are merely some dictatorship.

Qualities and profession are indispensable for anything, especially politics, philosophy, culture, and economics. It is completely a farce and a trifling matter to let some street hooligans and local ruffians to determine them, just like asking a peasant who has been spending his whole life growing vegetables to do heart transplantation. What is the difference between this and butchering a pig?

Is this something for this kind of unprofessional people?

Therefore, individual culture and private ownership cannot balance and coordinate benefit distribution. The unprofessional system of democracy results in undesirable extension of selfish desire. There are major shortcomings and loopholes in democracy, and even democratic people say democracy is not the best system.

It is private ownership of democracy and individual culture that leads to the chaos of world fission, disintegration, and independence.

15. Small countries have no culture

20 September 2014

I usually learn about the cultural level of a country through some literary works. In my opinion, great powers are very different from small countries.

Great powers have thought and culture, while small countries have no thought and culture in the aspect of literary works. On the whole, the greater a country is, the more culture it will have; the smaller a country is, the less culture it will have. This feeling is true whether the country is rich or poor.

As a great power, it will face many contradictions and the collision of various nations and ideas. To balance all kinds of power and contradictions and strike a balance in such a great power, it is necessary to consider the interests and demands of a large number of people.

To set up a country and maintain national unity under such complicated conditions, culture is needed to unify thoughts.

However, small countries and single-nationality states do not have this problem. There is not so much for them to consider. Meanwhile, there are not so many contradictions in their society. Therefore, most of their citizens have well-developed body and simple mind. There is no need for them to consider others' interests. Therefore, they do not show any culture, quality, inner quality, and upbringing. All in all, they seldom contribute to world peace and development. Most of their literary works are not worth reading.

As a great power, America advocates freedom. American movies mostly promote the personal culture which shows democracy, freedom, and human rights. American culture is the culture of personal liberation. Certainly, some American movies also cover the culture showing social contradictions and revealing the idea of dissatisfaction with the current situation.

India has culture, with a lot of intensive contradictions. India has caste system, capitalism, and various religions. The disordered management of the Indian society is also related to a variety of intensive and complicated contradictions.

Compared with America, Europe has capitalist culture and a long history of traditional culture. In the past, there were many cultures. Now, Europe is split into a number of small countries that have less culture.

Some small countries show some behaviour which lacks culture and quality, disgusting people. Only uneducated people will do such a thing. Educated people will never do that.

For instance, Malaysia Airlines hijacked an aircraft for political appeal, Philippine police refused to

make an apology after killing Hong Kong tourists, North Korea executed artists by shooting. IS hung human heads on telegraph poles; however, they were not a country. With low quality, Islam just had no culture. Japanese refused to admit World War II.

These things can only be done by cockroaches and rats. Educated people will not do these things. So small countries do not need culture. With low quality, most of them are not educated.

For personal interests, they will do everything and lose the moral bottom line.

Some small countries are very dirty and shameless. A lot of turmoil, wars, and war chaos in the world are caused by uneducated people.

Today, do people need to be cultured and consider and respect others' interests?

It is not enough just to depend on personal culture, individualism, and personal interests. Global view and the concept of overall planning are necessary.

Only public ownership and even worldwide public ownership can do it. It is possible and involves a kind of concept and thought.

I think it can be realised as long as the idea and concept can be spread.

Without good examples, and good and correct guidance, people are influenced by a lot of political expediency.

Small countries are just the concrete manifestation of such political expediency. For personal interests, they usually build armies, set up countries, and establish regime.

Culture refers to a kind of consensus, concept, and system of common prosperity, coexistence, and common development in a complex environment of intertwined interests of different populations.

Small countries have no culture. They do little things. Immature, self-willed, and casual, they do not consider long-term interests and others' interests.

Why don't small countries have culture? They do not need deep culture. Without considering the interests of many people, they only need to unify thoughts within a small range and achieve the goal of stabilising the situation through simple and crude intimidation, slaughter, and suppression.

Even in some countries, hundreds of people can launch a military coup and overthrow the government, which just requires hundreds of people to unify their thoughts and balance benefits.

However, it is totally different in a great power. If a great power handles things simply and crudely, others will be cruder. It cannot suppress all the people and occupy the dominant position all the time.

A great power has to balance the interests of all parties. Therefore, a great power has to possess a set of convincing excuses, theories, thoughts, and cultures.

However, the majority of small countries do not have them because they do not need them. Otherwise, they will not be small countries.

16. To cure what's not cured rather than what's cured and to solve what's not solved rather than what's solved

13 October 2014

It's a classic sentence in the Inner Classic of the Yellow Emperor, China's most ancient collection. In my opinion, Huangdi's Inner Classic belongs to prehistoric civilisation. Together with several other classics, it is a gift left to Chinese people and people on earth by God, including oracle and rules of the universe. Ancient Chinese people have used it for thousands of years and now need to use them to adjust and rectify human relations on earth.

It's chaos all over the world because those ancient theories cannot solve relations between people, people and society, people and the great nature as modern productivity becomes highly developed, human technique, and science and technology develop to a certain degree.

To put it simply, old revolution cannot solve new problems. Ideologies and cultures that have been followed for thousands of years cannot solve problems in the process of developed productivity.

Ancient Chinese people had long received oracles and invented China's ancient feudal ethical codes and doctrines of Confucius and Mencius and created ancient Chinese civilisation, but now they need to be corrected.

Foreign people haven't received true and complete oracles all the way.

Even part of religions is kept, but it's incomplete and cannot solve present problems. Instead, it will cause a lot of trouble.

To cure what's not cured rather than what's cured and to solve what's not solved rather than what's solved is what God truly wants to see. This is the expected purpose and conception.

It's the ultimate objective of China's building a harmonious society.

We should not take measures after turmoil takes place in a society, country, or the universe. We need to address fundamental contradictions between mankind and the universe, eliminate all factors that may lead to contradictions before contradictions and chaos break out, and make contradictions never happen and at least wipe them out at their budding stage.

I have interpreted such a concept in other articles. Now I think such an opinion is not only an academic theory but also prehistoric civilisation and oracle.

God hopes that human earth and universe can be operated in this way.

As long as all contradictions and problems can be coped with in advance, the entire country, mankind, and the universe will keep running in a harmonious way.

There's no need of war, slaughter, extinction, hatred, suspicion, fear, despising, and . . .

If human society is full of these things such as war, slaughter, extinction, hatred, suspicion, fear, and jealousy all the day long, it's the shame of God and it's the failure of God.

God created the world, but God listens to varied grudges against the world every day.

Grudges against the world are grudges against God.

It's normal that a few people have problems.

Most people in most countries of the world are having grudges against the world. They are not grudging. They are declaring failure and incompetence of God. It's the last thing God wants to see and it's the most frustrating thing for God.

God created mankind and the world not to look for blame, grudge, and hatred.

Instead, God wants to see everything is going well and all things are operating in a harmonious way. Only in this way can God feel a sense of achievement and God's work is meaningful.

All things are created by God. Love for all things indicates approval of God.

Grudge against anything created by God is negation of God and hatred for God.

If all people like all things created by God from the bottom of their heart, it's the glory of God.

Then how can we like all things created by God rather than grudge and hatred?

We need to have the following:

A body which is to be cured before becoming ill.

A world which is to be solved before becoming chaotic.

For physical health, it's a life ending up without illness.

For the world, it's a harmonious society, a harmonious country, world, and even a harmonious universe.

If mankind cannot achieve it, it's not necessary for mankind to exist because their existence is causing trouble to God. It's better to disappear as early as possible.

17. Extreme countries shall not keep nuclear weapon

12 November 2014

From recent situation and behaviour of Korea, it seems many things done by America are reasonable. It did not solve problems fundamentally but at least solved them superficially.

Korea and China are all socialist countries; at least their banners are.

Socialist system in China is very successful now. People's living standard improves obviously. Society is in an orderly way and harmonious. Economy develops rapidly. China has got significant development.

Even our opponents and adverse camps, who keep different ideology but appreciate each other with us, applaud, congratulate, and learn from us.

Korea, the so-called socialism country who keeps the same ideology and is in the camp with us, makes a stink face to us.

Korea may show a cool attitude. No one prevents it. Korea is qualified to do that when it does better than China in any part, such as living standard of people, economy, and social harmony.

The thing is that Korea has nothing. It is nonsense without a single redeeming feature.

Korean people think about how to escape from Korea, a den of monsters or concentration camp, all the day. They will be executed by shooting when grabbed.

Thinking of China helped Korea for ideology previously; it was not a good deed but played the jackal to the tiger, helped a tyrant to victimize his subjects, and supported evil to hound Korean people to death.

As a ruling party, its potentates do not seek social goods for people but consider about nuclear weapon all day long, and commit murder and arson. This is hideous.

Iran is also like this. Iran's problem is not in people's living standard but religion.

At present, the largest menace to the world is unification of the state and the church of terrorism in Iran. However, Iran is the spirit headstream of Islam Shia. The age of Islam Shia is in Iran.

Now, the Muslim problem is furious and seriously threatens human security in the whole world.

All terrorist activities in the world are all related to Islam. All bad things did by Islam are all related to the age. And all bad things done by Islam are all related to Iran.

What is the motivation and purpose for the aims of Shia in Iran to develop large-scale weapons of mass destruction?

Iran develops nuclear weapon to raise global terrorist activities and communal conflicts to nuclear level.

On the one hand, it pretends to be good. On the other hand, it pampers mobs to commit murder and arson, and all manners of crimes.

Gangdom and bad people do this in all ages.

Islam wants to unify the world by force and threaten world security. All religious sects of Islam are like this, including Iran.

Therefore, Iran is absolutely disallowed to develop nuclear weapon for its absolute unfavoured motive.

18. There should be national compensation in Ferguson's Case

27 November 2014

In China, in addition to criminal conviction, there is always economic compensation in such cases. Because the Afro-American family has really suffered a great loss, they should be given economic compensation. Whether it is an individual or state compensation after all, they've lost a family member, and they should be compensated.

The police could be not guilty, but the state should compensate hundreds of thousands of dollars for the family.

And there won't be any riots.

In the process of law enforcement, the police encountered violent resistance, and he had to pull out the gun to defend himself, which got the Afro-American killed; regardless of the details, the truth is like this.

The police was on behalf of national interests during law enforcement, the Afro-American defied national law and attacked the police. As a result, the policeman had to pull out his gun for self-defence; therefore, the verdict of innocence is reasonable.

But the shooting behaviour involved the problem of excessive defence and caused serious consequences, which shall be compensated. The policeman was on duty when he made that mistake, so the adverse consequences and liability of compensation should be taken by the state. The government should give proper compensation based on the actual losses to the family.

The policeman represents government; loss of a citizen was caused by policeman who was on duty, so it shall be the government to make compensation, which is a sure thing.

The government made a mistake; not making compensation might cause problems, which is the cause for riots. Because the right of a citizen was abused by the state, if there is no access to get national compensation, it will entitle them with all rights to make disturbance.

I don't know why there is no national compensation in the United States, while in China, it is called costs for maintaining stability.

It is said that China's costs for maintaining stability is more than military spending. I don't know whether it is true and how it is calculated. In a word, the government should pay for it.

The United States is so developed and rich; when the government makes a mistake, why can't it take responsibility? It is their behaviour of avoiding responsibility and buck-passing that caused social unrest and injustice.

I think the problem lies in public capital. The people of the United States are rich, but the government is poor.

Because of funding problems, the US government often faces problems such as closing doors and housecleaning. They have no money for national compensation?

That's why the national error couldn't get compensation and caused deficiency of justice.

The funding of Chinese government can be said to be infinite. So they can infinitely, regardless of the price, protect justice and carry out national compensation.

The US government should follow God's will to nationalise God's land mineral, using the income of state-owned capital to maintain justice.

In America, that such a small event could cause a riot only explains their level of social management is still in the stage of small-scale peasant economy, which is very backward.

19. Allowing the public to have guns marks the barbarousness and ignorance

8 December 2014

What does having a gun mean? It means the deprival of others' lives at any time. Guns are used to deprive others of lives.

Every American has a gun, which means American people are ready to deprive others of lives whenever and wherever possible. The others refer to American citizens rather than foreigners.

The aboriginal people of primitive tribes always held spears. Now the society has developed and killing people has been more effective, so spears become backward and should be replaced with guns. It is the difference between Americans and aborigines of primitive tribes in security administration, and there is no essential difference.

America is a benchmark, and all the troubles are caused by the democracy carried out by America casually. America deserves to be bashed because America has enough money to conceal many social problems, while other countries don't have as much, maybe much poorer than America, so they have many obvious and serious problems which are much more outrageous than those of American and more barbarous.

For example, the public in Brazil all hold heavy-firepower weapons, and Brazilian citizens like taking drugs and having firefights with heavy-firepower weapons, besides playing football, and they need to kill one person every ten minutes.

Chinese like crossing the road randomly and sometimes litter, which is uncivilised. However, comparing with being prepared to kill people whenever and wherever possible, Chinese are much more civilised than Americans. The uncivilised behaviour of Chinese is so ordinary it can be ignored directly.

The small country Brazil, needing to kill one person every ten minutes to maintain the democracy, by contrast, can be considered as the civilisation of civilisations.

Moreover, American constitution allows the public to have guns. I felt strange the first time I knew it. Why is killing people with guns included in the constitution? What kind of society is it? What kind of country? What is the logic? What is the civilisation?

The civilisation of the whole country is established on the basis of having guns to kill people, and the whole country shall collapse without the guarantee of killing people with guns.

For common people, the damage brought by social chaos and casualties is different from those

brought by causalities in war.

Social management chaos may cause much more serious damage to ordinary people, because the deaths in wars are predictable, temporary, and regional while the deaths caused by social chaos are unpredictable, and the fear and death can come for people at any time, in any place. The fear and restlessness go deep into souls. It is a world in the control of devils.

Besides material civilisation, spiritual civilisation is more important for the world in the control of gods. Safety is the most essential need of people, the most basic condition for people to realise spiritual peace, and the most basic requirement of civilisation.

Allowing the public to have guns is a manifestation of demons let out every one thousand years, showing in the aspect of having guns. The devils are destroying the old social system. After locking up the devils one by one, the new system shall be established then.

Therefore, allowing the public to have guns marks the dominance of barbaric and ignorant devils. People need to find the way to solve the problem.

20. It is just sissy and fake-eunuch to crack down on drug dealers

11 December 2014

There must be collusion between officials and bandits, and cruel oppression and exploitation of the common people in developed countries if they fail to assure public security.

At present, whether for developed countries or developing countries, the public security is chaotic, among which the most prominent issue is caused by drug dealing.

Many countries, especially American states, are flooded with drug-dealing activities, for the United States is the world's largest drug consumption market; all the American states want to take a bite, eagerly supplying drugs for the United States, which makes the entire America a mess.

In the Middle East, the chaos is caused by Islamic cult, while in American states, it is the drug consumption of the United States that causes the chaos.

The most eye-catching thing about drug traffickers in Mexican is they like skinning live people, killing them, and burning their corpses. But the situation in Mexico is not the worst; at least Mexican citizens are strongly fighting against drug traffickers.

For some other American states, they integrate with drug traffickers; drug trafficking has been taken as a default for all people.

Drug dealing is a typical devil. Drugs are the most typical devil to confuse human beings, a tool and a weapon to control people, because drugs do no good for the body, and they will change the subconscious of human beings, making people lose their human nature. Drug addicts have completely sold their soul to the devil. They are not human beings anymore; instead they are soldiers of the devil. And they will serve the devil. They no longer believe in God. Therefore, drug addicts are both victims and traitors. They betrayed God and took refuge in the devil, becoming the devil's servant.

The most evil things are the drug traffickers. They are not only the servant of the devil, but also thugs and leaders of devils. They are dedicated to capture people against God. So they all should be put to death.

Drug traffickers not only should be put to death, their organs should also be cut out and transplanted to the people who need organ transplants, saving the lives of others. Only in this way can they atone for their crimes. They need to be punished with more severe penalty, for death is not enough to punish their crimes. Using the devil's way to punish devil; that's what we call justice.

Right is right, wrong is wrong, black is black, white is white. The devil is the devil. Human being is human being.

Mistakes made by humans need to be dealt with in a human's way. Damage caused by the devil need to be dealt with in the devil's way.

When the amount of drug trafficking is above certain grams, then the traffickers must be put to death immediately; if they dare to deal drugs and kill people, their organs will be cut out. No hesitation, no negotiation, no bargain.

This is justice. This is how we safeguard the dignity and glory of God. The kingdom of God does not allow the existence of the devil; the devil must be completely extinguished.

It is the implementation of the American theory of sissy human rights that causes the disorder globally, as well as social chaos, lack of justice, and popular indignation.

Using America's so-called human rights theory to fight against the devil is sissy; it is a giggle and flirts with the devil, just posing and fake eunuch, which is irresponsible to mankind. They don't burn any bridges so that when they do something evil, they can use the medallion to save their lives.

In my opinion, America's report of torture is mainly aimed at terrorism; they should take some necessary measures against the cult of devils who hang people's heads on poles. That's nothing wrong.

There is deficiency in the theory of human rights of the United States; it has serious right tendency, trapped by his own theory, which is unable to protect justice.

21. The birth of Israel

11 December 2014

Since the founding of Israel, Israeli-Palestinian conflicts have been unceasing.

Islam is a religion which is severely misled by false prophets and belongs to heresy. Palestine is an area controlled by heresy.

Religious leaders can foresee the future, so it's called religion just like Buddhism and Christianity. They know what happened and what will happen in the world. Hence, disciples are edified first to follow their fate. Only Islam doesn't have a prophet. Therefore, it's recorded in the Holy Bible that Islam is a religion misled by false prophets and needs to be exterminated.

It's because their false prophet didn't notify the disciples but misguided them to disturb the world of God and cause trouble, thus triggering universal anger. Accordingly, it's heresy and shall be wiped out.

The birth of Israel is written in black and white in the Holy Bible thousands of years ago. The entire world has witnessed it, and it's an established fact.

Yet those Muslims are still entangled in disputes with God all the time.

What Palestine people need to do is to negotiate about relocation compensation with Israelis, such as where to relocate, which country is willing to accept them, how much should be compensated, when compensation can be in place and when they can live with assurance. There's nothing else to talk about. It's a waste of time and efforts.

Jews are the cleverest in earning money and should spend some money in making Palestine people settle down. Money can solve all problems. Money answers all things.

The so-called religious leaders of Islam don't admit the Holy Bible, don't admit the prophecy of the birth of Israel in the Holy Bible, and don't cooperate with the Holy Bible to help Israel with its founding either, but they keep intertwined with Israelis. It's obviously noted from the matter that those so-called religious leaders are false prophets indicated in the Holy Bible. They know nothing about the Holy Bible and God, mislead disciples, and cause trouble to Israel and the world. They make chaos everywhere. They are typically devil and heresy.

Over half of the chaos of the world is caused by Islam. If they are not heresy, what can they be?

The evilness of Islam cannot completely have its disciples to blame. Instead, those false prophets are full of nonsense all day long and cannot lead its disciples at all. Even they can betray what's black and white in the Holy Bible, let alone deliver oracles of God to disciples. Those so-called

Islam ringleaders should be captured first so as to prevent them from poisoning disciples and the world, making trouble for God and giving rise to bad things.

22. Ukraine problem

8 January 2015

We have known since childhood that the Russians are brave and skilful in battle, which made them never be defeated. The troops of Hitler and Napoleon respectively were both defeated in Russia.

However, the inner problem could not be solved by battle. The former Soviet Union consisted of many nations and countries and was led by Russia. It was like a team: being comrades-in-arms when in battles and being marketing team when in peace and running for living. A group of brothers run after the team leader, to fight for market, to conquer the market, to make fortune together, to feed themselves together, and to live a happy life.

But when the brothers could not make money from the team and could not gain greater interests other than setting up its own business, the team collapsed.

Even wives would run away in this worse situation, let alone brothers.

I used to be upset with the government's ethnic policy in China. Ethnic minorities in China always enjoy supernational treatment, and even foreigners can enjoy this treatment as well in China. Ordinary citizens are normally unsatisfied with this unfair treatment. But to review this circumstance in the perspective of practical situation, the approach applied by the Chinese government in handling ethnic problems turns out to be correct, and it is also the essence of Chinese harmonious culture over thousands of years.

It is precisely due to this kind of ethnic culture and harmonious culture that ethnic problems were not big issues in China all the time, even when China went through tremendous domestic chaos and external pressure. Ethnic problems were always on small scale.

The supernational treatment China applied to ethnic minorities can compensate for their lack of security and their sense of inferiority. On the other hand, it would help ethnic minorities feel that the government cares for them, is willing to help and protect them, and will stand on their side to solve the problems they are facing.

It is of certain that battles are required in wartime, but the purpose of war is for peace and for peaceful life.

Battles cannot be relied on in peacetime. The main task in peacetime is to lead brothers to make money, as everyone has to raise a family and is smart enough to make its own calculation and wants to live a happy life.

Someone would like to antagonise and counter, but the rest of the family may have different

ideas. Everyone was realistic and the key point was whether they had money and whether they were living a happy life. Whether to antagonise or not is the trick of politicians and has nothing to do with ordinary people who at most act as cannon fodder or onlookers or victims or puppets.

Even now I still do not understand why Russia still tangles with other former Union members; even if the former Soviet Union has collapsed, Russia has democracy and has the same values and ideology.

We China have always adhered to socialism, and now we should call it state capitalism. We have ideological differences with Western cultures. The problems we tangle with Western countries belong to the field of ideology.

The problems that Russia still tangles with Western countries do not belong to the field of ideology, as the former Soviet Union has collapsed. I still do not understand why Russia still tangle with Western countries as Russia has not stood in communism. The only reason may be imperialism and to struggle for supremacy, otherwise I do not how to explain.

It is not objective to struggle for supremacy, and the reason for human struggle is money and interests. America did have money and gained interest in the struggle for supremacy, but Russia seemed to gain no interest.

That's why I think Chinese people are wiser. It is absolute truth when Deng Xiaoping created the theory of black cat and white cat. It is the root of the root to pay attention to interests rather than difference and doctrine when confronting problems. The reason why the brothers are willing to follow the boss is to gain interest, after all. If it is not for a happy life, not for making a happy life for the family, not for houses, cars, family members, or fortune, then what else is worth struggling for? It is nonsense to fight against the exception of the above items and it is pretences and excuses used to fool the ordinary people and it is kind of heresy.

In my opinion, corruption is not a severe problem. The essence of corruption is that the boss enjoys a larger part of the fruit while the brothers share the smaller rest. But generally speaking, everyone enjoys the fruit. This could be regarded as conclusion, as everyone enjoys the fruit, but why come up with the issue of fairness and unfairness? There is no absolute fairness on earth. It is reasonable that corruption is like lubricant to the economy, and it can help promote the development of economy and lift the GDP.

The first step should be solving the problem of fruit and money and then considering the distribution when money and fruit is gained. It needs to be executed step by step.

The issue of fairness should be based on interest. It is nonsense and kind of heresy to talk about fairness if where is no interest.

China has come to the second step: to talk about fairness on the basis of interest.

Money is the fixed index, and without money, all types of problems will come forth. Money could be used to solve every problem and it answers all things. It is absolute truth in the aspect of state governance.

In my opinion, the Ukraine problem is the problem of money. As the old Chinese saying goes, man struggles upwards and water flows downwards. Divorce, remarrying, and group collapse will happen if there is lack of money.

23. The 'great vamp' in the Revelation just refers to the system of democracy, freedom, and human rights

20 January 2015

What is vamp? It is total lack of principle, standard, and outlook of right and wrong. Anyone can have coitus with them as long as it has benefits, and they can do anything with anyone. Even if facing the devil, they can do it considering benefits.

Your democratic country is committing adultery with the devil, also compromises and makes concessions with the devil. Islamic devils want to rule the world created by God and your democratic vamp who protects Islam and compromises with Islam. It is treason to God.

Talking democracy with Islam is to commit adultery with the devil, to help Islam to be in power, to fight against God.

Giving the Islamic freedom is to commit adultery with the devil, to let it freely expand against God, plunder God's resources, harm the people of the Lord.

Giving the Islamic human rights is to commit adultery with the devil, give the devil an umbrella, help them escape the punishment of justice.

Right is right, wrong is wrong, black is black, white is white.

Don't need democratic discussion, justice is objective existence, does not need to be recognised, also doesn't need to be discussed. It doesn't mean that some people do not recognise justice. Some people do not agree with, justice can become evil? It is the logic that does not take responsibility for justice. Nobody does not have the responsibility; she just has to make money and commit adultery and does not care about justice. Democracy is vamp behaviour.

The devil needs restraint, not freedom. Giving freedom to the devil is vamp behaviour.

The devil is not human, does not need human rights. Giving human rights to the devil is vamp's behaviour.

I say you are a sissy, is light and well; the Bible says you are a vamp.

So I have been emphasising on this problem; democracy, freedom, and human rights do need protection, but the premise is, after we realise the national governance, maintaining the state and social, safeguarding the interests of the state and we can talk about this problems.

Just like the world is dominated by men, men need love by women. But it does not mean that

women can take control of everything and the world.

The concept of a woman can be interpreted as giving people democracy and freedom and human rights.

The world is dominated by justice and rationality. The person who is in power needs to love people, give people democracy, freedom, and human rights, but it is not to say that we let democracy, freedom, and human rights control everything. After the rationality and justice govern the world, people can enjoy more democracy, freedom, and human rights.

Because justice and truth are often in few person's hands, first we need the governance and order of the country and the world. We can talk about democracy, freedom, and human rights.

Democracy, freedom, and human rights are a kind of welfare benefit to the people after the national governance well, and a kind of luxury. It must waste a lot of social resources; also, the efficiency is very low.

The way of yin and yang, the man wants to love a woman and the woman must obey the man.

National managers need to love the people, and the people need to obey the national management and social order. This is the basic operation of the world and God's law.

It is also the philosophy of yin and yang of China. There are prehistoric civilisations.

Democracy is against the principle. So God called it vamp. Saudi Arabia is a typical government that does not love the people, beheading women on street; when men do not love women, it's a devil's behaviour.

The woman may have some emotional problems, some mistakes, but sin not unto death. And the emotional problems of a woman are caused by a man that does not love a woman. Love has many ways; letting her go is a kind of love. Finding reasons to kill her, cutting her head off—this is the devil's brutality. Only the devil could do so.

So Islam is an anti-God cult and needs to be exterminated.

24. The United States supporting ultraconservative Islamists of Saudi Arabia is a behaviour that helps devils to fight against God

23 January 2015

The United States, which supports ultraconservative Islamists of Saudi Arabia on the issues of Islam, is called jezebel because this is typical behaviour that helps the devils to fight against God. They support anyone who can benefit them without any principle and justice. For national profit, they even support heresy to do harm to people and act like a barbarian in such a civilised world.

Moreover, the US also supports the ultraconservatives to fight against Iran, the Islamic reformist, which causes IS to get stronger, becoming a devil worse than the Taliban.

We can understand that the Taliban is rooted in Afghanistan because this country is so poor. Endless wars and desperate poverty make Afghanistan one of the ten poorest countries in the world. Even so, they have said some sensitive words. This shows that we can offer them a chance to change. It is better if they learn from China to earn more money, as well as behave themselves, abandoning evil religions and leading a good life.

They are so poor that they are bribed by devils. However, we cannot understand that with such a large amount of money, how can such a geek rise from IS? In fact, in order to fight against Iran, the United States supports Islamic conservative Saudi Arabia, Yemen, as well as devils. They even support IS to overturn the president of Syria.

American government is problematic on this issue and deserves the judgement because it supports devils to fight against God and do harm to people.

On the one hand, American government presses ahead with human rights and declaims other countries; on the other hand, it circumcises women in its Arab allies. They cut off reproductive organs of females with shavers violently without anaesthetics. Police cut off people's heads in public. They even killed a foreign woman two days ago. However, they adopt double standards because people who commit adultery, rape, and robbery will be put to death according to the law. They are indeed devils because all democracy and human rights they advocate are false. They are the great devil in the Bible.

People should have their own principles and should not ally with devils to do anything for their interests. They will be spelled if they change the law of God.

Finally, American government is abandoned and hated by other countries. This is what they get with their logic. Fake things will always be false, and they must wake up finally. IS will no longer support them. In the future, there will be more countries going to abandon them until all countries give them up.

One of the basic laws of God is that God loves everybody, no matter if he or she is black or white, rich or poor, God treats everyone equally. All wealth that God creates should be shared by everyone and cannot be occupied by only one person. However, all American government has done is going against the willingness of God and creates the evil things as well as inequality in the world.

25. Socialist in Middle East

3 February 2015

I just found out that Iraq and Syria are also socialist countries.

For decades, I did not know that they were in socialism. I have to say they are just like North Korea, which is engaging in terrorism under the guise of socialism or cheating with socialism.

All have authoritarian rule under familial control, taking advantages of centralised socialism to engage in family authoritarian rule and make the entire country serve for their families. It is justifiable for Saudi king to request the whole country serve for him, but it is kind of phony and blackmail for Iraq and Syria to build socialism but request people serve for their families.

Soviet socialism has failed and disintegrated. Those socialist countries running after them will also disintegrate. This is a habitual action without solution.

Dominant ideology and the ideas are wrong.

I think the resource-based countries in the Middle East should have their advantages in building socialism, but they failed for unknown reason. Maybe the dominant ideology is incorrect.

They lack of proper treatment methods. I propose the state capitalism in which the management right separates from the ownership, state-owned enterprises are changed into state capital, and the state-owned enterprises are capitalised. It is the right way to introduce Western capital management so as to increase the value of state-owned capital.

It becomes an evil way when going astray from the right way. It can be corrected just by getting a Chinese provincial official as the consultant.

26. The entire human has different degrees of soul deficiency

6 February 2015

From childhood, my family has already taught me to be an honest person and follow the rules. I also wanted to make money happily, get married, and have children, thus to last a lifetime at first.

Gradually, I realise I'm the only one who knows the truth in the world day by day, and I have the obligation to tell the truth.

The truth of the world is that the entire human has different degrees of soul deficiency; it is commonly called 'stupid' by folk of China. All the thinking logic of the entire human are disordered. In fact, no one could grasp the most essential truth.

'Stupid' means fool and simpleton. The stupid of humans is in different degrees, from a low level to a high level.

The First Category

Incapacity, with bad essence—fox category

1. The lowest level is mentally handicapped, idiocy.

2. A more advanced one is neuropathy.

3. A little more advanced one is ignorance.

4. The higher level is parochialism, selfishness.

5. The next higher level is sinister and crafty.

6. A bit more advanced one is glory-seeking.

7. The most advanced one is thinking logic confusion.

The Second Category

Incapacity, without bad essence—pig category

1. The lowest level is mentally handicapped, idiocy.

2. A more advanced one is neuropathy.

3. A little more advanced one is ignorance.

4. The higher level is blind obedience.

5. The next higher level is blind faith.

6. A bit more advanced one is worship blindly.

7. The most advanced one is thinking logic confusion.

The Third Category

Powerful, without bad essence—bear category

1. The lowest level is mentally handicapped, idiocy.

2. A more advanced one is neuropathy.

3. A little more advanced one is ignorance.

4. The higher level is barbarous.

5. The next higher level is bellicose.

6. The most advanced one is thinking logic confusion.

The Fourth Category

Powerful, with bad essence—crocodile category

1. The lowest level is mentally handicapped, idiocy.

2. A more advanced one is neuropathy.

3. A little more advanced one is ignorance.

4. The higher level is unconcerned with others.

5. The next higher level is utilising others.

6. A bit more advanced one is framing others.

7. The next higher level is threatening and intimidating others.

8. The most advanced one is thinking logic confusion.

I simply divide people's souls into four general categories, and each category is divided into different levels. In the present context, no kind of soul is integrated; each soul has some deficiencies.

If the integrated soul of human beings is ten kinds of souls, then the meaning of 'stupid' is that there are different degrees of elements lacking in each soul.

Some lack a lot, and there is no soul basically; vegetables don't have souls.

Just like amentias, they may only have one tenth of soul.

There are more souls of psychopaths; they may have one-fifth.

Just like computers can't realise certain necessary functions without necessary installation programs, images and documents can't be dealt with. And videos can't be played, websites can't be opened. The performance is fool, and the reason is the lack of necessary programs. So it is called stupid.

In my opinion, people all over the world are stupid; no one's soul is integrated.

Everyone has lack of necessary drive programs and application programs. Everyone is not integrated.

And the performance of incomplete is the lack of the same kind of soul in a nation and a region. Because their living habits and living environment are almost the same, their souls are almost the same, and lack of the same elements, and they are almost the same stupid.

We used to call this kind of difference cultural difference in our real life. I think it should be called the lack of different souls, different stupid. Different kinds of fools and simpletons and the lack of souls.

The souls of a rich man and a poor man must be different. Even if their characters and springboards are the same, their opinions must be different.

The opinions of a healthy man and a sick man must be different, even if their characters and springboards are the same.

This is opinion and the subconscious decided by the ability of people, which is the soul.

Whether a man is kind or evil, friendly or harmful decides his basic logic and springboard in considering problems. So kind and evil is the standard to measure souls.

So I divide the four kinds of soul types with the different combination of the two variables. Then the degree of soul lack is made according to the natural abilities, which is also the degree of stupid.

We could take people of all nations in the world into seats with this kind of simulation. We can see the position of their souls and lack situations clearly.

It is important to know one's own limitations. People who know others are intelligent; people who know themselves are wise. Because know yourself and know your enemy, you will win every war.

Even If we can see souls of ourselves and others clearly, how can we do things well? And how can we do things successfully?

I find an animal for metaphor is just for memory and understanding. There is no contumelious concept. But the lack of souls is a miserable thing, and it is not a glorious thing as well. There must be the meaning of denounce, and don't expect me to praise people's lack of souls.

1. North Korea

Because it is a small country, the nation and culture is single. There is no culture of small countries, and I have contacted with people of the Korean nationality. North Korea can be defined as extremist country, but if you say that their people and leaders are bad enough, it is not true. Their souls shall belong to the second category, the category of incapacity and no bad essence, the pig category. They obey, trust, and adore blindly from top to bottom. I also heard that some North Koreans lay badge of Kim Il-sung into bodies. This belongs to stupid of typical pig category.

Now it belongs to democratic society, network times, and quantum age. The whole nation obeys a man, a family blindly. And he does not call himself the king. And is it called socialism? Fascism and Hitler's rule were implemented with the name of socialism. Because one element of socialism is the centralisation of state power, it is the characteristic, advantage, and superiority of socialism. But this superiority is used by individuals to rule a nation. I am not saying that they do it deliberately, because people in the nation have lack of souls, which is seriously stupid.

How can they change the situation? Their lack of souls should be brought up to full strength. The democratic education, human rights education, the education of right and wrong, and the basic logic education of scientific socialism are needed.

2. Islam extremism

Islam extremism and its followers belong to the stupid of pig category.

Why do I say they are incapacity and no bad essence?

Because the reason for them to do so is not harming others to benefit themselves, they do it for Allah, Hadith, and their faith.

Their followers and leaders also obey, trust, and adore blindly. They guide the behaviour of modern people with these things of thousand years ago, which occurs in serious conflict with modern civilisation.

I hope they could understand the original idea of God and Allah, lead Islam world to realise scientific socialism, and find their lost souls again, rebuilding paradise in the world and abandoning the outdated and old sharia and realising new sharia of God and Allah.

3. America and Western societies

America and Western societies are controlled by Freemasonry. Most of the celebrities are Freemasons in Western societies, including some Chinese people.

Freemasonry is a powerful organisation with very bad essence. It's evil, powerful, and ruthless just like snake and crocodile.

Their belief is completely opposite to Buddhism's. In Buddhism, competent people are obligated to take care of their ignorant people. Assisting the generation and bringing comfort to the common people is the real intention of Diamond Sutra.

But then again, competent people don't have to take care of ignorant people. Taking care of ignorant people is the responsibility of God, and not the responsibility of Freemasonry.

Therefore, Freemasonry has no responsibility to take care of ignorant people.

Freemasonry has enacted a series of economic order, social law, and logical thinking, which are beneficial to crocodile.

They are acting by law at least. There are laws to abide by; it is still reasonable. But your poor devils, the poor can't keep up with the situation, and others have no obligation to help you.

So those poor and backward nationalities which envy and hate America and Western countries like Islam and Taliban are unreasonable.

America, Freemasonry, and the Western society are not God. They have no obligation to sacrifice their own interests to give you alms and to slow their steps to wait for you and help you, to give assistance to your pig category, bear category, and fox category. You can't follow the steps of crocodile, so don't necessarily dislike and avoid and encumber the crocodile.

Now, I think that America, Freemasonry, and the Western society are not like that demon should be fought spoken by Islam; they only lack soul just like Islam.

America, Freemasonry, and the Western society are the lack of the soul of the Buddhist.

I just said the land and mineral resources, petroleum, gold, and diamond which belonged to God should be nationalised; collective properties should be shared by all the people. Realise the most basic social public service and foundation platform by these collective properties, and realise the most basic fairness and righteousness.

Just like those newest wealth growth points, all of the wealth created by humans don't need the communist just like it before.

Such as Microsoft typically—it is the wealth created by Bill Gates. Of course, it belongs to his personal property; it doesn't need to be regarded as public property.

Warren Buffett created wealth by financing. Of course, it belongs to his personal property; it doesn't need to be regarded as public property.

China's Internet business is also belonging to the wealth created by humanity itself, and of course, it belongs to the personal property.

Rich and powerful people of the Middle East, Rockefeller family created wealth from petroleum, and of course, they also paid for it. A part of wealth was created by them and another large percentage belongs to God, should be shared with all the people. So it needs public-private joint management and shareholding management.

God loves the people and wants to establish the country with fairness and justice, and it is dependent on wealth and power; it is not only settled by reading some passages of the Bible.

It needs legal tender in cash, real guns, and bullets.

Scientific communism is a kind of system which is in order to help God execute the policies and resolve the issues of legal tender in cash and real guns and bullets.

So it must be executed.

I hope Freemasonry doesn't obstruct the love from gods to human, and don't rock the boat to God, complementing those lost souls of coexisting and co-flourishing, and assist your generation and bring comfort to the common people.

4. Russia must belong to the bear category.

Powerful without bad essence, the Russians never lose wars, so they are powerful. The Russians also have no heart for harming others to benefit themselves, so they are without bad essence.

It is lack of Buddhist wisdom and soul for assisting the generation and bringing comfort to the

common people, coexisting and co-flourishing. At the same time, it is lack of the spirit and soul which take benefits as the foundation and need money hungrily just like Freemasonry.

People need money, countries need money. Ultimately, all things should be done by money.

5. Japan belongs to the fox category.

It is incapacity, with bad essence.

Japan's military strength is restricted, so the ability is restricted. Looking from Japan's Yasukuni Shrine, it positively belongs to bad essence, wicked essence. The negation of the Second World War again and again, seen from the starting point, is dead.

But they have no ability, only glory-seeking, stuff and nonsense, denying the history repeatedly.

Why say it is stupid?

I find it very strange, the things in the Second World War were not done by you, they were done by the people before, and we don't want you to lose money and life. What is your relationship with admitting or denying? Why do you choose glory-seeking? What benefit they could get? I can't understand it all the time.

Why the focus on doing the things which only have disadvantages and no advantages? This is called soul deficit. It means stupid, simpleton.

Your missing souls of coexisting and co-flourishing and assisting the generation and bringing comfort to the common people need to be complemented.

The characteristic can be found the example illustration from the other kind of Japanese culture, and it is ninjutsu culture of Japan.

The Hollywood blockbuster *Teenage Mutant Ninja Turtles* that we have watched was from Japan.

Tolerating is the national culture and national feature of Japan. Analysing the culture and features of tolerating, we can see clearly about the soul deficit situation of the whole nationality of Japan.

Firstly, why do they want to endure? It is because they have no ability, and scarce capacity has given rise to unfavourable current political situation, an unfavourable situation. Because they are short of ability (capability failure), they only could stoop to compromise. So they need tolerating. It explains that there are inferiority factors of no ability and no self-confidence in the subconscious of the whole Japanese nationality.

Secondly, the purpose of tolerating is finding some way to retaliate after the time ripped, so the nationality that takes tolerating as the national culture is certain to find some way to retaliate

when the time is ripping, so Japan is ill-conditioned. This is the national culture rooted in the subconscious.

This is the soul deficit and warp situation of Yamato that was analysed from the culture of ninja.

27. No death sentence for the underworld criminals who kill people is the slut behaviour of Western society to sign agreement with the devil

15 February 2015

Democracy is the messenger of the devil and the anti-God system implemented by Freemasons. The law of God is to achieve fairness and justice on earth, while democracy is to harbour evil and indulge the rich in doing whatever they want. Failure to follow the law of God and escape from the crime is an anti-God behaviour.

'Life for a life, payment for the debt' is the justice and the law of God. However, the Western society and Freemasons have abolished the death penalty, for the protection of human rights. This indeed is the most typical anti-God behaviour and example which causes chaos and evil throughout the world.

The abolition of death penalty, taking human rights as an excuse, facilitates the devil to do evil recklessly with the system of acquittal. It is an example that evildoers are in power.

It is stated in the Bible that Western society is signing agreement and conducting adultery with the devil. As a slut, it can do anything and overturn any principles for making money, completely abolishing the law of God and neglecting the justice.

With justice, small mistakes can be appropriately punished, and heinous murders must be put to death without sympathy, forgiveness, and acquittal, as justice is an answer for victims and God.

The divine rights of kings are empowered by God, so it is only the kings or the governments but not the underworld criminals that are authorised by God to wield the power. It is illegal for the underworld criminals to murder and attack, and they must be destroyed and put to death for their opposition to God's management on earth.

China has just got the gang leader Han Liu sentenced to death. It is the implementation of justice and the law of God.

Even the leaders of drug dealers are free from death in Western society. It is extremely shameless to get the devil running wild, sign agreement with the devil, and commit adultery with the devil. The slut behaviour is clearly set out in the Bible.

Marx said that capital has been bleeding dirty things from head to toe and from every pore since it came to earth. Most capitalists gain their fortune through bloody calling, so they definitely will leave themselves a way out, with the first choice of avoiding death when the capitalist law is developed by these filthy people. God's justice is bound to be trampled and sold as a deal to the devil.

Capitalism is not necessary to completely overturn, as it is worthy making use of good things.

But God's law must be obeyed with justice implemented. Devious people should be killed, just as God said, 'They are cut off from my people.' Let them go to another world and reunite with the devil.

The United Nations and Australia are really shameless nowadays. They put no death sentence to traffickers, further requesting and threatening Indonesia not to kill the traffickers. People cannot be at such an extremely shameless status.

It is hopeless of them to make others do the same thing of betraying God as they are doing. It is great for Indonesia to kill traffickers; however, it is not necessary that high school students should test the virgin status for graduation, to avoid the suspicion of not following the testing rule.

28. Theism and atheism, idealism and materialism

12 March 2015

I have studied science since childhood, and I like physics very much. Since my childhood, my home had almost all electric equipment and goods, which all have been separated, studied, repaired, and reassembled by me.

And I once served as a maintenance technician and technical manager in our company. I believe in and have studied science and technology. And I am also proficient in science and technology in some aspects.

During several decades from my birth to now, I saw the development of human science and technology.

When I was a child, if someone had a transistor radio which had a pager, it would be something worth showing off. I estimate that today's young people have never heard of a transistor radio, let alone seen a valve receiver. They didn't even see a pager.

There are several transistors in a transistor radio, and today's smartphone has hundreds of millions of transistors.

At present, the factory wants to introduce thousands of robots to replace the workers.

It was about thirty years or so that human science and technology got a very rapid development, which made people feel amazing.

But you should know the history of mankind, or how long it lasts since the emergence of humans' words. It is about three thousand years.

But did you ever calculate how long the universe has been existing until now?

According to scientists, there should be 13 billion years. Compared with the universe, human civilisation is like a brief moment. It can be neglected if we don't pay attention to it.

During this period of 13 billion years, how much civilised progress will happen, and how many magical changes and things will happen? It cannot be measured. It cannot be conjectured and measured by using humans' existing wisdom and strength.

First of all, I think all things in the universe that are known and unknown for our human beings are physical. There is no doubt about this point.

However, the humans' understanding of material is also like a drop in the ocean. There are still

lots of substance phenomena and substance principles that human beings haven't completely mastered. And for some, humans even haven't touched the edge.

Human beings don't understand things, but they are self-righteous and conceited. They think that if they have nuclear weapons, they will be powerful and they can dominate the world. So I think that human beings have an ignorant, rough, poor, and ridiculous existence.

If we calculate 30, 3,000, and 13 billion years with the most simple logic, we will not be arrogant and happy. As long as there is biology, his level of science and technology exceeds thousands of years, tens of thousands of years, or even hundreds of thousands of years or hundreds of millions of years than humans.

If they are standing in front of humans, if they aren't a god, what are they?

This is science, this is technology, this is knowledge, this is reason, and this is also humbleness.

In addition, a lot of things and phenomena that cannot be explained by human scientists happen in our world almost every day.

First of all, we have to admit that this is true, this is matter, and this is phenomenon.

Secondly, these are facts, matters, and phenomena that are beyond humans' science, cognition, and knowledge.

Explaining these with creationism is the most appropriate choice. And it is also correct and logical.

In fact, it doesn't need to debate theism and atheism, idealism and materialism from the point of view. If mankind can realise their own smallness, dirtiness, ignorance, poorness, and ridiculousness, there will be no need to debate all of these. And there is no need to debate this topic.

Because the two are unified, and they are saying the same thing. It is just because of different cognitive levels and angles.

29. Each country shall take recognition of this book as prerequisite of politics

15 March 2015

The book that I write is not for all, because it cannot be understood by most people as far as now, or can be recognised soon.

Even though it would be recognised by many people, it may be blindly followed or forced by tendency, as the thinking logic in this book is not compatible with most people in society nowadays. If it can be recognised soon, I would not write it.

However, it is necessary. Humans must improve souls at this moment, and it's the time to make a choice—change or disappear.

Elites or wiser shall understand at their first sight, but whether they would like to follow or not shall be another thing.

Opinions over long coexistence among humans, human and society, human and nature, human and universe mentioned in this book are the basic concepts and basic logistics as well as the basic method.

This is the most basic structure, without which there will not be reference to civilisation and development. If humans violate these basic concepts, one day they will disappear or be ruined by themselves or by the universe.

Humans now still measure with universal civilisation, which is very ignorant, dirty, evil, barbarous, pitiful, and ridiculous.

The strength of humans is growing constantly, but civilisation does not catch up with science's steps. Such a creature, ignorant, dirty, evil, barbarous, pitiful, and ridiculous, does not own strength at all. In the past, humans fought and attacked each other and made no harm to nature and universe, which left no big influence. But with the development of science and technology, the destructive power of humans towards nature and universe is increasing, which would be a disaster and threat to the universe as well as human self.

Therefore, there must be civilisation of a higher level to require human to make a choice and change.

The starting point of higher-level civilisation is the opinions and basic concepts mentioned in this book—the basic social order and requirement.

Because the royalty and regime have superhuman power—the right given by God. The right of governing country and citizens is given by God, to directly influence people's lives, property, happiness, and health.

Nowadays, social systems and orders cannot negotiate with benefits and needs of all people.

God loves all human regardless of colour or wealth. The necessity of establishing a basic social order and system to maintain, guarantee, and protect profits of all people shall be God's intention.

As a result, politicians and rulers require a prerequisite condition, the basic threshold and concept. Rulers must be the creator and maintainer of this basic social order and system.

Following God's wish, this book is explaining the basic condition, threshold, and concept of establishing God's land.

Chinese have been chosen and destined to be an example since the very beginning of God's creation. Citizens of other countries should follow China's example and learn and refer to establish a country as God wishes, with plans, steps, and goals.

Existence of IS, Israeli-Palestinian conflict, and Mexican drug dealers would trigger God's anger, which shall be stopped now.

30. All Mexican drug dealers must be executed

16 March 2015

I have noticed that Mexico caught several drug lords. A progress as it is, it is far from being enough.

Those Mexican drug dealers must all be executed for they have offended God. What Mexico needs is a war against all drug-related personnel, who should be executed.

I just calculated that tens of thousands of them must be put to execution. It is not catching some drug dealers that matters. It isn't over since they have offended God.

31. Wrong appeals of the Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party

21 May 2015

Syria and Iraq, the Middle Eastern socialist countries, have proposed many wrong appeals that lead to their failures and frustrations. Thus, they are advised to draw inspirations from China's socialism.

1. It is wrong for the Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party to struggle against the founding of Israel as a country.

The founding of Israel is a test posed by the gods for human beings. Whether from the perspective of Western values or traditional worldly values, founding of Israel is not only an insane and inconceivable behaviour but also a brutal behaviour, which must be habitually opposed to.

The founding of Israel is only supported by the Bible, and the countries around Israel are the enemies of God—the Islamic countries which disobey and distrust God.

Therefore, I perceive that the founding of Israel is a test posed by God for not only the Jews but also all human beings, and the test is intended to ascertain whether human beings are loyal to God or the devil and whether human beings select justice or evil.

As a matter of fact, Islam represents evil, demon, and ignorance. In the world, the most evil thing is done by Islam, which invented terrorism, innovatively and romantically. Their evildoing is so cool and surprising.

Finally, the Jews passed the test and built Israel. Islam unveiled the anti-God essence through the founding of Israel. The test is over. It can be counted as the punishment imposed by God on the Jews or Islam because of their anti-God behaviour.

Do not fight against the Jews' founding of a country. Instead, there is a need to minimise the cost for the building of Israel and meet the requirements of Israel through negotiation and compensation according to the Bible. The founding of Israel is an ultimate test posed by God for human beings.

If such a miraculous thing is done successfully and peacefully at the lowest cost, it means that human beings pass the test and grow up, probably able to address all kinds of contradictions they encounter in the future.

Otherwise, human beings will sooner or later meet their doom despite surviving this time. If so, it's better to be destroyed earlier. Do things neatly, not sloppily.

It is wrong for the Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party to struggle against the founding of Israel. This wrong direction will never be supported by the gods.

2. The Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party fights against American imperialism in a wrong way.

First, I strongly agree with Deng Xiaoping's theory: 'It doesn't matter whether the cat is black or white as long as it catches mice.'

Despite the different expressions, Deng Xiaoping's theory is identical to the theory 'benefit is the focus of the conversation between humans, while distortion, abnormality, weirdness, and evil are the concerns of the conversation between demons and human beings'.

The same meaning is conveyed in different ways.

Despite insisting on 'white cat and black cat' principle while dealing with both domestic and foreign affairs, Deng Xiaoping was always able to remain level-headed when addressing the matters of principle. On the whole, he did everything in a correct way, which has laid a foundation and removed the obstacles for the subsequent development of China.

It is not only an art, but also a technique to avoid conflicts while insisting on individual principles and directions in the face of the strong power of the United States and the Western society.

Seemingly, socialism is incompatible with capitalism.

In my own view, Western people, including American people, pay the greatest attention to benefit, and capitalism is equal to benefit centralism.

In essence, socialism also lays emphasis on benefit, which is reflected in Marx's revolution. He argued that capitalists exploited workers ruthlessly and therefore proposed striving for the benefits of workers through revolution.

Since every group and state highlights the benefits between people, please stay in harmony and give priority to benefit.

Instead of discussing on socialism or capitalism at present, we may turn attention to benefit.

As a matter of fact, God's allocation of human beings into different countries is aimed at their respective development.

Socialism and capitalism develop in their own countries. Either socialism or capitalism which can contribute to a better quality of life will be considered correct, great, and glorious. This is fair, without the need to argue with each other. In fact, it is more meaningful to make a comparison about who has more money and which country provides a better quality of life.

Before the socialist countries like Syria and former Iraq achieve satisfying results in terms of economy, science and technology, domestic contradictions, and people's quality of life, they are advised to strive hard from two angles: internally, socialist countries should improve internal strength, and externally, socialist countries should respect the game rules of developed countries and international order as well as lie low to bide their time.

Instead of confronting developed countries, socialist countries are advised to do business in developed countries and earn money from them.

There is no need to confront each other, as every country develops independently. Partnership may be established when cooperation is acceptable.

The Islamic countries like Syria and former Iraq and Muslims are simple-minded, lacking the ability to understand the profound philosophy of life. We can do nothing but to accept the fact.

The same goes for North Korea.

The thought that advocates confrontation and wars is most stupid evil and heretical thought.

People's quality of life can be reflected by money, facts and figures, and people have the ability to evaluate what a good life is.

Many Hong Kong people's opposition against false democracy, freedom, and culture of Western countries means a kind of awakened consciousness, a feeling, and a trade-off. The people rather than the Communist Party have the right to speak.

3. The Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party's inclusion of 'freedom' in its slogan of 'unification, freedom, and socialism' is a severely wrong direction as well.

It is these two severely wrong directions that constitute the external reasons for the failure of the Middle Eastern socialist countries.

Domestic sectarian contradictions turn out to be one of the internal factors, since there has been a lack of clear and correct solutions and ideas for the Middle Eastern sectarian contradictions.

a. Eradication of extremism

b. Theocracy shall not offend majesty. Religious forces shall be not allowed to control the power or enjoy democracy and freedom. In addition, religious forces shall not fight against government.

c. The reasonable benefit of people from different nations as well as the fairness and justice should be guaranteed by dint of communism.

Lao Tzu said, 'Empty people's minds and nourish their bodies.' Such a way will be definitely

conducive to coping with the Islam in the Middle East as the only correct method.

In Western democratic system, liberalism is the most toxic poison for Islamic regions, which will harm not only others but also themselves.

Do not mention democracy or freedom in Islamic regions; otherwise, they will be caught up in the chaos immediately. Instead, the benefit, order, rule of law, and justice should be focused, and the Islamic believers should be guided to highlight benefit rather than ideology and doctrine. In this way, things will become easier; otherwise, problems will come one after another.

Muslims are advised to convey the information of Islamism to their wives, children, and themselves, but do not mention doctrine to the government or influence governmental administration. Government, which should not pay attention to doctrine but monetary problems, will not address other problems except monetary problems. Anti-government behaviour shall not be performed unless monetary problems happen; otherwise, suppression measures will be taken.

Government is only responsible for providing fundamental guarantee as well as ensuring basic fairness and justice and social operation. Spiritual activity is not under the charge of government but falls within the scope of personal human right. The spiritual activity shall not impact governmental administration; otherwise, it will be considered heretical and then will be prohibited.

The Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party's inclusion of freedom in its slogan of 'unification, freedom, and socialism' is a severely wrong direction as well as the poison gas released from the United States to the world.

Socialist countries are supposed to act like China which fights against bourgeoisie liberalisation and upholds democratic centralism.

I guess Islamic believers and Arab Socialist Ba'ath Party cannot understand the true meaning of the words above, and thus, they need to work hard on it.

32. It is good for oil price to decline

22 March 2015

There is no doubt that oil price is determined partly by artificial factors, for some people would manipulate oil price for some certain purposes.

No matter if the oil price is raised or lowered.

If someone is really capable of manipulating oil price, I don't think it is inappropriate to do so. Instead, I call him a hero who is capable and powerful since manipulating oil price is also a manifestation of ability and power.

Like knows like, so I appreciate these powerful people as much as I despise those who are useless but envy the strong.

Oil trade is still a fair transaction whether its price is high or low. Both parties of transaction are willing without being compelled to sell or purchase.

If you are dissatisfied with the oil price lowered by someone else, you are free to raise it if you are mighty enough. Otherwise, please shut up and face the reality.

As Mohammed explicitly put it, it is time to 'eliminate the pigs'. You might as well learn what pigs are. They are the lazy ones who enrich themselves and support their family members only by oil without doing scientific researches, making production, trading, or working. And these guys are pigs in Mohammed's context.

To eliminate pigs, oil price must decline to impoverish them and compel them to work, do scientific research, make production, trade, and become diligent.

Later on, innovation of new energy will enable humans to abandon oil completely. By then, the Arabic Muslims will truly be doomed.

Oil price decline will help some people figure out who are feeding them. Countries that make a living by oil trading are mainly Islamic countries who are fed by the United States and the Western countries. These countries will make a fortune when Western countries raise oil price and become impoverished when they allow oil price to decline.

They don't even feel grateful for the Americans who bring them happy life; instead, they threaten to overthrow countries everywhere insolently.

33. UN Should Support Houthis to Exterminate Sunnites

23 March 2015

Almost all terrorist organisations in the world belong to Islam Sunnites. From the prospective of probability, Sunni is a problematic organisation.

If IS and the terrorist organisation are malignant tumours, it can be said that Sunni is a tumour that is not spreading. At latency stage of cancer, it completely complies with the scientific calculation and scientific logic.

A civilised society should gradually remove these dirty and ignorant tumours. Otherwise, it will be too late to remove them after these spread to our own countries.

UN should not support those tumorous countries and organisations, ignorant countries and organisations, as well as nasty countries and organisations.

It is not a matter of human rights and belief, but it is a matter of good and evil as well as a matter of civilisation and ignorance.

We cannot talk about belief and human rights with the devil. We want justice and civilisation.

The Western countries and UN, which support Sunni, a tumorous country and organisation, are unprincipled and unrighteous, which is a whore behaviour mentioned by the Holy Bible.

At least Houthis who do not wrap their heads with towels—this is worth teaching. Wrapping one's head with towel is Procrustean, hooligan, and evil. They who are savage and ignorant should be exterminated and overthrown.

I believe after Houthis take power, Yemen will not frequently have terrorist attacks.

Therefore, UN should support Houthis to exterminate Sunnites and offer Houthis some military assistance and then Yemen will enjoy peace, and we will no longer need to worry about a Yemen terrorist attack.

34. Two problems to be solved for Israel as a country

24 March 2015

The establishment of Israel is the ultimate test and trial of God to human beings and to the civilised kingdom. The civilised kingdom requires human beings to solve two simple and fundamental problems of understanding.

1. The ownership of the land, that is, whether humans admit land and minerals of land production as belongings of God

Since ancient times, I have only heard of the saying that God created everything in the Bible.

It is not enough to admit that God created all things, but we should also admit that all things belong to God.

It is easy to understand that things belong to its owner. God owns everything he created, of course, not human beings.

God created the land. And land belongs to God. Naturally land does not belong to human beings although they are on it. All they have is the right to use land.

God wants whoever to use it and he can use it. This is his ownership.

God chooses and decides the land for the Jews to found their country. It is up to people's cognitive ability and loyalty to God to admit it or not.

Now the Jews need to found their country on the land of Palestine, so the Palestinians need to give the land. It is written in the Bible and in black and white.

2. Whether humans respect and admit each other's interests

Israel needs to use the land of Palestine, which needs Palestinians to respect each other's interests.

Israel needs to be founded, and the Palestinians need to properly settle down.

They are not genocide Palestinians and making them homeless.

First, the Palestinians must admit the Bible and the ownership of God in land. God has the right to make them move and they must move. Otherwise they are challenging against God by not admitting the Bible and the power of God. They violate the interests of God if they don't admit the authority of God.

The Palestinians must move because they are willing to move. They cooperate with this work and say nothing.

On this basis of this question, we need to consider the issue of relocation and compensation for resettlement.

The Palestinians also need to respect the right and decision of God and the requirement of Israelites to found their own country.

The Israelites also need to respect the property rights of the Palestinians and right to live—if they are relocated, they deserve corresponding compensation and resettlement.

These are two sides which complement each other. If one side does not admit the other's interests, neither of them will achieve anything, which means humans are still dirty, ignorant, brutal, and helpless. Sooner or later, humans will be destroyed by themselves or by others. People cannot coexist with each other and the universe.

These are two basic concepts of improvement in consciousness and cognition.

The founding of Israel can test the cognitive level of human beings.

Humans are dirty, ignorant, and savage.

God loves human beings and represents public interest. Only humans admit God, public interest and value public interest. God can bless all human beings.

Everyone and every country are only concerned about their own interests but not the greatness and holiness of public interest. Ultimately, humans will be destroyed by themselves without protection.

35. Yemen war is Islam internal sectarian struggle and other countries needn't intervene

28 March 2015

Egypt is prepared to form Gulf State Allied Forces to fight against terrorist organisations, which is correct.

The problem is that Yemen Houthis is not a terrorist organisation of IS.

The internal conflict of Yemen belongs to domestic affairs of Yemen. Therefore, Egypt's interference in Yemen's internal affairs by forming Gulf State Allied Forces is not appropriate.

Besides, Houthis is not only common anti-government armed forces, but also is vigorously supported by Yemen military. It is not anti-government armed forces at all, but internal coup. So the internal conflict of Yemen is completely Yemen's domestic affairs.

Other countries have no reason to intervene in Yemen's domestic affairs.

Therefore, Egypt sending troops to Yemen by the name of anti-terrorism is unreasonable and inappropriate.

Why does Saudi Arabia actively attack Yemen? We all know that Saudi Arabia, some kings and sheikhs, want to safeguard the feudal system.

Saudi Arabia wages war against a region in order to safeguard a family and plunder resources.

All terrorist organisations in the world almost belong to Islam Sunnites. To speak more specifically, almost all terrorist organisations are originated from Wahhabi in Saudi Arabia. The Islamic fundamentalism is world-class insanity group.

Leaders of Islam are closely related to Saudi Arabia. In the final analysis, Saudi Arabia is the source of evil and the devil.

To maintain monarchical power, His Royal Highness of Saudi Arabia colludes with Wahhabi of Islamic fundamentalism to intimidate its citizens, ruthlessly exploit them, and plunder resources. The oil in Saudi Arabia that originally is shared by all people in Saudi Arabia and a gift from God become private property of the Saudi king.

One the one hand, the Saudi king indulges in dissipation; on the other hand, the Saudi king is in favour of the terrorism all over the world. The terrorist has become his second army, which mentally intimidates his people, physically suppresses his people, and threatens the entire world.

A few days ago, a woman from Burma was killed on street by a Saudi Arabian policeman. It is an example for Saudi Arabia to safeguard monarchical power and to use brutality and ignorance of Islam Wahhabi to intimidate the people, which are cruel behaviour of anti-human, anti–human rights, and anti-freedom.

For the sake of oil interests, Western countries turn a blind eye to it and claim to protect freedom, democracy, and human rights, which is a whore behaviour mentioned by the Holy Bible.

The reason why Saudi Arabia waged war against Yemen is that the democratic politics proposed by Shia seriously harmed private family interest of kings of Saudi Arabia and other emirates as well as sheikhs. It is behaviour without shame that brings the entire region into war and disaster.

It reflects the antihuman nature of a feudal dynasty. Certainly, unification of the state and the church proposed by Iran is also incorrect because democracy and unification of the state and the church are contradictory. It belongs to another thing.

Egypt is not a sovereign nation, neither a sheikhdom. Egypt is a democratic and civilised country. So do not follow those kings and sheikhs; otherwise, your people will serve as cannon fodder for those kings and it is not appropriate.

Besides, the root cause of the Yemen coup is that Saudi Arabia and America overthrew Ali Abdullah Saleh, former political power, by illegal means. Ali Abdullah Saleh was supported by military and its people but was forced to drop the reins of government. The military and people were not satisfied, so it led to a coup.

In my opinion, the present political power is an illegal government by illegal means to come to power.

Before the war was started, soldiers had fled several times, from which it can be seen that it is an illegal government that cannot win the support of people.

So Saudi Arabia is unreasonable and unjust on Yemen affairs. If other countries want to help, they should first overthrow the birthplace of terrorism and the Saudi Arabia government that supports Islam Wahhabi, which will meet the world's interest.

If Islam Wahhabi is not eradicated, the world will never enjoy peace.

Why can North African countries immediately form allies force to eliminate Boko Haram?

Why can the Middle East countries not form an allied force to attack IS?

Because the terrorist organisation in North Africa is pure and isolated terrorist organisation. Boko Haram is not an agent of any country, has no background, is not funded, and is not provided with weapons.

However, the terrorist organisation in the Middle East is pure hooligan. They have background and are supported by a powerful vagabond group who give them money and weapon and offer training and technology support.

Such background and organisation are sovereign nations, sheikhdoms, Islam Sunnite states, and Wahhabi countries, especially Saudi Arabia.

Their ideology and organisation object are consistent. One plays the hero; the other plays the villain. One is in front onstage; the other is behind the stage. They act in collusion with each other.

Therefore, when Saudi Arabia waged war against Yemen, IS, Syria anti-government armed forces, and hooligan organisations collectively and strongly supported Saudi Arabia at once.

It is an obvious organised crime group. It is an organisation that organises demons to fight against God. People played dumb in the past to show the world.

Saudi Arabia waging war against Yemen immediately tore off its camouflage and revealed its original shape, hooliganism, and axis of evil.

Obviously, Wahhabi countries leaded by Saudi Arabia are the boss of terrorist organisations, axis of evil of the world terrorist organisation, and source of vagabond group.

36. The secular regime stands for material interests, and the theocracy stands for the spirit

8 April 2015

There is an old saying in China, which is 'the theocracy does not offend the kingship'.

As the kingship represented the secular regime in ancient China, now 'the theocracy does not offend the kingship' can be understood as 'the theocracy does not offend the secular regime'.

The secular regime stands for material interests of a nation or a region. Once, Marx said, 'Politics is a concentrated expression of the economy.' That is quite right.

When it comes to material interests between man and man, we all understand and are clever; we all can count the money. Many things belong to all the jurisdiction of the regime, such as houses, cars, money, wife, and children. What all the secular government has done, in the final analysis, are all about the material interests.

Even if you say politics are different, some people may say that capitalism is good and stick to capitalism, and the other people say that socialism is good and stick to socialism.

Why do some people say that capitalism is good? The only reason is that the United States has much money; the capitalist countries have much money. The rest, like democracy, freedom and human rights, are all nonsense. As long as one day it can be proved that the socialist people are richer than the people of the capitalist countries, democracy, freedom, human rights, and all those will be abandoned, overthrown, and marginalised. No one will believe that.

Ultimately, politics means the interest, and the government serves the interests.

There is no need to explain what the interests are; all the people around the world understand it.

So, the interests are a consensus of mankind in the world. That is a basic consensus.

Regarding the interests as the consensus, it can help people to eliminate differences and barriers, to make the human society harmoniously develop.

However, so far people's differences in the spiritual aspects varied, there is no commonality. Even people who hold same religion can fight with each other.

Human spirit can be said to be a kind of spiritual practice, which can be done from different directions. Man is born wise or stupid. Humans' cognitive level is like the leaves; there are no two leaves exactly the same. Two people who have the same cognitive level do not exist. So it is

impossible to achieve humans' spiritual unity.

Thus, it is an evil behaviour destructing humans' consensus on the material world and their management order in the material world by taking spiritual differences as an excuse. It should be completely forbidden like the Procrustean bed. These wicked persons should be killed with lawful authority.

IS is such a heresy. Ruling the material world with the spirit of Islam is exactly the heresy. It is also incorrect that Iran wants to build up the unification of the state and the church. It is allowed to develop its own spiritual practice when people get the material satisfaction without affecting the material interests of others, and do not destruct the rules that society manages the material world at the same time, and when it is also within the management scope of the secular regime.

Otherwise it is a cult, the evil spirits. It must be destroyed.

For example, you can participate in Asian Infrastructure Investment Bank if you think it is profitable. You also can stay out if it is profitless in your opinion. It is consensual. No one can be forced. This is the consensus that the interests have made human beings achieve.

If because of the differences on ideology, or opposing for the sake of opposition, it can be defined as spirit that destroys the material, like the cult and evil demon.

37. Israel needs a cultural revolution in Palestine

10 April 2015

Today, Palestine people are having protest again and Israeli beat one Palestine person to death.

I think the Palestine issue is essentially a cultural issue. Jews established their country in the Palestine area while Palestine people didn't realise it yet.

Palestine people didn't admit it, so it's with all Islam disciples.

This is why Islam is evil and mankind is the most evil. All people are the same: they admit what's favourable for them (Islam admits the Holy Bible is a classic) and negate part of what's adverse to them.

It's why all mankind is dirty, ugly, and shameless—selective blindness and selective negation.

As religious figures, you are using deities as your tools, making fun of them, and using them to seek personal interest rather than showing respect for them. What a sin!

The will of deities is not randomly interpreted by you people. The Holy Bible is not to be arbitrarily distorted and negated by you people.

Islam is showing defiance for deities, so Islam needs to be punished. Hence, the most chaotic, painful, and hapless places in the world are Islamic areas.

If you don't repent, more hapless things will happen later. Just enjoy them.

Besides, now it's the extremely advanced era of all religions. God and people need to have a new agreement and set up a new law. At this time, what was incorrect and unsuitable before should be rectified, changed, and abolished.

In my opinion, Israeli people should study Hitler's motto: 'If you tell a lie often enough, it will become the truth.'

Hitler repeated a lie countless times in order to persecute Jews, thus achieving the purpose of slaughtering Jews.

Hitler is shameless, but the method is absolutely the truth.

A lie which is repeated ten thousand times can become the truth. Hitler turned a lie into truth. Why can't Jews talk God's truth into truth? You don't believe in God, or you don't believe that the birth of Israel is the truth?

Jews should publicise the concept of 'the birth of Israel is the will of God' to the whole world, especially Palestine people and Islam disciples. This is your work.

I think you should carry out a cultural revolution in Palestine area. Cultural revolution was invented by Chinese people, but I think that will work.

You should carry a speaker and use other publicity means in the Palestine area and spread the prophecy and imperial decree about the birth of Israel in the Holy Bible.

As time passes by, they will naturally improve.

Suppressing Palestine people by force is the worst way and illegal. It's something which ignorant and barbarian people do. Educated people need to reason it out and tell the truth. Those who are not educated cannot be reasonable. Muslims don't go to school, so we need to read to them every day. Then they will become educated and reasonable.

If Muslims dare to rebel because Israeli people publicise the Holy Bible, they are unjust terrorists and can be suppressed in a justifiable way.

To deal with Islam, a cultural war is needed rather than military force.

As far as I am concerned, cooperation must be conducted to make Islam's disciples admit that it's an imperial decree to establish Palestine in Israel, in the Holy Bible.

It's the most powerful grasp and handle to eliminate evil Islam in the name of God.

Islam's disciples don't admit the Holy Bible and the imperial decree selectively. It's unjust. It's against God. It goes against Allah.

All Western countries should cooperate with Israel to fight against Islam disciples in the cultural war and communicate to all of them that it's an imperial decree to establish Palestine in Israel. You need to let Islam's disciples in the entire world realise severe and terrible consequences caused by selective blasphemy of the Holy Bible.

Using military force towards Islam's disciples indicates lack of moral culture. We need to be civilised, argue with Islam disciples, and reason it out, thus helping them return to the right path and realise it's an imperial decree to establish Palestine in Israel and destructive consequences are caused by blasphemy of the Holy Bible.

Let God return again to the earth with glory.

38. Render unto Caesar what is Caesar's and unto God what is God's

13 April 2015

This is Christian doctrine, meaning 'religious authority should never violate kingship'.

Following this basic principle, Christianity has been developing smoothly in general. However, Iran has been respecting the unification of politics and religion until now, which is the biggest and most serious problem in this country.

Therefore, Israel has a great mistrust of Iran.

Iran presents serious problems of its own and will cause serious damage to the world.

So Iran is absolutely not allowed to keep nuclear weapons, or even have such an idea. As Iran had and has many wrong ideas, it should do something to make the world develop enough trust in it.

Many of their ideas need to be corrected.

Whether Iran will sign the nuclear agreement or not will have no impact on other countries. Instead, it will just be a representation of its attitude.

On the other hand, it was just for Iran to oppose the matter of Sunni Islam and Wahhabi Islam, which is to safeguard the dignity of Allah and Islam.

Iran should lead Islam to protest against the apostasy and devilment of Saudi Arabia and Wahhabi. And it should also conduct a revolution in countries of Wahhabis, to topple their demonic regime which goes against Allah, carrying on the reform for Islam.

Egypt also mentioned to carry out a religious reform, so the two can do it together. Only by eradicating Wahhabi completely can the Islamic world be peaceful; so can the whole world.

Western countries should help them carry out the religious reform.

Iran is adept in bringing down the regime. They should not always do bad things but should discover their conscience to help the world. Wahhabi regime thwarting Islamic religion reform should be overthrown.

But Iran should not mention theocracy anymore. It is another evil. And it should not object to Israel's founding either.

Frankly, Israel is very far away from Iran and has nothing to do with the material interests of Iran whether it builds its state or not.

And the founding of Israel only involves in the grudge between the Israelis and the Arabs. Iranians are Persians and have nothing to do with that, but still come between them. The Americans can be called the world police, but Iranians are not. However, they still pretend to be heroes and meddle in the matter. In fact, it's really none of their business.

Do not trouble yourself, as you could not get any benefits, but only get into trouble. Do not bring your people endless pain and big trouble just to satisfy some personal vanity and political ambitions.

Any regime that does not consider the interests of its people but only gratifies its vanity can be regarded as a cult's regime.

39. The problem of Japan is a matter of consciousness

18 April 2015

There is no doubt that Japan indeed provided financial aid for other countries post-war, which can be seen as an attitude towards other countries. But it cannot deny the nature of the World War II.

It would change the nature of the aid if it serves as a bargaining chip. Financial aid should be seen as a kindness, a repentance, and an apology for World War II.

Things are different if the aid turns into a bargaining chip to deny World War II. The aid is no longer kind but compensation from the vanquished countries to the victorious countries. Aid is a kind of loan instead of reparations. And a loan is supposed to get back both the principal and interest, while reparation is of course the compensation that should be given to the victorious countries.

Japan's so-called favour is far enough from how many people World War II killed and how much property was lost, with each life counted according to specific reparations.

Official statistics say that Chinese casualties during World War II reached 35 million with $600 billion of economic loss. Only if the money from Japan comes to at least $1 trillion can it be called reparation.

The Chinese government did not claim the $1 trillion war compensation for some reason. It does not mean that there was no damage and casualties without compensation and cannot change the unjust nature of World War II.

If the Chinese government had asked for the compensation of $1 trillion, there would have been no denial of World War II from Japanese. Therefore compassion should absolutely never come to devils.

Japan's World War II problem we now are mentioning is not a matter of money. Both China and South Korea are not short of money.

It is a matter of ideology about whether it is justice or evil. There is no mistake of humans that cannot be forgiven, no matter how serious it is. But when it comes to the damage from devils, rules must be set, justice must be guarded, and the demons must be demolished.

Chinese used to treat the Japanese as human, but now it seems that Japanese are not considering themselves as human.

I already said that Japan is controlled by evil spirits, which is a kind of ideology. Japan is still

controlled by the same evil spirits until now, and that is why they did not admit their guilt in World War II. It cannot be more evil to deny what they did in World War II and worship the Yasukuni Shrine. So I believe that those who do not want to blow up the Yasukuni Shrine are all demons, whose ideology has been completely controlled by evil spirits. All those need to be eliminated.

40. Other than the Israelis and Arabs, no one else has any authority to inquire into the Palestinian issue

25 April 2015

1. Why did the Israelis leave Palestine at the beginning but now demand to establish a state in Palestine? It is written in the Bible of God. Those people who don't believe in God don't know the whole story for this issue and have no stake in it at all. It can only lead to and widen the contradiction by letting those who have no stake in it get involved in the dispute.

For those who do not believe in God to discuss the issues to be decided by God is blasphemy and disrespect to God. Thus, people and countries which do not believe in God and deny the Bible have no right to hold meetings to discuss the Palestinian issue.

2. As the Palestinian issue is the land dispute between Israelis and Arabs, only the Israelis and Arabs shall have the right to discuss this issue. They are the parties involved and know the whole story. They also know the proper limits and scale to deal with the issue, know what to insist and what to give up and compromise. However, allowing those who have nothing to do with the issue to intervene in the dispute is only equal to pretending fairness in stopping a fight but actually helping one side, which will only confuse right and wrong. The more help they make, the worse and more disorderly things will be.

Therefore, it is possible for Israel, Jordan, and Egypt to arrive at an understanding. And the fundamental reason for the Palestinian issue to become more complex afterwards and remain unsolvable lies in the internationalisation of the Palestinian issue. The problems would have been solved earlier if the Palestinian issue was only confined to several peripheral countries between the Israelis and the Arabians, allowing no other countries to intervene, evaluate, or discuss it.

I think the Palestinian issue has now turned into a proxy war. The US supports Israel, while Russia supports Iran and indirectly supports the Palestine liberation organisation Hamas, the Hezbollah. As the behind-the-scene masters don't want the war to stop, the war will never end. There are a lot of Jews in the US, and it is quite normal for them to support Israel. The US can also be considered half of the countries involved. But Russia and Iran are purely confusing right and wrong as this issue has nothing to do with them. Iran belongs to the Persians and does not belong to the Arab countries at all. It wishes to be number one in the Arabic region and dreams of restoring the Persian Empire. It is really absurd for Iran to charge forward for Russia as it does not know about its actual strength.

3. Among the regions hankered after by Israel, the Palestinian region is the only one with no oil resources in the Middle East region. Thus, the Israelis do not rob the land for oil resources at all. Instead, thousands of years before, God already promised the piece of land to the Israelis. There's so much desolate land in Arabia. The problem can be solved easily by finding a suitable place to

arrange for the Palestinian people. The problem of no water resource can be solved by seawater desalination or drip irrigation, etc.

4. The international law was constituted by the American people, while the Bible is made by God. It is rather absurd, completely irrational, and totally illogical for you to find some people totally irrelevant to this issue to overturn the law of God according to the law constituted by the American people.

5. As the state founding by Israel also matters to Christians, it is related to the Arabs and associated with Islam. Islam and Christianity are of the same origin. Some of the misunderstanding can always be clarified in one form or another. It is purely ridiculous for people of other religions or people who do not understand any religion to come over to interfere with the affairs of Christianity, just like asking a sheep to judge human life and death. Those people are mere trash and do not understand anything. Thus, they have no say in the Palestinian issue.

The Palestinian issue should be determined by the Christians with the Bible in their hand. Those who have no religion should shut up as this issue has nothing to do with them.

The Palestinian issue should be reduced to minor issue and then to minimum. The problem will be gradually solved by limiting the contradictions within the scope of the Israelis and the Arabs, and within the scope of Israel and the surrounding countries.

The most shameless behaviour of the Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO) is to shy away from the Bible and Christianity. And it is rather crafty and outrageous for them to internationalise the issue and the contradiction, making the other unrelated countries fight for them and shed blood for the Palestinians while they profit from the conflict.

Palestinians, how come you even have no national pride? Just solve this problem if you have the capability, and accept the reality if not. Don’t be a troublemaker! It is really shameless for you to involve the irrelevant people in the issue and create opportunities for some aspirants.

Those irrelevant countries already have serious problems in terms of the construction of their own country, but they still interfere with the Palestinians to realise their ambitious personal desires. This injustice will be punished by God, and they will sooner or later take the consequences by bringing about disaster and trouble to their own country. The result will be that their people become cannon fodder and victims. Besides this, it will bring no benefits at all.

41. Western Countries Need to Implement Family Planning Policies to Islam and Uncultivated Residents

8 May 2015

At present, Western countries are concerned about the large volume of immigrant issues, and the problem is getting serious. That immigration threatens the living environment as well as the employment environment of the aboriginals.

Currently, the people in the civilised and developed countries pay attention to the quality of life, and are not prepared to reproduce themselves.

However, the population increases dramatically in the countries that are poorer, more ignorant, and more uncultured.

Nowadays, there exists a kind of tendency that those unenlightened people tend to expand and occupy the progressive regions. Moreover, those underdeveloped people are plundering the resources of the developed nations and trying to disturb the social order of the developed countries.

The backward crowd mainly refers to the Islamic and low-income people. They intend to assimilate and corrupt the theory and culture of the developed country.

There were 60 million victims in World War II. Afterwards, human beings established the United Nations. Then, the Americans proposed democracy; they wanted to build democracy and order, which was progress in a certain sense. Nevertheless, it also raised the new problem at the same time.

In the past, the solution to deal with such conflict is large-scale war and mass murder, which would radically reduce the population and achieve a new balance. However, the new international system invented by the United States could not solve the clash of civilisations. They just retarded the outbreak; the result may even be more dangerous.

From this perspective, ethnic extremism and Nazism were attempted to solve this problem fundamentally, with the most primitive way, which is also the most effective way.

The value of equality, human rights, and freedom is a relative progress. However, equality could only be achieved at the physical level. As long as the ideology and culture are distinct, the people are entirely different, which is definitely not equal.

The consequences of such democracy are similar to chronic suicide, especially to the nations of low quality, which is chronic collective suicide.

In my opinion, different countries should adopt different policies to various cultures, religions, and nationalities. The developed countries should take strict family planning and regulatory policies for Islam and the migrants of the undeveloped area. If they violate the rules, they should be deported immediately. Those who cannot be involved in the civilised environment should be deported to their countries and self-reflect themselves.

The expulsion should be better than conflicts, mass killings, and large-scale war. God leads human beings to set up a country. The people should put the interest of their country in the first place as that is their instinct, protecting the benefit of the people and the nation, which is the most vital task for a country.

When in Rome, do as the Romans do. If you want to settle down in a developed country, you have to follow the rules, which is the national sovereignty and inviolable. Moreover, the national sovereignty is the most fundamental interest and power.

The American theory 'democracy, freedom, human rights' must be abolished as long as it is opposite to the national regime. Once the sovereignty of a country is offended, those offenders must be set aside.

For example, there were some Indians fighting in Singapore. As a result, Lee Kuan Yew, the prime minister of Singapore expelled all the local Indians to maintain the social order. This is called safeguarding national sovereignty. That is also the reason that Singapore's development flourishes; and other countries are involved in chaos, which is caused by the democracy theory of America.

We should promote scientific management today; guaranteeing the rights of people is the second step, which is the most reasonable choice.

I consider we should apply family planning strictly to the couples from the same foreign nation, and encourage fertility of the couples in which one is immigrant and the other is native, which will promote the communication of the social integration.

For the marriages between the migrants and locals, which indicates that the foreigner already adapted to the environment, they are no longer foreigners. So we need to encourage such marriage. But for the marriage of two foreigners, both of whom are low-quality, we need to implement family planning to limit the growth of the population

For Muslims, whether local or foreign, workers are required to perform family planning because they are religiously ignorant, backward, and barbaric.

42. The United States launching the Middle East war is right

16 May 2015

The United States launching the Middle East war and the Arab Spring overturned several powerful political figures.

The merits and demerits need to be measured from several perspectives.

1. From the short-term perspective, it caused the vacuum of the power, the chaos of the region, and the rise of the IS after the United States overturned the powerful figures. It is detrimental to the stability of the region in the short term.

The country under the rule of the powerful political figures may not be democratic internally and implement autocracy. But they are unlikely to launch a terrorist attack on a civilised nation in the name of the country, in the short term. From the perspective of terrorist attacks, the United States overturned the autocratic powerful figures, resulting in the prevalence of terrorism.

2. From the long-term perspective, religion and civilisation see it as right.

Several powerful figures in the Middle East are all Islamic fanatics. They will not be a big threat to the world in the short term, because they do not have the power. But if these people master the nuclear weapons, like North Korea, their destructive power and influence on the world could not be compared with the North Koreans. The United States overturned Saddam but did not find the weapons of mass destruction. But if this trend continues, they would definitely have sooner or later.

The fanatic and harm of the Islamic cult is obvious to all. If they still want to possess nuclear weapons, it is unimaginable for a civilised nation.

North Korea is a crazy and brutal country. They have a certain danger to the world, but

a. North Korea is non-religious;

b. North Korea's area small, so is its population; and

c. North Korea does not have the ambition to conquer the world and expand.

The brutality and craziness of the religious nations are different from that of the secular nations. It is not impossible to let the soldiers in a secular country make a suicide attack. This is illegal and infringes upon human rights, while the religious brutality and craziness can make this happen. So if the Islamic nations own the nuclear weapons, their brutality and evil would cause unimaginable damage and threat to the world. Moreover, the Islamic population is numerous,

the economy is underdeveloped, they are ignorant and evil still, and have the ambition to conquer the world.

From this perspective to see, it was totally right that the United States launched the Middle East war and the Arab Spring overturned several powerful political figures, although they caused the chores in the Middle East, the expanding of the IS, and the prevalence of terrorism. But the United States suppressed state terrorism, the religious world destruction, and devastation.

They reduce the state terrorism to individual and local terrorist acts and brutal ignorant acts. The United States is right in this kind of thing. It saved the world and saved civilisation.

Why didn't big upheaval occur in several monarchy nations in the Middle East? That is because the king represents the secular. They are more practical compared to the religious fanatics, from the perspective of their own benefits. They did not have the ambition to conquer the world. But brutality is brutality, ignorance is ignorance. It is just relatively calm in the chores.

The civilised nations still need to do two things in the Middle East. It needs to launch a new war if it is necessary.

a. Islamic religious reform. Islam does not carry out religious reform. It is necessary to keep them in a state of war and chaos. Otherwise, the civilised nations would be in great trouble.

b. Palestinians relocated and Israelis taking over Palestine. This is God's will, which cannot be changed.

Besides, the civilised nations also need to carry out family planning policy on Islam in their nations to restrict Islam and the low-quality population.

43. The Left and Right of Europe on Immigration

20 May 2015

Now immigration in Europe is getting worse and increasingly obvious. I think that is part of the legacy of Nazi Germany. Nazi Germany was extreme right on immigrants and the migrant population. And now Europeans are leaning left.

Nazi Germany believed 'the Germanic people are outstanding people, and the Jews are so good at making money that they have controlled the German economy, looted Germany, they are sub-humans.' That is extreme right.

Too smart and too good at making money are not disadvantages, but advantages. Hitler was so jealous of Jews that he said they were inferior. This is to be jealous of real talent. Perhaps from the perspective of national security and national interests, there may be some truth in this. But Hitler's approach is very extreme. To expand the national interests to the extreme, that is extreme right.

But after World War II, the Americans invented the doctrine of 'democracy, human rights, and freedom'. The reason is that anti-Nazi doctrine is promoted in the world to establish a new world order. This is a kind of the progress of human culture. But it is only a relative progress. At the same time, it has brought a great deal of side effects.

After America's democratic culture dominated in the European mainstream culture, they promoted anti-rightist, anti-Nazi, human rights, equality, and full acceptance of immigrants, foreign culture, foreign race, and Islamic culture. This is extreme left. And they are often caught in a whirlpool of extreme left ideology they could not extricate themselves from. This are the serious side effects brought by democracy. And it has become more and more serious, more and more obvious.

Human beings are so ignorant that they can only do a simple choice—not think, and not analyse.

Select the left, or select the right. Completely persecute alien nations, or fully accept foreign nations. It is a choice, instead of thinking. And they are often caught in a whirlpool of extremist ideas they could not extricate themselves from.

Hitler is extreme right; no one can oppose him. European countries are also now extreme left and they could not extricate themselves.

To protect the interests of the nation is not wrong; it is God's will. It is in line with human nature to allow different ethnicities to govern different regions and countries, to be responsible for their own nation and country.

Acceptance and tolerance of other peoples and other cultures are not wrong. There is nothing wrong with mutual tolerance, mutual learning, mutual competition, and mutual progress.

The keys are the matter of scale, the matter of primary and secondary, the matter of country's governance, the matter of balance of interests, the matter of good and evil, and the matter of choice.

We can't completely abandon the interests of the nation just because the Nazis killed some people. This is ridiculous and ignorant, for full acceptance of letting other nations damage and destruct our own nation.

It is justifiable at a certain point of view and in line with the will of God that Nazis could get the support of so many people. At that time, the Jews did not establish their own country, which had affected the interests of the local Germans. Germans' discontent was justifiable, but the means of expression remained to be improved.

The protection of human rights is justifiable. Protection of human rights is ideological and cultural progress. But the protection of human rights should not affect the national governance, should not undermine the fundamental interests of local people. Protection of human rights is an issue to be considered after the country completes the management and protection of the interests of local people. This is the matter of primary and secondary and sequential order.

Islam is a religion of ignorance and savageness; the Muslims are vicious, producing mass of low-quality population, looting global living resources, causing a large number of terrorist incidents, endangering the security of global civil society and attempting to rule the world with brutality and ignorance.

There are still a lot of people in European countries to support the promotion of this junk culture. People in developed countries were all crazy, completely insane, completely lost the ability to judge. They were of unconsciousness and insanity.

If Islamic culture does not make comprehensive religious reform, the Islamic culture could absolutely be considered toxic and hazardous substances that need strict control.

European people need to live in peace, need to have good quality of life, and do not need Islam.

44. A thorough transformation is required for Africa

22 May 2015

A lot of regions are underdeveloped in Africa. The culture is lagged, economy is backward, and population quality is low. It is mainly controlled by warlords. It should be transformed comprehensively and systematically.

Ideological Transformation

Democratic system is not suitable for the low-quality regions. Feudal system and chief system are the main social organisation forms, which should be transformed.

The China model of state capitalism should be carried out to perform systematic management and state governance.

On the whole, Africa is very backward, and all-around talents are required to promote the quality of population in Africa. The United Nations should recruit volunteers all over the world organisationally. Only the military, political, economic, and other talents can intermarry with African local warlord, patrician, chief, plutocrat, and other elites. The United Nations should have large military and economic support for those volunteers organisationally and purposively all over the world.

With regard to the support and military peacekeeping in Africa, fundamental problems will not be solved, which is just about surface working. In fact, the internal fundamental conflicts of Africa cannot be solved. The quality of population is very low without good education. If problems such as backward economy and tribe conflicts are not solved, it will be useless to only perform peacekeeping.

From the aspect of military, civilised countries should support those military talents who can intermarry with the local bigwigs. Only by intermarrying with the local people can trust be achieved, and only the personnel sent from civilised countries can be necessarily and vigorously supported. Besides, this support will get twofold results with half the effort, and the local public security will be formed permanently. Moreover, it's civilised public security. We need to cultivate a team of new warlords who can get trusted by the locals and civilised countries as permanent warlords. Only when it's guaranteed on military will it be necessary to do further investment and transformation, or everything will be in empty talk.

After obtaining military guarantee, the political, economic, and other talents can intermarry with the local people. Moreover, those people will make investments. They should be encouraged to develop the economy, and they should also intermarry with the local people to blend into the local society. Money should be invested in those voluntary people who are sent from civilised countries to accomplish the expected benefits. Otherwise, that money will be used up and

corrupted by the local bureaucrats and warlords, and it will not exert investment function.

If the points are accomplished, Africa and the underdeveloped areas will be developed, or it will be backward forever.

As for the civilised countries and local people, it's a great opportunity. We should organise on purpose and take actions.

45. Earthquake in Nepal and Buddhism reform

16 June 2015

Nepal is the cradle of Buddhism and birthplace of Sakyamuni. A large number of ancient temples were destroyed in this earthquake. I take it as a sign that Buddhism needs reform.

In my opinion, the reason God created many religions is that the truth is complicated and humans are ignorant. God is forced to divide the truth by perspective and function and distribute them among races and religions so that humans can practice religions in a different way. These religions include Buddhism, Taoism, Christianity, Islam, and communism and democracy human rights culture. With the truth distributed by God, humans can solve all kinds of problems lying in their way from a different perspective, from a different view.

But with the advance in productivity, the reception of humans to knowledge is improving. The social problems humans face and the situations in which humans are caught up are becoming so complex that any single religion can't be independently successful in teaching humans, adjusting social relation, leading forward the modern spirit of humans.

Humans need a thorough review and a full scale of practice of Buddhism. The contribution Buddhism makes to the adjustment of social relation lies in this old saying—doing good and accumulating virtue, sages are committed to rescue the multitude from sins.

This is a significant part of the complete spirit of humans but does not constitute the whole spirit.

It is reported that sixteen thousand Nepalese women go abroad annually to solicit, to the shame of Sakyamuni, whose warning came in the form of an earthquake that religions need reform and previous practice of religions has failed.

How can a Buddhist who failed to rescue the women of his country rescue the world?

The reading of Buddhist scriptures, accompanied by the noisy construction of temples, resonates in a country where a large number of women solicit overseas. It is not a tribute, but a satire paid to God.

Buddha once said it is the Age of Kali; religions need reform so as to rescue the world with a new doctrine.

Correspondingly, IS destroyed many Islamic antiquities in recent days. Losing these may be a good sign. An old doctrine needs to be replaced by a new one. New doctrines should come into practice; otherwise, humans are doomed. As I mentioned before, humans need a complete spirit and a full scale of practice of religion.

46. The one who went abroad to escape from war is a traitor and shall not be elected as the president

19 June 2015

A lot of people in Yemen would devote their lives to fighting for a traitor. This shows that they are ignorant enough to be used by others.

What is a patriot? It is one who would fight together with the people through thick and thin.

What is a traitor? It is one who would specially contact with bandit gangs to invade his motherland, which is also called as renegade or lackey.

Some domestic traitors are hard to identify. When a war begins, some of them go the foreign countries to escape, and they invade their motherland together with some foreign villains. They did it openly.

How can someone who won't fight together with their people stand for the benefit of the people?

They go abroad, have mutton dish, sipping red wine and coffee, and they have air conditioning. The smoke of gunpowder has nothing to do with them, and the bombs won't fall on them. How can this kind of people stand for us? Is there anything in common with our life?

Therefore, the tribal chiefs of Yemen are barbarous, ignorant, and uncivilised. However, they would fight for this kind of people. They are all crazy.

If we lose, they will not bleed; and when we win the war, they take all the honours and come back to reign. How can this happen? You are all mad to elect him president.

We shall send someone who has fought in the front line in Yemen negotiations. Otherwise, it can never draw a conclusion.

You are purely joking on the people's life and blood.

47. UAV shall be used to spray herbicide in prohibition of opium

27 June 2015

Nowadays, the drug issue is a public hazard all over the world, and with the development of economy of China, the Chinese become richer and richer, and they could buy more and more drugs.

The main sources of drugs around the world are Afghanistan and the Golden Triangle.

The governors in these places develop anti-government armed forces with drugs. The Taliban in Afghanistan and the anti-government armed forces in the Golden Triangle use drugs to finance themselves.

I think we shall develop a highly efficient herbicide specific to opium poppy, with which we will spray with UAV in harvest season. They will have nothing to harvest. Let's compete with those growers, and we will see whether they grow faster, or the opium poppy dies faster after we spray the herbicide.

This is simple—the UN or other capable countries raise money to buy UAV and herbicide, and then search for some robots for automatic-search and spray.

This can solve the drug problems, and the anti-government armed forces would lose their finance source, and then they would soon surrender to the government.

In accordance with the measurement of penalty for drug dealing in China, these people shall be executed by shooting, but recently there are no cases of drug-dealer execution.

The quantity of drugs, the number of drug users, and the number of drug dealers being executed are said to be in proportion. If the number of drug-related crimes increases according to the figure, the criminals being executed shall also increase. Crime would be connived because of minor measurement of penalty, and then it would hurt the people. Minor measurement of penalty is the main reason for drug abuse.

It's easy to eliminate drugs, and why can't modern civilisation with high-tech deal with some opium growers? There are countless methods to eliminate them at once.

The question is that humans are too ignorant and evil, and the democratic system of the USA is ignorant and evil as well. They keep thinking about committing murder and arson and killing, but they have never thought about doing good.

48. Gaza international people claim that people on the boat are devils who betray God

30 June 2015

Several thousand years ago, God gave Palestine to Israel.

The West Bank of Jordan and the Gaza Strip are under the control of Israel; this is the willingness of God.

Israel actually has occupied these regions mentioned above, according to the willingness of God. Western countries' hypocrisy deny towards the Bible result in such chaos today.

What is the reason that those people on the boat are called devils?

It is obvious that the former president of Tunis, who was one representative of devils, was on that boat.

Tunis is the training base for devils, where devils are being trained day and night in over eighty mosques locally. After the training, they initiate terrorist attacks and support IS to attack other countries around the world.

Unfortunately, devils started to attack those foreign tourists visiting their own country recently.

Those devils plotted museum attack and seaside gun attack, resulting in sixty-two deaths, most of whom were Westerners.

They trained innocent college student Jacob to be a killer without telling his relatives. Finally, Jacob murdered forty foreign tourists with a smile.

Only devils can do this.

All of these events are organised by Islamist cult in mosques of Tunis. On the one hand, they train devils to kill innocent foreign tourists on a large scale; on the other hand, they pretend to be humanists. This is the hypocrisy of them.

Who are they going to rescue? They come to save Islam devils in the Gaza Strip. Hamas, their evil brother, sends rocket projectile to people in Israel even though they have been totally defeated.

If they want to help Gaza, they have to send many boats to deliver those Palestinians to Tunis or other regions.

Sometimes, they require those Palestinians to lay down their arms and surrender to Israel and God. Israel will treat them nicely, and they will lead a peaceful and wealthy life.

Those people on the boat create chaos in the Gaza Strip to fight against Israel, the Bible, and God; they are indeed devils.

49. Greek debt crisis completely suggesting the ugliness of human nature under the encouragement of democracy

9 July 2015

Just as it goes in an ancient Chinese saying, 'life for a life, and a debt paid in full'. It's a law of nature and the rule set by God.

Greek debt crisis has completely suggested the failure of democracy and the social management. Or it suggests that democracy has no function in social management.

Judged from the fact that Mexican government army cannot defeat drug dealing, democratic countries can never realise their function in social management. Social management has completely been doomed as a failure in Mexico. There is $2 billion annual military expense in the country, while the drug dealing can earn $20 billion every year. The figure has proved the argument above. The amount of military expense is decided by democracy.

Judged from the angle of social management, drug dealers shall be cracked down on at any cost, and even by mobilising the power of the whole nation. That is the real justice and the real meaning of social management. However, the $2 billion military expense is produced by its democracy. So it can be said that democracy has serious flaws, unable to maintain justice or realise scientific social management.

How come Greece repudiates the debt? It is also because of democracy. It did that with the approval of the whole nation after a vote. Therefore, democracy cannot overcome the ugly side of human nature, or restrain human greed, laziness, and evil.

Judged from the angle of scientific social management, national expenses and income shall be subject to scientific planning and analysis, not to the voting of some rogue voters.

Voting cannot change scientific planning and budget.

The income and expense of a nation exist by its own rule and can never be changed by voting. Therefore, it can be said that the Greek debt crisis is an example of the danger and defects of democracy.

Democracy encourages ugly human nature and causes social disorder, unable to maintain and reserve justice.

50. The escaping of Mexican drug dealers indicates that governmental officials collide with bandits to do harm to ordinary people under the democratic system

17 July 2015

I knew things would be like this when I heard that a drug dealer was caught while no one was put to death last year.

It seems that they are unhappy because I have been criticising that Mexican officials collude with bandits, doing harm to ordinary people.

It is true that Mexican officials collude with bandits, but the reason why this happens is the democratic system. They are annoyed that I only criticise Mexico because many countries in the world adopt democratic system.

Mexico adopted a democratic selection system while most of the money for the election is provided by drug dealers. They take advantage of democratic system to support their governmental puppet who serves them.

Services provided by democratic system are listed as follows:

1. First, the most important service is that drug dealers will not be put to death; this is a kind of political asylum.

2. Those drug dealers are quite strong now with 20 billion dollars' income each year while the anti-drug outcome is only 2 billion dollars. The action of anti-drug will surely fail from the financial limitation, and drug dealers are protected politically.

3. It is the collusion between the governmental officials and drug dealers that allows the escaping of drug dealers this time. There are a large number of governmental officials helping drug dealers, which is initiated by the democratic system. Democratic selection system allows bad people to infiltrate the government and provide the protective umbrella for drug dealers.

4. The event in which a mayor colluded with drug dealers to murder a student and set fire to the body last year is one of the examples, and the democratic system is to be blamed. We can say that there are a lot of bad men infiltrating the government to protect themselves taking advantage of democratic system. They make the government work for themselves while not for the ordinary people.

Drugs are the tool that devils use to control human beings.

Drug dealers are the spokesmen of devils, and all of them should be sent to hell.

Drug dealers, criminals, and rappers in Mexico are sending drugs to America.

Mexico is doing harm to America shamelessly. All drug dealers should be put to death according to the Islam law. People carrying a volume over 100 g should be penalised, and those carrying more than 200 g should be put to death.

Although there are many things demanding improvements for Islam, they are totally correct in dealing with devils. It is worth praise that Indonesia put drug dealers to death, under the great pressure.

This cannot be solved unless several thousand drug dealers are put to death. It is the reform and protecting the interests of ordinary people; we do not need hypocrisy. Drug dealers are all devils and being kind to them is to do harm to the ordinary people.

The statistics from the escaping Gorsimai indicate that there have been twenty thousand killed. They are devils indeed. The penalty of death is not enough for them, and their organs should be cut out to help others and offset their crimes after being caught.

51. Human productive relation is changing

22 July 2015

Many new problems have been seen recently, triggered by new technology.

1. Optimal taxi software in foreign countries has caused global disorder in taxi industry.

2. Chinese Taobao online selling has caused turbulence in Chinese retail industry.

Industry will reach version 4.0, and robots will replace human labour in the factory. It suggests new technology has dramatically improved human productive force. The stronger the human productive force, the more labour force needed to produce the same products.

The turbulence of retail industry means the improvement of the productive force of the Internet and fewer workers needed in the link of circulation. The final result will be like this: shopping malls are out of business, nobody leases shops, and the operators are out of jobs.

Taobao-type sales can be seen as the robotisation of goods circulation. We are just making the circulation more efficient by use of the semi-robot and semi-labour operation. The consequence will be more fierce competition in production and fewer profit margins. A large number of enterprises will go bankrupt for lack of competitive power, and the wealth flows to the minority.

The robotisation will also lead to unemployment and the flow of wealth to the minority.

On one hand, it seems like a favourable trend for us, but on the other, it seems different.

It can be seen from the favourable side that when human productive force improves, we will not need so many labour workers to produce those products, and the society can raise the whole population. There will be such conclusion as many people do not need to work anymore, and they can sleep at home with no worry for food, and the population will go on increasing.

2. Based on the bad judgment, the society no longer needs that large quantity of labour, leading plenty of them to redundant burdens. Thus we need to dramatically reduce the population, especially the low-quality population. The Islamic baby-bearing machines shall be mopped up completely.

Now it is the time for you to make the choice if people go to the promising or unpromising directions.

Logic represents different ideologies which bear different results. Now people need to choose an ideology.

The first logic is about social coordination management—it is a kind of scientific socialism logic.

The second logic is about social natural competition, being part of capitalist logic.

The era of network and robot is reflective of advanced productive force and the irresistible historic trend. We cannot disrupt it just because it causes large-scale unemployment.

Marx said a productive force decides productive relation, but we can only change our productive force. We need a new productive relation and new logic to narrow down the gap between the rich and the poor. One can have food even though he does not work. We can just have robots do the work, and we can sit idly by and enjoy our life.

We need to reallocate the collected wealth in a proper approach by communist logic. The reallocation needs the forced interference of the country. In the socialist logic, it is easy to reallocate the money collected from the rich. We just need to adopt a wise and scientific approach to get a result pleasing to all sides.

Those who do more work will certainly get more; those who do less will certainly get less. The Communist Party shall find a reason to balance the interests. No matter whether they do the work or not, people need money.

Things can never get done through democracy, human right, freedom, election, congress, strike, protest, riot, which are the normal practice of capitalism.

Here is another point: the threat of artificial intelligence.

Many science fictionists and scientists worry that the development of artificial intelligence will get robots smarter, more coordinated, and more able than humans.

Because when all the things become artificial intelligence, the machines in factories and weapons will first realise highly artificial intelligence. As a result, human will become increasingly ignorant, dirty, and backward.

One day when robots rebel and kill all the human beings.

Especially when human beings fight against each other, they cannot coordinate in anything. There will be very likely some evil doctors inventing evil procedures, producing evil robots, and unifying robots to kill human beings.

Robots will pose far more threats than nuclear weapons if they rebel against humans.

Robot threats first come from some human beings who have betrayed humans. It is just like IS will invent evil procedures and robots in the future to cause technical and devastating disasters for humans, instead of just cutting off several heads or just causing damage to several networks.

The preconditions for circumventing the risks shall be the systematic management and coordination of humans over humans themselves.

Unify human ideology and behaviour. All of us shall think how to let machines absolutely serve us, rather than make trouble, disasters, panic, and evils for us.

The biggest threat is not from the spontaneous antihuman behaviour of the robots, but from humans themselves. It is like the IS ideology which would become a human traitor and destroy humans in the era of artificial intelligence.

52. God will punish Israel's enemies

27 July 2015

Today, I listened to the Syrian president's speech, and most of his points of view were right, but these speeches were not on the point.

It is God who punishes Israel's enemies that are the accusation of war between Syria and Iraq.

Syria is Israel's neighbouring country. It is the only country that refused to recognise Israel as a country, so God is going to punish Syria as a top priority.

There is no justice party absolutely in the Syria war. It can be considered that someone is evil and someone is evil extremely. The IS is extreme evil, and other states are evil comparatively.

Syria does not recognise the Bible and it is hostile to Israel, so it is evil.

All the speeches and behaviour such as independence, dignity, ideas, and teachings are abnormal and distorted. These are not important in front of God.

If anyone does not recognise Israel's interests, he is evil, and he needs to be punished, and God will not stand on his side.

If God did not support you, all Allevi followers will die. The war would not end as well. You must surrender to Israel and surrender to God, then the war can be ended.

No one is completely just; people always have an evil side. God to punish someone is always reasonable. If you oppose Israel after Iran, it will offend God, so bad luck will be one after another, and it will never stop.

They offended God and caused the war, and Iran didn't send troops to fight for you. Syria should assume the evil consequence. Some people converted to God, so God protected them and didn't punish them.

Just like Saudi Arabia did many bad things, God didn't punish them. They are subtle and awarded of converting to God and have a better relationship with Israelis. Iran's followers are not that lucky. Evil consequence was occurred one by one and endless.

53. Homosexuals are the lowest people

29 July 2015

Islam drops the homosexual from a building or stones him to death.

Homosexuality does harm to society not only because it disturb the social order, but also it ruins the social morality. Homosexuality has a limited harm in the spiritual sense.

Dropping them from the top of a building or sentencing to death may be too severe for them, for their behaviour is not that horrifying compared to drug trafficking and murdering.

The punishment should be focused on the spiritual sense as well.

America legislated that it's legal to get married with the same gender; it's because the modern marriage has the issue of property's distribution. If the marriage of homosexuals cannot be recognised, there's no way to distribute and inherit the property. So if from the perspective of property's distribution, it's legal to recognise it.

I think the most appropriate method to deal with it is the caste system in India.

We can recognise the homosexual marriage in law, but they have to pay the price—they will become the lowest man in world. They cannot work as civil servants or in work related with priesthood. Any other work that needs decent clothes cannot allow them to join as well, and they will gain discrimination from the whole society.

Strictly speaking, they are psychological illness patients and are mentally disabled. They need treatment.

It's God's mercy to not kill them, but it is not worth showing off. So the best destination for them is to become the lowest man in world.

54. People have the right to commit suicide

4 August 2015

Since ancient times, there has always been someone who coerces people with one's death to force another one to do things that one doesn't want.

Suicide is part of human rights that the body is one's own, so people have the right to decide their own fate.

Any intervention of one to suicide will be considered as a violation of human rights. It needs to be blamed and punished.

In the view of God, suicide is a behaviour that is not satisfied with him and the world created by him. Suicide means someone doesn't want the world that is created by God, which also means that he wants to get out of the world. God will never save anyone and will never force anyone, and he will never request someone to stay. He not only does not retain the one who wants suicide, but also provides convenient conditions to make him leave as soon as possible. We're clean. It's better than to trouble each other; otherwise, everyone will be in trouble.

Compromising and retaining the one who wants to leave is disrespectful to God.

It is blasphemy to God, and a behaviour needing to be punished.

Rulers oppose suicide because they fear to be considered ones whose rulings are not good enough and people commit suicide because of living hard. Thus, rulers object to suicide to consolidate their ruling position.

Western countries are against suicide because they want to advocate western democracy. It is to cover injustice, discordance, inability to uphold justice under the democratic society, but not aiming to protect human rights. From the perspective of human rights, people have the right to commit suicide. Suicide protection is human rights protection.

From the perspective of human rights, people have the right of prostitution, but it undermines social order and morality from the perspective of social governance. It is harmful to society. However, suicide is irrelevant to this problem. It is harmless to the society. It is an individual behaviour.

Israel is wrong that suicide is forced feeding. Poisons and ropes should be provided to suicides to help them to die as soon as possible. Dying early will be less trouble. Then, food can be saved, and room of prison can be saved; even jailers' salaries and expenditures can be saved as well. To guard the dignity of God, retaining, compromising and mercy for suicide are never needed. Forced feeding is not necessary as well. Sustaining meaningless life is wasting resources.

Otherwise, everyone will be in trouble.

Israel shall protect human rights, and suicides' reasonable needs shall be satisfied. Evidence of suicide shall be kept for preventing suspicion of murder. That is not good.

I think suicide is also suitable for the condemned, people who must be executed, such as murderer and drug dealer. They can be given an opportunity of choice, such as taking poison, suicidal hanging, wrist slitting, and drowning. As long as their suicides are executed within the limited time and place, it will be a good execution.

One is going to die anyway, so the execution should be undesirable at least. We aim to exclude some people from us, but it shall not be formalistic. It is civilisation, politeness, and respect for life.

55. Saddam once said, 'Iraq is nothing without me'

10 August 2015

This is what Saddam said, and it has been mentioned every now and then till today.

It was true if we consider the situation when Saddam ruled Iraq. Under his rule, Iraq was the most powerful country in the Middle East.

Now, even the IS gangsters or nongovernmental armed forces without air forces are difficult to tackle.

The domestic policy of Saddam was a success; what he failed was on a different level—international policy. He should not have played against Israel and the United States.

God was to punish the enemy of the Israel, and that was how Iraq came to this now.

It is human nature that people become blinded and bloated when they are thriving and successful. They become too arrogant to review themselves and the world correctly. This happens to everyone and me sometimes.

It is when everything is again in vain that people realise it is all just a dream. The only one who is grand is Almighty God himself, who controls everything.

That why I regard what Islam believes Tawhid is a good point, because no one should disregard God and Allah. In China, we call the unique omnipotence Tian.

The prosperity and success of Saddam was the victory of communism, for the reason that the oil abundant in the Middle East is the possession of God and it was God that distributed his resources reasonably through public ownership to promote the development of social science and economy and to boost the establishment of social justice and order.

From the domestic perspective, it was the internal regulation and control of a micro unit of the world.

From the perspective of international society, to view it from the macro world, it was a problem about international relationships, religions, and the directions that countries and the whole world should be heading to. It was also about the establishment of international social order and international values.

It is human nature that people deny others and do whatever they want when they get cocky after they gain success and grab control of some resources.

Just like Saudi Arabia, Turkey, Iran, and some other countries of Middle East, they began to get their own way, after they owned the oil resources and tried to implement Islam fundamentalism in the whole world. They wanted Islam to rule the world and thus supported terrorism with arms and money.

Now Islam, poisoned by the modern civilisation, is turning into heresy and the devil. They hold the money and oil, but they choose to disregard justice and help the evils.

That's why Buddhist Sutra are great and true.

Buddhist Sutra advocates those who own the power and resources act kindly and protect justice but not have their full swing safeguarding their own benefit and produce evil.

This is what is called 'Practice to be kind and cultivate our minds.'

First we need to create, through individual efforts and rational social operation, wealth and a social foundation framework of safety and prosperity. Then, we need to improve our soul and state of ideology through practicing to be kind and cultivating our minds.

The human society has had great development in productivity and ample accumulation of knowledge and is ready to move on to a higher level of society.

That requires us to view human social problems from a higher prospective.

Try not to destruct everything and start all over again like Iraq.

56. The world should unify scripts

29 August 2015

Life is like a drama; everyone plays a different role.

However, nowadays every country, every culture, every individual has different scripts.

Many countries, religions, organisations, individuals will conflict with others during the acting, which leads to war, conflict, revenge, and hatred.

War, conflict, revenge, and hatred appear because they have different scripts.

Many people think we may severely affect the interest of others when we are acting according to the script, and the way to solve this problem is through war, conflict, revenge, and hatred.

Islam has their script. Different denominations have different writers adapting the stories based on the Koran. They mainly show stories of gangsters, underworld, murder, violence, explosion, plane hitting the building, explosive truck, suicide bombers, women and children being murdered, and violent terrorism.

Western countries like performing protests, demonstrations, strikes, riots, and demonstrations.

Gangster films are on in America every day. Mexicans like acting the shoot-'me-up between drug dealers and prison-breaking stories of drug traffickers. Japanese and Taiwanese like acting stories of pleading not guilty and rewriting history. Indians like acting stories in which young men and women suicide for love, like suicide, escape for love, or are hanged or beheaded for love.

Chinese people always have the upright official complex: they always hope that an upright official can save them. But several upright officials cannot make a difference. We must build a system to make sure the right people are in the right positions, which would make sense.

Everyone in this world gets different scripts.

I think that the world's problem is everyone gets different scripts. They may conflict with others unintentionally, which may cost some benefit or even life, and sometimes may bring the outbreak of war, conflict, revenge, and hatred.

Many people in this world should be punished or sentenced to death. But they are not doing evil things on purpose; they are just acting on script and becoming bad guys unintentionally.

Acting on a script of the wicked, you will turn out to be wicked and will be cut off by the world. This is what Islam is suffering.

I believe people in this world should unify scripts first and then judge good and evil.

People should unify scripts. People need to get a general and correct concept for all the things in this world, including all the religions, all the political thoughts, all the economic orders and profit distribution.

Everyone needs to know what kind of social framework we need, what our roles in this social framework are, and what the function of each role is. Then people can choose to play a role according to their wishes.

The social framework uses wealth, mineral, and land created by God as social public capital, as basic resources to maintain social orders. We need to build a framework of well-ordered society, because we need capital, a lot of capital, unlimited capital to build society orders and maintain justice. Under this framework, people can choose their own life freely in the case of not infringing the interests of others.

When you want to be a just person and maintain justice and fairness, you can choose to become a policeman or policewoman, a soldier. Social framework provides a just man with unlimited resources, money and material; you can have unlimited support to eliminate evil and maintain justice.

When you want to earn money, you can become a businessman. When you have an ambition to benefit people, you can become a civil servant. You can reconstruct your homeland with God's wealth and land as well as tax. When you want to be an artist, you can choose to be an actor. When you want to develop yourself or even develop special talent, it is okay as long as you don't influence others.

You can believe in anything, but the prerequisite is that you cannot affect and force others, cannot destroy the social orders.

It is okay that some people want to play the villain of the piece and become bad guys. Society will sort out them timely, and let them go to reincarnation as early as possible.

People should unify scripts first and act later.

If someone acts wrong, people around the world will know that he has a problem; someone will correct him. He will be replaced.

Now the world's problem is that each person only gets a small part of the lines which belong to them and that the lines tend to be out-of-date lines. And they do not know other people's lines and roles. They are unable to distinguish and correct the mistakes of others. Despite the Western democracy, it is also useless because you don't know the correct lines and correct roles of others. The existence of democracy cannot correct the mistakes of others.

The problem of modern Western democracy and private ownership is social management cannot be realised, social justice cannot be maintained, evil cannot be cut off, social orders cannot be kept.

Certain modifications are needed. Mineral resources and land resources which belong to God should be nationalised and capitalised, and used to maintain social justice and social orders. We should provide just people with unlimited physical and financial support.

Capitalisation of state-owned property is the most crucial technology, the most crucial condition of maintaining the whole system. China would have collapsed long ago if not for the capitalisation of state-owned property, as predicted by the Western countries.

No one can shake the social structure after the capitalisation of state-owned property.

That's why we said Chinese can construct their own country according to their wishes on the base of stability of the country; only resources which belong to God are nationalised and capitalised. Then no one can shake it.

This is to set an example for the world, also the fate of Chinese people. Other countries should implement accordingly.

57. The illegal immigrants should be gathered to a Greek island for the unified management

31 August 2015

Now there are two major problems in Europe: illegal immigrants and the Greek debt crisis.

In my opinion, these two problems can be resolved at the same time.

The Greeks owe a lot of money to the Europeans which they cannot afford to pay back. But there are many islands in Greece.

In my opinion, the Europeans should rent one Greek island to establish a concentration camp for resettling the illegal immigrants. Catch all illegal immigrants in Europe and deliver them to the island for a central management. This is the most suitable and the most scientific method, which can fundamentally solve the problem of illegal immigrants.

The illegal immigrants come to Europe in swarms, looking for jobs there, and then they use Islamist heresy to poison Europe.

We catch all of them and deliver them to the island, which can totally avoid the happening of these two matters.

They cannot get the job, no influence to the current order in Europe.

They cannot use Islamist heresy to poison Europe on the island; the tumour is restricted to a certain region.

Their two wishes cannot be realised as they get nothing from Europe. When the situation of their country is stable, they will go home naturally.

It is convenient to centralise them on the island. The dispatch of a few warships and army can totally avoid their escape.

The Greeks owe Europeans a lot of money. We should give them opportunity to make money. Help Europeans to solve some problems and make money for paying the debt.

The Greeks are very close to the Middle East and Africa, which is of the most convenience for management, and convenient for the illegal immigrants to return home.

It is simple and clear to catch and deliver the illegal immigrants to the island, which is convenient for the operation of each government.

We should bring some pork food and Bibles to the refugees on the island and help them to escape from the heresy as early as possible. Shrink back from difficulties.

We should raise donations among all Muslims in Europe. Ask them to raise money for arranging the refugees. The Islam problem should be resolved by Muslims, not by Europeans. The Europeans have no obligation to help Islam for free. Islam needs to understand that it should pay for believers of the heresy, and the cost is very high.

There is a Chinese saying, 'A person's poor situation can always be attributed to his own fault.'

Why are they refugees? Because they believe in Islam heresy, then they become the refugees.

The Buddhist says that there is retribution for sin. The consequence is caused by the reason. The refugees exist because of Islamist heresy.

This is punishment for them by God. The one who helps them is God's enemy.

There is a necessary connection between heresy and refugees. If we only provide them with material assistance, they are always the refugees without giving up evil and returning to good. In addition, the Europeans will finally become refugees under their influence.

58. Democratic countries with negative growth in population will inevitably die out

7 September 2015

Some developed countries and Islamic nations have a strong desire for children; this is a natural choice. The lower animals are, the greater the need to maintain reproducibility, relying on the quantity to compensate for the disadvantage in quality.

Also like fish can deposit tens of thousands of eggs, but only a lucky few could live to the breeding season. It is also the case with Islam and low-quality states.

On the other hand, many great countries are subjugated because of low fertility rate in history.

For instance, the Roman Empire was subjugated, for many reasons, such as lead poisoning, homosexuality, the ruling class content with pleasure rather than having children, the invasion of alien culture, etc.

Now many democratic countries are also facing the same problem. They are content with pleasure, practicing homosexuality, and not willing to have children for the negative impact on their lives.

God let different ethnic groups rule different areas and build different countries. But if the people are not willing to have children, which results in alien invasion, this should be punished and should not be protected by God.

If the cultural and national invasion to the West by a large number of births is the advantage and strong weapon of the Islamic cult, they claim that they will take advantage of the weapon to occupy the world.

The average age of a Muslim is 23 years old; they can absolutely use young people to defeat the old men and women in the West.

The Western countries seem to have no effective answer, because the culture of democracy and freedom and the pleasure-seeking culture do not support high fertility, which will inevitably result in the decline of the nation and extinction in the end.

Economic declines in Western countries are directly related to ageing populations. And the ageing population is directly related to democracy, freedom culture, pleasure-seeking culture.

So from the perspective of fertility, if the West cannot improve their democratic culture, they will disappear like the Roman Empire and give way to other cultures.

According to the previous approach, the only way to change all of this is a massive genocide, just like Rwandan genocide settled the issue once and for all. That is the way the forceful nation solves the inferior race. But democracy does not allow them to do so; the only result for them is death, chronic suicide, and slowly dying out.

If one day Westerners finally cannot endure the invasion of Islamists and the nation and religion are eradicated, I think God will not object. It is just a matter of making excuses and persuading themselves.

In regard to the subject of population issues, India doesn't have this problem because their traditional culture dominates society. Their population is exploding. The caste system and some old systems balance the unequal society with huge population. A large number of pariahs are discriminated against and oppressed, by Western standards, but the caste system makes sure they won't fight and they accept it, because they are pariahs.

Pariahs can live under very low standards like the Muslims. Their governor even suggested they hunt rats to eat; only the caste people dare to say such words, and only the people used to the caste system will listen. Neither Westerners nor Chinese dare to say such words.

That is why India and Islam could maintain a high birth rate. There are also some countries advocating eating flies, making fly pies. Indeed rats and flies are high protein and high nutrition. You can't say it's wrong from the nutrition angle, but it's too disgusting and you need a strong spiritual power to eat.

You know why Islam established so many rules like what they can or cannot eat?

Without these rules, they would eat more disgusting things, owing to the food shortage. Even more, they would let Westerners eat.

China also faces problems of ageing population; people say, 'getting old before getting rich'. But I think China can solve these problems, because China's state-owned capital is so strong it can solve all the problems. As long as government does some preferential policies, policy advocacy, and policy encouragement action, the population will significantly increase. I am still confident on this.

Westerners are not so lucky. Westerners have advocated and propagated for many years, but to no avail. The government does not have enough resources to start this huge project.

The fundamental reason is that the society of democracy is not a society that can be regulated. Having children is part of human rights and free personal behaviour. Western democracy is non-interference with individual human rights, individual freedom, so it cannot play a role in social regulation.

Now the solution of democratic states is to introduce a large number of the Islamic cult as their

labour. That is also the reason why Germany and France welcome the Muslim immigrants, in a way to solve problem of labour shortage in their country.

You are unable to encourage high fertility for the sake of pleasure and accept the devil cult to supplement labour. This is called drinking poison to quench thirst.

But it's no problem. God allows you to salvage this through genocide, but I don't know if you still have the chance.

Today you open arms to embrace the cult, but you need first to prepare the camp and the gas chamber, just like what Germans did to the Jews, and this is allowed by God.

Westerners use Muslims as cheap labour in order to not have children for improving their lives.

Invasion of alien inferiors: Islam is a well-developed but simple-minded inferior race.

Invasion of alien inferior culture: the Islamic culture is bad money driving out good; shameless low-quality people plunder social resources and spread evil inferior culture.

They are all poisons.

You Muslims are not allowed to run around and spread poison. You should live and die with your country, in your land that God gives you.

Some Syrians say the Syrian war is a proxy war, not the war of Syrians, which is not correct. The Syrian war is the war with Islam. If you believe in Islam or are related to Islam, then this war is your war. Enjoy it, fight seriously, and do not run away. This is the fate of Islam and God's punishment for Islam.

59. Govern without intervention

4 October 2015

> Tao Te Ching: Chapter 3
>
> Do not highly praise wise men to make people not to fight for it; do not value precious stuff to make people not to steal; do not show the precious things to make people calm. Make their hearts empty, make their stomachs full; make their minds innocent and strengthen their bodies. Make people have simple minds and do not have unsatisfied yearnings.

Governing without intervention is the most profound principle in Tao Te Ching, and many people easily misinterpret the words.

We often hear that officials do nothing. Ordinary people easily understand that as inaction of the officials. It is not inaction, because Tao Te Ching is not for ordinary people and they cannot understand it. Tao Te Ching is not a Confucian classic about ordinary people's behavioural requirements.

Those called gentlemen in Confucian classics can be considered saints, supreme leaders, and nationwide leaders.

Gentlemen's inaction can govern the whole country. Ordinary officials' inaction is considered useless. Incompetent people will be dismissed.

Leaders around the world do not need to do inaction, but they need to know what 'govern by doing nothing that goes against nature' is. It is the supreme idea of leaders.

Explanation: Do not highly praise successful people, so common people do not struggle for fame and wealth. Do not pay attention to precious treasure, so people do not steal them. Do not motivate people's desires, so people are not confused by greed. So the ruling principle of saints is that make people's mind empty, making them have enough food to eat, weakening their ambition, and making them strong. They make people never fight and do not have greedy thoughts, even the wise dare not act wildly against the law and public opinion. If we handle affairs according to objective law, no place cannot be governed well in the world.

The rankings of rich people, superstars, and beautiful girls are a commercial behaviour, which can boost the economy and stimulate people's desires for consumption and pursue higher life quality. From the perspective of business, it does not have problems but is an effective method which can be utilised. I think the beauty contest and rich list are not bad. You can say it is the admiration of corrupted life and an effective way to boost the economy.

China rarely has a national beauty contest. I think the idea is not bad.

People need to pursue beauty and follow rich people to develop the economy.

From the perspective of gentlemen, you must be very clear in mind that it is a game and a method to boost and develop the economy, not the goal for gentlemen to pursue.

They are just actors and actresses on stage. For some purposes, we need them to perform. Except for this, they are nothing.

They just want money, and they have no privilege in politics. And they should not have any privilege. Drug addicts must be fought, licentious people must be exposed, and people who murder people for money should be executed by shooting.

'Make their hearts empty, make their stomach full; make their minds innocent and strengthen their bodies. Make people have simple minds and do not have unsatisfied yearnings.'

It sounds very reactionary. But in fact, it is a profound principle, the most basic standard to oppose heresy and the most fundamental standard to differentiate human beings from heresy—take people's interests or ideology as priority.

The thinking mode which takes people's interests as priority is human thinking.

The thinking mode which takes ideology as priority is heresy thinking.

Because eating, drinking, playing, having fun, the necessities of daily life (fuel, rice, oil, salt, sauce, vinegar, and tea), house, wife, children, car, and cash are the supreme interests and maximum pursuit for common people.

Before these things are done, do not talk to people about ideology. Ask people to do this, to protest. It is bullshit and heresy.

When calling on people to revolt and seize power, every party and regime will say, 'I will give you happiness and money.'

When holding the power, they will use another word and method.

Now, we have to return to original nature and fulfil promises. Cash, money, happiness, safety, and guarantee are the first standard to evaluate a regime. Satisfy the first condition and then talk about ideology with us. Otherwise, it is heresy. Islam is the first heresy. Those religions which do not talk about material but ideology are heresies, bullshit, gangster, and illegal.

People are realistic and ask for money. If not, then there is no room to discuss. People need money and interests. Take out your money first and then talk about ideology.

Otherwise, it is bullshit, heresy, and a lie.

Aside from money, people's interests also include social order, social safety, and social guarantee.

It is the lowest level of Maslow's human needs. And capitalist society proves that they can offer security demands to people and cannot guarantee people's safety.

I do not want to mention the shooting accidents in the US, which are stereotyped. If there is no shooting in the US for a while, then that is news.

And Mexico becomes a model of gangdom. I think gangs in capitalist countries cannot compare with those in socialist countries. Socialist countries must prohibit and punish gangdom. But in democratic countries and capitalist countries, they need gangdom. They need shootings to maintain social justice, because their social systems cannot realise scientific and effective management of society. People have to take weapons themselves and organise organisations to protect their own benefits.

For example, gangdom in Taiwan and Japan are like national heroes, chivalrous people, and swordsmen. Gangdom in Mainland China are pure gangsters and bandits that need to be banned and punished.

Socialism takes social management as priority to make the social system and social order. Capitalism takes people's interests as priority to make the social system and social order. Taking social management as priority, social security should be fully in charge of the country.

Taking people's interests as priority, part of social security is in charge by country and another part is in charge by individuals. So capitalist countries need gangdom, which is a project needed in the top-level design of social system, and that is why that Americans cannot ban the guns. The result is that people must bear shots and fear. That is your choice. They are on their own.

So Hong Kong also has legal gangdom. Chinese government should separate the three powers in Hong Kong and take back the judicial power in Hong Kong. Help Hong Kong people to eliminate gangdom and save Hong Kong people. This is what a country should do.

'Govern by doing nothing that goes against nature.'

This sentence means that gentlemen govern by doing nothing that goes against nature, and they can do everything well and govern every place well.

The so-called inaction here means gentlemen need to make up all management thoughts and management systems of the country well. When the most effective, reasonable, and scientific management systems operate well, gentlemen do not need to adjust the country. And the country can operate well and do well in everything. Common people obtain the materials and benefits, safety guarantee, and the development of spiritual civilisation that they want. Officials

can play their own talents in their respective positions. All the systems of country operate orderly and reasonably, which do not require gentlemen adjust people's behaviour through powers; this is the 'doing nothing'. It is also the essence that the author of Tao Te Ching wants to express and the main theme of Tao Te Ching.

In fact, the biggest work that gentlemen do is theoretical work. The reason why human beings are not civilised is that the conscious scope of everyone is limited without seeing all the people and things. Truths and operation principles between things cannot make perfect operation rules.

When people are able to fully understand the people and things in the world, suitable people will make social rule and social management order that suit the conditions of their country. And countries and social units as well as social cells will be managed well.

'All the people and things, and the truths and operation principles between things' is the Tao that the Tao Te Ching wants to express. It is also the central idea and leading thought of Tao Te Ching.

I think the Tao Te Ching is a Confucian classic and a truth that God passed on ancient Chinese. It requires Chinese to cultivate themselves in the aspects of Tao of soul.

Tao, the most important dogma in the world and the whole universe, is the most fundamental operation rule and basic principle in the world and the whole universe.

In ancient China, people call the emperors who do not know Tao as 'self-indulgent rulers'.

Now, the leaders around the world must have Tao. If not, they will be overturned.

Islam needs to be banned at first.

It is the cruellest heresy.

60. Righteousness rises up when great truth is annulled

4 October 2015

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 18

Explanation: When great truth falls, virtues and morality are needed for maintaining social order; due to absence of social great truth and the undesirable general mood of society, everyone in the society is calculating and advocates for seizing things by hook or by crook, and that leads to the appearance of massive frauds; because relations between relatives are not harmonious, filial obedience and benignity are highlighted; because politics of a country is in chaos, the importance of loyal ministers is prominent and the society praises highly loyal ministers.

The explanation suits hypocritical Western people very well.

In my view, the Tao Te Ching is the truth that God has enlightened ancient Chinese people.

'When great truth is annulled, there is righteousness' is what God said to Western people as well as his evaluation on Western people.

Western people talk about virtues and moralities all day long. They protect rights of cats, dogs, and humans. Moreover, they advocate for freedom to own guns, to protest, to have sex, to use drugs, and to establish gangs. Therefore, in Western society, murderers, drug dealers, and terrorists are exempt from sentence of death.

As a matter of fact, they have done so in order to win votes and money from Nobel Peace Prize so that they can earn more political benefits for economic groups they are representing.

Why are there more supporters for freedom to own a gun by everyone after so many shooting accidents have happened? Because personal safety of some people in capitalist countries is undertaken by individuals, they have to own guns in order to protect individual interests, which is an outcome of social system. The irrationality of social system is the annulled great truth, where people can only try to reduce harms caused by absence of great truth through advocating for righteousness and moralities.

That is the so-called 'When great truth is annulled, there is righteousness'.

People who practice great truth never boast of virtues and moralities. People who practice great truth are responsible for only God instead of anyone else. They do not need recognition or worship from anyone else and never compromise to anyone else as long as they satisfy God. In other words, they only practice according to will of God as well as generally acknowledged truth, justice and interests of the masses. God loves the masses, which is the will of God.

For example, if Islam is not eliminated ideologically, the issue of terrorism will never be solved and the compromise with Islam is hypocrisy.

On the issue of Palestine, if Israel is not judged as legal and Palestine is not judged as illegal, the issue will never be solved. In other words, supporting Palestinian people is hypocrisy.

There are also issues of Syria and Iraq. Though Western people have bombed the places for one year and made great efforts, are the problems solved? If they are not solved, the long-lasting wars will result in more and more injuries and deaths and the whole world will pay higher and higher prices for that, which is much severer than the death of several common people. Every war kills people, and we should give consideration to total costs and results.

Wahhabi is the most vicious religion in the world, several times than Shia. However, Western people are supporting Wahhabi in Saudi Arabia, United Arab Emirates, Qatar, and Turkey, which is the annulled great truth. When the general direction is wrong, how can people do correct things?

One typical example of Western people's hypocrisy is that they are accusing Russia for killing common people in bombing these days. 'When great truth is annulled, there is righteousness.' They support and train demons while accusing under the name of virtues and moralities when others are trying to stop the demons, which is hypocrisy in nature.

Instead of boasting of righteousness, people who practice great truth only follow generally acknowledged truth and justice and do correct things.

For example, Stalin said Muslim people are inherent traitors and told them to feed pigs and eat pork, which is a practice of great truth. In short, people who practice great truth never fear anyone else and they are responsible for only great truth and justice as well as God's will.

In my view, what Stalin did is far from enough. Because it was not 2012 at that time and Muslim could not be eliminated fundamentally in ideology. However, we now have enough reasons to completely wipe Islam out from the earth.

If Islam disappears, terrorism will be no more, aircraft bombing is not necessary, and no common people will be mistakenly bombed. Consequently, the hypocrisy of Western countries will die out naturally.

Therefore, as long as great truth is promoted, it will be unnecessary for people to try to reduce losses and damages through promoting virtues and moralities, and they are no longer needed by people.

Virtues and moralities are advocated because great truth is annulled and not practiced.

The ideal society God intends is not maintained by virtues and moralities and God's love for humans is not maintained by virtues or moralities or given by others. God does not need giving

by others because it is contempt on God. Everything God wants people to get, they will get it and that is highly guaranteed. People do not have to get things from charity. When God wants poor people to get wealth, they will surely get wealth, and not from charity of the rich. They get it through practicing and promoting great truth. Through establishing a reasonable social system, social fairness and justice are promoted and the poor are taken care of. Meanwhile, the rich will gain development and everyone has guarantee for life, which is the real glory and greatness of God.

It is not God's style for the poor to rely on charity of the rich. God wants his servants to practice great truth instead of Western people's hypocrisy which wins popularity by hoodwinking the public.

Scientific socialism and unified scientific management of a country is the practice of great truth.

Establishing a scientific social management system with God's wealth is the practice of great truth.

A society that practices great truth does not have to advocate for virtues and moralities because everyone in the society has virtues and moralities and does good deeds spontaneously.

'When relations between relatives are not harmonious, filial obedience and benignity are highlighted.'

Because there was no pension insurance in ancient times, the aged depended on children for later life. When relations between family members are not harmonious, sharp family conflicts and the situation that the aged were not supported would result. Under such circumstance, children who showed filial obedience to parents stood out and should be highly praised.

Going the other way, if relations between family members are harmonious, there is not the so-called issue of supporting the aged. In that case, everyone is filial and there is no outstanding filial person. Consequently, there is no the issue of filial obedience.

The sentence means: if social management is scientific and social problems are solved effectively, moralities are not needed to restrain and normalise people's behaviour.

Morality is something not essential. However, scientific and effective social management system is something rigid and essential. Only when the scientific and rigid social management fails will people have to restrain behaviour through promoting moralities.

'When relations between relatives are not harmonious, filial obedience and benignity are highlighted' focuses on social management of supporting the aged.

'When politics of a country is in chaos, the importance of loyal ministers is prominent.'

When a country praises highly loyal ministers, it is believed that the country is going to an end. The reason lies in that when few loyal ministers are praised, it is believed that a majority of others are traitor ministers. Therefore, the country is bound to end.

Hence, administration of a country should not rely on one or two loyal minister(s); instead, it should rely on a scientific and reasonable social governance system.

In a scientific and reasonable country administration system, everyone will do correct things and be loyal spontaneously.

When everyone is loyal, loyal ministers will not be praised as exceptions. Therefore, a country that highly praises loyal ministers is a country with chaotic politics.

This sentence means instead of relying on hypocritical moralities for country administration, people should establish a scientific and reasonable country management system.

61. EU countries are not obliged to admit refugees

9 October 2015

Recently, EU required members to share refugees, which is a thing completely beyond all reason.

1. EU is a union of European nations, rather than a union of Middle Eastern countries nor one of Arab countries, and these refugees have nothing to do with EU legally and morally. EU countries are under no obligation to admit those Islamic refugees by seriously damaging their own interests.

2. Middle Eastern countries, such as Saudi Arabia, Qatar, and the United Arab Emirates, make a bundle and belong to Arabs, Islam, and Sunnite, the same as those refugees. But they refuse to admit refugees, why?

a. Because they all profess Islam cult, and they know that Islam is the largest terrorist organisation. Wars and conflicts are inevitable among different countries and factions therein. Because they know Islam too well. Muslims are born traitors, who would only bring forth disasters and wars to their countries, instead of any other benefits. So they give a flat refusal to admit refugees.

b. Real makers of these refugees are Saudi Arabia, Qatar, the United Arab Emirates, Turkey, and Israel. They launch a sectarian war under the guise of opposing the Syrian president, pay a large amount of capital to terrorists, grant them weapons and ammunition, and provide medical and logistics support for terrorists. They are the deep-dyed troublemakers yet completely escape the responsibility and obligation brought by war.

Turkey is the only way which must be passed by refugees and the country neighbouring on war, so Turkey shall take some blame for this as well. They have ignited the flame of war with Kurds, which is called 'he who plays with fire gets burned'. Other countries behind the scene treat refugees as the god of plague and avoid them for fear that it might be too late, because they know what Islam is too well; besides, this devil is of their hands.

They would only let devil to scourge Syria, Europe, and anyone but their own countries and themselves.

3. Those who are anything but refugees are economic migrants. They come to Europe not for fleeing from calamity but for making money and earning euro.

The greatest wish of refugees is to have essential living conditions and go back when the situation becomes steadily, while the aim of migration is to seek a more comfortable life.

For European countries, especially France and Germany, if you feel that your country is short of

hands, you can totally relax restrictions for immigration policies and attract high-quality migrants worldwide, and select persons with certain labour skills and linguistic competence who conform to European benefits and acknowledge European values across the world. This is the responsibility taken towards Europe, your own countrymen, and your coming generations.

You are irresponsible for your country, your countrymen, and your coming generations in receiving foreign heretics, terrorists, evil forces, low-quality population, and some foreign persons having an ulterior motive to transform Europe in a non-screening, unaccountable, and arbitrary way.

You are trading with devil by the security, peace, and happiness of your own nation, citizens, and future generations to exchange your own psychological comfort, Nobel Peace Prize, and votes of short-sighted individuals.

You bring your nation, citizens, and future generations into fear, terror, and war, just like the Middle East now. Even the Middle Eastern Islamic sophisticates avoid refugees like plague, while you go so far as to embrace these devils. You are too arrogant and belittling the power of devil.

Islamic devil is too much for you sissy to deal with.

4. It is unjustified and makes no sense that you French and German want to invite people to dinner and ask others to pay for you.

It is your human rights and business to show sympathy for refugees and express your love, but you have no reason to force others to pay the unbearable price, suffer terrorist threat and great pain just for gratifying your vanity, which is an immoral behaviour.

If you want to display gallantry, you should be responsible for consequences by yourself. Do not pull others to fall on hard times. It is evil rather than hero, or to say, it is another kind of devil.

The Arab and the Camel

One cold evening, an Arab was sitting in his own tent with howling wind outside and warmth inside. In a while, the curtain was lifted up lightly. It was his camel, who looking into the tent from the outside.

‘What’s the matter?’ the Arab asked him kindly.

The camel said, ‘Master, it’s so cold outside and I can’t stand the cold. Could you let me put my head in the tent?’

‘No problem,’ the kind Arab said.

The camel then put his head into the tent. But before long, the camel begged again. ‘Could I bring

my neck inside, too?' The Arab considered that it just took a small space and consented to his request. The camel then put his neck in. The camel with body outside shook his head uncomfortably, and soon he asked again, 'It was rather uncomfortable to stand like this. Actually it only takes up a little room if I put my forelegs in, then I can be more comfortable.'

'You are right, then put your forelegs in too,' the Arab said and vacated some room for the camel by moving his body, as the tent was really too small.

After a while, the camel shook his body and said, 'In fact, if I stood like this, the external cold wind would blow in, which exposes both of us to the cold. I might as well stand in the tent wholly, then both of us can be warm!'

But the tent was too small to accommodate a person and a camel. However, the master was very kind, protecting the camel just like himself. He said, 'Though with small room, you can try to stand inside wholly.' But the camel said when coming in, 'It seems the tent cannot accommodate both of us. You with small figure would better stand outside. Then I can live in this tent and the space can be fully used.'

The camel crashed into its master when coming in, and this Arab staggered and withdrew from the tent. The master was then kicked out by the camel in such manner.

Beware of those who take a mile after you give them an inch.

Arabs and Muslims know how to kick the master out and occupy the tent by themselves ever since their early years. But Europeans have no idea of camel's habit, so they get the worst of it.

As Middle East Arab countries are some regions of very poor natural resources, because of the shortage of materials, the culture between individuals is just as this kind of camel culture, scorpion culture, and the culture of returning kindness with ingratitude. It is a kind of choice-less measure and the special culture to resist harsh environment.

The culture of Europeans sprang up in an economically developed environment abundant in natural resources is essentially and subconsciously different from the Arabic and Middle Eastern culture.

Now, Europeans' adoption of 'abundant culture' to deal with affairs of those with camel culture, scorpion culture, and the culture of returning kindness with ingratitude will give rise to stupid mistakes and ridiculous misunderstanding, invite disaster by letting in invaders, and make great mistakes.

62. Promote social responsibilities and social orders, there will be more happiness in this country

10 October 2015

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 65

Tao is not to teach people the way to be slippery and to escape the duty of society but to teach the citizen being simple, assuming social responsibilities and maintaining social orders.

The reason why people are difficult to govern is that they have too much scheming. They escape social responsibilities and social orders.

Thus, if a country is governed by people who are opportunistic and who despise social responsibilities and social orders, there will be more shysters.

Conversely, if a country is governed by people who promote social responsibilities and social orders, there will be more happiness in this country.

To realise differences between two ways of governance is to understand laws in the state. If you obey this rule in any time, you will have deep Xuan De and make contributions. Xuan De is so profound that it is beyond our cognitive range. And if we perform as this law, we will build a flourish and stable society.

This paragraph seems like obscurantist policy.

And it may be unanimously condemned by ancient scholars because they think it is against 'democracy, freedom, and human rights' and is a kind of feudal reactionary culture.

In fact, the Tao Te Ching has anticipated the result that people could not understand the meaning. So it illustrated the words ahead.

Tao Te Ching: Chapter 41

The vulgar will laugh out loud when they hear truth. They tend to laugh at truth and regard it as a nonsense or daydream. From that, if truth is not laughed at by the fool, it cannot be called Tao.

That is to say, the more derision Tao suffers, the more noble it is, and the sillier the fool is.

According to common understanding at present, to maintain individual human rights, interests, and freedom, and to concern and to maximise personal interests are Ming.

On the contrary, to promote social responsibility, national and collective interests, and social order rather than promoting individual interests, to live for justice and dedication rather than living for himself are Y because their own interests are harmed.

If we have made the concept of Ming and Yu clear, we will understand the whole text, even the whole Tao Te Ching.

God had dropped people that human rights, democracy, and freedom were the sources of chaos by the Tao Te Ching. Western countries were the whore recorded in the Bible, who committed adultery with devils.

1. Some politicians suggest that Japanese women should have more babies these days but are unanimously condemned by the democratic people, which fully explains the problem.

Japan is suffering a serious ageing problem. Japan's economic decline and depression are closely related with its ageing issues. However, when this important situation which will influence the future of Japan was proposed, the statesman was unanimously condemned by the democratic people and had to apologise.

It shows that Japan is an irremediable and fading country. It not merely occurs in Japan but in most of Western countries. Ageing issues equal to democratic dilemma. There are no such problems in non-democratic countries.

2. And similar issue, gun control, happens in the US as well; a lot of Americans have put forward the motion of gun control but are severely resisted by democratic society and its system, which causes disorder and chaos.

These two examples have clearly shown that democratic society fully overthrows social management and harms social orders of rationality, priority, necessity, and seriousness. Emphasising the primacy and uniqueness of human rights may be regarded as Zhi. However, it is Zhi that causes the horrible disaster.

If someone governs the country with democracy, he will be the biggest traitor of this country.

Only when the country is governed by a 'fool', namely 'We should promote social responsibility, national and collective interests, and social order rather than promoting individual interests. We should live for justice and dedication rather than living for ourselves' can the residents obtain true happiness.

The so-called fool is based on the Tao in a country. That is, only if a scientific socialism or state capitalism is fully realised in this country will the 'fool', namely 'We should promote social responsibility, national and collective interests, and social order rather than promoting individual interests. We should live for justice and dedication rather than living for ourselves' be advocated.

On the contrary, if a country does not have Tao, then to promote democracy, freedom, and human rights may become an expediency and 'not so bad' choice. Sometimes, developing scientific socialism or scientific state capitalism may be more civilised than developing feudalism when there are few choices.

To govern a country with a 'fool' is to advocate a country with spirit of civilisation.

In my point of view, the biggest fool is Buddhism. Countries whose believers are Buddhist, in fact, are ruled by a fool.

And the biggest foolishness of Buddhism is feeding eagles with the flesh of Buddha. If all the residents feed eagles with their flesh, it is unlikely to realise national governance.

Spiritual civilisation is established on the basis of the material guarantee, on the social fairness and justice, and on the national and social science management. A cult should not to be defined as a religion which purely promotes spiritual civilisation and ignores material civilisation.

Only if as follows:

1. Taking public ownership of God's wealth as a social framework and basic material guarantee

2. Developing material possessions of individuals on the basis of democracy and freedom of human rights

3. Taking 'to promote social responsibility, national and collective interests and social order rather than promoting individual interests. To live for justice and dedication rather than living for himself' as spiritual motivation. Promoting spiritual civilisation, enhancing personal practice and the soul.

Can a state be thriving and prosperous, which is Tao proposed by the Tao Te Ching? It is the direction of God.

63. Israel dares not recognise the legitimacy of its occupation of Palestine

17 October 2015

Now Western scientism has been made into a religion. They believe in science experiments and do not believe in religion or God.

So does Israel.

All of Israel's foreign propaganda has never mentioned God or the Bible. And Israel has never declared to the world that they established the state in Palestine in accordance with the Bible or the will of God. They just keep requiring the other nations and Arabs in the world to recognise their right to subsistence.

It is unreasonable and untenable in accordance with the logic of the right to life. In order to protect Jewish existence rights, Israel could kill and drive out the Arabs from their ancestral land, and then Jews build the state upon the Arab corpses. This is not logical.

This claim for existence rights is totally unfounded. Anyone who hears it will object to it. And anyone who recognises Israel's right to exist is to acknowledge it is free to invade other countries, and kill their people or drive them away, and then find a new state on their land.

This is something as evil as what IS did, which is illogical.

Israel can only appeal to God and the Bible; thus, their appeal can hold water. However, because the world does not believe in God or the Bible, the Israelis dare not say that. They are afraid of being ridiculed for superstition, unscientific views, or nonsense of the Jews.

If Israel could not recognise God or the Bible in front of the world, they should not found a state. They should be damned, punished, and looked down upon.

They dare not to admit the things they are doing, so they deserve to be damned, punished, and be looked down upon.

They should not only recognise God and the Bible, but also make the world do it too. Hence, it is legitimate for Israel's founding. Israel needs to let everyone in the world know God promised Palestine to the Jews in the Bible. It is the work of Jews. Otherwise they should keep on wandering. They should not talk about the Israeli-Palestinian conflict all day without end. They could also have a good time in their vagrant life. Only God and the Bible can give the founding of Israel legitimacy.

If Israel does not dare to promote God or the Bible, it means they dare not acknowledge the legitimacy of their founding. They should still keep on wandering.

64. The world has been manipulated by the devil

21 October 2015

Limited by their consciousness, human beings can only see the scale of a torch. They cannot see everything because the world is enormous.

It is reasonable to say the whole society is like a flock of sheep. People are the same with sheep.

What the sheep is concerned with is grass, so they eat grass even if it is on the road to the abattoir.

So it is easy for human to be manipulated by the devil. They don't even know what they are doing and when will they be slaughtered.

Human is ignorant to God's complicated truths, so God has put all truths in small pieces to different nations, religions, and people.

The devil wants to achieve his goal; he has to make all kinds of truths extreme and confusing for people to tell from the devil. What the devil says are truths in extremes.

The truths of God are mutually tolerant and interactive. The complete truth will be used in the good way. God revealed different truths to solve different problems. Human beings are uncivilised, so it is hard for them to accept all the truths at one time. Humans can do nothing to divide the complex truths into small pieces to put into practice.

Buddhism, Christianity, Islam, Taoism, communism, democracy, and so on are all included.

These are all truths to solve different problems. People see themselves as a contradiction because they are uncivilised. They are limited in thinking and consciousness, so it is difficult to understand all the truths.

Every ideology and truth is like the washing machine, air conditioning, cookers, refrigerators, television sets in our home; they are just some tools that can solve some problems for us. We need to use them to solve some problems, but we can't use only one of them to solve all the problems.

Western countries surrender to Islamic cult, but not Stalin. The cult has no ways to deal with him. Muslims are told to eat pork and keep pigs and become traitors with no other choices.

However, the economy of Soviet Union and Russia is behind Western countries. Different ideologies, truths, and logic can be used to deal with different things.

God gives humans all kinds of truths and tools to solve different problems but tells them to do good deeds with all religious ideologies. God gives people all kinds of religions to make them do good things. However, to stand to either side is not complete and right. That will become a cult.

The devil is in the details. The work of the devil is to put truth in an extreme and opposite opposition in order to achieve devils' evil purposes.

Sometimes what the devil has said and done can be truth because it disguises itself in the cloak of truth, so it is difficult for people to tell the difference.

Also because human being is like a narrow-mined group of sheep, they cannot tell the truth from the devil, thus they are driven by the devil all the time.

Islamism has been manipulated by the devil. It is the obvious that Islamism has become a cult.

God wants humans to establish social order so as to show truth to Islam. But what should be the order of the community? It needs to be combined with other truths; comprehensive considerations can come to a conclusion, and the rules of the game in order and social development and the continuous development of the society.

The rules of orderly society in the Koran only apply to primitive society thousands of years ago, and they are totally not applicable to modern society. The rules need to be completely reformulated, but the truth that God wants man to establish social order has not changed.

The devil of Islam denies all the truths of other religions but its own. The IS and the Wahhabi cult make social order extreme. That's what we've seen.

Now Islamism has been manipulated by the devil. IS and Wahhabi cult have sold their souls to the devil. Their souls have been completely manipulated. Now to eradicate IS and Wahhabi is to kill the devil. There is no other way to deal with the devil but killing. Only blood and death can drive away the devil and bring back order from chaos.

Freemasonry is another demon. They invented Western democracy with total disapproval of orderly society. All the things democracy advocates run counter to the Bible. Western countries are in moral decay together with the devil and are called 'big prostitute', in Revelation of the Bible. They have unjustness, drug addicts, prostitution, sex slaves, homosexual people, gangs, murder, rape, theft, robbery, indifference, and hatred among people. They indulge themselves and totally ignore God.

They throw away everything except indulgence. Freemasonry is closely related with Jews, so it probably should be created by the Jews. The Jews did so many bad things, and now we are protecting and helping them on the Palestinian issue. The founding of Israel is God's will to forgive the Jews. No one can change that.

Democracy and capitalism are also the revelations of God, but now they are abused by Western countries. People tend to go to extremes because they can't control things.

On the same ideology, logic will end the life of a person and a country because they are ignorant and uncivilised. They are always controlled by ideology and unable to use all kinds of ideology to serve their own purposes. God wants the man he created to be rich, and only democracy and capitalism can do that.

But being rich is not the only requirement of God for human beings. They have to be orderly, loving, kind, versatile, fair, just, and grateful to God.

65. Defender of civilisation

25 October 2015

Recently, a series of racialist assaults have taken place in Europe.

A candidate was stabbed in Germany; at the same time, several students were killed in Sweden. Those who carried out the assassination are not the mob, but the defenders of civilisation, who are regarded as heroes.

It was perfectly normal human response that people sought refuge in another civilised country when they could not stay in their homeland. Part of people wonder that they pursue a higher material life.

Trying to emigrate is nothing wrong. This is not the point actually.

In fact, the problem is the Muslim immigrants are not inspired to integrate into civilised society but bring the devil society's cult in civilised society.

The Muslims came to Europe to renovate it rather than learn advanced culture from the European civilisation. This is the problem right there—that they want to turn European society into an evil world.

They are addicted to the Islamic cult, with no introspection and shame; at the same moment, they could not stay in their own country but poison the minds of the European by the Islamic cult.

The assassination or killing of the devil is a justice action that protects Europe, protects civilisation, and protects the coming generations.

If there is no sense of regret, the means are far from assassinations; it would be the slaughter, mass slaughter, ethnic cleansing, and religious cleansing. In other words, this is just a matter of time. The massacre is the justice and truth that are what the Lord asked us to do and is what God's people must do.

Civilisation will never bow to the evil. Civilisation will never yield to the devil. God will never allow this kind of thing to happen. This is God's will.

Islamic rogues should go back to their own countries immediately and should stand or fall with their countries. Islamic rogues should be punished because they choose to believe Islam. It is their fate whether they are slaughtered by the terrorist or killed by bombs.

Do not escape, and do not allow for poisoning the civilisation country anymore.

If Muslims want to live in a civilised country, they must change their faith and believe in Christ, abandoning the Islamic cult. Otherwise, they will be abused, expelled, and killed. Europe is not the home to Muslims. They should go back to their own country and poison their own country with the Islamic cult. Dead or alive, good or bad are things that they must deal with. These are not things that have been done by Europeans and people of a civilised society.

God divided human beings into different races who speak different languages, live under different cultures and beliefs, different regions, different countries, and different nations, which are to take the consequences of their own choice.

Choosing God or the devil is their own choice and their own destiny.

This is God's will.

There are two gigantic devils in the world: one is the Islamic cult; the other is the people who provide protection to the Islamic cult. They enthrone homosexuality and believe the devil in the name of freedom of religious belief. Those who believe in the evil cults are worse than the devil and are nothing short of monsters in human form.

66. The discussion about left-leaning and right-leaning thoughts on refugee issue

17 November 2015

I've seen that many countries changed their stances towards the refugees after the France violent incident. They began to receive those refugees, which was totally different from the beginning.

No matter receiving the refugees or not, it is not wise. The reason is that they make decisions with impulsion and do not think wisely.

No matter the people with left or right deviationist thinking, they always make simple choices without thinking clearly.

It is easy to make choice, decisions can be made immediately. When seeing the picture of the dead boy on the beach, you decided to receive those refugees at once.

When seeing the violent situation of French slaughter, you refused to take refugees immediately.

This is so-called democracy and your wisdom; even animals are capable of making such decisions, let alone human beings. Therefore, the intelligence quotient of human beings still remains at the level of animals and do not differ from animals. Therefore, it makes senses that humans should be eliminated.

Long before the breaking out of refugee issues, I've said that you should receive refugee with purposes and selectively and take advantage of this chance to transform their ideologies. At the same time, you should transform the ideology of the Islamic world.

This is the most important thing.

You can just take it as joke.

Nowadays, all people in the world are mocking French and Europeans.

It is a joke that you received those refugees and it is also a joke that you expel them. You are making your country, your citizens, and those refugees. What are you doing is not responsible for your country, your citizens, your future generations, and those refugees.

My opinion has not changed that you should receive those refugees selectively and with purposes. All those Christian refugees should be received and managed reasonably. The reason why is that Christianity is in accordance to the Western cultures and there will be no cultural conflicts.

Muslim refugees should be required to change their religious belief to Christianity and the churches should manage those refugees correctly. Anyone who does not obey this rule should be expelled. Those refugees refusing to change their religious belief should not be received. They can be locked on a Greece island with humanism and no Muslims can be allowed to enter.

After the France violent incident, Islam should be claimed to be illegal in Europe.

Some people say people taking this action are shameless. You do not take up the responsibility for your own country, your citizens, your future generations and those refugees. All you do results in bad situations, and you are indeed shameless. You ignored justice and only pay attention to the votes and retaining your social status innocently; you are truly shameless.

It is shameless to receive and reject refugees without selection; it is more shameless to receive them and then expel them.

The issue of refugees is not a terrible thing. However, if not handled correctly, it will become worse just like the France violent incident.

If handled correctly, it will become a good thing. We are capable of transforming all people in the world. Islam is a cult and only by believing in Christianity can Muslims be saved. It is not joke but a fact and a truth.

By doing some simple things, people deserving to be saved will be saved and the Islamist cult will be struck.

Why does the IS attack France this time? Do they not know that France is making great efforts to receive refugees?

The IS hopes that refugees come back to the Islamist world and the jihad.

They instigate the contradiction between the Western world and refugees, forcing them to become terrorists and pick up weapons.

You should give those refugees a reason to survive and a way to the free world, namely Christianity and God.

67. In the Book of Revelation, the whore refers to America and the Western society colluding with the Wahhabi cult

22 November 2015

Compared to the feudal society, the democracy, freedom, and human rights advocated by America and the Western society can be regarded as the progress of human being and civilisation, as well as improvement of ideology.

After World War II, people reflected on the terror and cruelty of fascism, and it was not wrong to propose these ideas. Although it cannot be regarded as the ultimate civilisation, it is progress in civilisation.

However, when advocating democracy, freedom, and human rights, the Western world did something contradictory, which was colluding with the Wahhabi cult for oil.

Therefore, God recorded a paragraph in the Bible, which is in the Book of Revelation. It is the Whore and the End.

Democracy, freedom, and human rights should have nothing to do with the whore. However, based on America and the Western society colluding with the Wahhabi cult for oil, we can clearly see that America and the Western society is the whore.

America and the Western society advocate democracy, freedom, and human rights. However, the Wahhabi regime is a group most against democracy, freedom, and human rights in the world.

These two conflicting groups ally and collude with each other to hurt other countries.

It is very surprising. It's like a filthy man and woman fornicating and doing bad things. They also harm other people. This is what the whore does.

The Book of Revelations: Chapter 17—The Whore on the Beast

'With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication and the inhabitants of the earth were drunk with the wine of her fornication.'

In the democratic and free capitalist system, people only pursue economic profits while ignoring fairness and justice. They cannot effectively control the society.

America has such a developed economy, but it fails to protect the basic safety of its people. Every day, two people would be killed by the police.

Mexico also has a developed economy, but the whole country is controlled by drug cartels. Latin America has chaotic social management and drug abuse.

The whole Western world has low fertility rate. People indulge in a life of pleasure and comfort, while refusing to procreate, and this is also against the Bible. Today, the immigration crisis of Europe is also related to indulging in a life of pleasure and comfort and refusing to procreate in Western countries, which made Germany and France introduce Muslims to solve the problem of labour shortage. As a result, they opened the door to dangerous persons, and the whole value system is about to collapse.

This is all the manifestation of a whore. On her forehead is written: 'Mystery, Babylon the great, the mother of harlots and of the abominations of the earth.'

Now, people in the world only pursue material, profits, and enjoyment, while completely neglecting justice and fairness, with no consideration of spiritual civilisation.

This is what God hates. All these come from the capitalist ideology of democracy, freedom, and human rights.

Therefore, the capitalist ideology of democracy, freedom, and human rights is called the 'hideous mother of evil' by God.

'She is dressed in purple and scarlet, adorned with gold, precious stones, and pearls. In her hand is a gold cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication.'

The characteristic of whores is that they are very rich, but she has nothing else except money. They ignore justice, fairness, and spiritual civilisation.

'The Whore on the Beast'

The beast is the biggest monster in the world, which is the Wahhabi cult. At present, almost all the terrorist attacks in the world are conducted by the Wahhabi cult which is called 'the Beast' by God.

'Sitting on the beast' is a very vivid metaphor. At present, the Wahhabi countries Saudi Arabia, Qatar, and Turkey are sitting on and controlled by America. They support terrorism, and provide capital, weapons, political asylum, and logistics guarantee to the terrorists.

68. Democratic society is a society led by doggery

24 November 2015

What is doggery? Doggery is people who deserve a beating, who cannot get what others mean and what the situation is.

There have been twenty-eight rules long before in Western society.

Twenty per cent of people are in charge of the wealth belonging to 80 per cent. It is said that the rate is even much higher: 1 per cent of people are in charge of the wealth of 90 per cent.

Actually, it is very simple that only a rather small group of people are not doggery.

Most people cannot get what others mean.

I've met a lot of people. People differ greatly in terms of their intellectual responses.

Young people are too naive while old people are rigid, slow, and fall behind others.

Moreover, most of the middle-aged are selfish.

The state of people's minds can be assessed from three aspects:

1. Calculating capability

Like the CPU of computers, some people react very quickly while others are very slow. People differ greatly in terms of their speed to identify and receive emerging things.

2. The horizon and the received information

The volume of information one can receive is limited; therefore, the majority of people can only receive information about and at one place. People from different regions and different countries handle different issues because they do not even know what happens, why this happens, and what it will be like in the future in other regions and other countries.

3. Purposes and morals

What is the purpose of one's life? What is one's life goal? What does one want to do? Good things or bad things? Some bad people are very smart and have a broad horizon. However, what they only want to do is to murder people for their money and kill for their own interests.

Few people can meet these three standards mentioned above, and only people meeting these

standards are the real talents in society while others are not qualified. They are doggery and subject to others. All of them deserve a beating and cannot get what others mean.

1. People not capable of understanding things and learning things are deemed to be subject to others.

2. People who do not know things of other regions, other areas, and other countries, with short-sightedness, will be subject to others. If they become bosses, there will be absurdity and conflicts.

3. People who are always thinking about doing harm to others and benefiting themselves with bad morals should be controlled and managed.

Democratic system is to make that doggery manage a country.

Democratic society is a society led by doggery.

If the conflict between the Western countries and the Islamic cult is not instigated, the Western cultures will finally be destroyed by the Islamic cult. The ideological system of those doggeries is not capable of fighting against the Islamic cult.

I remembered before that Japan was expected to be very prosperous. Who owned a Sony Walkman would be very proud and made others envy. However, they fail now. Their population ages and their economy declines.

Japan's failure is the failure of Western cultures, values, and ideological system; it is the failure of human rights, democracy, and free value system.

The reason why is that this kind of value system is to make doggery lead the society. This will deliver some bad results.

At home, the social management cannot be carried out well. Gun ban, shooting ordinary people, drugs, gangsters, and unfairness will emerge.

Reproduction will be a long-term terrible social issue. It is very important to whether a culture can succeed or the population and population ageing can be controlled. Or it is an important index. Those Western bandits revel in happiness, refuse to take up the social responsibility, and now they realise the severe consequences under the democratic system, particularly Japan, Germany, and France.

Sometimes I think that Western countries should be destroyed by Islam and this is the success of China. However, if Islam destroys Europe, it will impact China greatly.

Therefore, it is the most beneficial act to unite with Europe for destroying Islam. Outside, they do

not regret until some important decisions are made absurdly.

One of the representatives is Hong Kong. Many people in Hong Kong are sensitive, while some college students and bad people are always advocating independence with absurd imagination. College students are less experienced. They are simple-minded with strong bodies; they are the representative of doggery and should be whipped and brainwashed after being caught. Without patience, they should be given a rope and encouraged to commit suicide. They might as well die because they are suffering while they are living. For people whose crimes are not enough for death, they can also be encouraged to commit suicide.

Some people in Taiwan are sensitive while more and more people become doggery. Not knowing their strength and the international circumstance, they only want to be independent while they are afraid of wars. What are they thinking about? What is the logic? There cannot be independence without wars.

I think Taiwan should be retrieved through wars. Americans will not fight for people in the Middle East and of course will not fight for Taiwanese. I bet that you Americans will not fight for Taiwan and I advocate wars against Taiwan.

Many Europeans are sensitive while still many people are doggeries.

Several hundred were killed by Islamists in France, the slaughter in the theatre that can only be seen in shambles. There are even French and English criticising China to combat Islam taking advantage of them. One Chinese proverb says, 'One will not regret until bad consequences deliver.' Why do some Europeans still not regret even when bad consequences deliver?

It seems that Islam does not work hard to kill more Europeans. They should create more terrorist attacks to make some people wake up.

Some people in Hong Kong, Taiwan, and Europe are sensitive, and they are the real talents in the society, who are worth a mandate. However, there are still some doggery that annoy others. They are not a minority in the society. They account for 80 percent of the world. Democratic system is to ensure that those people lead the society and lead humans to immorality and death.

69. No one could tell whether a Muslim is a radical

9 December 2015

Recently, many Americans are lashing out at Trump, especially those who condescendingly regard themselves distinguished, seemingly swearing to wipe him out from the political circle.

Trump is an honest man. Every single word that comes out of his mouth is downright true.

It, however, pricks the nerves of the hypocritical Westerners dubbed by Israel.

In particular, politicians are exactly like the witty in 'The Emperor's New Clothes', throwing bull and lying through their teeth.

Those hypocritical Westerners and the emperor without clothes claim that the Muslims who have killed people are radicals, while those who have not picked up guns are good ones.

This is, de facto, very preposterous.

The rule is quite simple.

If you buy a basket of apples and someone tells you that some are poisonous enough to kill you, will you still buy it?

As simple as ABC, since we are not able to distinguish the poisonous apples from the harmless ones, we must destroy this basket immediately, let alone spend a penny on it.

Same reason. Are you capable of telling me which Muslim is radical, and which is not?

It was merely by attending a lecture, watching a tape of video, or paying a visit to Saudi Arabia that numerous Muslims who have committed terrorist attacks turned from moderates to militants.

Only by a few days or a few months would the so-called harmless apples mutate into poisonous ones.

Underpinning a qualitative change is a quantitative change. It is by means quoted from the hypocritical Westerners and the emperor without clothes that the so-called harmless apples transform into poisonous ones all of a sudden, yet nobody knows how it deteriorates. This is literally nonsense.

The truth is that they are all essentially poisonous apples, with some exposing themselves while others not, in that devils are in the DNA of Muslims and are the essence of them.

Those who act in accordance with the Koran are demons. This is precisely the DNA of Muslims. This is precisely their nature.

For those who want to make a pitch for the Muslims, please first tell me which apples are poisonous and which not in that basket.

Please first tell me which Muslim is good and which not.

Could you guarantee that the good Muslim in your eyes would not kill, radicalise, or explode after visiting the Middle East for a couple of months?

In fact, no one dares to say for sure, and no one could clearly tell which Muslim is good and which is a terrorist.

It is by the US that Baghdadi and many of the most villainous terrorists were released from prison.

Only when the US government concedes that certain Muslims are good men will it release them from jail.

Nevertheless, the facts have evidenced that the American authorities could far from identify which Muslim is good and which is a terrorist. They are birds of a feather. They all look the same.

Recent news serves as the strongest testimony for the nonexistence of moderate Muslims.

'This a scene captured by the American Vice News when it was carrying out an interview in the control area of Syria's "moderate" opposition: a sub-chief of the Free Syrian Army is leading the public to sing a song, the lyrics of which are "our leader Bin Laden made the US scare with power of belief and weapons, the Shia Islam, we will kill you all."' Once the video was broadcast, Americans blasted the US government and accused CIA of being a piece of crap.

It can be seen from this video that Americans are already insane, as they are spending money on supporting those anti-America monsters, or at least the government officials are all insane, given the fact that they are always full of bull, lying to the natives as well as the whole world. They cultivated those devils first by offering them capital, weapons, and political protection. Then they waged wars against the devils solely in the aim of contributing orders to merchants of death and eliminating dissentient forces around the globe, which is of no righteousness at all, but a pure troublemaker.

Accordingly, all Muslims are so problematic that they need to be examined. They all are part of the poisonous apples in that basket.

The best way is that not until we are able to completely verify and identify the poisonous Muslims among other harmless ones do we begin to discuss about the salvation and acceptance

of the Muslim.

Prior to that, please keep them off the field and far away from us and our families and countries. This is the responsible practice for the sake of families, countries, and the future generations.

70. Matthew Effect

27 December 2015

Bible: Matthew

25:14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

25:15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

25:16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

25:17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

25:18 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

25:19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

25:20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

25:21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

25:22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

25:23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

25:24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25:25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

25:26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:

25:27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

25:28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

25:29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

25:30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

The Matthew effect tells us that God appreciates and rewards the talented moneymaker. The scrambling for the Palestinian ownership between Jews and Arabs of Palestine fully applies to the Matthew effect. The Palestinian Arabs are the 'worthless servant'—need to throw that worthless servant outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

God gave a lot of instructions to a great many peoples in the world, as shown in the Bible, the Buddhist scriptures, the Koran, and the Tao Te Ching, as well as other books. Servants of God spread all over the world from different countries and ethnic groups, managing their lives in various lands.

Now thousands of years later, servants who read the Bible are the richest, while the servants who read the Koran are the poorest and the most evil ones.

It is obvious to see that Jews reading the Bible need to be rewarded while Palestinian Arabs reading the Koran need to be punished, to be cast into the outer darkness, leaving them weeping. This is the will of God and is also written in the Bible.

Therefore, one should not always take this doctrine and that thought, merely the sales techniques for lies, to speak of human affairs.

Money talks: one who has money owns truth.

Americans used to be rich, and they have the truth, but when someday they are no longer that rich just shut up. You are nonsense, false.

If the talk is merely limited to doctrine, thinking yet no money, no practical effects, it is heresy. God assigns different servants, different nationalities, and different countries to administrate different places.

Someone who can get his places in order is the truth. Of course, there are other things besides money, such as justice, fairness, social order, social management, and so on.

But money is the most significant foundation. The devoid of money saves everything.

God creates man to create wealth, utilising humans' wisdom and power to make a better world.

The wealth also needs human to create, just as Saudi Arabia's wealth is not created by the Arabs, but belongs to God. Nevertheless, they take God's wealth to do something evil. God gives new energy, non-polluting, so humans no longer use polluted oil and coal. Leave all those wicked men being cast into the outer darkness.

That the America raised human rights such as to protect the disabled and the mentally disabled, to protect murderers, drug traffickers, serious criminals, the cult, and devils is the violation of the Bible, of the will of God, needed to be punished.

And this idea, in collusion with the devil, no justice, no principle, is what disgusts God.

Those severely disabled at birth and the mentally ill are not qualified, and your protection of them declares the failure of God to the world. It is profane.

Those who acquired disability are not God's business, and you should be kind to them.

Those who are born severely disabled should be back to their mothers for a new shape.

The freedom of the mentally disabled should be restricted. If they kill people or crime seriously, they should be executed.

Westerners help a number of people with mental illness to escape punishment of serious crime, which takes advantage of human rights against God, and is in collusion with the devil, escaping the punishment of justice.

People such as murderers, drug traffickers, serious criminals, the heresy, and the devil are the enemy who betrayed God, and should adopt all means to suppress and punish. Protecting the human rights of those people is against God.

These people hold true for the Matthew effect: everything of them needs to be deprived, and then distributed to others.

71. DPRK's nuclear weapons should be limited to self-defence

6 January 2016

The Democratic People's Republic of Korea (DPRK), though with small population and small territory, developed nuclear weapons to threaten the world.

Nonetheless, precisely because of their small population and territory, DPRK, dead or alive, has no impact on the entire world.

Owing to a variety of reasons, DPRK was available to some nuclear weapons, yet their nuclear weapons should be limited to self-defence.

If DPRK does something unjust or attacks any country with nuclear weapons, all of its country, cockroaches included, should be, by means of nuclear weapons, weeded out of the earth. Immediately.

God needs no DPRK.

DPRK's nuclear weapons can be used for self-defence only when the use of nuclear weapons is within existing land in DPRK, and nuclear explosions mustn't go beyond its border. Otherwise it counts as the attacking other countries and needs to be wiped out.

72. The Matthew effect and enforcing justice on behalf of God

8 January 2016

The Matthew effect came from the Bible, referring to the phenomenon that the poor get poorer while the rich become richer.

Enforcing justice on behalf of God was from the Chinese Tao Te Ching, and the original text is as follows: May not the Tao of God be compared to bending a bow? The bow which was high is brought low and what was low is raised up. So God diminishes where there is superabundance and supplements where there is deficiency. It is the way of God to diminish superabundance and to supplement deficiency. It is not so with the way of man. A man takes away from those who have not enough to add to his own superabundance.

From the text, it is meant the good men should enforce justice on behalf of God and rob the rich to feed the poor. These two works are the hints of historic civilisation from God to different nations, which should be regarded as the bottom culture and the subconscious for two civilisations.

That's why Western people who believe in the Bible chose capitalism while Chinese people selected communism.

It is determined by and started from the bottom culture.

We have analysed the Matthew effect and now we focus on enforcing justice on behalf of God.

May not the Tao of God be compared to bending a bow? The bow which was high is brought low and what was low is raised up. So God diminishes where there is superabundance and supplements where there is deficiency. It is the way of God to diminish superabundance and to supplement deficiency. It is not so with the way of man. A man takes away from those who have not enough to add to his own superabundance.

The interpretation of the above is as follows: How God works is like how to bend a bow. If the bow is not bent low enough, then bend it down. If the bow is bent too low, then loosen a bit. If there is abundance, then make more use of it. If it is deficient, then supplement it.

The rule of how God works is to make more use of the abundance and to supplement the deficiency. But the way people work is different from that of God. Man always squeezes poor people to satisfy the rich ones.

The rule of how God works is to force the rich to help and supplement the poor. The rule of how man works is different from that of God. Man always looks down on the poor and the incapable, squeezes the poor, and flatter the rich, the capable, and the powerful.

The slogan of Chinese good men is always to enforce justice on behalf of God.

This is called justice. That's why Chinese good men are prepared to rob the rich to feed the poor so as to reach the common satisfaction.

The communist culture is a type of common satisfaction and shares the same logical thinking with Chinese traditional culture. The reason why communism succeeded in China but failed in other countries is the cultural differences, especially the basic logical thinking of the bottom.

Christianity believes that Chinese people are selected by God and were selected since the start of prehistoric civilisation.

To take away from the rich to supplement the poor means common satisfaction and common prosperity. It also means that the more advanced should drive the less advanced and the more advanced should bear more responsibilities.

The Matthew effect means that it is human nature to flatter the rich, to look down on the poor, to dislike the poor, to favour the rich, and to squeeze the poor to satisfy the rich. It is human nature, the original impulse, and the primal instinct.

I believe that capital only when being held in the hand of capitalists could be capital. If the capital is held by the masses of people, it could be only for consumption and serves as the means of expenditure and profligacy. That's how spendthrifts become.

Therefore, it could be a good thing if the capital is centralised by the capitalists.

This is because only capitalists know how to make money with money and how to compound interest. The reason why the poor is poor is that they don't know how to make money. No matter how much money is given to the poor, they will only use the money to buy the luxury goods and then squander it.

It is the correct choice that the capital is only kept by the ones who know how to make money.

But people desire for common prosperity and enforcing justice on behalf of God.

There are two types of people in China: the ones working in national system and the ones working out of the system.

People who are raised by state-owned capital are the so-called people working in the national system.

People who are raised by private-owned capital are called people working out of national system.

In the early years of the foundation, people were all working in national system. But later,

because of the reform and bankruptcy of state-owned corporations, a large number of people were laid off or gave up the job of working in the system, who became people working out of national system.

Capitalism is applied among people working out of national system, and they speak of the Matthew effect.

Communism is applied among people working in national system, and they speak of common prosperity. People could choose whether to work in the national system or not through certain working mechanism.

As the state-owned capital could not be applied in all fields but could make profits only in some area, the state-owned corporations could not raise all but some people. A large majority of people have to strive for life out of the national system.

The functional effects toward country and society are different between people working in or out of the national system.

People working in the national system mainly help to enforce justice on behalf of God, to solve the problems of fairness and justice, and to maintain the social harmony and stability.

People working out of the national system mainly help in accordance with the Matthew effect, such as making the market free for competition and free for performance and solving the problems of employment and development.

The way how God works and that of how man works play different roles, and they interact with each other. It is impossible to diminish how man works. Man is man, and he cannot be God. People have their nature and could not talk about the way God works by ignoring the nature of people. It could never be able to talk about how God works. Fairness and justice and harmonious society are required in society, and this is also the requirement from God to human society. Breaching the way God works will lead to being abandoned by God and finally dying out.

Therefore, the suitable social system should be public ownership of land and resource made by God. Common ownership can also be applied to an area that is suitable for common ownership.

Two totally different thinking logic and rules of society exist in public ownership and private ownership and exist in both the national system and non-national system.

The functional effects they create for society satisfy both the way of God and that of man and the society will work harmoniously.

73. Upholding the honour of one's ancestors, carrying on the family line, and man's superiority to woman

16 January 2016

The concept of upholding the honour of one's ancestors and carrying on the family line is a far-reaching idea of ancient Chinese culture, but it has been abolished as the Four Olds.

But it is kind of reasonable.

First, this idea was based on the culture of male-dominated society, that is, man is superior to female. Based on the concept of man's superiority to the female, man should carry on the family line, while woman should become the fertility machine and man's accessory.

That's why the responsibility of upholding the honour of his ancestors and carrying on the family line is on the shoulders of man. Only man could uphold the honour of his ancestors, and only man could carry on the family line. Therefore, man should also inherit the family business.

It happens that the religions of other nations also have supportive similar viewpoints.

The doctrine of Christianity begins with that woman is made from a rib of man and should be the accessory of man, and man is superior to woman.

The doctrine of Islam is even strict that woman should not show her face, which is like she is ashamed to meet people.

The culture of democracy and human rights has denied the above and requires that man and woman should be treated equally. Islam specially despises the concept of movement for women's rights, sexual liberation, and sexual freedom.

It is good that Western people like to scientifically study and count. According to scientific statistics, there have been no ideologists or philosophers in all ages. This is scientific statistics and truth.

The lubrication of this scientific phenomenon reveals the differences of logical thinking and the subconscious between man and woman, which I have discussed in other writings.

That is to say man and woman were designed totally different when God was making people. Women only proceed with conscience but no thinking.

They can only proceed with stress reaction toward things. They can only have simple logical thinking and lack the complex abstract logical thinking ability.

The bottom and the most primitive principle of logic and design on the society structure of man's superiority to woman is revealed from this point of view.

As human's thinking reaction ability varies from the idiots to the brightest, excellent women are smarter and more rational than men in low level.

The most excellent women are also better than men in ordinary thinking level; however, there are fundamental differences between man and the most excellent woman in logical thinking, the subconscious, and the starting point of thinking.

Perhaps sometimes, higher thinking ability could compensate the deficiency of some starting point of thinking. In the meantime, the social status always determines the ability to make money.

Being professional and expertise in certain field is always sufficient to make money and the ability to make money does not require comprehensive thinking ability to study the society.

I have met many people and confronted many things. Some women are smart enough to be a good helper; however, there is no bottom line of morality, no life principle, and no positive logic when a large number of women work. Reaching the goal is their only logic, and in order to reach the goal, they can swindle, fool people, being unreasonable, act shamelessly, being insidious, and being unscrupulous. There are only things they cannot think, but no things they cannot do.

Nietzsche once said, 'If you need to go to a woman, don't forget to bring your whip.'

Socrates said that a bad woman could make a man into a philosopher. If he could think clearly on the bad and good things on earth, how could he not become a philosopher?

If you come across these women, most of them are not guilty enough to be dead. Without using the whip, indeed, it is no way to talk with them.

I guess when God makes women, in order to make men rule, God ignores making something for women so as to make women simple-minded but with developed ability to parent the offspring and to mind their own business and have more babies.

Millions of innate traitors appear without any cause in Germany. They are noisy and controversial, which makes the German become philosophers soon.

74. Polygyny can solve depopulation in Western countries

30 January 2016

Negative population growth and depopulation emerged after the implementation of democratic system in Western countries.

Depopulation is derived from human rights system or feminism. Women refuse giving birth to babies for various reasons, causing depopulation. They refuse giving birth to babies because babies will degrade the living quality and standard.

Polygyny can solve this problem. Many countries in the world still implement polygyny, and those countries with the policy of polygyny never lack population.

The reason is rather simple. Excellent and rich men can provide better living conditions for their descendants and are willing to have more descendants to inherit their legacy. Excellent descendants will come out of numerous descendants to inherit the legacy, which is a matter of probability.

Moreover, rich families of high status need more descendants to inherit their legacy.

However, monogamy, to some extent, prevents excellent men from giving birth to more descendants. Some of them even have no descendant to inherit their legacy.

It is believed that Westerners are richer than the rest around the world and have good conditions to raise children. However, things turn out to be quite the opposite. Their population keeps decreasing, and they need vicious Muslims to pay annuity to their elders. As a result, vicious Muslims provide for the aged for Westerners.

This will finally result in the termination of civilisation. Over time, this kind of culture will gradually die out because of depopulation problem.

Everything has its vanquisher in this world. There is always a solution for each problem. The solution is to find out the root cause for triggering an event and act in contravention.

The problem is caused by human rights system or feminism, and the solution is polygyny.

Considering feminism, polygyny and polyandry can be implemented at the same time, which is without discrimination against women.

As a result, excellent men can have more than one wife, and menial men might fail to find a wife, which can balance the society as well and give birth to more babies.

Polygyny and polyandry are better than introducing vicious Muslims. At least, all the babies are of the same clan and have same ideology and culture.

You will finally be turned into demons if you let vicious Muslims help you provide for the aged.

Whether a culture can be inherited and reasonably promote population growth is an important indicator to measure whether a culture is advanced and excellent, which is also a fundamental and decisive factor.

Democratic Western culture leads to negative population growth and sustaining depopulation.

This shows that Western culture is an unsuccessful, wrong, and critical culture which needs further improvement.

Blindly implementing Western culture and democracy is fallacious and dangerous and is another form of heresy.

Polygyny and property inheritance system can encourage people to give birth to more offspring, which has been repeatedly reflected in Chinese traditional culture. It is believed that countries implementing polygyny also recognise that this system plays a great role in childbirth encouragement.

If a man can marry more than one woman, the women who are unable or unwilling to give birth to babies will be confronted with the problem that no child can inherit the legacy of their husband and they can rely on no one when they grow old.

Therefore, the status of a woman in the polygynous family is directly related to whether they have offspring. No offspring means no status. When they get old, even no one will provide for them.

In view of this, polygyny can greatly simulate and encourage women to give birth to babies.

If a country has been faced with negative population growth for a long time but still advocates feminism and human rights, its citizens should take medicine. Polygyny is good medicine for treating the infertility of a country, and feminists need to take more, so as to solve the current problem. The United States is an immigrant country where black race and coloured race are willing to give birth to children, so depopulation is not a prominent problem, while Taiwan, Japan, Germany, France, and Russia are incurably sick and need to take more medicine.

75. The government should provide a proper platform for trading and adopting infants

5 March 2016

Depopulation in Western countries is caused by monogamy and human rights system.

The solutions include polygyny and infant trading and adopting system. Generally, a monogamous family should have at least 2.2 children to maintain the normal population number. Otherwise, it will cause population decline.

Some couples are not willing to lower their living quality and standards in the name of protecting their human rights, so they are unwilling to give birth to babies or more than one baby.

For various reasons, some couples cannot give birth to children or more than one child.

Polygyny can solve the problem of depopulation. If you cannot accept polygyny, infant trading and adopting system can be used to solve the problem.

There is an old saying, 'Rewards allure men to brave danger.' It is very simple to increase population. As long as the market exists, raising the price can improve the market condition.

Some families are unwilling to give birth to babies, while others can do nothing and are unwilling to do anything except giving birth to babies. If giving birth to babies can enrich them, they would be willing to sell their babies. The higher the price is, the more children they will give birth to. All your expectations will be realised no matter how many children you want, black or white, boys or girls.

Many families are unwilling to give birth to children not because of poor quality of life but because of some other reasons, such as physiological reasons, old age, or health problem. As long as the market exists, they are willing to buy a child and raise the child heart and soul. It can be seen from the popularity of pet market that lots of people in the world need to adopt children. They call their dogs daughters and sons, which indirectly reflects their inner needs for adopting babies. Hence, they should be allowed to adopt some babies as their true sons and daughters.

In my opinion, the government should establish a special department engaging in the procurement and distribution of babies.

Firstly, the family needing to adopt a baby should register in the Ministry of Civil Affairs, explaining the adopting reasons, family economic status, as well as the gender and colour of the baby they want.

Then the government can call for online bids like P2P. Any family with extra babies to sell can submit a tender to the relevant department. As soon as a baby is born, one family can buy a baby from another family.

There's nothing wrong with selling and buying babies as long as it is beneficial for the growth of children, and the development of the society and the country.

In China, some evildoers break the legs and arms of children and even burn them after buying them. Then these children are forced to beg for money all their life. It is reported that a group of people specialised in such a business in China. One organisation manages lots of such disabled people and delivers them by special cars to different places for begging. The begged money will be collected by the organisers.

Other organisations buy and train children for stealing, robbing, prostitution, and doing bad things. Nevertheless, such things are in the minority. Perhaps the government is against buying and selling babies for this reason. Doing bad things by taking advantage of babies belongs to illegal underground trade.

If the government can provide a legal trading platform, such things can be eradicated to some degree. Since the whereabouts of the children and their families can be tracked, the government can interfere when a problem occurs.

I've met a family that treats the adopted children as their own children.

I've also met a loving couple without children all their life. Only they themselves understand the misery and inanity of the life without any child. For them life is incomplete.

Some children born due to accidental pregnancy are killed or abandoned by their mothers after birth. If there is such a market, perhaps these children will not die because their mothers can earn a huge amount of money by selling them to live a happy life in other families.

From my point of view, the Western countries with negative population growth should open and vigorously encourage the baby trading market. Capitalism is market economy in essence and should lay emphasis on the trading market.

The Western countries are driven to extinction by depopulation and are gradually occupied by vicious Islamists. Thus, they need market economy to contribute to their population growth.

The government should set up a P2P baby trading website where families in need of children can call for online bids. They should state the gender and colour of the baby they want and how much they are willing to pay. The government can offer prices for reference. Muslim babies should be forbidden to sell. In this way, the depopulation problem of Western countries can be well solved.

76. Death penalty should be executed in a civilised way

25 February 2016

Death penalty is executed when someone shall not live in the world, but shall depart for another world.

Now, in the civilised society, we should ask condemned criminals to leave politely as if treating them as unwelcome guests.

There is no need to be cruel and bloody and to be filled with hatred. Someone has done bad things though, we shall make them leave, but we do not have to hate them, as their departure marks an end. It is unnecessary to hate them.

So we must politely execute death penalty. But we are resolute that condemned criminals and intolerable criminals must die. People who shall leave must leave at once, and in a polite way.

Decapitation, burning to death, dismembering, falling to their death, or smashing to death are unnecessary, as they are not executed for justice but to spread hatred, horror, and evil. They are not to punish sins but to intimidate the living people, which is also an unjust act.

Executing death penalty can ask criminals to choose a way to die.

Death penalty can ask criminals to suicide at regulated location and time. Hanging, cutting, poison, and drowning are all allowed and relatively common. Ancient emperors forced ministers to suicide in this way. I suppose that ancient China is more humane and civilised than modern people.

Criminals can ask for another way to die only if they can execute at regulated location and time; otherwise, law-enforcement personnel will execute death penalty, making them leave the world in a compulsory way.

Someone who is destined to die must die. But it must be executed in a right way, which is civilised.

77. Raising dogs without eating their meat belongs to the mushrikeen

13 June 2016

In my childhood, I had been bitten by my neighbour's dog，who had just given birth to puppies. It almost bit everyone, including me.

I'm sick of dogs. All dogs, even the golden retriever, bark at me when they see me. I lived with a neighbour for nine years, and their dog barked at me for nine consecutive years, without a pause of a day. Therefore, I hate dogs very much.

I hope that one day the world will promote the Dog Meat Festival, and every family will eat the dog meat.

Raising a dog belongs to a kind of indulgence or spiritual paraphilia. And of course there are other people not only indulging in spiritual paraphilia but also in flesh paraphilia, which seems like more evil.

How to distinguish between the spiritual paraphilia and general entertainment is eating the dog meat.

If people raise dog just to eat its meat, then they can do it. They can raise dogs for meat supply as well as making fun of it. This behaviour can't be called the spiritual paraphilia.

Keeping dogs or other pets and can't bear to eat their meat then belongs to the spiritual paraphilia, which has violated the Bible and can be regarded as betraying God and the mushrikeen. This behaviour should be punished.

Buddha says that all creatures are equal. That is reasonable. Every animal is equal. No distinction! The distinction symbolises the discrimination. To hate a snake is to discriminate against a snake. To hate a crow is to discriminate against a crow. Meanwhile if some animals are given a specific status, it also violates the law of all beings being equal. It is also God's revelation.

Humans have no right to give any animal a special status, which can only be done by God. God authorises human the special rights to manage all the animals and plants on the ground.

It is only humans that have the special status, but any other animals are equal.

People need to eat not only dog meat but also the meat of any animals you like, except for those poisonous ones. But vegetarians can be exceptions.

I hope human beings can remember forever: God only is the supreme one who can let us kill everybody and eat any animals. People who go against God's will as well as justice and truth shall

be punished, and no one can be free from sin and quibble. There is no exception.

There are many animal protection organisations around the world, who seem to have mental disorder. They protest those famous-brand bags made with ostrich and crocodile skins. Why, they should look at shoes on their feet. Are not they leather ones? Are not those shoes made from animal skins? Which one is not made from animals? The food you eat and milk you drink in daily life? What qualification do you have to protest? Their thoughts and behaviour belong to evil ones, and we should send them to a labour camp for transforming. These transforming places include manufactory of ostrich products, restaurant of dog meat, and crocodile skins processing plant. When someone resists, you need to hit them with a whip. They are demons and heresies who go against God.

There remain some rare animals which will be extinct. Those are some damn and inappropriate thing. Let them die and there is no need to save. Why do we protect them? Is there good for human beings that pandas die or don't die? It is just losing a kind of thing in the zoo which can attract audiences. The only loss from pandas' extinction for human beings is some tickets. There is no loss except that.

Some people said that the extinction of species will cause some loss of genes on the earth. I think it is odd. Human beings always think they have been enough developed, and they will create if they need some genes. What loss do they have?

The only explanation is that those genes cannot be created by human beings in the near future, even for a long time. It can only created by God. People are unwilling to admit the greatness of God and steal God's achievement. Therefore, rare animals need to be protected.

78. A French leader says that the West needs terrorist attacks more

18 July 2016

'Islamic satanic terrorist attacks like that in Nice will increase constantly. People have to get used to that for it will be common in the future,' a French leader says today.

Because it is Muslims' implementation in the Koran and it's a reasonable request of Muslims, it should be satisfied.

People must synchronise with this pious rational religious behaviour.

Just as a masochist being raped, whipped, and burned by cigarette butts, he may still shout excitedly, feeling stimulated and crazy.

Fuck me one more time. Don't stop.

I think that the Islamic holy warriors are not struggling, earnest, or pious towards their work. They are in a perfunctory manner towards the task written by Allah in the Koran.

Westerners are in need of great excitement, stimulation, and attacks of terrorism, which you cannot afford.

They lack sexual ability and cannot possess seventy-two virgins after death.

Allah is sulky. And virgins need to be halved.

Homosexuals are so common in the Western world. There are few real men.

So it's logical that Allah wants to throw the homosexuals down mortally.

Men are not like men and women are not like women in the West.

They need the stimulation from holy warriors.

It is helping them regain self-esteem to humiliate the cowards.

Jihad needs to set an example to the Westerners and tell them who is a real man or real woman.

I have a thought that Duterte, the new president of the Philippines, is a real man. His measures to arrest drug dealers take effect in a few days.

It deserves a commendation that sixty thousand drug dealers give themselves up after several

drug dealers were killed.

That is real work off steam. So it is easy that all of the world prohibits drugs.

The real reason why drugs are widespread is that the Westerners betray God. ‘The great whore’ is in league with the demons.

They are so shameless neglecting righteousness because of the purpose of earning black money.

They need jihad to stimulate and excite them vigorously, and to satisfy their reasonable requests.

79. View the effect of Philippine drug control from a macroscopic perspective

21 August 2016

Philippine president said at a speech today, 'We cannot only calculate the number of the drug dealers who have been shot but also the innocent people who have been killed by them.'

This is extremely correct and is exactly what I want to discuss in the article below, namely the realisation of socialised mass production from the perspective of social administration.

The feature that state and social administration manage millions and even billions of people simultaneously requires a macroscopic way to view and ponder over problems rather than a microscopic one.

I have mentioned that Western culture is an individual-oriented culture, where problems are viewed entirely from a microscopic perspective and wholly from individual interests and rights. This is the most evident disadvantage and logical error among all Western theories.

The most dramatic conflict on Philippine drug control lies at the macro- and microscopic perspective, which has obviously revealed the error and ridiculousness of the human rights theory in the West. They intend to put all people's feet into the same shoes, which is not only absurd but also rather evil.

It is self-evident that the overall effect and result shall be considered and the reason and consequence fully analysed when evaluating an event.

Drug control is rather systematic as its harm has penetrated every corner of the society. Its harm does not only involve the ill-gotten money made by the drug dealers, but also the number of families destroyed by the drug, the economic loss in each family, and the related casualties due to the gang fight among drug dealers and between drug dealers and the government army, and the death directly linked with drugs. In addition, the labour loss, fiscal expenditure, and the adverse social effect generated by the flow of drug capital into the general election are all required to be included in the statistics, which is then compared with the casualties of innocent people. This is the most scientific and objective way to evaluate the event.

It cannot, of course, exclude innocent people among those deaths. But otherwise, tens of thousands of times as many as the current innocent people will be killed, either by drug dealers or by the drug itself.

This is a war, and deaths, whether of the good or the evil, are rather common in wars. There is a casualty proportion in the war, namely the casualty proportion between both sides, between the

deserved deaths and undeserved deaths, and the good and the evil. The casualty proportion in the Philippines is rather high as 99 per cent of the deaths are the evil. No war has won such glorious victory in history; thus, this is a successful war.

In the meantime, there is another feature of wars, namely war's end.

The war will naturally end and there will be no deaths when all drug dealers give in and are transformed, and there are no drug addicts.

The human-rights-based drug control in the West, however, sustains forever. It will act like the drug control in Mexico, where everyone is a participant of the drug dealing and drug dealers control and infiltrate the government. In the end, the stricter the drug control, the more the drug dealers.

Therefore, the democratic drug control in the West is exactly what God said in the Bible—the collusion between the mother of all prostitutes and the demon—and a protest against God as well as justice.

That the United Nations criticises the Philippines is offering assistance to the demon and making resistance against God. Protest for Philippine drug control is the protest for God's punishment on the demon.

You have degraded into the disciples of the demon.

80. To establish a new international organisation with executive capacity and appropriate profitability

29 August 2016

Land and mineral resources are the belongings of God. He hopes that the world he created is filled with humans and creatures, and they can lead a prosperous, happy, and orderly life.

1. The population of humans and other creatures should increase with the advance of productivity.

2. Everyone living on earth should lead a prosperous, happy, and orderly life.

Population Growth

Influenced by Western human rights culture, people are indulgent, unwilling to give birth to the future generation, which results in the ageing and decline of population. China is not an exception. They put forward a ridiculous reason that the earth cannot bear too many people. The earth resources are going to be depleted, so there is the need to reduce the population.

The improved living standards mean that doing the same thing will consume more social resources while many consumptions are totally unnecessary, just serving for the personal luxury pastime, a waste of resources. The cause of this waste is that people's behaviour lacks overall management and purpose. It seems that people do not know what is the right thing to do.

In my view, nowadays, Chinese people spend large amounts of money on marriage, and raising a child also is heavily costly. They refuse to give birth to and bring up children for the excuse that raising children is too expensive.

But, as we all know, marriage and raising children can be done with a lot of money, but also can be done with very little money, or even at no cost.

In many cases, the behaviour of spending money is the behaviour of consuming resources. I think that nowadays, affected by vanity and comparing mentality, Chinese people just spend money on needless things. The resources are consumed for the unnecessary purpose. But the something that should be done is undone. The responsibility that should be shouldered is shied away from. This is the waste of resources, originating from the irrational allocation of resources, from the problem in people's minds.

People should bring down the cost of getting married and raising children, and bring up more

children. That a couple raise two to three children can ensure a stable population.

The steady and reasonable growth of population is the foundation for economic development. Over 10 per cent growth of Chinese economy in the past stems from the practice in the Mao Zedong era that encouraged birth. It is called demographic dividend. But now the economic slowdown is obviously attributed to the ageing of the population. Because there are not so many children, it is rather difficult to sell many buildings. The declining social rigid demand results in the lower performance of the economy.

From my point of view, as long as people have food, they can survive. All the other things are flexible. Someone proposes that food supply in China can realise self-sufficiency if China plants potatoes in the west region. There is no potato planted just because of the Chinese people's eating habit.

The problem of population in Western countries is also a matter of ideology. The West needs a cultural transformation. The personal social responsibility should be fulfilled before advocating human rights.

People of every country in the world needs a prosperous, orderly, and happy life. For all sorts of reasons, developments and ideologies of every nation and country on earth are different. Wealth and power are needed to change them.

Mere wealth is not enough. Money cannot be lasting without the protection of power, which is the real wealth.

Thus, the transformation of poverty-stricken areas requires money and power.

We should set up worldwide a wealthy and powerful international organisation to achieve this goal.

The existing United Nations is unconsolidated, more like a commodity trading market for bargaining, rather than a highly efficient organisation. The United Nations can only be used to communicate and contain each other, unable to effectively achieve an objective. In fact, this organisation has no goal.

The problem of Islamic heresy should be addressed first, and then humans need a new goal and to achieve it.

Using the philosophy and ideas of this book can make most people reach a consensus. Based on the philosophy of this book, a global organisation will come into being, which is intended to systematically transform every poor, backward, and evil corner.

First comes the transformation of culture and ideology, followed by the politics and military, and then economic investment. Economic investment must be guaranteed by politics and military.

Otherwise it is a waste of money.

All require the wealth of God. We need to use God's wealth to embrace the reign of God and to uphold the law of God.

I think that for the wealth of God in all countries, that is, the land and mineral income of all countries, 2–5 per cent of them should be part of an international organisation and the fund can be raised through donation and project investment.

The value of this wealth needs to be preserved and increased by investment.

It is mainly used for the ideological transformation in poverty-stricken areas, backward areas, and evil areas, for political party building and military building, and then for economic investment. Work will be done to transform the poor, backward, and evil regions, and drug and violence-plagued regions in a systematic manner.

In the area controlled by the organisation, the money will be used for ecological transformation, resource utilisation, and investment in desert areas. Some countries, such as Israel, can make efficient use of land and desert resources, to convert the desert into an economic producing area and a liveable habitation. This is not difficult, just needs technology, investment and political environment.

81. Drug dealers who surrender should be allowed to sell organs to others, and then they can be absolved

3 September 2016

In the Philippines, a lot of drug dealers surrendered, so their prisons were overcrowded. These men were guilty, but they walked on the road of crime because of the temptation of the demon.

The demon includes democracy and human rights advocacy in Western society, which makes them believe that crime can go unpunished and can be as impunity as in Mexico with the protection of human rights, and that is why they boldly betray God and justice to commit crimes.

But now that they have surrendered, they should be given a chance to go back to God.

At the same time, there is a certain price to pay. They should be distinguished from law-abiding people, so they need to do something to show repentance and loyalty to God.

I heard that some people sell their kidney in order to buy a mobile phone. Similarly, many people in Nepal have sold their kidneys for the sake of their lives.

A man has two kidneys, and selling one to another is not a big problem.

So I suggest that drug dealers can make atonement by selling kidney or other organs. If they help others, their sins can be forgiven, and it also warns others that the betrayal of God and justice comes at a price.

82. With regard to North Korea, we should solve problems, not make problems

10 September 2016

Today, the North Korean problem is that the demon has developed and expanded by means of the contradiction of the big powers.

In the last nuclear test, the measures taken in the United States were to create new problems rather than to solve them.

The consensus now is that the North Korean Peninsula should be free of nuclear weapons.

Now it seems impossible for the demon to take the initiative to give up nuclear weapons, so the only way to denuclearisation is to destroy the North Korean nuclear capability immediately, or the problem will get worse. Other negotiations, condemnation, sanctions, and missile defence are jokes.

THAAD (terminal high altitude area defense) deployed by the United States is for the sake of hitching a ride or other purpose of its own, thus creating new problems on the North Korean Peninsula. Instead of solving problems and destroying the demon, it makes the demon have more space to live.

The solution to the problem is to take military action just as they did when they solved nuclear capabilities of Syria and Iraq. Simply, the cancer cells will be removed before they spread.

The United Nations should authorise the United States to take military action to destroy North Korea's nuclear facilities. The rest is nonsense.

83. Failure of the German refugee policy proves Westerners' hypocrisy

21 September 2016

Now, the German leaders have recognised the failure of refugee policy, showing that Westerners' so-called values all belong to hypocrisy, which cannot solve any problems but makes the greater trouble and the demon.

Originally, refugees were refused in Germany, even including a weak girl.

I said that Westerns' values and humanitarianism all belong to hypocrisy. However, they do not admit it and accept a large number of refugees to boast their 'true good'.

After one year, hypocrisy is finally broken. They have to declare failure and admit policy mistakes.

After all, hypocrisy is deceptive, false and superficial, so it can blind people's eyes just for a short time.

Baghdad has revealed the essence of the refugee issue clearly: Islam has never been a peaceful religion in all ages. So the people who believe in Islam are doomed to be refugees.

The issue of refugees is the issue of Islam in nature, which is about ideology.

All hypocrisy will not admit it, so it will never succeed.

Doing nothing or doing unsuccessful things for refugees is hypocrisy, because you cannot solve any problems but make troubles for indigenous people, so that indigenous people suffer from the demon's control. You are so irresponsible.

God founded Islam thousands of years ago, but God left Islam from 2012, which was occupied by the demon. So, Muslims worship the demon rather than God five times a day.

In the Bible, God says Muslims worship the beast and the beast image.

Correctly, we should collect all refugees on a small island and provide the most basic pork-containing food, water, and the Bible. And then they should shut their door and reflect on misdeeds, which can maintain their lives, complete the humanitarianism, and transform their ideology without any impact on residents in the countries.

For Christians and people who are well educated, we only accept those who are willing to integrate into Western society and allow them to enter Europe to look for a job, but others are not allowed to leave the island.

I have always adhered to this opinion all the time, and I think it is the only right way to treat refugees, but any other action is wrong and hypocritical.

The hypocrisy is the essence of the whole of Western values, as God says, 'the great whore riding on the beast'.

Westerners, with no justice or value of right and wrong, only boast of themselves for their own profits but cannot solve any problems for both Israel and refugees.

Guided by the values, Westerners indulge in a life of pleasure and comfort with no will to give birth to future generations, resulting in the Western population ageing. So they need to introduce Muslims to be engaged in cheap labour to pay pensions for the old.

You are so naive, ignorant, and self-deceiving to think that the introduction of refugees will be able to solve the shortage of pensions, the lack of labour, and the refugee problem.

The demon can be manipulated and used by you, so it cannot be called the demon.

True good is helpful to fundamentally and permanently solve the problem and reduce social costs as much as possible.

The ideological transformation of Islam through public opinion, with removal of the demon, can solve the problem in essence gradually.

All hypocrisy dare not admit the demon and face the demon.

84. It's demonic to prevent the civilians fleeing the battlefield. They account for the civilian bombing. The bombers are innocent.

10 October 2016

I remember my grandma said many people fled from Japanese soldiers' invasion in the Second World War—they fled to the cities that had not been invaded. Many of my grandma's relatives in the generation had fleeing experiences.

Now, there are ones who do not allow fleeing the war in Syria. All factions or parties of Islamic terrorists not allow the civilians to flee, because they want the civilians to be hostages and human shields against the bombs.

From this point of view, the Islamic demons are not evil at some level, but at extraordinary level. They are extremely wicked and shameless.

Using civilians as human shields and thwarting their fleeing are how those under the names of Free Syrian Army, IS, al-Qaeda, al-Nusra Front, etc. fight. They do not fight in the way soldiers would. They are shamelessly rolling over and over on the floor and making an unreasonable scene. They are Satan living on human meat and blood. They force the death of the innocent with them, and fire from under women's skirts and behind children's backs.

However, there are some people in America and Western society wishing to provide political cover for these Satan.

Those who prevent refugee fleeing are the evil demon liable for bombing of civilians. They are the so-called Free Syrian Army, IS, al-Nusra Front, etc.

The Syrian government forces have never stopped civilians fleeing but kept reminding them of fleeing. Therefore, they are the just side. They are the innocent bomber. Those who prevent refugees from fleeing should have the liability. They need to tried by God.

In fact, the Syrian government forces didn't bomb many civilians. Those who were bombed are mostly rebel families and supporters of the terrorists.

Refusing the refugees fleeing is an evil theory coined by Americans. They thought this could force the attackers to give in, and human shields could be used to resist the attackers. Once civilians are harmed by attackers, there can be humanitarian crisis. This theory is nonsense and evil. It is an excuse used by America for interference with the internal affairs of other countries and is patented by Americans.

Humanitarian crisis refers to the slaughtering of civilians following a defeat. It usually occurred in

ancient times. But it never means mistaken killing of civilians. The two represent two concepts, and are not confusable.

After witnessing the killing of civilians, American and Western society should put the blame on the Free Syrian Army, al-Qaeda, and IS, who prevent civilians from fleeing, using them as human shields. It's because of them hiding and firing from under women's skirts and behind children's backs that the civilians were killed.

They are the shameless cowards, the slaughterers of civilians, and the evil demon.

America and Western countries should accuse them of kidnapping, slaughtering civilians, and committing war crime in the International Court of Justice, rather than unjustifiably accusing the Syrian government forces. This is an act of 'the great whore' and evil cult.

85. Trump is elected as the president, which means that God is on the side of people and hates human hypocrisy

10 November 2016

Hypocrisy exists in both the Western and Oriental worlds, including China. It can be seen from the fable of 'The Emperor's New Clothes' that ancient and modern Chinese and Western people are all hypocritical. People inherently like the world being enveloped by lies and scams.

Hitler said, 'If you repeat a lie often enough, it becomes the truth.'

Lin Biao said, 'Nothing big can be achieved without lies.'

It's mainly because from the primitive society to today, people have not been enlightened yet. The mode of thinking and algorithm abilities, the ability to understand the world, and logical judgment of things are extremely limited. If the knowledge grasped by human society is a sea, the knowledge and cognition ability of an individual is like a glass of water. Before, I analogised it to the scope of a flashlight's light beam which is considerably narrow.

People's cognition of the world beyond the light beam is all false and they have to convince themselves through lies and scams: the entire world is within my reach. As a matter of fact, they know nothing about others. They are besieged and taken advantage of by lies and scams.

Sometimes, I know that liars do not lie on purpose. They just say something that caters to the public in order to reach their goals.

I hate lies. I want to convey the true world to people. Trump is showing the true side of the world to people. Then a lot of people collapse spiritually.

They have been wrapped in lies and scams for too long a time, so they find it hard to accept the reality, and the ugliness and cruelty of the real society. Hence, they have Trump to blame for smashing their beautiful dreams.

Trump is elected as the president, which indicates that more and more people are awakening. Those with mental breakdown cannot break away for the time being because they are deeply indulged in lies made by themselves.

I have been emphasising that people need face up to the problem if they want to solve it. People should realise their inanity, ignorance, and ugliness and get rid of them. Only by doing so can they improve and make progress.

God is omnipotent. God doesn't need to use lies and scams to win something for himself.

Therefore, God supports Trump, who speaks the truth, to be the president. Other countries need people who are honest to serve as the president. You should be prepared.

Is Islam heresy? Is it evil? Is it ignorant? Is it demon? Is it antihuman? Is it anti-civilisation? Should it be banned? Please answer these questions first.

Those who refuse to admit it are all hypocritical and are deceiving themselves as well as others. They are all liars.

These are some basic criterion for differentiating between the truth and hypocrisy.

86. The decline of the population and the leftover women are caused by monogyny and feminism, which are behaviour against God

12 November 2016

There are many leftover women in China, and the whole population in Western countries has declined.

According to general logic, with the development of the economy and the improvement of productivity, there will be higher and higher population, because the society can support more people and provide the means of livelihood for more people.

However, the fact is the opposite that the economy has been developed and the population has declined. The reason is that God says this is a phenomenon like 'the great whore' riding the beast in Revelation.

Because 'the great whore' indulge themselves in a luxurious lifestyle, refuse to meet their responsibilities, and refuse to raise children.

Typically, leaders of many other nations are women; however, many of them are lesbian or are similar to lesbian. They have their hearts on politics sought without raising children. They assume arbitrary power; therefore, they are the representatives of the great whore.

The primary logical thoughts of 'the great whore' are human rights and feminism.

They believe whether to raise children or not is their human right; because raising children influences their quality of life, they refuse to raise children. This can lower the population.

Meanwhile, monogyny is also the result of human rights and feminism.

Polygyny can change the influence of human rights and feminism on the population decline.

Because the status of women in a plural family is directly proportional to the number of children who are raised, there is a competitive relationship for the family status. Therefore, there's no problem about feminism lowering the population.

Moreover, polygyny is most hated by feminists and human-rights defenders, so they advocate monogyny.

Feminists and human-rights defenders think that sex ratio can be balanced by monogyny. Thus

everyone can form a family.

But as a matter of fact, there are still many leftover men and leftover women who can't get married since the implementation of monogyny in China. So monogyny can't make the slogan possible for everyone to get married and have a family. It's just a lie and a hoax.

The ability for the procreation of the population depends on the women of the right age who get married and pregnant. It has nothing to do with whether men get married or not.

Nowadays, the problem of the population decline is that women of the right age don't get married and give birth to children.

Why don't women at the right age get married and give birth to children? The answer I heard most is that raising children is too expensive .So they refuse to get married.

This is an excuse; they don't have any pressures, so there is no incentive for them.

However, polygyny can solve this pressure and incentive. If the woman refuses to give birth to children or is unable to have children, the man can marry another wife again, so this task can be completed by other people.

The problem of leftover women is also caused by the monogyny. Polygyny can solve this problem.

After men and women enter the society, the older they are, the higher the status is, the more the wealth is.

Women are known as 'three high' in the marriage market for high education, high income, and high age. It is difficult for them to look for a partner in marriage.

The ideal marriage partners for women with high education, income, and age are the partners having better income and social status than them, but their ages are the same as the women. They should be old.

This is a contradiction in monogyny.

Because when the older women have three high, the successful older men are married early. If they don't get married, they may have some problems, such as homosexuality, physiological dysfunction, physiological defect, and so on.

Successful married man has an emotional relationship with unmarried woman of the same age, which is an extramarital affair; what's more, this is a common phenomenon in today's society.

Man struggles upwards; water flows downwards. There's nothing wrong with that. Women hope to improve their living standards through marriage rather than lower their living standards.

So do the leftover women.

How to solve this problem? That is polygyny, which can open the market and break the state of monopoly.

Successful men can marry successful women again, but they can't abandon their former wives, which is the most scientific and reasonable.

The logic of monogyny is that a female returnee doctor should marry a disabled man with physiological dysfunction or physiological defect. A successful man must abandon his former wife if he wants to marry a successful woman.

This is a way for feudal society abused and oppressed the women.

As for polygyny, the theory and logic that some men can't marry their wives is ridiculous.

The good survive and the bad die out; this is God's law.

A male lion can get married and propagate only when he is the king of the lions.

Men have no problem if not getting married, and the useless men still can't get married even if there is monogyny.

Now there are still more leftover men for Chinese monogyny. Moreover, this results in excellent women who can't get married, and the adolescent population has declined.

This is unscientific, unjust, and unfair.

Monogyny is behaviour against God.

87. Intelligent robotisation and social wealth distribution

16 November 2016

We are increasingly faced with intelligent robots' replacement of human labour in emergence.

Someone says that the success of Trump in the presidential election is related to the intelligent robots since intelligent robots take away the working positions of American whites and make them feel the intensity of survival crisis. As a consequence, if they want to protect their interests and have the sense of security, they have to drive away the coloured races and Mexican drug dealers.

Such crisis is not exclusive to America but to all the world, in fact. Intelligent robots have seized more and more working positions and more and more workers will be laid off, lose their jobs, get relief fund, could not afford the bills, and confront broken family relationship.

It is a real fact. More and more workers feel the pressures and panic.

One of my friends suddenly indulged in excessive drinking and raised a hue and cry at night. It was because their clothing factory is going to introduce the clothes-making robots and they will be soon laid off. However, if they are laid off, how could they support their parents and children and afford the family expenses?

Capitalist countries do not have any state-owned capital like China. However, they could still maintain the normal operation of the government. In addition to general tax revenues, I think that inheritance tax also plays a major role.

Inheritance tax requires the rich people to return their partial savings back to the country after death, or say, in conditions when they do not require the money anymore. It is fair and justifiable. The reason is that the wealth created by the rich people in a whole lifetime is inseparable from the social environment. The law protects the wealth of people when they are alive, for the purpose of maintaining social order and rules, while the law requires the rich people to return partial wealth to the society when they are dead, for the purpose of maintaining social justice.

China does not have any inheritance tax. Many rich people utilise the social rules to create considerable wealth when they are alive, but they still hold such wealth even when they are dead. It is extremely unfair.

China does not levy the inheritance tax. It is not because that the Chinese government is so kind. The real reason is that the Chinese government does not lack money.

The disposal of corrupt officials in China could indicate how much wealth owned by rich merchants in China is obtained from power-for-money deal. They make full of the rule of game to earn considerable wealth while alive and even entrust such wealth to their children so as to glorify the ancestors.

Even if the wealth of many merchants is earned legally and justifiably, the wealth is still created with the support of the whole social environment. The country should protect personal assets when people are alive and encourage people to create more wealth and advocate rich people to return partial wealth back to the society when they are dead. People should give mutual benefits and help each other.

In consideration of the depreciation of currency and the accumulation of social wealth, the inheritance tax should decrease together with the increase of average salary in the society. For instance, the government could levy different tax rates when the inheritance exceeds average salary in the society by ten thousand times, by one hundred thousand times, one million times, and ten million times.

In my opinion, the first rich generation and second rich generation are excessively arrogant. They might even not know how many bowls of rice they could eat in each meal. Therefore, the government should levy inheritance tax on them until they become sensible.

Robotisation leads to the unemployment of workers and forces the wealth to quickly gather in the hands of the minority.

If we could take back partial money earned by robots and ask workers to do other work, this problem will be well fixed.

Industrial robot is on behalf of advanced productivity. The historical trend should not be reversed nor blocked.

However, it is feasible to take back partial money earned by robots for companies through certain means and retain workers to do other meaningful jobs.

Inheritance tax is a good solution.

In addition, because of the expansion of the gap between the rich and the poor, inheritance tax and tax rate should be increased too. The maximum value should be 90 per cent or more.

In line with the change of the gap between the rich and the poor, and the change of social relationship, the government should change the laws and inheritance tax and tax rate.

As for the robotisation, the government should implement the public ownership of land and mineral resources, build reasonable state-owned companies, and set up reasonable inheritance tax. Excessive wealth should be controlled by the government and put into national investment.

I think that it is also necessary to reform the wasteland, barren mountain, and deserts. Commercial crops and green and high-quality subsidiary agricultural products should gradually replace those low-quality, not environmentally friendly, and unhealthy subsidiary agricultural products.

Workers could transfer jobs and leave the plants for robots. Human beings have to conquer the nature and transform the earth. At the same time, everyone has due responsibility in this major task.

Unreasonable allocation of social resources will become a growing severe social problem.

88. The appropriate establishment of the EU shall give priority to the interests of white people

2 December 2016

It is great and right for European countries to set up EU with which labour turnover and resource sharing can be realised regardless of restriction of land and nation. It is a good idea to set up an organisation for mutual help, and Europeans made it real, which is beneficial.

EU is set up for common interests in order to provide more chances for wealth.

However, it is pitiful that someone losing his head introduces a large number of Muslims and blacks at the expense of interest of the white in order to achieve his personal values and ideals, and flaunt 'greatness, honour, and correctness'.

I've never thought about destroying the EU; it is you yourself that drive EU to the brink of collapse.

Someone ignores the foundation of EU—give priority to the interests of local people.

EU is an interest group which is formed for the benefit of everyone. This is the true and essential foundation and basis.

It is true and essential foundation of EU to give priority to protecting the interests of the local people and the white. But someone has ignored it.

EU is an economic community rather than a moral community or a community of political correctness or charity.

Business, interest, money, and safety are all realities.

It is nonsense to discuss items other than those above.

It is proper to defend the interest of local people. God divides human beings into different colours, races, nations, and cultures. Each nation shall maintain their own interest and realise their own value. That's God's intention.

The demon looks like a human. You oppose God and embrace the demon when you are giving a hand to Muslims.

You are acting against God if you accept the alien and do not carry out ideology and cultural transformation on them. You think that you are more intelligent, capable, powerful, and greater

than God.

The exile of refugees is the punishment and expedition of God on demon.

Muslims prevent refugees from escaping and regard ordinary people as human shields. It is clear enough that they are demon rather than human. But Europeans and Americans do not admit that and pretend to be blind. They also help the demon, arm the demon, and provide the demon with weapons, funds, technological support, and political protection to go against God.

There is nothing wrong with cultural integration and inclusion. But are Muslims also inclusive? Do Muslims accept the transformation by Western society? Are Muslims fused with Western culture?

Have you ever read the Koran? Is it permitted by Allah?

Recently, Indonesia witnessed the protests of 100,000 Muslims. What did they ask for? 'Muslims are never ruled by heretics.'

It is clear that Muslims will not be assimilated by any culture but will only assimilate other nations, which is written in the Koran.

The so-called culture inclusion you wish is merely self-deception.

You will get nothing except harm to the Europeans, Christians, and the white.

Europeans love indulging in a life of pleasure and comfort, engaging in homosexuality, and refusing reproduction, which leads to population decline. It is anti-God, which is recorded as 'Babylon the Great, the mother of prostitutes and abominations of the earth' in Revelation by God.

Because of population decline, you want to import Muslims as cheap labour to pay pension to support the retired.

In fact, the introduction of refugees and Muslims is not for cultural inclusion, nor is it possible to realise cultural inclusion, but to make them as cheap labour to pay pension. This is the truth. But it harms the interests of the local people, the white, and allies seriously.

EU shall be aware that the first and foremost task is to protect the interests of European whites and Christians. It is nonsense to talk about others.

89. The founding of Israel is contradictory with homosexuality

10 January 2017

I have seen many homosexuals in Israel. They always parade with a rainbow flag.

This is contradictory with the founding of Israel.

The only legal source of the founding of Israel, which is called the Promised Land, is the Bible, while God hates homosexuality most and God buried the once most prosperous city, Pompeii, with the fire in hell.

If Israel still allows homosexuality to stay in its country, the founding of Israel shall be eradicated from the earth for it exists without legality.

On the one hand, citizens founded your state by using the name granted by God. On the other hand, you condone homosexuality, betray God, and do what God hates most. You are taking advantage of God! You are fooling God! This is unforgivable.

Homosexuality is monsters, untouchables, psychotics, and disciples of demons.

The best way I can come up with is to gather the homosexuals all over the world and put them on two islands, where male homosexuals stay in one and female homosexuals stay in the other. And we should send warships to guard any entry and exit. No one is allowed to get inside or outside. They should be isolated and cannot influence humans at all. I suppose we only offer them some water and food if necessary, but nothing else.

Live or die shall be determined by God.

By doing this, homosexuals will become fewer and fewer and finally these demons and monsters will be eliminated.

The reason why we design toilets in homes is that we need to deal with excrement. Likewise, human society also needs to set up homosexual island to deal with these social trash.

Like attracts like. Demons need to stay where they should, monsters need to stay where they need, psychotics need to gather where they need, homosexuals also need to gather where they must do. And humans should live with human so that the society can be maintained with order. People with same outlooks of value can help each other and agree with each other.

God hates homosexuality. Man needs to convert to God and draw a line with homosexuality. If so, they can get blessing by God. Homosexuality should be expelled to the small island and they can love each other forever. Anyone who has sympathy for homosexuality can go to see God, talk

with him, and make him change idea.

God already wrote his attitude towards homosexuality in the Bible early. And Pompeii can be the best proof.

90. The antagonism of the Western countries is due to the collapse of the free market economy

16 January 2017

The presidential election of the United States has been settled. Now it's time to face the reality, analyse the causes, and see the situation.

The presidential election of the United States has caused a serious social antagonism. This kind of antagonism is not caused by Trump, but the high-tech and robot era. The changes of the free market economy caused by the era of the Internet make the theory of the development of capitalist countries out of date. By the changes and impact of robot and network, free market economy, as well as the corresponding concept of democracy, freedom, human rights and values, is about to be completely eliminated.

This kind of antagonism is the serious antagonism between people with a vested interest in free market economy and capitalism and victims of the age of robotics and the Internet age. With the advancement of the robot era and the Internet era, this kind of antagonism and tear will only become more and more serious, and never be healed.

The president's speech acknowledged this. However, he would never acknowledge the collapse of the free market economy of the United States and democracy, freedom, human rights, and values.

Those who support Trump are victims and the abandoned of the high-tech, robotics era and the era of the Internet. Their days are getting worse day by day. Their group will be bigger day by day. Because of science and technology, history and productivity will only become more advanced and will never regress.

Those who oppose Trump people are obviously rich people and people with a vested interest. They are the people with a vested interest in the free market economy and democracy, freedom, human rights and values, high-tech, robotics and the era of the Internet.

The big stars and the tech bosses are getting more and more money while more and more workers of the five great lakes will lose their jobs. Gini coefficient is getting higher and higher and the wealth is increasingly concentrated in a small number of people.

The president's speech acknowledged this.

So those who represent people with a vested interest will get fewer and fewer votes in the election and those who represent unemployed workers will get more and more votes. This is the inevitable result of high-tech, robotics, and network era. This is the inevitable result of the historical trend and social development which could not be avoided and will result in the collapse of free market economy and democracy, freedom, human rights and values.

Those unemployed workers will feel more and more that what big stars, tech bosses, and news media say is nonsense, cheating and looting. Anything is nonsense. Money is the hard truth and hard index. We all know who has money and who has no money and we are not stupid. As long as they are told how they could get money and work back, they will do it and no one can stop them.

Free market economy and democracy, freedom, human rights and values are out of date. Let's talk about why they're out of date.

The reason why free market economy and democracy, freedom, human rights and values could succeed is that this is also a manifestation of God. It is now out of date because God has given us a lot of manifestations and each one could only solve one problem, not all problems. Now free market economy and democracy, freedom, human rights and values have been faced with problems which they could not solve, and we need other manifestations of God to solve these.

Therefore, human beings need to practice comprehensively in order to solve all problems.

Big stars, tech bosses, and news media, and politicians who speak for them are called political correctness on the Internet.

Because I don't want to divide them into the left and the right, I want to talk about those who have a vested interest among the political correctness. Because some poor people do not benefit, but they will also support the left. Left and right only mean the political orientation. What I would like to emphasize are the people with vested interests relying on left thinking, i.e. those big stars, tech bosses, and news media, and political correctness politicians.

Because those who did not get the benefit will gradually oppose political correctness after getting the right guidance in the face of reality even though they had supported political correctness before.

Those political correctness with vested interests will insist on political correctness stubbornly in order to protect their own interests. But with the advent of the age of the Internet and robotics, robots are becoming more and more popular and the differentiation between rich and poor will be larger, their numbers will be less and less, as well as their votes.

The political aspirations of political correctness are contradicted by and conflicted with the

interests of the poor white people. Policies and ideas implemented by political correctness will only hurt the interests of the poor white people. It's going to be more and more serious, and there will be more and more poor white people and the unemployment of poor white people will be more and more serious.

According to the election system of 'one person, one vote', political correctness will certainly be driven out of the political arena. Because the interests of political correctness and poor white people are totally conflicted. Political correctness only represents those stars, tech bosses, and news media, as well as people with vested interests.

Those politicians who are able to speak properly for the poor white people and protect the interests of the poor white people will be able to come to power.

Robotics and network technology are advanced productivities which could finish the large amount of work which could only be finished by a huge number of people with very few people, resulting in a large number of workers losing their jobs. The boss could earn more money quickly, resulting in the rapid differentiation between the rich and poor.

Network transactions have caused the shops' closing and the unemployment and switching of jobs of clerks. Now couriers are still needed for delivery. In the future, delivery could be finished by robots completely. There is no more need for couriers. A large number of industrial robots replace workers in factories, resulting in the unemployment of a large number of workers.

This shows that the popularity of network technology and robotics results in the collapse of the theory of free market economy. And all the values, ideologies, and social orders that the free market economy supports are out of date and all have collapsed.

We need more advanced, more realistic ideology, logical thinking, and social culture.

91. Essential difference between populism and Nazism

23 January 2017

It is absurd that the Pope equates populism with Nazism today.

Just as communism does not represent the Cultural Revolution, nor does it represent the Soviet Great Purge, populism also does not represent Nazism.

The Cultural Revolution, the Soviet Great Purge, and Nazism are almost the same as the present Islamic extremism; all of them are a kind of 'God showing what is the result of abuse by mankind'. Just like God gave mankind gas, some families are with the gas poisoning, and some families are with the gas explosion; all are the result of the human abuse. It does not mean that those families using gas will have the explosion and will be poisoned. There is no problem with the proper use of God's gift. There will be the problem if God's gifts are abused.

The Cultural Revolution, the Soviet Great Purge, Nazism, and the current Islamic extremism are God-given communism, populism, and the Koran. They are the result of human abuse.

Populism is not God's gift but the original intention of God's creation of humans. God divides mankind into different languages, different colours, different ethnic groups, different races, different sizes, different cultures, and different countries so that human beings can guard their own land and safeguard their own interests. All ethnic groups compete with each other to promote the development of history. For this, there are also records of Babel in the Bible.

If there was no competition with each other, human society is now estimated to be still the same as the original tribes of Africa.

So it's God's will for all countries to safeguard their own interests. The Pope says it is Hitler, and the Nazi act. It can only show that religious magic disappeared after 2012, and it cannot lead the human civilisation; all are nonsense.

It's the truth to maintain the interests of the nation, but there is also a limited scope.

If Hitler put the Jews out of Germany rather than kill them, there is no Nazi issue at all. If Hitler's actions to safeguard the interests of the nation were limited to the domestic revolution, there is no issue of Nazi Germany.

Hitler launched the world war, which was beyond the scope of the interests of the nation. On the other hand, human beings are brutal, ignorant, and evil; the wars that killed millions, tens of millions of people and political movement frequently occurred in the pre-world-war society and the country. Nor can the responsibility be attributed to Hitler.

Just because human beings now have nuclear weapons, there is a balance of terror, which is with too great lethality, and then people invented human rights, democracy, humanitarianism, etc. If there is no nuclear weapon, all the killing acts won't be stopped, as people stick to their old ways.

About the discrimination against coloured people, discrimination against women, discrimination against Mexican drug dealers, discrimination against Muslims . . . This is not discrimination, but it is to seek truth from facts. We should first to face the problem if we need to solve the problem. We need to admit the problem first when facing the problem. The recognition of the problem is the recognition of the facts.

Coloured people, women, Mexican drug dealers, and Muslims are special; their particularity is objective. Anyone who does not admit the objective thing is a liar, and it is lying, is the conspirator.

Special things will be treated specially; this is the truth. This is also common sense.

Not admitting the objective is the cult and the behaviour against God.

Real existence is the existence, none is none, and black is black, white is white, right is right, wrong is wrong. Not admitting the truth and fooling the people is against God.

1. Men's subconscious is different from that of women, and the starting point of thinking about the problem is also varied. Because of this difference, women are fit to do something and not suitable for doing something else. It can be discussed regarding to which things are fit, which things are not suitable. But it is a fact and also a truth. Not admitting this point is ignorance and the cult.

2. It's clearly written in the Koran that the pagans should be killed and thrown into Jahannam. Is this the truth? Is it antihuman and anti-civilisation? Is it necessary to remove the antihuman, anti-civilised provisions of the Koran? These people are not allowed to enter the civilised country if those provisions are not removed. Those radical Muslims killing people are cults, and those whites who do not admit the fact are also cults, which is another kind of cult.

3. Whether the drug proliferation in the United States is mainly caused by the Mexicans—this is also a fact.

4. The culture of coloured people, especially blacks, leads them to be with low quality and high fertility rate. Is this in the plundering of living space of the whites?

The poverty in Africa is also caused by this culture. Some of my businessmen have told me that it's true in some countries of Africa and South-east Asia. They are with very low IQ, and they disgust labour. They only give birth to babies, thus there's high fertility rate. Most of them believe in Islam. This is a fact and the cause of their poverty. This is also a cultural difference. This cultural difference in the developed countries will seriously affect the quality of life of the local people

and plunder the survival of the local people.

Why do Americans implement TPP and seek economic globalisation? Because the big capitalists can use these low-quality people as cheap labour to earn more money for them. However, it's a resource plunder for the whites of the country.

We do not admit that there is the cultural issue of the coloured people and African blacks and Islam, and this issue can never be solved.

We need to admit the issue, and then let the coloured people and African blacks and Islam also admit the issue and let them have changes. This issue can be solved completely. Do not admit this issue will never be solved.

We need to modernise the ideology of coloured people and African blacks and Islam.

92. Westerners who oppose Trump resemble the great whore riding a beast in Revelation

1 February 2017

Many people are surprised by Trump's presidential election, which is an impossible task in the eyes of ordinary people. His competitors used many dishonest means, such as hiring some tramps and mental patients to disturb his speech, using false votes and votes from non-existent people, etc. Trump, however, won a landslide victory on the basis of existing election rules.

This was God's presence, and he chose Trump. So people who opposed Trump are against God.

Who on earth is against God and against the man chosen by God? Actually it is the great whore riding a beast in the Revelation according to the Bible.

Book of Revelation 17:4

The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and was glittering with gold, precious stones and pearls. She held a golden cup in her hand, filled with abominable things and the filth of her adulteries.

The whore has two characteristics:

She was quite rich.

Trump's opponents are mostly the rich and people with vested interests, stars, bosses of science and technology enterprise, media, and so on. However, his supporters are mostly people with declining living condition, the jobless, and the poor.

Quite licentious

Without principle, justice, and fairness, she could betray anything as long as there is benefit. She also supported homosexuality. It is called carnality.

Book of Revelation 17:13

They have one purpose and will give their power and authority to the beast.

The beast is Satan.

The whore rode the beast and gave authority to the beast. It means that some people in Western countries cooperated with devils against God. They let devils hold power and replace the law of

God with the ideology and the law of devils.

God demands people to be just, and devils are willing to take the place of God, so they are against fairness and justice.

God hates homosexuality, and devils want to legalize homosexuality.

The whore is commonly known as political correctness. The fact that Saudi Arabia and Qatar used the money earned from oil to fund the Clinton foundation, buy in European and American politicians and provide support, help, political protection, weapons, training of terrorists and logistical support to their radical Islamic sects, such as Wahhabi and Salafi.

The United States and Western countries supported Sunni countries, such as Saudi Arabia and Qatar, to attack and slaughter the people of Yemen, which was guilty of serious war crimes. Britain, the United States, and political correctness provided Saudi Arabia with a large number of weapons and massacred civilians in Yemen.

Their 'human rights, anti-genocide, anti-slaughter, fraternity, equality' is all nonsense on the Yemen issue, which was used as an excuse for providing terrorists with weapons. In fact, after they took the money from Saudi Arabia, 'human rights, anti-genocide, fraternity, equality' was just their object for sale.

Devils Wahhabi Saudi did bad things, buying political correctness and whores to get the support of Europe and the United States.

Political correctness handed Libya's weapons through Turkey to terrorists in Syria and Iraq, and their professed moderate opposition proved non-existent.

A United States representative did a survey in Syria; it showed that Syrian people do not recognize the existence of moderate opposition.

Political correctness were whores and the wings of devils; they took money from devils and gave them help. With no justice, no fairness, and no principle, they help devils against humanity and civilisation; they were shameless, and God pointed to that in the Bible.

Political correctness' so-called human rights, religious freedom, and equality were total nonsense. About culture inclusiveness, Islam has no religious freedom. The Koran clearly pointed out to kill all nonbelievers, that is, to kill all kafirs and send them to hell.

Islam is totally intolerant of people and other religions. Women in Islam cannot marry non-Muslims, which is purely cultural aggression and there is no cultural inclusiveness at all, while political correctness accepts Muslims' money, speaks for them, provides support to them and talks nonsense regardless of the fact. This is the alliance with devils.

After 2012, the Koran and other religions lost their power and were unable to lead human civilisation. Then devils captured Islam and a large part of Islam is controlled by them. Moreover, a large part of Islam's creeds is antihuman and anti-civilisation, which needs to be discussed, criticised, deleted, and corrected.

Trump just told the truth according to God's will and fought with devils. Campaigns include firefight on the battlefield and ideological warfare.

The first step on the battlefield is to destroy the IS and terrorist organisations, which is the first priority and the surface work.

And actually solving the problem is an ideological campaign. If the ideological problem not solved, the war can never be over, and devils would continuously send apostles and fight against God.

And Trump's restrictions on immigration were the first step of the ideological war.

Right and wrong, good and evil, devil's whores or God's disciples, all of these distinguished, classified, and showed their true colour from here.

The enemies of Trump's immigration policy are either devils or whores. No matter which one they belong to, they are against God.

I think those who oppose Trump immigration policy should turn their subjects to whether there are doctrines against humanity, against civilisation in Islam and whether Islam needs to discuss, criticise, delete, modify.

If we figure out this question, then the question of right and wrong, good and evil and whether you are converted to God or with the devil will be clear.

It is also the will of the God for countries to protect their own land and their interests. The basic responsibility of the state and the political power is to protect the fundamental interests of its people.

Trump was acting in accordance with God's will, so to oppose Trump is to oppose God.

This is not about inclusiveness, tolerance, and forgiveness problems, but about justice or evil, anti-civilisation or destruct civilisation, antihuman or save mankind, follow God or help the devil. It is also a question that we must choose and can't be avoided.

93. The criticism that China destroys American employment is unjustifiable

25 February 2017

A recent documentary criticises China for destroying American employment.

This criticism is prevalent all along; for example, China is always criticised in all previous American presidential elections. It is not something new, but this problem should be made clear.

1. Criticisms on illegal employment and forced labour are unjustifiable.

Diligence has been valued in the Chinese traditional culture since ancient times. Laziness is looked down upon and repelled in China.

However, laziness is a basic human right in the Western society. Democratic people have rights to seek government relief and government subsidies rather than find jobs by themselves.

This has caused bad consequences. If this problem is made clear, all the problems will be solved.

Should people work hard? Should people stay lazy? Do people have rights to work hard? Do people have rights to stay lazy? Since Westerners are lazy, should Chinese people be required to be as lazy as Westerners?

What do democratic people think of this problem? What do Chinese people think of this problem? What does God think of this problem? This is the key to all problems.

Labour supervision and the minimum wage standard are mandatory in China. If the employment is made according to the Chinese labour law and regulations, it should not be called illegal employment. The length of the work time is agreed between workers and the employer, and the employer pays for the overtime work. Mutual consent without force is legal and justifiable in the overtime work.

Chinese workers are the most anxious when they have no work to do. Too much work is not a problem at all for Chinese workers.

Some Chinese workers want to earn more money, so one Chinese worker may do several jobs, which is legal in China. It is a basic human right for a person to do jobs according to his ability and energy. If the overtime work is mutually agreed and paid, it is completely legal and justifiable.

Therefore, it is unjustifiable for Westerners to criticize Chinese people for working overtime to reduce the production cost. Westerners think they have rights to refuse the overtime work, while

Chinese people think they have rights to work overtime.

From the perspective of human rights, people have rights to control their own bodies, so people have rights to accept or refuse the overtime work. The overtime work is not forced but mutually agreed in China, so it is unjustifiable and violates the basic human rights for Westerners to criticise Chinese people for working overtime to reduce the labour cost.

In addition, America criticizes China for reducing the labour cost by working overtime.

In fact, the present Chinese labour cost grows increasingly high; so many enterprises have been moved to South-east Asia and Africa. According to Westerners' thinking, Southeast Asia and Africa should be criticised rather than China. China and Western countries are fellow sufferers now.

2. Whether the products made in prisons should be sold on the market

Why are people sent to prisons? Why criminals are reformed through labour? That is because they need to compensate for their committed crimes. Criminals compensate for the society through labour, and they transform their souls and correct their behaviour to conform to the social norms.

Thus, the products made in prisons should be treated the same as the products made in other factories. In addition, prison products reflect the redemption of prisoners, so prisoners should be encouraged to work and the products made by prisoners should be supported by the government and consumers. Prisoners' guilt can be relieved, and prisoners can be better reformed to conform to the social norms if consumers buy the products made by prisoners.

Crimes, drugs, ganglands, and violence spread in Western countries because of lack of the social reform system. America and Western countries, Mexico and Brazil in particular, should learn from the system of indoctrination through labour. If prisoners are required to work and are transformed, they can create value and make contributions to the society. Moreover, we should purchase the products—fruits of labour—made by prisoners to help them better get rid of evils.

How to understand guilt and measurement of penalty varies from person to person.

The mandatory labour in prisons makes people afraid of prisons, so people will do good deeds and develop themselves positively. Meanwhile, vice is punished and virtue is rewarded.

If prisons create a comfortable environment like the nursing home where all the living conditions are satisfactory, people are willing to commit crimes and be sent to prisons. Many citizens commit crimes intentionally in Western countries in order to enjoy the comfortable environment in prisons. In this situation, good people are forced to commit crimes. The deficient social system of Western countries turns good people into bad people and reflects its primary defects.

Prisons are operated at costs. If running at a high operation cost, prisons will become a heavy financial burden of the government and fail to achieve good development. The balance of payments helps prisons to realise the sustainable development. The mandatory labour of prisons, managed properly, is legal and justifiable because it not only turns prisoners into those who create value and make contributions to the society but also relieves the social burden, which is the perfect social management system.

Given the poor public security in Western countries, it is infamous for Western countries to criticise China's maintaining the Chinese social security.

3. The competitors of American enterprises are not Chinese enterprises but the Chinese government.

It is justifiable for the government to preserve the interests of enterprises and people. Instead of safeguarding American enterprises, the American government criticizes that deed of the Chinese government about safeguarding Chinese enterprises. This is undoubtedly the defects of the social systems in America and Western countries rather than the problem of the Chinese government.

If the government cannot preserve the interests of people and enterprises, whose interests is the government preserving?

In other words, the American government is just preserving the interests of large American enterprises because if these large enterprises are moved from America to China, Southeast Asia, or Africa, which are relatively low in labour cost, they can earn more money.

The government of America and Western countries are only serving capitalists and preserving the interests of monopolists without protecting the interests of people. This is the defect of the social systems in these countries and has nothing to do with the Chinese government.

China is an integrated system, while western countries are in a state of disunity. The trade deficits are caused by the social systems of western countries rather than the Chinese system.

4. China's high energy consumption pollutes the environment

Data show that Chinese enterprises consume six times the resources of American enterprises when the value of USD 100 is created. Chinese people earn money at the cost of polluting the environment.

However, in fact, America and other developed countries move those high-energy-consumption and polluting enterprises to China and other underdeveloped countries to protect the environment of their own countries. Thus, America and other developed countries produce high output values at low energy consumption.

In fact, China is not polluting the environment. Instead, America moves the polluting enterprises

to China, harming the health of Chinese people.

The fact is that American people enjoy the beautiful environment in their own country while harming the health of Chinese people. However, some Americans claim that Chinese people are polluting the environment. America is playing the trick of a thief crying, ‘Stop, thief!’

94. About North Korea, China shall maintain justice instead of being an ally

9 March 2017

The IS will be completely done soon. However, except IS, I think, the world's worst villain should be North Korea. We shall discuss and come up with a solution to make them go to God for punishments.

IS has said that what they did was in line with Koran written by God. I can only say that the ancient laws have been already not applicable for modern civilisation any more. They were wrong with the laws. Or in other words, the laws of God were abused by the demon.

What North Korea did had nothing to do with God; instead it was totally the behaviour of demon.

In fact, North Korea is not an ally of China at all. The North Korean government killed all people friendly to China in their country, through which we can see it is not an ally of China.

Since North Korea is not our ally, we Chinese should do official business according to official principles and maintain justice.

Where does the justice of the North Korean problem lie? What is the justice on the North Korean problem?

North Korea is completely evil, unreasonable, and unjust on the confrontation with the US.

The US is a country with developed technology, economy and the world's leading living standards. However, North Korea is totally on the opposite side. It is backward in technology and economy, with its people in extreme misery. Besides, North Korea is ignorant of repentance, using nuclear technology that we do not know where they got to compete with the US. The barbarous, cruel, ignorant, backward, and evil country wants to attack the US, a civilised country.

Therefore, North Korea is injustice. We should make them go to God with Baghdadi to have their punishments.

If China can't get North Korea as ally, it should pursuit justice and stand on the justice side.

What is an ally? Pakistan is an ally. We cooperate with each other to deal with difficult issues.

What is not an ally? They make oral agreement but, in fact, kill all the people friendly to China. This is not an ally. Instead, it takes advantage of China to be its scapegoat.

This is very simple logic. Why can't many people see this? Just because some agreements were signed by Premier Zhou Enlai and President Mao, we should be a scapegoat for generations. Things are different now, and we Chinese should face the reality.

I find that some people said that North Korea's nuclear facilities are very close to China. And if the USA attacks North Korea, then there will be nuclear pollution to China.

However, the damage and pollution will be serious with longer time, the same as the Taiwan problem. The sooner you resolve the problem, the less you will lose.

China shall move all the citizens near the North Korean border and then allow Americans to solve the North Korean problem by military means.

There will be more people dying from the problem if we don't solve the problem. It is a very realistic problem.

God will not compromise with a demon even if there will be many people dying.

95. North Korea is an unscrupulous country.

20 March 2017

North Korea denies it is an evil state. It states that the United States is hegemonic, the troublemaker, which is unreasonable.

Whether North Korea is a rogue state is related to the behaviour and purpose of this regime.

What is the behaviour of North Korea and what purpose it has can be seen very clearly by the whole world, too numerous to mention.

North Korea's evil act can be summed up as a word—unscrupulousness.

An unscrupulous and stupid king needs to be overturned, killed, and anybody will have the right to punish him. This is Chinese traditional culture, which every Chinese knows. It is also God's revelation to ancient Chinese.

North Korea is the demon who fails to understand humans' language but simply understands demons' language. So except for force elimination, no language can be used to communicate with North Korea, because they are all demons. Except the language of demons, humans' words cannot be understood. Except the sound of steel and blood, the North Koreans, who do not understand any human words, cannot be communicated to with any human language.

As a result, apart from the force elimination, any other sanctions, consultations, negotiations, condemnation, protest, and N-party talks are purely nonsense, which is purely helping the demon to delay the time in order to make the demon create much more nuclear weapons with greater killing ability so that the demon has the ability to kill more people.

North Korea does not change its nature, that is, the demon that needs to be killed; if the demon doesn't die, good people will have to die. The longer the time, the greater the loss. No matter how many people die, things should always be resolved.

Under the circumstance, I have to sort out the scandal North Koreans did and report to God, to the world. There is a proverb in ancient Greek: 'Apart from your own, no one can insult you.'

I am telling the truth and I do not want to insult the North Koreans; it is they that are insulting themselves.

The following are their actions. I just slightly make a summary.

1. North Korea invests heavily in the development of weapons, and people are living in misery.

North Korea put most of the country's foreign currency earnings into the development of nuclear weapons, completely disregarding people's livelihood. Actually, North Korean people do not need nuclear weapons at all, which are only tools used by autocratic rulers of the DPRK to maintain their dictatorship, dark, brutal, and evil rule.

North Korea, regardless of people's livelihood, spares the effort of the whole nation to develop nuclear weapons threatening the world, including Beijing, so it is purely a worldwide troublemaker, an extreme organisation, a terrorist organisation and evil regime in the form of a state. Since it already possesses the ability to use nuclear weapons to attack the United States, China and neighbouring countries, it needs to be immediately overturned or eradicated.

2. Treating human life as if it were not worth a straw

North Korea's ruining human life is the news people take delight in talking about around the world: sometimes using dogs to bite people, using anti-aircraft guns to crush people, and sometimes executing a group of people, making their family members onlookers. Furthermore, the reasons for execution are varied. Even dozing people are to be executed, which is the world anecdote. Fortunately, I did not go to North Korea to be an official, because I am sleepy when having a meeting and feel dizzy on reading a book. One hundred lives are not enough to use.

Mexican drug dealers, in order to intimidate competitors, often create terrorist murder incidents, so it is a demon's standard equipment, treating human life as if it were not worth a straw. The North Korean authority is a standard demon, so we need to ask God to eradicate North Korea.

3. Do not believe in the Lord, worship idols, worship the demon

North Korea, in order to achieve the rule of evil, dedicated painstakingly to fabricating Mount Paekdu descent fraud, specifically deceiving the ignorant and uncivilised North Korean foolish people, which is called obscurantist policy, so as to achieve its evil rule.

China also has people with pure royal descent, but after liberation and labour reform, they have become complete labouring people. This is called communism.

How can communism create a new royal descent to deceive people and maintain evil rule?

Mount Paekdu descent fallacy is a lie and fraud, completely against Marxism, communism, and materialism. They are not communist at all but complete feudal dynasty and reign of terror, cruelly oppressing and exploiting the common people, wrecking the country and bringing ruin to the people.

Unexpectedly, North Korea is still under the communist banner against the United States, which is completely a thief crying, 'Stop, thief!' It using anti-America and anti-capitalism as a slogan, but in fact is the conspiracy and scam to maintain its evil rule.

All people with Mount Paekdu descent need to be knocked down, overturned, and given labour reform.

People with Mount Paekdu descent are riding on people's head, brutally persecuting people's reactionary warlords, who are not saviours at all.

4. Kidnap the DPRK and South Korean people as human shields to realise the ambitions of emperors from generation to generation

People with a little common sense all know that no matter how North Korea develops nuclear weapons, it cannot defeat the United States. Why does North Korea again and again provoke the United States?

This is the transfer of domestic contradictions abroad. It is creating an opponent and imaginary enemy abroad, transferring domestic people's aversion to the hard times and their rebellion against the evil dynasty. And finally achieve its evil rule.

Why is the North Korean evil regime, aware of the fact that it is not the opponent, still against the United States? Because all North Korean and South Korean people are human shields of the North Korean evil dynasty. They kidnap North Korean and South Korean people as human shields, as a chip to oppose civilised countries.

This tactic is exactly the same as the Islamic fundamentalism of Islamic terrorist organisation. There is no difference.

All the blows to the human shield are innocent, and kidnappers ought to be blamed for this. It was those kidnappers that killed human shields. What the opponents of the demon did can only be considered as accidental injuries.

A force attack on North Korea, no matter how many people die in it, is innocent, all the guilt attributed to the North Korean authorities, the evil dynasty against God.

96. ‘No trading, no killing’ is poppycock

31 March 2017

Recently, there is a piece of news that China bans the sale of ivory and rhino horns to protect elephants and rhinos from becoming extinct. This is absolutely a fraud and nonsense.

The deal of rhino horns and ivory would not cause the extinction of elephants and rhinos. Conversely, it can make more breeding of elephants and rhinos.

The key problem is not to ban ivory and rhino horns, but to open the sale and purchase of ivory and rhino horns.

We all know the human beings carry out mass slaughter of cattle, sheep, chickens, ducks and pigs, but no one has ever said that slaughtering cattle, sheep, chickens, ducks, and pigs can cause extinction of cattle, sheep, chickens, ducks, and pigs.

On the contrary, the more cattle, sheep, chickens, ducks and pigs are killed, the more they will be, because people need to rely on them to make money.

The same is true for ivory and rhino horns. It is not buying and selling of ivory and rhino horns but the wrong way in which people get the ivory and rhino horns that has caused the reduction of elephants and rhinos.

Now the way to get the ivory and rhino horns is that some poachers kill elephants and rhinos, which will lead to the decrease of elephant and rhinos populations.

The right way is that all governments of Africa cut off ivory and rhino horns of all the elephants and rhinos and sell them to Chinese or others in the international markets. This way won’t kill elephants and rhinos. Maybe after a period of time, ivory and rhino horns will grow out again and you can continue to cut them off for money without killing elephants and rhinos.

Because elephants and rhinos have no use value if they have no ivory and rhino horns and no one will kill them again. This is the right way to protect animals.

The elephants and rhinos are the wealth of God given to Africans. Those white people make up ‘no trading, no killing’ and ‘animal protection’ lies in order to make you poor forever.

Those who believe their nonsense are the greatest fools. However, Africans’ average IQ is only 70 or so, but the average IQ of the white is 90, so Africans believe the whites’ lie. They are so benighted and pitiful.

Ivory and rhino horns are just weapons that elephants and rhinos use to attack animals of their

kinds in the estrus.

You should saw their horns and ivory in a planned way. When their teeth and horns grow to a certain length, you can saw. And elephants and rhinos should be encouraged to have more baby elephants and rhinos, and then you will have more ivory, rhino horns, and wealth.

As long as the number of rhinos and elephants is growing, those animal protection organisations must shut up. It is the same whether elephants have tusks or rhinos have horns or not.

God is fair and gives the Africans a lot of wealth. Ivory and rhino horns are a great fortune to the African governments, like gold and diamonds. You neither know how to exploit and utilise nor have right ways to make money, so you live in poverty from generation to generation, which resulted from ignorance.

97. The solution to the North Korean issue and other issues is to support one party and defeat the other

30 April 2017

I have seen too many battles among human beings which are a kind of deep-rooted bad character as well as a human nature. Humans always think they are right, which is opinionated.

We need just and fair ruling.

Through just and fair rulings, we'd better support one party and defeat the other, to stop the battles and end the unnecessary fights.

Just like the fights between Israel and Palestine—these shall be stopped by ruling the victory of Israel, or it will never be ended. There will be millions of conclusions on the conflicts between Israel and Palestine among millions of people. Then the conflicts and arguments can never be ended.

It is ruled in the name of God that the Jews are justice who gain the victory. Arabs don't believe in God, and then the problem can be solved by driving the Arabs out. Why should the Arabs get out? Because it's God's words, approved by God. Hence, they have to get out.

The conflicts between the Shia and the Sunni have been through thousands of years, for Sunni supports fundamentalism, the IS, which are evil. Therefore, Shia needs to be supported and the fundamentalism needs to be defeated; this is justice. Some people in Western countries still don't know whom to support, so they are confused. Some Western politicians even took the money of Saudi Arabia and deliberately made trouble. This is destroying justice.

The same is true of the battle between the United States and North Korea. One party needs to be ruled as justice, the other as evil. The issues can only be solved when supporting one party and defeating the other.

The malignant tumour North Korea will grow bigger and never be ended if it could not be cut out as soon as possible. It's time to solve the issues now.

I see somebody in China still confused now, saying some words to blur the line between right and wrong.

Some Chinese people feel like they are God, criticising both the North Korea and the United States sides. Is it meaningful to say that? Can they solve any problem?

Will the North Korean people or the Americans listen to you? All the people of pro-China faction

in North Korea have been killed by the dictators and the self-proclaimed emperors. No one will listen to you. Nuclear test and missile will not be stopped just because of your words. No one asks you Chinese people to be the judge. Saying these words only makes people laugh.

The issues on Americans' vital interest cannot be solved. The life and property safety of Americans are threatened by North Korea's nuclear weapon and their crazy, mad, and failed ruler. No one will listen to your Chinese people's nonsense.

The solution to North Korean issue is to judge who is just and who is evil, or who is more just, and who is more evil, then help the just party to defeat the evil party. In this way, the problem can be solved.

I have summarised six charges of North Korea; therefore, they are evil which needs to be eradicated. The United States is the richest in the world, hence America is the just, which needs to be helped and supported.

Am I a snob? I am a snob. Performance is vital to business; the result is vital to the thing. It's obvious who has good result and performance between America and North Korea. Anything else being said is nonsense.

People around the world need to stand on the side of the United States, the justice side, including Russia and China. We need to wipe out North Korea—this malignant tumour—before it outbreaks. It is justice and fairness and in line with the interests of the whole world.

In my opinion, Chinese should help the Americans to eradicate North Korea, and then the Americans help the Chinese to solve the Taiwan issue. Thus, everyone solves his own trouble. This is business, and this is also justice and fairness.

We should not always hurt each other, consume each other, and argue forever for unnecessary conflicts. But we need to cooperate to make money, which is the serious thing.

I am most bored and disgusted about this never-ending arguments and conflicts. The problems can never be solved by these meaningless words. We need to solve the problem right now, immediately.

98. The reason why Western nationalism became popular is that Internet and robots have changed the distribution and flow direction of social wealth

12 May 2017

The pillar of Western capitalist ideology is the theory of free market economy. However, with the coming of the Internet and robot era, the theory of free market economy is outdated.

As the theory of free market economy becomes outdated, the native whites fail to obtain original benefits, which leads to the rise of populism and nationalism.

With the extensive application of Internet and robots in society, the difference between people with vested interests and people with impaired interests will grow.

The contradiction, difference, and division are caused by the popularisation of Internet and robots. Besides, the contradiction, difference, and division will be increasingly serious and apparent with the development of Internet and robots.

Why?

The development of Internet and robots has changed the distribution and flow direction of social wealth.

In the free market economy, the economic mode is man hired by man. Under such mode, if the boss wants to make money, he surely will hire workers, and then there will be a proportion of social wealth for workers. The boss wants to make more money, so there will be more workers to make more money, which forms a certain proportion.

However, the extensive application of Internet and robots broke the proportion.

The mode of Internet and robots isn't the production mode of man hired by man but robots hired by man.

Therefore, the boss makes more money in this way, the number of hired workers will be decreasing, and the total amount of workers' salary will be decreasing sharply, resulting in mass unemployment of workers, while the boss of Internet and robots makes more money.

The production mode of robots hired by man has changed the flow direction of social wealth.

It is the fundamental cause of sharp division of capitalist society and the root cause of rapid development of populism, nationalism, and right political group.

The whites need to protect their own interests, or their interests will be severely harmed and they will be eliminated.

However, if you are unable to change the mode of free market economy, all of your efforts are in vain. You can't make fundamental change.

Nevertheless, changing the theory and mode of free market economy means repudiating capitalism theory totally. It will cause the fragmentation of society.

As the capitalism theory develops with Internet and robots and the production mode of robots hired by man, it will be eliminated, which is unchangeable.

Since workers can't get so much money, the society surely will change. Money is a realistic issue and surpasses ideology and values.

Ideology and values are established on material benefits and money. The change in flow direction of money surely will result in change in ideology and values.

Work of workers is taken away by Internet and robots and workers' salary is taken away by Internet and robots and goes into capitalists' pockets.

Salary for workers paid by capitalists in the era of man hired by man reduces sharply and then goes into capitalists' pockets, which leads to the unemployment of workers.

If white workers hope to change their fate, they have to know that it is not a problem solved by centre-right party but the problem of the whole ideology, values, and the direction and flow direction of social wealth.

99. The Paris Climate Agreement is an oppression of vested interests against the poor

1 June 2017

According to Maslow's theory of human needs, humans' safety and physiological needs should be met first before they seek spiritual needs.

However, some Western politicians who represented the vested interests proposed the Paris Climate Agreement, which is actually an oppression of vested interests against the poor.

At present, Western countries are confronted with numerous social problems, such as grim social security, terrorist attacks, serious drug problems, overflow of homosexuality, and soaring unemployment rate. With these problems unsolved, people are forced to sacrifice their jobs and the social security for the sake of environment, which is ridiculous.

China's active participation in the agreement is quite normal. Because China has basically realised an effective management of the society, they don't have problems of public security and employment. Hence, based on the social management, it is reasonable for China to raise a higher requirement and a broader target.

However, it is ridiculous for Western countries to propose the solutions to worsen the employment and social security when encountering more and more serious social disturbances.

Hence, it makes sense that Trump considered the Paris agreement as China's plot to knock down Western economies.

Because China develops very well, while the West is in a mess and is becoming worse and worse.

At this time, they are still asking the society to shoulder the environment issues and let these issues exert huge negative impacts on the economic development and social security.

Social security is closely connected with unemployment rate. Without jobs, people have to rob and steal to survive.

Under such an economic downturn, further requirements in environment will worsen the employment and lead to higher unemployment rate, which will consequently deteriorate the public security environment.

It is right to protect the environment. But environment protection should be based on a good social management, social security, social employment, and economic development. Otherwise, it is just a plot.

It is not a plot of China. China is just a participator. It is a plot of Western vested interests such as technology bosses, Internet bosses, celebrities, etc. Regardless of the current situation, they raised the climate agreement at an inappropriate time.

To reach a good social management, Western countries should nationalise the wealth created by God, nationalise the land and mineral resources just like China, and realise an effective and scientific management of the society according to the Chinese model.

Otherwise, they are shooting themselves in the foot and will take the consequences.

They should first sign some documents such as 'Agreement of Burning Koran', 'Agreement to Execute All Drug Dealers', and 'Agreement on Public Ownership of Land', and talk about Paris Climate Agreement after they have realised a scientific management of the country and solved the problems of employment and social security.

100. Britain Proposed That Internet Regulation Was Used to Fight the Devil. It Was Only to Capture the Shadow of the Devil, Not the Devil Itself.

6 June 2017

Britain finally improved after two successive transits terrorist attacks, and finally proposed to attack “evil ideology” but the proposed method was Internet regulation and banned people from making speeches. This is a kind of progress, but it was limited progress.

Firstly, you did not propose that “evil ideology” is Islamic ideology. You even dared not mention the devil’s name, and how dare you mention to beat the devil. It’s a sheer joke.

There are various ideological channels of communication. Regulating the Internet to stop the spread of Islamic cults is to make groundless accusations. What should be attacked is the footprints of the devil, not the devil itself. This kind of strike is a little childish. It is pure pediatrics and nonsense.

You even dare not mention the devil’s name, so defeating the devil is a wishful thinking. It is pure joke, pure nonsense and pure obscenity. If you really want to kill the devil, you must first face the devil and shout out the devil’s name loudly. “Islam is a cult, and Islamic cult created the devil. We should burn all of the Koran, destroy all of Islam and uproot Islam.”

The Koran turns humans into demons and thugs. The Koran lets terrorists kill our innocent civilians in a variety of means in the streets and on the battlefield. And God also had set a self-destruct program in the Koran.

The Koran 17:86, And if We please, We should certainly take away that which We have revealed to you, then you would not find for it any protector against Us.

God is almighty, who early knows the Koran will do harm to human civilization. So God asked the Koran ruin itself after running a certain time.

Present Islam is controlled by the devil, not God. So the Koran and Sahih Muslim must be destroyed immediately. This is the war against the devil itself, not catches the shadow and footprint of the devil. This sentence in the Koran is the sword in the heart of the devil which can kill devil. Any other effort is invalid.

You should let all the people all over the world, all the experts and scholars, all the media, and all politicians discuss this sentence and topic well. Everyone should learn to take up the sword to the devil, it is the ideological war. In this way, you can win and kill the devil.

If you even dare not mention the devil's name, while you tried to kill the devil, it only shows that your terrorist attacks are too little, your blood is too little, your people die too little. Europe needs more terrorist attacks, blood, explosion, trucks rolling, knife ax chop and so on.

It also shows that the jihadists do not work hard or seriously and cannot fulfill the mission of Allah. Your seventy-two virgins will be discounted, and your virgin originally belong to you will need to be assigned to someone else.

101. God Created Human Not Intended to Be a Shepherd

25 June 2017

Based on the view of Christian, I think people can be divided into two types: the one completely believing in the Bible, the other one completely believing in science.

They can be called idealism and materialism. However, some of Christians believe in science, and some of scientists believe in Christianity, so they cannot be simply classified as idealism and materialism.

All people seem to explain the world with their own utilitarianism. They admit what is beneficial to them regardless Christianity or materialism. Therefore, most people have no principle but material gain.

There is also another type of people who completely believe in God or completely believe in science, at two extremes.

Those who completely believe in God are theologians or pastors. They believe that God is omnipotent who can master everything but completely abandon substance creation and science.

While another type of people completely believes in science and technology, laugh at theologians and completely deny God. They have created countless excuses and reasons for the bad things they have done:

For instance:

1. Homosexuality is a human right and freedom;

2. Drug taking, drug trafficking, murder and exemption from death for capital crime are human rights and humanitarianism;

3. To support for Islamic extremism and terrorists are democratic politics and freedom of religious belief;

4. To endow animals with rights equal to or higher than human is animal protectionism and humanitarianism;

5. Refusal to procreate offspring is a basic human right and protection of women rights, leading to serious aging of population;

6. Children refusing to support their parents can protect children's basic human rights and economic interest;

7. It's also wife's basic human right to refuse to have sex with her husband, and even some women charge for this;

8. Having sex with animals; having sex with animals spiritually.

I believe that the reason why there's such a huge difference among people is that the brain memory capacity of human is quite small and CPU speed is quite slow, so they are unable to operate such a complicated program and thus can't see this real world clearly.

They install a program when they accept a thing, so they have to uninstall another program and abandon another thing, idea and logic. Uniformity cannot be found for they are on two things that seem to be contradictory.

I believe the two opinions are not contradictory. The reason why people consider them contradictory is that some people make the opinions antagonistic to each other deliberately for the purpose of their power and influence.

Materialists can consolidate their political power and govern the countries if they wipe out idealists.

Idealists can rule the countries as popes or founders of a religion if they wipe out the opposed religious sects and materialists.

The correct opinion is that God created everything, but he didn't want to be a shepherd. People who are thirsty ask God for water and who are hungry ask God for food. God has been regarded as a nurse, but he didn't want to be a nurse or shepherd.

All of your inventions created by science and technology are given by God. After reading many classic ancient books, I begin to realize that those inventions were completely beyond the scientific and technological level of human at that time. They were given by God to the ancients.

For example, it's the basic theory of traditional Chinese medicine that Shennong tasted hundreds of herbs, providing China with medical service for thousands of years. From the perspective of materialism, this is an objective reality, and materialists must accept and admit the things exist objectively; otherwise, these materialists will become another type of idealists rather than materialists.

The westerners who do not recognize traditional Chinese medicine are not materialists at all but idealists. They actually deny science rather than believing in or studying science.

And the so-called western materialists regard what they can explain as science but deny the existence of what they are unable to explain. This is also a kind of idealism, absurdity, psychosis, and paranoia that need treatment.

God never wants to be a shepherd but hopes human have high scientific and technological level, and human society can gradually develop with more civilization. Therefore, God is giving science and technology to human unceasingly.

So I would like to criticize those who can only read the Bible but ignore science and technology. They don't know science or technology, business deal, inventions or innovations, culture or art, farming, management of social science or maintenance of household appliances. For God after creating human not only taught human to respect and thank God, but also promoted social development and progress gradually, in which science and technology, culture, art, economy, agriculture, and social management were needed.

All of these should be mastered and understood. At least, they should not cause any social conflict and contradiction. On the other hand, in addition to transforming and developing the society by making money, people should also bear in mind that "God keeps his eyes on you." The fairness and justice of this world is the standard and bottom line of human behavior.

People should follow fairness and justice as well as the will of God when they do anything. The will of God can be regarded as fairness and justice.

You can do anything and make much money within the scope of fairness and justice because God will bless you. God will punish you sooner or later if you violate fairness and justice and you will receive retribution for any bad things you have done.

You should follow fairness and justice constantly, hold out the bottom line of conducting yourself and refuse to do anything offensive to God and reason if you revere God.

We should not only hold out the bottom line, but develop science and technology energetically, make efforts to transform the earth and our living environment and develop human civilization.

The above two aspects are exactly the real intention of God creating human, and neither aspect can be neglected. Otherwise, all people need to be repaired and judged for they are not complete. We should examine ourselves in these two aspects constantly and then make corrections, which can be regarded as cultivation.

People's CPU speed was very slow and memory capacity very small so that they couldn't operate complicated programs in the past. Now people have made great scientific and technological progress with more developed brain and can understand more things. People need to cognize the relationship between the world and God and between substance development and fairness and justice in a comprehensive way, instead of doing something stupid and paranoiac. Human should develop and cultivate themselves in an all-around way.

A Christian sent me an e-mail to me to talk about the problem of good and evil, and I want to reply him like this.

102. Biological Evolutionism Does Not Conflict with Creationism

29 June 2017

A theologian once told me that nowadays, many Christians believe in Darwin's theory of biological evolution rather than creationism. As far as I'm concerned, creationism does not conflict with biological evolutionism.

First of all, I recognize creationism not because I am superstitious to God, but because there are too many things that cannot be done win human power. For example, all of most classic ancient books at home and abroad like *Tao Te Ching*, *The Book of Changes*, *The Inner Canon of Huangdi*, *The Koran*, *The Bible*, *Buddhist Scriptures,* etc., are not what human beings could achieve based on their cultural and technological level in ancient times. Since all things evolve from quantitative change to qualitative change, so do culture, scientific and technological knowledge which are accumulated and inherited step by step. There will be no 2 without 1, and no 3 without 2. Thus, all these knowledges are revealed by God.

Meanwhile, in our times, there are many phenomena that cannot be explained by human beings such as qigong, aliens, ghosts, soul, etc. All these objectively exist, but human beings are unable to explain them with science and technology. However, creationism can give a logical explanation of all these and it is the only logical explanation by far. So I think creationism is credible.

I have not seen God, but God's creationism is the only logical interpretation. This is the truly realistic interpretation, because those who do not recognize things that cannot be explained are also idealistic, they belong to another kind of idealism. But I recognize all things that can be explained scientifically and those that cannot be scientifically explained. So I am the real materialist.

And those who do not recognize the creationism of God are idealistic. They and theologians are both idealistic, the former of whom follow their own heart and the latter believe in God. They are all idealists.

Only I am a materialist. I admit all the things that exist objectively and use science and logic to rationally explain and understand them, so as to know the world.

Biological evolution and creationism are not contradictory, I believe in the creation of God, because it is the only logical interpretation, yet I believe in biological evolution as well, for it objectively exists, and I have no reason not to believe it.

A reasonable explanation is that God created all the living creatures that have the function of evolving and adapting to the living environment. Living creatures do evolve, but it does not mean that biological evolution can explain the origin of life, which is ridiculous.

For example, biological evolution may turn 1000000 into 1000001, but it absolutely cannot make 0 mutate into 1000000 all of a sudden, which is ridiculous and unscientific, for things experience from quantitative change to qualitative change.

Those who stubbornly insist that biological evolution can explain the origin of life are liars rather than scientists who do not even understand the most basic scientific principles. I've proposed this viewpoint long ago, and I re-discuss it again today.

103. Why Do I Criticize Christian Fundamentalists Who Follow the Teachings of God?

3 July 2017

Christian fundamentalists follow the teachings of God. “If a person hits your left face, you should give him your right face again; if a person asks for your coat, you need to give it with the underwear together; you are supposed to love your enemies and pray for them; and you cannot expect others to return money that you lent them.” So some net friends wonder why I want to abandon them and whether I do not recognize their behaviors.

1. First of all, I think the word “abandon” is not appropriate.

At present, I have no power to kill or abandon anybody because everything is done by others but not me. I just give some advice to someone with a power but do nothing, kill nobody or abandon nobody. I think an ordinary person has the obligation to make some suggestions for people with a power.

In other words, I am conducting a soul war, that is, fighting with the devil at the soul level. The extreme language and the intense vocabulary what I use are weapons for the soul war to get rid of the devil. If a devil is removed from the body of a bad man, he can become a good man and belong to God again.

So I’m just transforming their souls to make them re-understand fairness and justice and return to God again.

I have repeatedly stressed a soul, ideological and cultural war with Mohammedans who enter into diabolism to transform them firstly or we can eliminate them if a failed transformation. Therefore, I’m just transforming and saving them rather than abandoning them.

In addition, I also need to transform those fundamentalist Christians with outdated concepts, ideas and doctrines, such as God’s 2012 eschatology, and they will be eliminated if they do not accept the transformation because human civilization will enter a new period with new civilization, new cultural ideas and ideology.

Someone may know the universe civilization has been destroyed many times because it cannot ascend into a higher level and thus go into self-destruction after a certain development. Human civilization will soon be destroyed if it cannot be changed correctly.

Based on years of practice and experience, we can find that it is correct and feasible to transform your civilization, ideology, social effectiveness, scientific management, culture and thinking, economic relations, political relations and so on in accordance with the Chinese model, as the

book says.

2. For the Christian doctrine, “If a person hits your left face, you should give him your right face again; if a person asks for your coat, you need to give it with the underwear together; you are supposed to love your enemies and pray for them; and you cannot expect others to return money that you lent them,” we should understand this way.

All human beings are created and loved by God as the God’s people, regardless of colors, races, areas and religions (Mohammedan, Buddhist or Hindus). So God expects love, tolerance, mutual understanding, and mutual tolerance among you in contradiction.

In ancient times with backward productivity, people were simple enough to revere God in different forms, so God ordered them to abandon disputes, develop productivity, human population, and human civilization.

However, current people are controlled by the devil and self-righteous so that homosexuality, drug addiction, drug trafficking, gangdom, thuggee, vicious financial fraud, heresy and worship of the devil appear, and they have betrayed fairness and justice and even God. What you face are devils rather than people of God, so God needs to fight with them rather than tolerate them.

All of Christians need to fight with the devil on the side of God. The opponents you face are no longer half-brothers but enemies who have been dominated by the devil, that is, devils.

All these doctrines of Christians must be temporarily abolished until we can confirm that they will become our half-brothers again. Therefore, all Christians must carry out an ideological war or a flesh war with them during this period, which is necessary and ordered by God, and we must fight with the devil on the side of God until God has achieved victory and fairness and justice have been achieved in the world.

104. Reproductive Rights Should Be Transferred in Market to Solve Aging Population Problem.

20 July 2017

Now many western countries in the world are facing with aging population problem which is basically caused by monogamy and the dissemination of feminist thoughts. It is an action that opposes God and also the consequence of people's pleasure seeking and refusing to assume responsibility.

Population control is a very important indicator of the scientific and reasonable system of social management. The population going out of control, no matter decreasing sharply or increasing rapidly is unreasonable and is the failure of the society management.

Of cause, the safeguard of human rights which is proposed by westerners is reasonable. However, this leads to the sharp decreasing of the population. At best, this is the failure made by social rules.

At worst, it is the demon which is objecting the God and the fairness and justice of the society. People are incredibly self-serving. The selfish desire is booming in the society. All of these are the representation of destroying the society management. This is an action which objecting the God.

Human have the right of giving birth to a baby and also have right not to, which is the safeguard of human rights. I agree with this.

Human have the right of marrying with a woman and also have the right of marrying numerous women at the same time, which is also the safeguard of human rights. You need to accept my opinion.

On the one hand, the government should make a plan. Figure out how many people are needed according to the most reasonable plan. Then make out each woman should have how many children on the basis of statistics and calculation. Fertility is fertility while plan is plan.

Woman has the right of giving birth and the right of not to while the government has the planning authority. These are two different concepts are not affecting each other and this is the separation of two rights.

I think the establishment of transferring reproductive rights system can settle the out of control of population, prevent the irrational expansion of the population as well as prevent population decline.

For example, the government can give reproductive rights to each woman at certain years

according to the practical situation. Each one can have two, three, or more children. People have the right of giving birth and the right of not to. The woman who does not want to have children can give their reproductive right to the others who can exercise her rights instead. With this market, people will make deals about it. Reproductive rights will be transferred. The rich can buy more reproductive rights. With more reproductive rights, polygamy becomes legal.

When the wife cannot fulfill the reproductive rights task or refuse to fulfill, the husband can have more than one wife. More reproductive rights need more wives. This is not only reasonable and legal but also fair and just. With this transferring reproductive rights system, population quantity of different families can be controlled and planned. Rich families need more children to inherit family property and promote family glories.

Rich families need more children. They need outstanding children to inherit the family property not those do-nothing ones. But if the children are not that many, thousands of millions of dollars will be inherited by a black sheep, which is a waste of social resources.

In China, we can see much negative news about the offspring of wealthy families are reported every day. This is caused by monogamy. The rich family cannot have enough children to select outstanding ones. There is only one child in the family, so the child fears nothing.

When being worse than parents, the certain population will face declining. If some people don't want to have baby and also don't want to transfer their reproductive rights, the government can rule the lapsed time of reproductive power, when time is up, the owners will be forced to transfer this right to others freely.

Reasonable planning and transferring on reproductive rights can make it legal, which accords with polygamy and can solve all the problems.

I find that India and Islam, and African blacks make a great deal of low-quality people. They have an instinctive impulse to start wars and launch terrorist attacks to rob others' land and resources. Their lives are cheap, so they need to digest surplus population. There is no way out.

The Europeans refused to give birth and the population declined. They introduced Muslims to pay taxes and pensions for their elderly, which makes Europe become Muslim, Muslim cultural invasion, and unceasing terrorist attacks.

The Japanese also refused to give birth, and they did not introduce Muslims, so the economy fell sharply. I think Japan should do a good fight with China, and then give itself to China so as to save time of both sides.

105. India Should Conduct the Land Revolution and Religious Reform to Overthrow the Landlord Class, Then Submit to God.

7 August 2017

My understanding of India is mainly from some movies and news, as well as historical knowledge. India has a large and growing population and a basically stable social structure. From these two points of view, India's culture is basically a success. This is the basic purpose that God wants to achieve.

India did not have a major revolution in the past decades, so their social system basically continued the ancient feudal culture and social system, that is caste system.

The caste system has a basic logic same to that of China's feudal system, in which everyone has a certain social status and stable social relations in the society, and the status and relations are strengthened and maintained through the caste system.

In addition, the caste system also maintains and strengthens the private ownership of the land.

In China, the feudal system is known as its persecution and oppression on the people. The Indian caste system and the private ownership of land are also utilized to do the same thing on its people, just like the Chinese feudal system.

Chinese netizens have given India such a comment—India has a large population; the poor possess extreme poverty while the elite class is very strong. This phenomenon is caused by the private ownership of land and caste system, resulting in the popularization of the persecution and oppression on the underclass.

The US often issues some negative reports about Chinese human rights, and China certainly gives tit for tat.

If China and the US can divert their attention toward Indian human rights, the reports are expected to be far more excellent than the reports about the former's issues.

How many violent murders do occur in India every year, how many women are raped every year? How many farmers have committed suicide because of poverty? How many women are burned by their own husbands? How many young people were killed by family honors? How many poor people are there in India? How did they survive? How did India persecute low casters? How are Indian officials corrupt, how did the officials collude with bandits?

India has a lot of touching movies in which the shooting level is good, the stars are beautiful, and songs and dances are also attractive.

But the reason why some Indian films are so touching is its true reflection of serious social injustice and cruel human persecution, the persecution of landlord class on the poor as well as murders and violence.

Whenever I see these touching Indian films, I am more aware of my goals. I am going to help the Indian people who have suffered hardships and to help them to overthrow the landlords of India. If the landlords are unwilling to surrender, chop their heads off. Because the land belongs to God rather than the landlords of India and they use the land and wealth of God to persecute the people of God, they shall repent and be transformed and even be wiped out in case of resistance to transformation.

I have to admit that the private ownership of land, feudal system, and caste system created the prosperity of the population of India and the stability of social order. The underclass is used to accept poverty, oppression, and exploitation, as well as the society stability under premise of compromise. However, where there is social progress, there will be changes in social rules. God has checked this land, India has its positive aspects that can be praised and affirmed, but in some aspect, it needs to be repaired within a fixed period.

Indians have another problem, some of them worship the demons. God said in the Bible that many contemporary people "worship beasts and beast statues but abandon God." The worship idols of Indians are demons. The Indians now believe in Hinduism rather than previous Buddhism.

Buddhism, Christianity, and Islam are indeed orthodox religions preached by God. They have a clear scripture, and God explicitly requires the believers to practice in a certain way.

Hinduism, despite its abundant believers, has no any scripture that God has revealed, these believers have betrayed God and it is a cult. The idols they worship are not God nor the messengers of God but are their own invented demons.

The worship idols of Indians have no human form, but the Bible clearly tells people God has made man based on his own appearance. The worship idols of Indians have no human form at all, so they must be demons. We can simply judge from the shape.

India needs a land revolution to share the wealth of God with the whole people and to realize real fairness and justice. Secondly, it needs a religious reform to abandon the cult and to forbid the worship of demons, they shall submit to God.

Otherwise, all religions around the world will launch a jihad against India. All believers of God will launch a jihad against India because of the betrayal of God. Indians like to fight, I'd love to fight back. Let's make a fight and solve the problem at once. Do not argue back and forth on sovereignty because it is useless.

I think Kashmir, Sikkim, and Bhutan, and other Indian states need to be independent. Each state has its own language, culture, religion, land, and population. No ethnic independence, no

protection of their own interests.

Only ethnic independence can ensure the interests of each ethnicity. Or your interests will not be protected, you will always be subject to the persecution, oppression and exploitation of Indian landlord class and cult class.

106. The News That an American Car Rushed into Crowds Is Fake News

17 August 2017

A car crashed into the protest crowd in Virginia a few days earlier, and caused many deaths and injuries, which has caused strong repercussions from all walks of life in the United States.

I don't think people should read such news or affairs by superficial phenomenon simply and make the simple judgement and understanding like a pupil. They should see through the appearance to perceive the essence by wisdom and reason to treat these issues.

Fake news has always been there, and the masses have always been manipulated and fooled by the devil. Meanwhile, they have to pay for the devil too.

People who have studied history should know that Hitler had a conspiracy of "Reichstag fire."

In order to attack his opponents, Hitler personally plotted and created the "Reichstag fire," and then imputed to his political rival—the German Communist Party. He declared all non-Nazi parties illegal so that the Nazi party was in complete control of Germany, which resulted in all the vicious incidents by Nazi Germany, including slaughtering the Jews and the World War II.

I think the "incident of the car crashing into the crowd by the right wing" is the same conspiracy as Hitler's "Reichstag fire."

The purpose is to discredit the right wing forces, so that the patriotic act and activity of right wing seem illegal and violent.

We can also see a series of fake news from the news of the past two years. Some evil forces want to achieve their ends by concocting fake news.

The most obvious example is the photograph of the dusty little boy sitting in a chair in Syria. Some evil forces tried to discredit Syrian government army to overthrow the government of Syria. They paid to setup a nominal medical organization called the White Helmets, with a movie also called *The White Helmets*. The film was even given the Oscar prize in order to expand its influence.

We have a lot of facts to prove that the White Helmets organization has no basic medical knowledge at all. They even stabbed a child's heart with a thick and long needle. As a result, medical experts pointed out that if the child was alive, the operation would immediately stab the child to death.

The White Helmet was just a joke and a hoax. Some people spent money to setup it, and their only purpose was to make fake news.

The news of “The dusty little boy sitting in the chair” was just another fake news made by the White Helmets. It turned out that the little boy and his father were staunch supporters of the government army. A large sum of money was given to the boy’s father, who was required to leave Syria but refused.

The father later told reporters that the explosion could not prove to be a bombing by government army because he didn’t hear the sound of the plane. The White Helmets snatched the little boy from his father and placed him in the chair for a photograph. The little boy was frightened just because his father left. Some reporters even cried again and again on seeing the photograph.

We feel very funny right now for another fool was tricked but still cried in front of the camera, which were all the evidences of being fooled.

In fact, it’s not just the reporter, but all of you were deceived by the devil. Anyone who has seen and believed the photograph has been deceived by the devil. And you’re also used by the devil to be against the government of Syria.

Such things are so common. Trump has always been complaining that the media is making fake news to persecute him.

I haven’t looked into it one by one, but I’m sure Trump is absolutely right. The media has been making fake news to persecute him.

In the same way, let’s now see the “incident of the car crashing into the crowd by the right wing” again. It is fake news obviously. They are the same as the White Helmets in nature. Some people made fake news on purpose. They hired extras and performed evil acts intentionally. However, the difference was that the show really caused a lot of innocent casualties this time.

I am not indifferent to those innocent people who have been killed and bruised for no reason. You were dragged into a carefully planned scam by the devil, and you became the extras of the devil without performance expense.

We should not condemn the right wing rally by mere superficial phenomenon. We should focus on the boss behind the scenes for the incident.

Who plotted the crashing car incident? Who gave the order? Who paid for it? Who hired the extras?

I suspect that the “incident of a car crashing into the crowd” is not accidental. It is the usual way of people who are against Trump.

During the period of US presidential campaign, there was news disclosing that evil forces maliciously hired vandals, tramps, and psychopath to destroy Trump’s rallies, and planned violence incidents.

I believe that this “incident of a car crashing into the crowd” is also the violent incident they planned.

They’re devils, and we need to find them out.

107. The Right-Wing Forces Are Holy Warriors. They Are Protecting Their Homes and Civilizations. They Are Fighting against the Devil.

25 August 2017

Recently, there have been protests and rallies by right-wing groups in both the United States and Europe. I think their actions are a sign of the awakening of justice. They are protecting their homes and civilizations. They are holy warriors of God. They are fighting against the devil.

In recent years, there have been more and more vicious Islamic extremist terrorist attacks, and every terrorist attack has a group of holy warriors awakening. They need to take weapons and fight against the devil.

Spain, which loves peace, has also been attacked by terrorists. This suggests that Islamic demons are not retaliating for the bombing of Syria, but to attack civil society and free society. They want to turn the world into a demonic world. All of us need to take up arms and fight against evil.

Resolutely defend God, defend civilization, defend our own homeland, banish the evil spirits of Islam.

Islam has made no contribution to the modern civilization of mankind other than the birth of children and the plunder of global resources. Now they are going to attack the whole world, and the devil will conquer the world.

There are two types of people who oppose the right-wing forces.

One is Islam. The other is the sympathetic supporters of Islam. One is to conquer the world's demons, and the other is the devil's sympathizers.

Why are they demons? Because in civilized society, the devil takes the Koran and believes in it. The Koran is an anti-human and anti-civilization book. On closer inspection, almost all the articles in it are illegal, and anti-human, and anti-civilization.

The result of our right-wing struggle is that all people in the world must recognize. All the articles of the Koran are illegal and anti-human and violate human rights.

If the whole world recognizes this, our struggle can end. This means that the devil has been defeated, the devil has been locked in the bottle. As long as someone doesn't admit it, he's the devil, or the agent of the devil. We must protect our homeland, we must protect our civilization, we must fight against the evil.

For this is truth and justice. The man who struggles for truth and justice is the holy warrior of God.

You right-wing forces are now holy warriors of God.

108. With Five More Nuclear Tests, North Korea Could Be the Permanent Member of the UN.

3 September 2017

It is worth celebrating that today, North Korea conducted nuclear test again. With five more nuclear tests, North Korea could be the permanent member of the UN, after which the world's affairs, big and small, will require the approval of General Kim to be implemented. What a glory this is. There is no need to worry about the protests in other countries. The permanent members of the UN, the UN itself, the European Union, and South Korea, etc., are all sissy. They just make pompous but empty show of their power and influence. They only make address on the stage and express regular opposition. Beyond that, there would be no concrete action. After all, North Korea is a recognized sovereign state in the world. Nuclear test is a legitimate conduct within the scope of sovereignty. Other countries have no right to interfere. Don't worry, the dissenters will go home and continue to have fun after finishing the address. There will be no substantive action.

Making address, having fun, lighting candle, sending wreath…is a routine, and has been repeated for hundreds of years, nothing new.

According to news reports, many Americans are preparing graves and coffins for themselves.

Recently, the luxury tombs and coffins which are called underground shelters by them sell like hot cakes in the United States at price 2,500 dollars.

They are afraid that no one prepares their funeral after death, so they buy the coffin in advance, lie in it and stay for a few days to feel the environment. This is known in China as "deeply dig cave and widely accumulate food." The revolution has not been successful, and General Kin still needs to work hard.

When you enter the UN one day and North Korea become a permanent member, I will write hymns for you. At that time, please give me a special treatment. This is another great success of human rights and democracy.

109. It Is Reasonable to Deploy Nuclear Weapons in South Korea.

8 September 2017

Many countries have proposed “denuclearization” on the Korean Peninsula. This is correct. But the so-called denuclearization is not to read the manuscript on the stage but secretly support North Korea in the development of nuclear weapons. This is a conspiracy, this is unfair.

Whoever proposes denuclearization should solve the “nuclearization” problem of North Korea within the stipulated time, and North Korea’s nuclear weapons are becoming more and more mature with the help of some people. This time is one month. Within a month, no matter by what means, representing they are solving the problem, otherwise it is a conspiracy.

Through the denuclearization guise, it is actually secretly helping North Korea developing nuclear weapons.

If the North Korean nuclear issue cannot be resolved within one month, then the deployment of nuclear weapons in South Korea is reasonable and just. Solving this problem is very simple. It only takes one second to remove some people. This matter should be done by people who proposed North Korea’s denuclearization, not Americans or Japanese or Koreans.

You can make your own choices.

- There are nuclear weapons on both sides, or no nuclear weapons at all, within a month.

Otherwise “denuclearization” is a conspiracy. There’s no use in discussing it. No one is stupid.

110. God Permits the Total Destruction of North Korea

20 September 2017

As said by Trump, it is correct and righteous to totally destruct North Korea under the call of God. You have betrayed God for a long time. God also needs to kill the chicken to scare monkeys.

North Korea's threatening to the whole world with nuclear weapon is a contempt for God, equity and justice. In this sense, North Korea is a demon. It has full reason to totally destroy North Korea.

Some countries provide protection as the umbrella for North Korea—the world-class gangsterdom to fight against the God, equity and justice all the time. They should be punished as the accomplice of demons.

Either nuclear pollution or refugee crisis is the cost that you need to pay as the umbrella for the gangsterdom, you do not deserve any sympathy at all.

North Korea presumes that it could get its own way as long as it has backstage supporters. North Korea is the chicken specifically to be killed to scare the monkeys. North Korea is a punch born to be chopped. However, it is totally fruitless to chop such a punch.

After all, the boast of Trump could not be realized in most cases. I question the integrity of Americans.

111. All Politicians Are Hoping to Pass the Bomb to the Next One, and No One Is Solving the Problem.

24 September 2017

The declarations of all the politicians of all countries on the North Korea issue have only demonstrated one problem, that is, they hope to leave this bomb to the next politician to solve, rather than let the bomb explode in their own hands.

In order to protect themselves and prevent the bomb from exploding in their own hands, they artificially and deliberately shelter and indulge the North Korea devil to develop nuclear weapons.

This is also why the devil's living space, using this weakness of human nature, gradually grows from small to large.

North Korea, the devil, the longer the time, the stronger the ability, and the more people will die solving the problem. This is the simple truth that everyone understands.

It's just that people are deliberately looking for various reasons and excuses to make themselves not believe in this fact. So all politicians are shameless, selfish bastards, and scammers.

In order to keep their own jobs, they will not hesitate to let their children and grandchildren suffer hundreds and thousands of times of disasters, they will not hesitate to become the protective umbrella of the devil.

The easiest way to solve the North Korea problem is to go to war tonight. The battle plan against North Korea should be at first to tentatively crackdown on North Korea military facilities and nuclear facilities. If North Korea puts Korean civilians as human shield and revenge targets, then immediately and completely destroy North Korea, use nuclear weapons whether on civilian or military targets.

This is completely reasonable and legal, and it is solving problems and being courteous. It is sinless to destroy the devil and kill the human shields. This blame must be attributed to those who kidnap human shields.

North Korea is the same as the Islamic State. They just kidnapped their own people and the Korean people and used them as human shields to confront the nations of the world. Other than that, they have no capital. However, this capital of human shield is unfounded and ineffective.

God will never compromise with the devil because the devil has kidnapped some human shields. This is ridiculous. If the human shield dies, God can recreate it. But the devil must be killed. So

don’t pressure on God by killing many human shields. This is ridiculous.

112. Americans Need to Purchase More Guns to Keep Them Safe

3 October 2017

Recently, America happened two serious shooting accidents. Many people proposed to control guns. This is wrong. I have proposed early that America is a typical example of individual culture. When the society can't guarantee the security of all people, then people need protect themselves by their own, so they need guns, besides, they need form gangs to protect the benefit of cliques.

Individuals own guns to protect their own interests. This is determined by the American ideology, political system, judicial system, social management system, and values.

If someone want to change the insecurity status, it is not the guns that need to be forbidden, it is the ideology, political system, judicial system, social management system and values that need to be changed.

That is to say revolution is needed by Americans, they should negate everything about America.

I believed that lots of Americans can't figure this out. They will look me as conspirator. But this is the truth. If you don't want to change all the "ideology, political system, judicial system, social management system, and values" of America, then I suggest you to buy more guns, armors to protect yourself.

Because this is America, this is the lifestyle that chose by themselves. You reap what you sow. There's logic connection in it.

If you want to manage guns, its simple:

1. take over all guns.

2. in the event of a shooting, the shooter will be executed regardless of the death or injury of the victim.

But this is still not enough. The society needs to provide all people with full and complete security. Only then the two policies can be conducted, and people can be asked to ban guns. But if America wants to provide all people with full and complete security, then America needs change all "ideology, political system, judicial system, social management system, and values."

Why? Because a great number of money or countless money will be needed if America wants to "provide all people with full and complete security."

The small amount money provided by capitalist of American congress is far from enough.

Americans need to nationalize all lands and mineral resources. All lands and mineral resources can be controlled by government, only that amount of money can do this, only though that money, a full and complete security can be provided to all people. But this needs communist revolution.

These wealth are the wealth created by God, not created by the individual, so it must not belong to the individual. It must be enjoyed by all people in the society. Only through these you can win the love of God and have real peace.

Otherwise, let the bullet fly in the US, this has nothing to do with me, I have no comments.

113. Child Marriage Can Effectively Increase the Population

9 November 2017

A recent proposal to abolish child marriage in Pakistan, but it was rejected by Islam because it is Islamic law and Mohammed also engaged in child marriage.

1. Firstly, Mohammed's behavior is in line with the social status before 2000. Such as child marriage, polygamy, rape of the captives, forced sexual slavery and so on. However, many behaviors do not accord with the current social status and the level of social productivity and civilization development. So we can't say what Mohammed did before 2000, We're going to do it now, and keep doing it forever. It's a heresy.

2. There used to be child brides in China. People took other girls to their home and became their daughter-in-law. This is what poor people used to do. They were afraid that they would not have the money to marry wives, so they brought up the girl or baby girl in their home early and later became their wives in the future so that they don't have to spend money any more. This is also child marriage. Child marriage can reduce the cost of marriage, or no cost. But it also can achieve the goal, and can reproduce early, have children.

Some rich people and those who think they are civilized resent such kind of thing and call it persecution of women.

I don't think there's anything wrong with that, and there's no persecution behavior. And it's very effective.

Poor people naturally have means of poor to achieve the goal. Poverty is no sin. It is a sin to discriminate against the poor, including the act and method of discriminating against the poor.

3. Countries with population shortages are encouraging early marriage, puppy love, or child marriage. Many western countries and liberal democracies are increasingly short of population because of capitalism's promotion of human rights and freedom, while encouraging people not to take on any social responsibility. I think encouraging their citizens to get married early or get married as a child is also an effective way.

Legislators oppose early marriage and puppy love mainly because of academic disruption and social order. This is unreasonable.

Because human beings become sexual maturity after the age of thirteen, that's the stage of middle school.

Middle school students are falling in love and having children. It is true that they waste their studies and destroy the school management order.

However, when “early marriage and child marriage” become the social mainstream and culture, “academic and school management order” will gradually adapt to “early marriage and child marriage,” rather than “early marriage and child marriage” to adapt to “academic and school management order.” Because “population science planning” is much more important than “academic and school management order.”

According to the jade female classic, the age at which people can marry is sixteen for women and eighteen for men.

I think the legal age of marriage in each country is about the same. China is the only country with the highest legal age for marriage for a rapidly shrinking population.

I think countries need to raise the marriage age if they want to reduce the population, and advocate reducing the legal marriage age if they want to increase the population. Or child marriage needs to be encouraged.

The legal age for marriage in Russia is fourteen. But Russia, with its shrinking population, badly needs to encourage child marriage and polygamy.

Iran, for example, has a large population because people can get married at the age of nine. This is very effective.

4. All in all, the way to encourage fertility is polygamy, the baby trade and baby adoption, early marriage, child marriage and the mass production of test-tube babies.

114. North Korea's Agreeing to the Negotiation Means They Are Ready to Surrender.

5 January 2018

North Korea recently has agreed to negotiate with South Korea, in my view point, which is the beginning of North Korea's surrendering to capitalism and imperialism. I have repeatedly stressed that the devil can only understand the sounds of steel and blood.

The United States has passed a series of military exercises, economic sanctions and compared the sizes of nuclear buttons have successfully let North Korea understand a word from the mankind.

Making the North Korea devil understood the voice of world's people. But this is merely one word.

We need tougher sanctions, more threatening military exercises, more substantial military operations, and directly destroy North Korea's nuclear facilities with missiles. Only this can make the devil understood more words from world's people.

Because North Korea's so-called negotiations are all lies, they are delaying and fighting for more time so that they can create more destructive nuclear weapons.

North Korea has conducted numerous negotiations before, but all results are same, those all are delaying tactics when they are in unfavorable situations.

The only content of North Korea's negotiation is to ask South Korea to provide oil, food and chocolate, dollars, and so on. There won't be anything new.

A complete and absolute material embargo should be imposed on North Korea, not a drop of oil, a grain of rice or any other materials are allowed to enter North Korea.

Meantime directly destroy the North Korean nuclear facilities. This is the solution to the problem.

North Korea's agreeing to negotiate shows being tough to North Korea is the only solution to the problem. Anyone who advocates weakness and negotiation are liars or bastards. They are all accomplices of the devil who wear different clothes and speak different language.

115. Doctor of the Western Countries Should Suggest Patients to Take TCM Properly as Complementary Medicine

16 February 2018

I saw that cough is rampant in America in the news, causing fifty thousand people died. Some people believed that Chinese herbal cough syrup can cure cough, so they ate it.

TCM is the medical tools that God gives to ancient Chinese. The main medical principle of TCM is to stimulate the body's immune and repair system, treat diseases, kill viruses and bacteria, and repair body organs.

The human body created by God has a complete immune system, killing harmful pathogenic bacteria and viruses. Our body has a complete self-healing system that can repair various organs of the damaged body.

People are sick because of external factors broken the balance of the body, such as diet, air, water, food, trauma, viruses, bacteria, etc.

The principle of western medicine is to kill bacteria and viruses directly with drugs. The principle of traditional Chinese medicine is to stimulate the body's repair system, so that the body's original function can kill viruses and bacteria.

I suggest that Westerners should properly study Chinese health care method and Chinese medicine treatment approach to reduce the suffering of patients and reduce the incidence of disease.

I rarely go to see a doctor, except for dentists.

When I feel uncomfortable or lose balance, I often go to the pharmacy to buy some medicines. There are more Chinese medicines and Western medicines. Each time I ate them, my illness would be cured in a few days.

I think many of the folk prescriptions and foods in China are very effective.

1. For example, if I feel every pain after I extract teeth and the pain killer also doesn't take effect, and the pain will last for several days. Then I will use three handful mung beans to make a large bowl of soup and drink it all, the next day I almost can't feel pain, If you are interested, you can try it, it's very effective.

This is called reducing internal heat by mung bean on folk remedies. I think this is the mung bean that stimulates the body's immune system and kills the bacteria that invade the wound, so it

doesn’t pain anymore.

2. I also often cough in the autumn and winter seasons. If I don’t pay attention to treatment, I have to cough for a long time. So I also eat Chinese herbal cough syrup.

Of course, it is more economical and more effective to take Huazhou Orange and Chuanbei. Use a handful of Huazhou orange and a Chuanbei, and processing them with soymilk machine, then put it in a food bag, and preserve it in the refrigerator. Drink 2-3 times a day, 250 ml each time. Basically, the cough will be cured in two days. This is bitter, but it works.

Someone recommended me daikon in boiled water or daikon and spareribs soup. I used this for a few days when I coughed. Pear cream also works.

If I am in a hurry, I will buy all of these things and eat them together. The cough will be cured in a few days. Of course, I also buy western medicine sometimes.

China is now combining TCM with Western medicine. I think this is very effective. Which can solve the problem most effectively, and we’ll use their medicine. This is very scientific. Practice is the only criterion for testing truth.

If someone completely eat TCM because they pursuit it, or only eat Western medicine because they pursuit it—this is a cult idea. People need results, need to solve problems and need to reduce costs.

116. Surrogacy Should Be Positively Popularized

5 March 2018

Recently, it is reported that a Japanese billionaire has nineteen children by surrogacy in Thailand. This is a very positive, clear and sensible action.

Surrogacy is the practice by which persons who would not like to or could not give birth to children have their children by offering sperm or ovum or germ cell and breeding in others' intrauterine.

This is a very scientific and effective means to promote population growth and a perfect action beneficial to everyone.

In most cases, surrogacy means the situation when the rich who could not or would not like to give birth to children for fear of affecting work, making money, influencing career development or tolerating the risks of fertility pay to others to bear children for themselves.

The rich reach their own purpose and have biological children in kinship while others in need of money have a job and get money.

This action does not violate any human rights and meantime effectively reduces the gap of wealth. It is really a good thing that deserves great promotion and popularity. Moreover, it should be protected and normalized by law.

Those countries in face of sharp population decrease should positively advocate and encourage the rich to have children.

Most women after the climacterium would not have ovum and lose fertility but men could theoretically have fertility capacity at any age as long as they have sperm.

For instance, the Japanese billionaire be mentioned above could quickly have tens of, hundreds of and even more children by surrogacy.

Please do not take it as a funny game. Actually, it is a serious task and work which leaves tremendous influence on the state and the whole nation.

Many countries, including China, prohibit or restrict such ideal action legally. Some women also protest against such practice for fear of losing their family status and some children of the rich also protest against such practice for fear of the race for possessions with new children.

In most cases, such psychology reflects human ignorance, evil, jealousy for the rich, irresponsibility, impudence, and extreme selfishness.

While western democratic system provides a perfect legal protection platform for “human ignorance, evil, jealousy for the rich, irresponsibility, impudence, and extreme selfishness.” There are no other explanations for it.

117. Western Countries Only Can Delay the Perish of Capitalism if They Impede the Development of Internet Economy

1 April 2018

In the news, I saw Donald Trump against Amazon, and speak evil of Amazon.

Trump is a capitalism, I know he is protecting the capitalism, but he just points out surface phenomena and not points out the essence of objectives.

The essence of this matter is that capitalism will be completely destroyed by the robot economy and the internet economy.

I have clearly explained to you before that capitalism can promote social development only under the economic operation mode of "people hire people," while capitalism will lose effect under the "people hire robot" mode. Capitalism will be completely destroyed by the robot and the internet.

I look down on all the professors and all the politicians because they are called social elites, but they are fools and scammers. Because even if they know this simple theory, they dare not admit it, let alone to publicize it.

All the professors and all politicians in the capitalist countries promote this simple theory, which will lead to the collapse of all the ideas, cultures, social systems, and social operating systems of the capitalist countries.

Most professors and politicians in China copy and study western capitalist theories. They promoted this simple set of rules and also will give themselves a big blow right on their face.

All in all, all these people in my eyes are jackass. You are all idiots and scammers. In order to save your social status and your job, you are deceiving yourself, deceiving your students, deceiving your constituents, and deceiving all.

I believe that after I have proposed this, they all understand, but they dare not admit it, including Trump.

All countries in the west are hindering the development of the internet economy, because they want to protect capitalism, protect the ideological system of capitalism, protect the theoretical system of capitalism, and protect the social system of capitalism, impede and delay the collapse time of capitalism.

But they know very well that capitalism will be completely destroyed by the robot economy and the Internet economy. And it will come soon.

Including why Trump came to power, it also because of the development of the Internet economy and the robot economy, a large number of traditional jobs have disappeared, and a large number of traditional workers are unemployed. People began to see the traditional capitalist politicians and professors of the left-winger in crap. People are more and more aware of this fact, and they are less and less convinced of them, and they are increasingly thinking that they are bullshit.

The facts are facts, you can cover up, you can block, you can delay, but the situation will only get worse. Because the wallets in people's pockets are getting less and less. You can't deceive people's wallets in their pockets.

The real solution to the problem is to face the problem.

Our current problem is not Amazon, Taobao, Tencent, Google, Baidu has destroyed people's job opportunities. But the Internet and robots are going to destroy the entire theoretical and social systems of capitalism.

I heard that in the early days of capitalism, workers smashed machines to keep their traditional jobs. But workers can't stop the development of machines and capitalism.

Some politicians in the west are now deliberately hindering the development of the internet economy, hoping to protect the capitalist system. Your current practice is the same as the workers who used to destroy the machine, it's stupid and ridiculous.

No one can stop the development of Internet economy and robot economy, because they are advanced productive force.

Blocking the development of the Internet economy and the robot economy will only shoot themselves in foot. All the people understand this truth, but some people don't want to admit it.

What we need to consider now is not how to prevent the development of the Internet economy and the robot economy from reducing the number of jobs for more and more people.

What we need to consider is under the circumstances of full development and rapid development of the Internet economy and the robot economy, how we can realize the rational distribution of social wealth, how we can adjust the economic relationship and political relationship between people and between people and society, how we can realize the scientific and effective management of the society.

We should find ways to make the Internet and robots bring benefits to all of people, so that all people can live better and better, instead of causing trouble for more and more people, let more and more people lose jobs. This requires changing the operative rules of society.

If everyone can know the problem we are facing, it can be easily solved. If politicians and professors in your country are all deceiving the people and misleading the people. You will never

solve the problem and will soon be eliminated and destroyed.

118. The Difference of Definition for Trade Deficit between China and US

4 April 2018

Recently the focus of the new is about the Trade War between China and US, and people have been attracted by the issue.

From my prospective, the report about Sino-US trade issued by Deutsche Bank on March 27th can narrate this issue clearly to the public.

The trade deficit of Sino-US trade was thirty billion US dollar in 2015, rather than 360 billion US dollar. Different calculation methods have caused such a big difference.

Take Apple Inc. as an example, it has occupied 86 percent of total global cell phone's market profit, which only delegates the authorization to Foxconn from Chinese Taiwan for cell phone assembly assignment in mainland factory.

The only contribution of Apple Inc. just provides some jobs. However, I dare to say that it has earned 99.9 percent profit definitely.

Chinese government makes Apple Inc. sell their products with the value of USD one hundred billion for only thousands of workers employed by the Apple Inc.

I can only make a definition that such a calculation method is completely ridiculous without any reliability if US does not involve such an amount (USD one hundred billion) in trade volume from US to China.

Why does Apple Inc. employ thousands of Chinese workers to work for them to assemble iPhone in mainland?

Such a question shall be replied by an American, Mr. Cook. This is a domestic issue and Chinese people shall be not involved in.

There is an ancient proverb that no debts without creditors. Apple Inc. has made slight contribution to China and nearly 99.9 percent profit has been obtained by Cook, CEO of Apple Inc.

American shall complain to Cook. America has only thirty billion US dollar trade deficit with China, or in other words, nothing exists.

No need complaining to Chinese people. Complain to the people or group who has obtained

money actually.

I emphasize that internet, IT, artificial intelligence like robots shall alter the production mode which used to be realized by employer and employee, modify the fortune distribution form and treasure flowing trend. All the capitalism theories shall utterly be collapsed.

Apple Inc. is a typical case. The people from US and China both do not obtain any benefit, especially for people from America.

Fortune has been allocated to the minority with great extent like people represented by Cook. There is no offence to Mr. Cook. They are only businessmen who are dealing with commercial works for shareholders. The only thing we should concern is how to realize a new fortune distribution form. That is only a start and will become seriously.

One iPhone sells at five thousand RMB. In its cost, how much is the salary for the all the workers Apple Inc. has paid to? The charge for designer is involved in manual cost. How much to be paid to the workers responsible for manufacture process of each component? How much to pay for the technicians of assembly as well as sales staffs?

I can tell you the truth that such a cost is much lower as your expectation. All the procedures shall be executed by the machines or intelligent robots rather than handwork.

With the development of network science and robot technology, assembly work will be executed by the robots, sales will be done by the robots through network, instead of promotion made by staff to each customer.

Therefore, Apple Inc. will pay less to the employees and purchase automatic equipments as their major investment.

Moreover, the capitalists and owners will earn more and more money as their profit.

That is the fundamental reason for the widening gap between rich and poor in capitalism society.

The development of network and robot technology shall result in existence of richer capitalists and less workers. Any effort shall be invalid unless solve the issue of fortune distribution.

How much is the salary of workers paid by the capitalist for USD ten billion products manufacture at the initial stage of capitalism establishment, beginning of USA founded or the duration of President Washington period?

How much is the salary of workers currently paid by Apple Inc. for the sale of cell phone with value as USD one hundred billion?

I have not made the statistic, and I am not an expert, a professor or a government officer.

However, I understand that the gap between those two amounts are incredible. Those experts, professors and government officials who exactly know those clearly are frightening to tell anybody. They survive on cheating and fooling.

That is the truth of the gap between rich and poor which shall be the origin of current social conflict. That is the basic evidence that the social system, ideology and theory of capitalism and the lies such as success shall be achieved by struggle shall be amended after complete collapse.

Of course, China also has cell phone manufacturer, such as Huawei. I know Huawei's profit must be much lower than Apple Inc.

Huawei has paid nearly the same salary to the workers as Apple Inc. paid for the sales of cell phone for USD one hundred billion. Proportion shall be with no difference. There does not exist fundamental difference because the equipments are similar as well as sales method.

Those two vendors' proportion of workers' salary are similar. China does not exist such acute conflict between employer and employee as America because of social system and stated owned enterprise. They can properly solve and adjust such an issue in terms of social fortune distribution.

In china, most of the state-owned enterprises are monopoly enterprises which are all basic supply enterprises, such as land provision, road, traffic, telecom, and energy source.

Upon compulsory and monopoly profit brought by those enterprises, it takes great effect in aspects of social fortune distribution and social management with proper adjustment made by the government authority.

Chinese government has perfectly solved issues regarding unemployment workers, retired people's pension and social insurance by the profits obtained from monopoly state owned enterprises and land provision.

Retired people are joyful and satisfied with timely paid pension which shall be increased 10 percent annually.

China also develops internet and robots with full energy which shall widen the gap between rich and poor. However, it is advanced productivity to be upgrading with compulsory power.

Simultaneously, proper policy and regulation can be utilized as guidance for social fortune distribution with justice and fairness.

Many network spies in China advocate that capitalism country has good social welfare currently. For instance, citizens in Russia enjoy high welfare much better than citizens in China.

They ignore that Russian live for natural gas and energy as blessed by the God. However, Chinese

people live upon diligence. Those two life styles are totally different.

119. The Pope Said that Homosexuality Is Born the Way That God Wants Them to.

4 June 2018

The pope explicitly replied to the homosexuality issue that, “Homosexuality is created by God. Homosexuals are what they are when they were created by God so God also loves them.”

The former half is correct while the latter half is incorrect.

When God created them, they are homosexuals, similar to children born with severe deformity or disability, such as cerebral palsy, dementia, mental retardation, blindness, hearing loss, conjoined body and limb deformity, which are similar to the imperfections, unqualified products, poisonous and harmful products, and deficient products.

As far as I am concerned, the acquired severe disabilities are disasters and misfortunes that deserve our kindness.

On the contrary, children born with congenital severe disabilities shall be put to death within a certain period of time after birth. Because infants are unconscious within a certain period of time after birth, they can be put to death as required so as to spare more living space for healthy children. This is justice rather than artificial misfortunes and disasters.

Homosexuality is exactly included in this execution scope.

Furthermore, homosexuals are different from other disabilities. Besides their morbidity, they are toxic to the society. They are poisonous and harmful parts that require strict restrictions and management.

As described by God in Bible, homosexuals are disgusted by God and deserve being eliminated. If the pope said God loves homosexuals, the pope must be ignorant of Bible. It is of nonsense.

120. The American's Problem Is a Problem of Social System Rather Than the Trade Problem.

2 September 2018

Trump can be elected to be president of United States just because there are terrorist attacks. But now the Islamic State has collapsed, and Saudi Arabia also claims to enter a moderate Islamic era.

So the problem of terrorist attacks in the world has gradually disappeared. The foundation of Trump's administration is also gradually disappearing. The fear and menace of terrorist attacks are less and less for people.

At this time, it should be considering of the question of political correctness. Otherwise, you have no value and people don't need Trump to protect their safety.

Why you still come to power without any value?

Mr. Obama's economic policies may not protect the interests of America's workers at the bottom. But he tried his best to protect the interests of America's big capitalists.

To the end, America is the actual capitalist country, or the era of big capitalists as what they finally said. So Trump still has to face the reality.

I have emphasized before that the problem of labors' unemployment in America is not the trade problem, but it is that the capitalist social system has met the age of Internet and the artificial intelligence. The capitalist need not to employ workers but only need to hire robots, which is the fundamental cause of workers' unemployment.

The fundamental way to solve this problem is to go on the way of China's model for the whole world. Except of this, there is no other way.

Trump fights a trade war, which like he is quenching a thirst with poison and the loss outweighs the gain. Moreover, the ruling foundation will be greatly lost.

The so-called trade problem and the current trade form, which must have its rationality. It is a voluntary transaction between two parties—the buyer and seller.

Trump deliberately intervened in an artificial way, which inevitably leads to unnecessary contradictions and violates economic laws.

On this issue, I also think perhaps Obama's policy is correct.

Because the politician in capitalist countries controls very few resources. What you want to be done may not be successful. So it will be better to face reality.

What's your problem is not economic problems and trade frictions, rather than it is a social system problem. The capitalist system has come to the end when it meets the era of robots and internet.

It is no use for you to struggle again. It can't solve any problem. Moreover, if you do not change the policy and do not conform to the current situation, you will be being deposed immediately.

People don't need you to drive off the terrorism for protecting their safety. If you still have no correct politic, it is useless anymore.

Part 7

end the catastrophe of the coronavirus

1. TCM treatment of coronavirus

15 February 2020

Just now, I heard the excellent speech of Professor Wu Jun on coronavirus.

Professor Wu Jun believes that due to the excessive immune response caused by the virus, the body heats up and generates a large number of free radicals. While killing the virus, they also kill a large number of cells of the human organs, causing damage to human organs and ultimately leads to death

The body heats up and produces a lot of free radicals. This phenomenon is the instinctive immune response of the human body. According to Professor Wu Jun, free radicals generated by human body fever can already kill coronavirus in the body. We only need to stop the body's immune system and free radicals from killing tissue cells of the body.

The method of TCM to solve this problem is to clear heat and detoxify. This is the most common and the oldest traditional Chinese medicine.

The recommendation given by Professor Wu Jun is to take a lot of vitamin C (3 grams per day) and vitamin E (1000 international units per day), the Chinese herbal medicine Bupleurum, and drink plenty of water.

I think Chinese medicine has many kinds of medicines and foods for clearing away heat and detoxification. Modern people basically give up TCM because they do not understand TCM.

I think all the medicines for clearing away heat and detoxification are effective, the key is whether the dosage can achieve the effect of eliminating diseases. Various drugs are mainly aimed at different human organs, and their functions and effects will be different.

In my opinion, coronavirus is a very urgent disease and can be said to be very toxic, so it requires a large amount of heat-clearing and detoxifying drugs. The general Chinese patent medicines bought from pharmacies, if taken according to the instructions, are completely underdosing.

In this situation, people with fever symptoms caused by coronavirus should immediately take the maximum dose of heat-clearing and detoxifying drugs that the body can withstand. It is required to stop taking the medicine immediately after getting rid of the disease.

I find that the situation in many places is very urgent now, and the patients can't buy medicines when they get sick. Even if they go to the hospital, there is no effective treatment, and many patients are waiting for death.

In my opinion, in an emergency, if you have a fever due to the coronavirus, you can make 3 liters

of soup with half a catty of mung beans every day, and eat them all in one day. Maybe it works.

Mung beans can clear away heat and detoxify. If the dose is sufficient, it may reduce the damage of free radicals to human organs. You can save your life if you survive from this.

You can give it a try in an emergency, but usually, you should listen to the doctor's advice.

2. In areas where the coronavirus is outbreak, it is basic common sense that all people need to wear masks.

10 March 2020

Coronavirus is very infectious. An official from the Ministry of Health who was sent by the Central Government to Wuhan to investigate the coronavirus went to see a patient. The official was already under hygienic protection and was wearing a mask. He came back and told the people across the country that there was no problem and there would be no large-scale infection. However, he was immediately infected with coronavirus after coming back. It is said that he was affected because of the air and cornea.

It has been a while since Chinese people wore masks. It should be said that the epidemic situation has basically been brought under control in China. This has a lot to do with our expert Zhong Nanshan demanding that all people wear masks.

Zhong Nanshan said at the time that N95 masks are not required for all people, and ordinary masks can play a basic protective role.

If you can't buy a professional mask, you can make your own mask at home. Using ordinary cotton cloth, you can easily make a temporary mask. But please note that all people must wear masks.

This is the basic hygienic common sense.

All people wear masks + strict isolation + combined Chinese and Western medicine treatment is China's current experience. This experience is relatively successful.

3. Westerners can quickly end the catastrophe of the coronavirus.

10 May 2020

It has been more than 5 months since the discovery of coronavirus. Now, China has basically end the catastrophe of the coronavirus, but the western countries are still deeply troubled by the coronavirus.

'Therapeutic Schedule Based on integrated Chinese and Western medicine' Determined on January 15 in the Meeting Held by China Political Bureau. In the following two months or so, the Chinese government announced that it had basically eliminated the catastrophe of the coronavirus and won a brilliant victory in the war against the coronavirus.

Some officials of the Chinese government also asked the people of Wuhan to thank Xi Jinping and the Communist Party. Although this was disgusted by some people, from an objective perspective, the Communist Party and Xi Jinping did indeed do the right thing. In fact, the decision of the Communist Party and Xi Jinping on 'Therapeutic Schedule Based on integrated Chinese and Western medicine' helped the Chinese people relieve the coronavirus disaster.

It took only two month to control the disaster of coronavirus in China. It's so fast that I can't believe it. I think that Western countries have not believed this to be true until now. But I want to tell you that this is indeed true. This is not China's false propaganda, this is what really happened.

I hope that Western countries can also use traditional Chinese medicine to help your country relieve the coronavirus disaster.

Why can Chinese medicine relieve the coronavirus disaster? Why is Chinese medicine effective for coronavirus? Why can't Western medicine solve the coronavirus disaster now?

This is a blank area of Western medicine knowledge. The knowledge to solve coronavirus is beyond the scope of Western medicine, so Western medicine can never find the answer to remove coronavirus, or cannot find the answer within a long period of time.

This is also the purpose of writing this book. I hope people can learn to use all kinds of knowledge to create well-being and solve various problems for human beings.

From the beginning of this book, I put forward a knowledge point and concept, that is- "scope of consciousness".

If the sum of all Western medicine knowledge is a scope of consciousness, it like a circle, then the scope of consciousness of doctors in all Western countries are all in this circle. When they encounter any problems, they will only find answers in this circle, and will never go beyond this consciousness and circle.

I can say that all areas of knowledge of Chinese medicine are in another circle. This circle is similar to that of Western medicine, but it does not overlap.

Because Western medicine has completely different working principle as Chinese medicine.

Traditional Chinese medicine is the knowledge and tools that God taught to ancient Chinese thousands of years ago.

The Bible says that human beings are all created by God. When God created man, man had its own immune system and self-healing system, which means that when the human body is harmed or invaded by viruses, it will repair itself. I believe this principle is also understood by Western medicine.

People will get sick and die because of external injury or internal injury and pathogenic factors beyond the scope of the body's self-repair and immune system. I believe Western medicine will agree with this statement.

To put it simply, the treatment principle of Western medicine is that it works against external injuries, internal injuries, and pathogenic factors. For example, if a viral infection occurs, the treatment plan of Western medicine is to find a treatment plan to kill the virus.

The treatment principle of traditional Chinese medicine is not to treat external injuries, internal injuries, and pathogenic factors, but to work on its own immune system and self-repair system.

Chinese medicine can regulate the self-immune system and self-repair system, let the immune system kill viruses and bacteria, and help the self-repair system to repair external or internal body tissue damage.

Different Chinese medicines can act on different human organs, allowing the immune system to increase insufficient activity or reduce excessive activity, and promote the repair system to repair human organs and tissues.

These are just some basic principles of Chinese medicine and Western medicine. Because my aunt is a highly educated pharmacist and doctor, this is what she taught me. I knew it since I was a child.

Since the outbreak of coronavirus in Wuhan, one day, a Christian sent me a message-a recording of the speech made by Professor Wu Jun about coronavirus. Professor Wu Jun is an associate professor at the Medical Center of the City of Hope in the United States(the biggest tumor hospital in the United States) and the director of the Animal Tumor Model Laboratory.

After listening to Professor Wu's speech, I felt that this was the inspiration of God to me. I think Chinese medicine can relieve the coronavirus disaster.

Professor Wu Jun said: when the patient has a fever, lung inflammation, or white lung, most of the viruses in the human body have been killed. These phenomena are just that the virus caused an excessive immune response. The immune system will continue to attack the lung cells and cells of other organs, causing inflammation of the lungs or other organs.

I think what Professor Wu Jun said is exactly the working principle and scope of Chinese medicine. I think the "clearing heat and detoxifying" effect of traditional Chinese medicine can solve the problem that the "immune system continues to attack the lung cells and cells of other organs, it will cause inflammation of the lung or other organs". This is the most traditional and oldest treatment method of traditional Chinese medicine. We have known it since we were young, and it is often used and mentioned in daily life. This is a basic common sense in China.

I just know some basic common sense. The person who can really solve the coronavirus crisis is still the top Chinese medicine expert in China.

Since'Therapeutic Schedule Based on integrated Chinese and Western medicine' is the highest political decision made by the Chinese government, China sent its top Chinese medicine experts to Wuhan in January. The two I know are Tong Xiaolin, an academician of the Chinese Academy of Sciences, and Zhang Boli, an academician of the Chinese Academy of Engineering.

With the efforts of Tong Xiaolin, Zhang Boli, and other experts and medical staffs, China basically defeated the coronavirus two months later. The Chinese government has made a lot of reports in the news media. In the meanwhile, Tong Xiaolin and Zhang Boli also announced their methods, experience and clinical data of using Chinese medicine.

1. Zhang Boli said that after treatment with traditional Chinese medicine more than 500 mild patients admitted to the Cabin Hospital under his administration were basically cured, and none of them turned into severe patients.

2. Academician Tong Xiaolin said that the total effective rate of "lung heat clearing and detoxing soup" is 97.78%, and none of his mild patients have been converted into severe or critically ill patients. The "lung heat clearing and detoxing soup" has been listed as the first choice of clinical diagnosis and treatment of coronavirus in traditional Chinese medicine.

As of March 13, of 1261 new coronavirus pneumonia patients in 10 provinces, after taking "lung heat clearing and detoxing soup", 1102 patients have been cured, 29 patients have had the symptoms disappeared, and 71 patients have improved significantly. Of the 40 severely ill patients, 28 have been discharged, and of the remaining 12 patients who are still in hospital, 10 patients have had the symptoms improved, and all patients are recovering.

3. According to a group of data published on Guangming Daily on March 13, in the worst-hit Wuchang district of Wuhan, the COVID-19 patients confirmed accounted for high up to above 90% after all suspected cases accepted test on January 28. On February 2, the measure of offering intervention therapy to all people at guard points with traditional Chinese medicine was

implemented, and till February 6, the confirmation rate decreased to over 30%, and till March 5, it decreased to 3%. We can see from the group of data that the effect of offering intervention therapy to suspected cases and confirmed patients with traditional Chinese medicine was rather remarkable.

4. Statistics show that among the confirmed patients of new coronavirus pneumonia in the country, 74187 people use traditional Chinese medicine, accounting for 91.5%. 61449 people in Hubei Province used traditional Chinese medicine, accounting for 90.6%. Through observing the clinical efficacy, it can be found that the total effective rate of traditional Chinese medicine has reached more than 90%.

Judging from these data, Chinese medicine is a special drug for removing coronavirus, which is proved by more than 70,000 cases in China.

It has been two months since China successfully defeated the coronavirus, but now Western countries are in dire straits.

Why don't you Western countries use the special medicine of Chinese medicine to rescue your citizens?

Is it because you don’t know this information? Or don’t you believe in this information? Or are you reluctant to believe that this information is true?

I have been criticizing the bureaucracy of the Chinese government, but all politicians in Western countries are equally bureaucratic, even more serious than China.

I think the United States should immediately invite Tong Xiaolin and Zhang Boli to the United States, and let them bring enough Chinese medicine to let them personally demonstrate how Chinese medicine cures coronavirus patients and then spread this experience to the whole world. If so, I believe that the coronavirus crisis will be lifted in about a month, and we can quickly return to normal work and life.

It is best to let them bring some raw materials of traditional Chinese medicine and teach Americans in the United States to cook and make traditional Chinese medicine, so as to save people who are suffering all over the world.

If Chinese medicine is used all over the world, will there be a shortage of Chinese medicine? I believe that American scientists will also study the active ingredients of traditional Chinese medicine and develop more effective alternative medicines and treatments.

I think Chinese medicine does not necessarily use a certain medicine. On the contrary, Chinese medicine has many alternative medicines, which can have the same or similar effects. Even every country has some local plants that can be used as Chinese medicine.

Because Chinese medicine does not directly act on viruses, but on the immune system and repair system of the human body.

I think that each country has its own traditional medical method, but the World Health Organization has denied this method. This behavior cut off people's way out.